

HISTORY • ARCHAEOLOGY • RELIGION • SCIENCE • CULTURE

# THE BIBLE



# AS A RISING CIVILIZATION

Paul Mall

**THE BIBLE**

**AS A**

**RISING CIVILIZATION**

---

---

**Paul Mali**

  
**HORIZON PUBLICATIONS**  
New London, CT - USA • 06320

Copyright © 1998 ISBN087386949 by Paul Mali  
P.O. Box 1928, New London, CT 06320  
This copyright has been registered with the  
Copyrights Office, Publication Section, LM-455  
Washington, D.C. 20559  
All rights reserved  
Library of Congress Catalog Card Number

NOTE TO THE READER

The Bible is a book for all.

No permission to use its contents is required.

This book follows the same example.

## DEDICATION

To C.T.R. for his inspiring

“Meat” in due season.

## PREFACE

Hidden deeply within Western Civilization exists another civilization waiting to begin on a worldwide basis. It is the Biblical Civilization. This concealed cultural prospect is not found in governments, institutions, organizations, systems or political boundaries. It exists in the Bible and within its devotees. The Bible has been an historic force over the ages. It has started movements which resulted in other civilizations. Like a tidal wave, it carried humankind from period to period, unrelentlessly, as if, toward a rendezvous with the future. History has confirmed for some time, the powerful influence of the Bible as a torch for civilization. Now, it is known. The Bible is more than an influence. It is a civilization unto itself awaiting the time for a world takeover.

The idea of the “Bible as a Rising Civilization” is proposed as the central theme of the Bible itself. After all, civilization in its broadest sense is only a higher form of living. The Bible as a rising civilization is to suggest a history of life moving humans to the highest level of life’s development. This means going beyond any other form of life found in past civilizations. The expected achievements will go beyond the achievements of Toynbee’s formally classified 34 civilizations in human history. The four earliest of these civilizations are: the Summarian Civilization, the Cretan Civilization, the Egyptian Civilization and the Indi Civilization. The demise of these older civilizations of the past is evidence of their failure to bring and sustain human development to its highest point in history. This central theme of the Bible makes it the printing triumph of all ages since its message is perpetuated for such a long time.

This book attempts to do what the title suggests. Reveal the time-honored Bible as a rising civilization. The major episodes of this civilization are the past mighty acts and future expectations of the Bible’s God. This God is involved in the history of events and in the life styles of people. The Bible even declares God started history in three ways: first, with the Big Bang Singularity explosion for the beginning of the universe; second, with the ordering and preparing of the earth as a habitat; and third, creating two seeds in a garden for the beginning of the human race. The Biblical God is the main character of historical events. He is mentioned over 5000 times in the Bible. He is also mentioned four times in the American Declaration of Independence. The name of God is also found in every denomination of American currency. This main character will have a rendezvous with humankind in the future. The Bible as a civilization unto itself was born millenniums ago but now its a movement of people. One day, it will be a

reality on planet earth. As one digs deep into the Bible, one sees the “vision” of this Biblical civilization. This may explain the fascination people have in reading the Bible. People see glimpses of this future vision. Millions of books published over hundreds of years concern this fascination. Biblical adherents collect flashes of this awesome future. The Bible not only refers to a particular set of writings of the future, but also assigns a position of pre-eminence and authority to this future.

The idea of the Bible as a rising civilization has fascinated me over a period of many years. I never realized writing about it would be totally absorbing. I have even appreciated the stimulation from the work as a personal experience. Obviously, the work enters a domain notorious for controversy. Dates, for example, are subject to disputes. I have followed the progressive logic of events in the Bible without dates from Genesis to Revelation. This order is to present to the reader the Bible in a way readers have come to know. Slicing the Bible into parts is another controversy. Throughout this work, reference to the Bible means both Old and New Testaments with strong connections between the two. The Bible is an integrated book. Translations is still another controversy since wording differs, giving different meanings from each translation. The Scofield Version is largely followed in this work. Where a different version is used, it will be noted. Still another source of dispute is symbolisms. This is a large source of controversy since symbolisms convey different meanings at various levels.

I have attempted wherever possible to clarify my assumptions and defined my terms to keep communications clear. The Bible is not a book to be read and analyzed in a cursory fashion. The events, the heroes, the sites, the values, the precepts are more than literary descriptions. They are powerful productions impacting the life styles of people and the character of societies over the ages. The Bible must be carefully studied.

The Bible as a rising civilization is in open conflict with existing civilizations. This conflict has been in existence over many centuries, even millennia. At some future point in time, the Bible as a civilization will either experience a speedy demise or a long awaited takeover. It will be left to the reader whether the Bible’s future prognosis is a demise or a takeover. The time test of a long lasting civilization is not the size of its cities, nor the census of it’s population, nor the food products that are grown. Rather, it is the quality and morality of humans the civilization turns out. It is this quality and morality of life that gives civilization its longevity.

This book is eclectic. That is, perspectives and explanations have been selected and integrated from many sources where appropriate. After all, a knowledgeable person is the one who learns from many people. No person is

wise enough by themselves. Traditional Judaic sources have been referred and utilized. Christian material has been culled over and incorporated. Judaism and Christianity have their wide variations of understandings, but they also have their unifying concepts and practices. Professional and scientific sources have also been consulted. It's surprising how Biblical meanings and understandings have been clarified from these groups. In addition my own reflections and experiences have been added. In most cases, these drawn upon resources are not in the Bibliography. The references would be prohibitively long. However, where important, references are cited and included at the rear of the book in the section on references and notes. I am not original. What I have done is to collect and synthesize Biblical concepts and meanings in such a way as to seize an important perspective of what the Bible is trying to say. The best person to write this book would be someone who is an astronomer, archaeologist, geologist, physicist, scientist, historian, anthropologist, philosopher, theologian and culturalist - all in one. The big problem is that no such person with all these skills exists.

There is frequent use of "isms" in titles of chapters and sections throughout this book. The suffix "ism" is intended to devote a whole body of knowledge, principles, doctrines or actions associated with its connected noun. Thus Judaism is a whole body of knowledge associated with the Judaic movement. Similarly, cosmosism, in spite of its unofficial and unacceptable form, is broken down into "cosmos" and "ism" to indicate a body of knowledge associated with the cosmos. The same is true with Edenism, Noahism, Christianity, and Messianism.

My aim in writing this book is to awaken the interest and thinking of readers of all ages to the message of the Bible. Especially those who have Bibles on their shelves and would like to understand it better. The Bible can be found in homes, churches, religious facilities, synagogues, libraries, bookstores, offices and government buildings throughout the world. You can even pick up a copy at a supermarket, a used bookstore or a hotel room drawer. Its availability is as accessible as drinking water for those who are thirsty. Scholars may find this book oversimplified. I have tried to keep the style simple with few footnotes. You will note many subtitles and captions. This is to aid the reader to browse at will or return to a section quickly, long after the reading is complete. This book intends to be a road map for guiding the Bible reader through the Bible on a sure and valid pathway from beginnings to an eventual Biblical Civilization, operating on Planet Earth. The book provides the walker on the pathway insights as to meanings and explanations of the Biblical experience. It helps develop a needed faith for the pathway with sight for guidance with an inner eye.



I must apologize to the reader in advance for inadequate literary writing skills. The serious and important topics I have dealt with should be conveyed by a master writer. Unfortunately, I can only rely on my convictions and motivations to share with readers what I have come to know. I have written something for my own edification and trust it may be edifying to others. My special appreciation to the unrecognized and the unidentified who have influenced who I am and where I'm going. These are the same ones who have influenced the Biblical civilization, what it is and where it is going.

My special thanks and recognition are extended to two individuals: Mark Tribble, a professional graphics designer, who took conceptual sketches and diagrams I gave him and made them into impressive and insightful illustrations. His communications skill conveyed messages that went beyond words into meanings. Also, Kathy Calkins for her converting, productively, a rough penciled manuscript hardly readable to a final typewritten document to the printer. She kept the grammar and rules of writing to an acceptable level.

Paul Mali

P.O. Box 1928  
New London, CT.  
U.S.A. 06320

# CONTENTS

PREFACE .....	
CHAPTER 1.	<p><b>THE SEARCH FOR MEANING .....</b></p> <p>Raising life’s questions. Archaeologists dig for answers. Historians analyze records. Anthropologists look into culture. Scientist want facts. Philosophers ask why. Forecasters follow trends. Scholars dig for truths. General public ask, what does it all mean. The Bible as a book of claims. What is reliable truth. Why the Bible is God’s book. Why the Bible is difficult to understand. How to study the Bible for meanings.</p>
CHAPTER 2.	<p><b>THE BIBLICANS: A NEW ALLEGIANCE .....</b></p> <p>The Bible in the world of books. American Constitutional ideas from the Bible. Biblicans are a growing group. The Bible has a global distribution. The Bible is history’s best seller. The Bible is the most translated book. Scripture translations since 1500 AD. The Bible’s acceptance rate, globally, keeps rising. Biblican’s allegiance to the Bible is greater than to organizations. Public confidence to organized religion. The Bible is a synthesis of many books. Trust in clergy compared with other professionals. Three groups of Bible owners.</p>
CHAPTER 3.	<p><b>THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION RISES IN STAGES .....</b></p> <p>Factors shaping a civilization. Cultural stages of a civilization. Civilizations in crisis. The Bible as a hidden civilization. The Bible has a life of it’s own. The Bible’s awesome value. Archaeology helps bring the Bible to life. Civilizations have stages of growth. Five interconnected religions from the Bible. The Bible’s civilization rises in progressive stages. Cultural stages of the Biblical Civilization. Biblical goals.</p>
CHAPTER 4.	<p><b>COSMOSISM: THE PREPARATION OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION .....</b></p> <p>The awesome universe. Mindboggling statistics. Can the universe create itself? Earth’s visible universe among multiple universes. Theories and views how the universe started. Author’s view of the start of the universe. Big Bang Singularity. Cosmic plan. Perpetuating the universe. A designed universe with order and hierarchy. Mysteries of the universe. God Exists. Ten</p>

arguments for God's existence. The origin of God. Perceptions of God. The grasp of infinity with numbers. God as a spirit. Monotheism.

CHAPTER 5. EDENISM: THE SEEDS OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION .....

Great achievements have small beginnings. Archaeology confirms the Garden of Eden. Views of the formation of life. The origin of time. The origin of life. Universal dependency. Beginning of religions. Endowing humans with freedom. Government is started in Eden. Farming, the first occupation. Management concepts originate. Music is initiated. Vegetarianism springs up. The first wedding, family life and the home. Start of law and law enforcement. Evil and sin introduced. Beginning of lies, truth, knowledge and wisdom. Paradise lost - paradise to be restored. The first children. Start of population growth. Genealogy is the first information system. The first murder. The vision of the Messiah conceived. The first two civilizations. Brotherhood. The first prayers are institutionalized. The first preacher. Longevity of the antediluvians.

CHAPTER 6. NOAHISM: THE EMERGENCE OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION .....

A civilization of escalating evil. A civilization of Nephilms. Boat building and animal husbandry. Earth's water canopy and the greenhouse effect. The cataclysmic flood. Probable area of the flood. Archaeological evidences to confirm the flood. Post flood changes. Comparing life span before and after flood. Noah's covenant and living style. Ancient codes compared: Noahic, Assyrian, Hammurabi, and Hittite. Bloodlines and genealogies set in motion. Origin of races, nations and languages. Classifications of the Origin of Nations. Nimrod. Tower of Babel and languages. Semites and antisemitism.

CHAPTER 7. JUDAISM: THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION .....

The tenacious Jews. Abraham starting the Judaic link. Archaeological support of the Patriarch Abraham. God develops a covenant with Abraham. Abraham's experience with Melchizedek and taxes. Sodom: a rejected civilization. Job and his extremities of happiness and misery. Job's archaeological confirmation. Evil and sources of sufferings. Why does God permit evil in civilizations. The scientific references in the Bible. Archaeological confirmation of Israel in

Egypt. Israel's experience in the Egyptian Civilization. Joseph's practice of brotherhood. Why Jews indentured into slavery. Why prominent Egyptian civilization declined. Slavery - a destructive policy of a civilization. Archaeological confirmation of Moses. Eight stages in the life of Moses. The wilderness journey. Modern management and organization in 1500 BCE. Who owns Palestine. Tabernacle sacrifices and human development. Archaeological confirmation of the Judges. The challenge of holding the promised land. Contribution of the Judges to the Judaic Civilization. The kings in the united and divided monarchy. Emergence of the divine rights of kings. Synopsis of the kings of Judah and Israel. Temples - the sacred enclosures. Conquering empires and the effects on the Judaic Civilization. Prophets sent to change a declining Biblical Civilization. Judaism as a stage in the rise of the Biblical Civilization.

#### CHAPTER 8. CHRISTIANISM: THE GROWTH OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION .....

Judaic failure to produce a global civilization. How do we know that Jesus really lived. The many roles of the life of Jesus. Jesus as the Logos. Jesus as the word of God. Jesus as a teacher. Jesus as a servant. Jesus as a miracle worker. Jesus as a prophet. Jesus as a leader. Jesus as a mission. Jesus as the Messiah. Jesus as Priest and King. The chosen twelve Apostles. Traditional locations of Apostle's activities. Jewish and Christian views of the Messiah. Why Jews rejected Jesus as Messiah. Modern Jewish views of Jesus. The founder of christianity - Jesus or Paul. Antisemitism. Causes of antisemitism. Links between Judaism and Christianity. Early Christianity. Christian archaeology confirms Biblical history. Demise of the Paganistic Civilization. Christian Martyrs. The Christian Roman Empire. Formulating the Bible. Biblical doctrines of the early church and down through the Gospel age. Christendom in crisis.

#### CHAPTER 9. MESSIANISM: THE MATURITY OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION .....

The rise of globalization. Messianism age: a new frame of reference. New civilization overlaps with old. The early dawn of the messianic period is both dark and light. Life expectancy over time. Negative factors of the dark half-sphere. Positive changes of the sunny half-sphere. Messianism: the integration of Judaism and Christianity. Messianic disappointments. Why Jesus rejected as Messiah. Why Jesus is the Messiah. Jesus lineage. Messianic prophecies of the Old

Testament. Jesus’s first arrival predicted for 29-33 AD. Jesus’s second arrival at a time of trouble. Gospel preached as a witness to all the world. Times of great positive changes as Messianic Civilization moves in. Israel reestablished. Regathering Jews from the global Diaspora. Lessons learned from the history of civilizations: Value of life; evil experience; war experience; slavery experience; despot experience; government experience; justice experience; rights experience; materialistic experience; attitude and learning experience. Visions of the future. God’s outline of the past and the future. 2010 AD - 2050 AD predictions.

CHAPTER 10. REGROWTH OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION .....

The Biblical Civilization: decline or regrowth. Laws of Civilization: lifestyle; continuity; conformity; vigor; values; commitment; variation; achievement. Outcomes of the Biblical Civilization. God’s Civilization. Universals operating in God’s kingdom. The Little Season - the great test. Horizons and perspectives. Future encounters - Perfection of humans. Extension of body capabilities. Concluding population growth. Mind over matter. Accommodating huge global populations. Warming of the earth. New products. Colonization of other planets. Reflections on life’s questions: Who are we? What is the meaning of life? Why are things the way they are? How can we perceive God? What is the origin of the universe and life? Why is there evil? Where are we going? Will the world come to an end? Is there a future life?

REFERENCES AND NOTES .....

## CHAPTER 1

### THE SEARCH FOR MEANING

Raising life's questions. Archaeologists dig for answers. Historians analyze records. Anthropologists look into culture. Scientist want facts. Philosophers ask why? Forecasters follow trends. Bible scholars dig for truths. General public asks, what does it all mean? The Bible as a book of claims. What is reliable truth? Why the Bible is God's book. Why is the Bible difficult to understand? How to study the Bible for meanings. Systematic understanding method of Bible study.

#### RAISING LIFE'S QUESTIONS

“Unto you, it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God; but to others only in parables, that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand.” LUKE 8:10

Civilization lives under the shadow of an enormous question mark. Who are we? Why do we live but a brief few years? Why must we die? Where do we come from? What has made us like we are? How did the universe get started? How will it end? Why do I exist? Where are we going? Why is there incompleteness to life? Is there life after death? What is our ultimate destiny? Has one a purpose in the world or is life no more a consequence than the flowering of a plant which merely blooms and withers away forever? An attempt to answer these searching questions, more questions emerge. Questions which keep coming back with urgent regularity. Questions which help see life and civilization with all its many puzzling riddles. It's no wonder, the ancients assigned gods to the mysterious unknowns. That was their answer to the puzzling mysteries. Scarcely do we embark on pondering life's questions when new questions are confronted equally insistent for answers. The questions cannot be shaken off. If humans begin their journey in life with answers, they shall end with questions. But if they are content to begin life with questions, no doubt, they shall end their lives with answers.

Something strange occurs in the human spirit when questions are raised. Its a tremendous awakening toward the mysteries all around us and even within us. Questions heighten the awakening. It becomes a search for meaning. What does it all mean? Is everything we see and experience the way it was originally intended? Will everything change at some future point in time? As each question is raised, it is like picking up a puzzle piece. As each question is answered, it is like fitting the puzzle piece into a pattern. Picking up (questioning) and putting together (answering) puzzle pieces into a total picture will give us the meaning to life. But the search for answers begins with life's questions. See Figure 1.1.

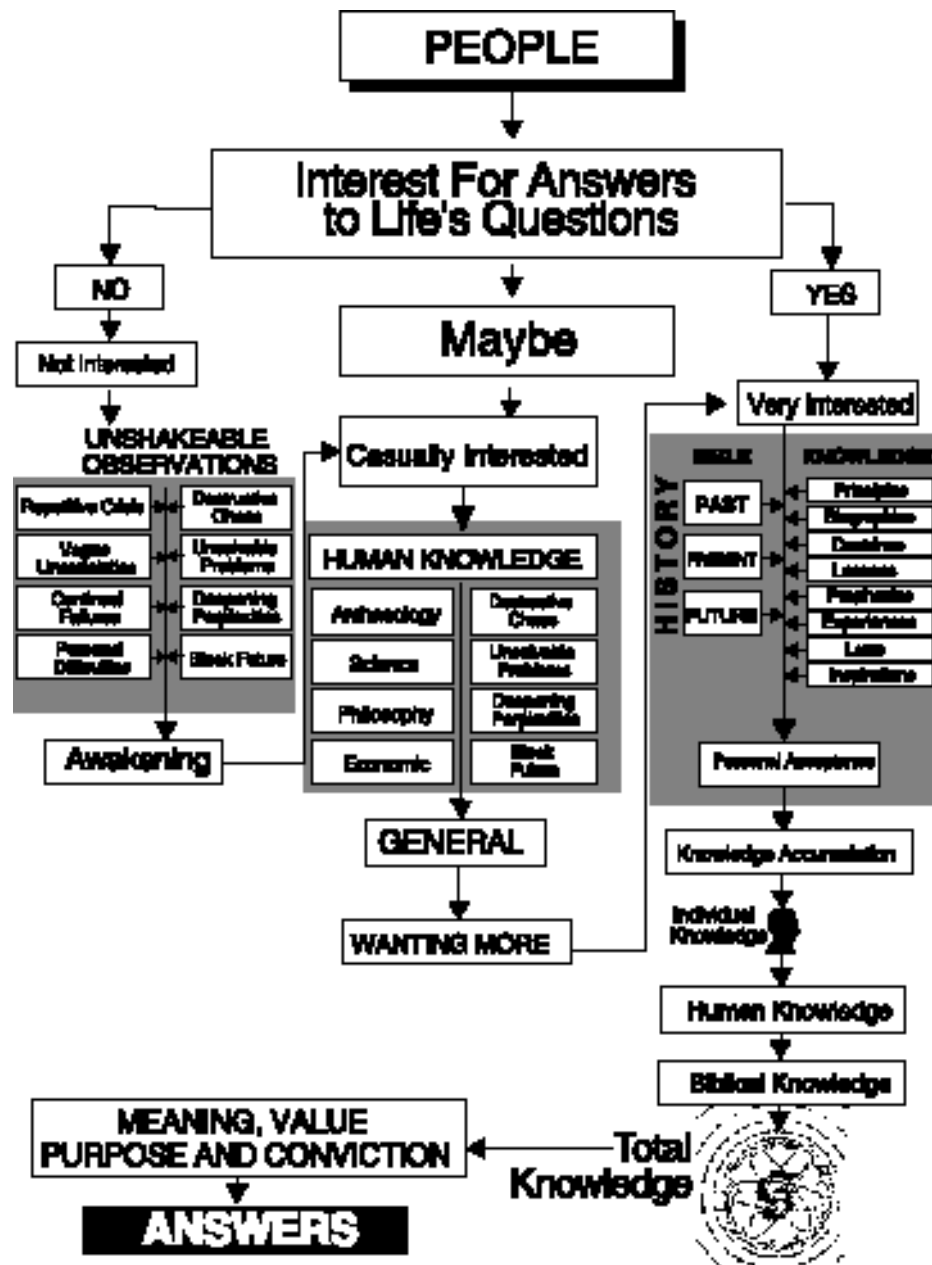


Figure 1.1 The Search for Meaning Starts with Life's Questions

Many of life's questions involve faith and religion. Faith tells us what the senses do not. Reason is our left hand, but faith is our right. Religion is so much a part of life and culture. Survey after survey<sup>1</sup> confirm the following: nine out of ten Americans believe in the existence of God. Eight out of ten Americans say they will be called before God on Judgment Day to answer and account for their behavior and accomplishments. Eight out of ten Americans believe God still works miracles. Four out of ten Americans attend church in a typical week. Nine out of ten Americans say they pray some time during the week. And, in a scale of 1 to 10, lowest to highest, eight out of ten Americans give the importance of God in their lives a rank of eight. The majority of these surveys say, that to most Americans, religious identification is at least as important as racial, ethnic or nationalistic affiliation. People in the past have been reluctant to identify themselves with religious affiliation because of government's policies against religious discrimination.

There are many people, probably the majority, who seldom reflect on the questions of life. They go on with their daily living - sleeping, working, eating, sexualizing, socializing, traveling, intellectualizing and leisuring. But this majority eventually experiences struggle, pain, suffering and reflection. They too begin to raise questions. It may be on their deathbeds that the awakening becomes intense. They realize they have never lived, but were always in the expectation of living. They ask, exactly, to what purpose have I been living? Has it had any significance in the larger picture? They see themselves designed to live on and on. Without choice their lives come to an end. Fourth century BC, Aristotle, famous philosopher and scientist in his reflection over life and death at the end of his life said, "a wailing baby came I unto the world. In trouble and sorrow have I passed through it. And now I go I know not whether. O, cause of causes, have pity on me! Death is a dreadful thing for it is the end." Was Aristotle referring to God when he asked about the "cause of all causes"?

Any attempt to answer these questions, we find ourselves faced with the issues of real world phenomena versus artificial work activities. The artificial world is not the safe haven for collecting answers to the questions of life. There are no answers there. It's a fantasy world. It is a significant cultural fact as we turn into the twenty-first century to see the decline of the written word with facts and the ascendancy of the age of television with illusions. The average American spends seven hours a day, passively, watching TV. There are more homes in the United States with television sets than there are homes with indoor plumbing. The line between truth and illusion, between reality



and artifice gets thinner and thinner. Real world issues and illusive entertainment activities become increasingly mixed up and indistinguishable. Where are the answers?

### ARCHAEOLOGISTS DIG FOR ANSWERS

There are many researchers who are digging for answers to the questions of life and civilization. Some do it in the ground. These are the archaeologists. They are like untiring detectives reconstructing past dramas with scanty evidence. The archaeologists study the dawn of life in terms of things made and constructed. They use Willard Libby's radio-carbon dating techniques to determine the chronology of the past. In the 1940's when radio-carbon dating was initially used, the origin of life was estimated in the hundreds of thousands of years. Today, the estimates of the origins of life and the species, as we know it, has been considerably reduced to less than 50,000 years.<sup>2</sup> This measuring technique uses the half-life cycle of carbon-14 and converts it to years. It should be noted, the Carbon-14 Dating Method does not measure ages. It measures samples. The correlation between samples and age is made through a set of assumptions. One of the main assumptions of C-14 dating is that the atmospheric radiocarbon level has held steady over the age range it is being applied. If the level changes, higher or lower, due to solar eruptions, earth's magnetic fields, or shielding cosmic rays impinging on the earth, the data collected will show longer periods than what actually exists. Another assumption is statistical sampling. Was there enough samples? Was the size of the sample large enough? How much variance is allowed in the sampling procedure?

The archaeological findings of ruins, relics and debris give glimpses of how life was in the past. Their excavations uncover the stages of human existence in past cultures. This gives an enormous understanding where humans have been and why humans are the way they are. Archaeologists continue to dig since the questions of origins are indeed difficult, but meaningful ones. Where archaeologists fall short in their answers to life's questions is in the future. Their focus on the past helps explain the present. But the present is not the future. The past either cannot be the future. This is for two reasons. First, the present is different from the past and continues in this differentiation as time goes on. Second, there is no desire to relive the past. Solutions of the past have been inadequate. Especially in connection with life's continuity. The good old days have not been that good!

Nonetheless, the excavated findings of the archaeologists give dramatic support to extraordinary spectacles of history, especially from the Bible. Famous Biblical archaeologists have uncovered a Jerusalem clearly connected with a Roman Civilization. They describe a Caesarea, the link between two turbulent civilizations, Judea and Rome.

They offer explanations why the Israeli's fleeing Egypt in the Exodus went south. They explain how iron technology changed the direction of the ancient world and how it gave the Philistines a military edge in their wars with Israel. The excavated ruins are like frozen videos which gives us pictures of the past with many gaps between.

Archaeologists claim their findings cannot prove the Bible, but can provide valuable confirmation of its contents. These archaeologists verify exact locations of Biblical events since they take nothing in the Bible by faith. Their discoveries tend to infuse a kind of vitality to the quiet chaotic ruins. These diggers of the past uncover written records, royal inscriptions, law codes, historical chronicles found in clay, papyrus and concrete blocks. But most important, archaeologists verify Biblical events which makes these events come to life. Here is a brief list of some confirmations. More will be said of these Biblical events later in the book.

1. *Garden of Eden location.* (Genesis 2:10-14) The area is the Tigris-Euphrates region of four rivers now accepted as the Fertile Crescent. Archaeologist W. F. Albright confirms this area as the cradle of civilization.
2. *The flood of Noah is attested.* (Genesis 7:1-10) A layer of mud under desert sands containing the graves of the Sumerian Kings, indicate a catastrophic flood occurred about 4,000 B.C.
3. *Abraham from City of Ur verified.* (Genesis 11:31-32) Excavated brickwork into a stepped pyramid called the "Zaggurat" gives evidence of the birth place of Abraham.
4. *Sodom was destroyed by fire.* (Genesis 18-19) Ruins of the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah have been discovered submerged beneath the southern section of the Dead Sea.
5. *Hebrew Joseph was a Grand Vizier in Egypt.* (Genesis 41) Joseph's name is recorded in the town of Medinet-el Faeyum, 80 miles south of Cairo.
6. *String of Egyptian forts.* Recent excavations along Sinai's Mediterranean coast confirm the Exodus journey of the Hebrews. The journey has long puzzled scholars for why Moses would lead his people out of Egypt through the Sinai wilderness instead of the shorter coastal route.
7. *First five books written by Moses.* (Deuteronomy 31:24) Cuneiform written clay tablets were found written before time of Moses. Moses was a compiler, editor and author.

8. *Walls of Jericho fell flat when trumpets blew is confirmed.* (Joshua 10) Archaeologists digging in Jericho discovered the ruined walls in which the out wall fell outward and downward while the inner wall fell opposite.
9. *Life and death of Jesus confirmed in historic documents.* Josephus wrote of the Christian community and Jesus in Antiquities chapter 20:9 par. 200. Tacitus, Roman historian cited Jesus in his annals chapter 15:44 and the Roman Suetonius described the Messianic movement of Jesus in his book “The Twelve Caesars.”
10. *Destruction of Jerusalem and scattering of Jews in AD 70 confirmed.* (Luke 21) Archaeologists have found no evidence of Israel’s existence after 70 AD, not even a tombstone with a Jewish inscription. But much was found for its existence prior to AD 70. The Jewish cemetery in the Kidron Valley, the largest Jewish cemetery in the world containing 70,000 graves was not changed until recent times. Of the hundreds of thousands of artifacts found by archaeologists, not one has ever been discovered that contradicts or reflects the Bible. Each confirms and verifies the facts of the Bible.

The growth and development of archaeology is indeed a fascinating story in it’s own right. The field is growing in leaps and bounds. Figure 1.2 gives a conceptual sense of the start of archaeology and it’s growth today. The richest area for exploration has been in the Middle East and the eastern Mediterranean regions. The findings in these areas bear directly on the Bible itself. Today over 500,000 artifacts have been found that bear directly or indirectly with the Bible. The archaeological discoveries have accelerated in recent times. The discoveries provide hard evidence for a number of Biblical events that have been widely dismissed as myths and fables. Individual discoveries are important, but together, all Biblical discoveries, give a strong support to believers who have taken these events on faith.

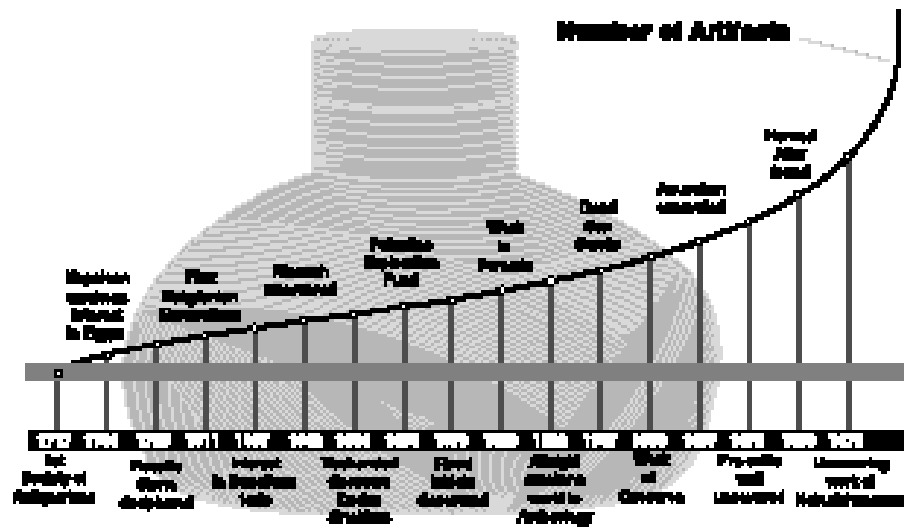


Figure 1.2 Conceptual Accumulation of Archaeological Artifacts

## HISTORIANS ANALYZE RECORDS

There's a second group doing some digging for answers to life's questions. They do it in the hidden documents of the past. These are the historians. History is the memory of past experiences that have been preserved. Historians are like the legal mind trying to simplify complex phenomena, differentiate bias reporting, separate exaggerated observations and weigh and judge meanings as to cause and effect. They offer explanations of the human experience as a movement toward the future. Historians search for the meaning of history. After the trauma of two world wars within one generation; the nightmare of Hitler's Jewish holocaust; the futility of Vietnam; the urgent police actions of Iraq, Somalia, Haiti and Bosnia; historians are raising questions, are we learning lessons from these experiences? Are we doomed to repeat them? They want a clarification of the goals to which we are directed. It's a cry-out for an answer to the old question of the meaning of history. We must remind ourselves that history as it is written is quite different from history as usually lived. The historian records the exception because it is interesting, because it is exceptional, because it is noteworthy. But would these records reveal the norm - the average?

Historians know, somehow, the meaning of history as connected with the trends and directions of history. This is difficult to define. One needs to live over many centuries to see the overall journey of humankind. Nonetheless, if one can control the direction of history, the final arrivals can be where they want it to be. But there are errors in the utilization and recording of history. Less than one percent of the human past is revealed in written documents. The remaining 99 percent have left no written records. This suggests only a tiny fragment of human history has become aware that there is a history. Only a tiny fragment, the one percent, of the human experience is available for lessons to apply to new situations. If much of the human experience is lost, much of the lessons are lost. The important

lessons may have gone down the drain with the 99 percent that was never recorded. Especially is this true where valuable experiences have been screened, concealed or censored because of an edict or administrative cover-up. This is a double loss. One for the period of its time and the other for future generations. When negative experiences which produce valuable lessons are lost, humankind is doomed to relive them. Those experiences that were recorded, the one percent, are they without bias? The primary sources of these records are: documents in archives, eye witness reports and recollections, diaries, letters, newspapers, books and other contemporary publications. These records tend to be bias by the one recording it. Human experience is subject to too much accident and choice for perceiving and evaluating the totality. Few recorders guard against their own biases of race, nationality, gender and preference. History is being made so fast that its taking humankind often by surprise. We live at a point in history where change is so speedy that we begin to see the present only when it is already disappearing. Lessons to be learned from these fast moving scenarios are lost. This compels a society to repeat the same mistakes made in the past. The records can't keep up. The meaning of history is to set down guidelines for living into the future based on the present and past. If there is no future better than the present and past, then there is no meaningful history. See Figure 1.3.



**Figure 1.3 Watch History for Meanings**

Historians have contributed a great deal to bridge the secular world with the Biblical world. The astute historian does not ignore the history of religion, particularly Biblical history. To do this is to accept the untenable assumption that there is no relationship between event and ideology or even between ideology and event. The relationship between event and ideology is characteristic of the Bible. Its like saying revolutions and cultural changes arise from ideas. Without ideas, there would be no revolutions or changes. There would only be static and stationary scenarios.

Historians have woven Biblical perspectives with secular progressions. They have knitted together advances of the human experience into timetables. Egypt's early history had thirty dynasties. The historians have grouped these dynasties into periods. The pre-dynasty period (4500 - 3500 BC), the Old Kingdom period (3500 - 2400 BC), the Middle Kingdom period (2400 - 1600 BC), and the Empire period (1600 - 1100 BC). These are useful divisions to trace the Hebrew sojourn in Egypt and their subsequent exodus to Palestine.

The historian's perspectives and timetables help in seeing progression with culture. With this progression, there exists a rising crescendo of valuable human experiences. If only humankind can see the most valuable asset acquired over the ages. The asset is not gold, silver, land nor money. It is the human experience. Historians have helped immeasurably to collect and record these experiences for a global view in the progression toward the future. They have also helped to rid the myopic and parochial views in favor of the global and international views. Weaving the religious experience with other human experiences is providing a better perspective of humankind's journey into the future.

#### ANTHROPOLOGISTS LOOK INTO CULTURE

There's a third group doing some digging for answers to life's questions. They look at the patterns of life styles. These are the anthropologists. They are like the practicing behaviorists who theorize how people have become as they are and why past behavior emerged as it did. Anthropologists collect what might seem trivia such as clay pots, myths, musical folklore and decaying bones. But with these unusual collections, they examine evidences of cultural living or parts of cultural living to refabricate an unknown past. These evidences add to our knowledge of the origin and distribution of races, languages, music, art and social customs.

Anthropologists are concerned with cultural changes. They examine how people adjust to these changes. This often explains what shaped the character and morality of people. The changes are often introduced by cultural innovations of the cults. Cults are subsets from the mainstream culture. Cults emerge over the ages attempting to

change the overall society. When they fail, they go out of existence. Cults that succeed in changing the mainstream often changes the culture. Occasionally, they may even change the civilization. Christianity, at its inception, was a cult in the Judaic culture. Jesus was practicing Judaism when he introduced major changes. This shifted him from the mainstream to the extreme right. The apostles with subsequent followers did the same. This created a movement. The movement will bring in a new civilization. Thus, anthropologists dig for lifestyles, societal movements and cultural characters to trace relationships that have built historically the matrix of civilizations of the past.

But anthropologists are oriented to the past. They are like archaeologists. They do contribute to an understanding of the present, who we are and what make us the way we are. But little, if any, is contributed to where we're going. Even the interpretations of relics and debris requires an anthropologist to be both judge of what's important and a critic of what is not important. They do tend to view human activities as systems of symbolic interactions with other cultures. Their views are changing radically. Many 19th century anthropologists thought religion was an evolutionary linear progression from animism (belief in spirits) to monotheism (belief in one God). Today, many culture-sphere anthropologists have a different view. They postulate an original monotheism which was initially revealed to humans, but later experienced a falling away.

#### SCIENTISTS WANT FACTS

There is a fourth group digging for answers to the surrounding mysteries. They dig into the natural phenomena of the environment. These are the scientists. Religion and science have battled over the many centuries with regard to explanations on the origin of the universe and humankind. Most of the battles have been between unproven scientific theories and unreasonable religious interpretations of the Bible. When theory has gathered sufficient data to make it factual and religious group's interpretations become reasonable with Biblical perspectives, the battles dissolve. This is saying there is no conflict between science and the Bible. There is only conflict between conjectural scientific thought and illogical Biblical explanations. Besides there can never be conflict between the Bible and science for the author of the Bible is also the author of the scientific principles which govern everything between the universe and the atom and from the snowflake to the quasar. When the conflicts are removed, science and the Bible are harmonious. After all, science and the Bible are two great systems of thought. One for the environment and the other for the spiritual. Science investigates, religion interprets. Science gives humans knowledge for needed power. Religion gives humans wisdom to control. Science deals mainly with facts. Religion

deals mainly with values. Science wants to accumulate facts. Religion wants to tie these facts into a chain of truths. The two are not rivals! They are complimentary! Seventeenth century Galileo saw the harmony between the two when he said, “Scriptures cannot err but are often misunderstood”. Science could accuse religion over history of being rich in principles, but poor in facts. Religion could indict science in the same historical period of being rich in facts but poor in principles. When these two systems of thought are brought together, humankind will be both rich in facts and principles.

Convergence between these two systems of thought have come closer over the years. This is seen in Stephan Hawking’s recent statement,<sup>3</sup> “If we discover a complete Theory of Everything (TOE), we shall all, scientists and ordinary people, be able to take part in the discussion of why it is that we and the universe exists. If we find the answer to that, we would truly know the mind of God”. Science and the Bible must stop being adversaries. They both have the same mission of clarifying and understanding the surrounding mysteries. They both stumble and make mistakes. They both can learn from one another by supplying what each do not have. Science cannot ignore questions of value and religion cannot ignore questions of fact. Science can remove ignorance and superstition from religion. Religion can give character and spirituality to science. Good science and good theology go hand-in-hand.

Scientists pursuit of facts is and continues to be an enormous contribution to the knowledge of life and its environment. But, all facts have not been identified. The search continues. There are still many unknowns especially in the spiritual realm. Probably the most important facts are still to be discovered. Additionally, facts established in the past have often been changed. They were not facts to begin with. Isaac Newton stated the universe had no beginning. it was just there. To him the universe was static with fixed distances between the stars. Albert Einstein changed this perception. He said the universe is moving in a certain direction with fixed distances between the stars. Edwin Hubble, in recent years changed both Newton’s and Einstein’s perceptions. He stated the universe had a beginning and is moving in every direction as if from one source. Hubble said at some very early period of time, a “Great Cause” generated an explosion with a singular and unbelievable hot gas substance that resulted in expanding masses as well as space between the masses. When the gases cooled, they formed galaxies, solar systems, stars and planets. The explosion is termed the “Big Bang Singularity”. This was the beginning of the universe. This harmonizes with Genesis 1:1, “In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth”.

PHILOSOPHERS ASK “WHY”?



Philosophers are a fifth group digging for the big questions of life. They dig into the causes of the nature of things. They are always asking the question “why”. Their chief tools are inquiry and analysis. They examine the mysteries around us and even within us. Philosophers involve themselves into many disciplines - science, mathematics, logic, religion, economics, metaphysics and ethics. It has been suggested philosophy is a field with a long history and no future. It is fated to disappear when all of its component disciplines are made knowable. Philosopher’s search for truth uncovers wisdom, beauty and goodness as manifested in and through nature. This search generates knowledge and how to act on that knowledge.

In early civilizations, the philosophers focused originally on metaphysics. Later, this was broadened to include ethics and morality. Today, they are looking at religion and values. They raise the age-old questions: Is there an overall plan to life? How may one pursue happiness? Is there life after death? How can one live beyond the level of survival? Is there truth in religion? This inquiry and analysis has helped humankind through history with needed reflections as to what its all about.

The philosopher’s tools of “why”, “where”, and “how” have been of great benefit to reducing the mysteries. But are we able to know everything with just these tools. Hardly! New knowledge always seem to be veiled with obscure and dark concealing layers. These inquiring tools often do not help until the layer is removed or there is a breakthrough. New knowledge results from these breakthroughs. The inquiring tools are not very helpful for those things we cannot see - a mother’s love, the unifying affects of gravity, thoughts generated in the brain, and the aging process of humans. These unseen things appear to be the most important factors in life. They resist the philosophers questions of “why”, “where”, and “how”. Yet breakthroughs must start somewhere, so thinking and analysis of the philosophers is a must.

#### **FORECASTERS FOLLOW TRENDS!**

Forecasters are a sixth group of diggers for answers to the big questions of life. They dig into the trends and movements as forces directing the world into the future. Forecasters claim trends are slow to form, and not always easy to identify, but once in place, they influence for some time what is to happen, when and where. Eventually, the confusion of the present will resolve itself into some sort of order in a next period. Many see forecasting as the modern day crystal ball. One look into the ball and a future event is seen to help, in a practical way, present day decision making. Most trends are presented in a negative way. This is no different than culture in general. 80

percent of daily activities, conversations, and interpersonal relationships are done in a negative fashion. As if something is expected to go wrong. As if people have a “misery factor” operating in their lives. This negative drift develops and even intensifies a deep sense of urgency. Thus we see forecasters identify possible nuclear accidents, worldwide unemployment through economic despair, conflicting ideologies, distrust of government, breakdown in the social mores, uncivilized behavior, expanding drug abuse, and insufficient food for the population explosion. John Naisbitt, in his book<sup>4</sup> “Megatrends 2000”, claims the millennial year 2000 AD is operating like a powerful magnet on humanity compelling us to reexamine ourselves, our values, and our inhibitions. He sees future changes in the character of society, redirections of high technology, broadening of economics for survival, shifts in the management of organizations, acceleration of participative democracy, renewed emphasis on the individual, hierarchies moving toward networking and the religion revival of the new millennium.

The forecaster’s practice of dividing surveys and activities into categories lose the interactive and interdependent effects of the categories. This renders human activities and life itself simplistic, superficial and disconnected from the totality. Nonetheless, forecasters have provided a useful service about the future. Even though forecasts are short-lived, seven to ten years. This is a short future. Most trends are based on surveys of what’s on the minds of people, especially youth. A collection of expert opinions are considered for their views in a Delphi process. Data collection is often employed. Extrapolation of the data forms the trends. Variance of the trend is often ignored. If the range is wide, the trend is an average. If the range is narrow, the trend becomes authentic.

As useful as these techniques may be, they cannot forecast the powerful surprise of breakthroughs. Its the breakthroughs that affect civilization and life significantly. Nobody forecasted OPEC’s oil cartel to hold prices at a high level and nearly ruin the world’s economy. Nobody forecasted the demise of communism and the breakup of the Russian empire. No one can predict the earthquakes, the hurricanes, the floods and other natural disasters that give terrifying nightmares. Nobody predicted the unification of Germany and its subsequent effect on Europe. Its the startling breakthroughs that significantly affect the course of societies. Biblical prophecies are not trends. They are breakthroughs of existing trends. Forecasters fall short in illuminating the path to our ultimate destiny. Nonetheless, they are useful in sensing movements toward a shore-range future.

**BIBLE SCHOLARS DIG FOR ANSWERS**

There's a seventh group doing some digging for answers to life's questions. They dig into the Bible. They examine the beliefs, the history, the laws, the visions, the promises, the values and the lifestyles of Biblically motivated people. These are the Bible scholars. They have uncovered windows into the Bible. These windows allow viewers to peer into the past and with a turn, see faint outlines of the future. As one looks out of these windows, one sees that life is a tiny fragment between two eternity's, influenced much that has preceded and much that will follow. Thousands of Bible scholars and writers both Jewish and Christian have provided a matrix of perspectives in which to understand the "message" of the most read and analyzed book of the ages. As one looks through the scholar's windows, one sees more than a perspective, but a movement. A movement of people through time with a central theme reaching for goals in a long range future. The Bible seems to be a history of a struggle between good and evil, between morality and immorality and between an existing civilization and a new civilization. This new civilization is often referred to as "the kingdom". Bible scholars have emphasized to understand human history and human lifestyles, it is necessary to understand faith and religion. These have been with humankind from eons of time. The world we live in is still fundamentally religious. People have turned to religion not only for moral guidance, but also for answers to life's questions. 125 million Americans go to church services every Sunday hoping to get answers to life's questions. The history of religion is more than a chronicling of events. It is an interpretation of these events to give meaning of life as it is connected to the vision and promise of the future. If there is no vision or promise, there is no meaning to life.

No book in the whole history of humankind has had a developmental influence in the character and direction of Western Civilization and indirectly Eastern Civilization as the Bible. Michael Hart in his book<sup>5</sup> of the 100 most influential people in human history identified and ranked 100 people who had the greatest effect on history and the thinking of the world. Is it surprising that 86 of the list were born, raised, and educated in the Western Civilization. Most of them were influenced and affected by the Judaic-Christian environment in which they were a part. Considering the tens of billions of individuals who ever lived, 86 are truly monumental figures of history. Of course, most are dead, but is it not true there are times when dead men are worth more than living ones?

The Bible has an inexhaustible vitality that is amazingly constant through changing centuries. It is at the heart of Judaism and in the spirit of Christianity. It even generates passionate devotion from Islam, Hinduism and Buddhism. The Bible has an amazing following - rabbis, priests, ministers, clerics, elders, scholars, professors, evangelists,

researchers, preachers, teachers, students and an enormous populace in the hundreds of millions. They spend their lives with the Bible - studying it, analyzing it, debating it and even disdaining it. Sometimes they divide the Bible into parts of acceptability and unacceptability. They even add other contents to enhance the Bible's relevancy only to experience an irrelevancy. Voltaire once said the Bible will be a short-lived book lasting only one hundred years. It is now at least 400 years since he made that statement. His books are hardly read. One can even acquire a Bible from the historic Voltaire's home. The moral code of the Bible is based on Judaism and Christianity which produced the standards, codes and laws of right and wrong for centuries. This makes the Bible the greatest gift since, apart from it, we would not know right from wrong.

#### GENERAL PUBLIC ASKS "WHAT DOES IT ALL MEAN?"

This is the eighth group who rarely reflect and focus on life's questions. This is a huge group. In today's times, the masses are numbering nearly six billion people - the largest in history. This multitude is wondering if life is more than its eight major activities: *sleeping*, the daily suspension of bodily and mental functions for restoring itself; *working*, the exertion of skill and energy to produce or accomplish something especially to earn one's livelihood; *eating*, the consumption of food to derive nourishment and energy to perpetuate one's life; *sexualizing*, the copulation between male and female for both the expression of love and for reproducing the human specie; *socializing*, the mingling and participating with others in their activities and programs; *traveling*, the movement of going to other places, countries or societies for business, cultural or personal enrichment; *intellectualizing*, the activities such as reading, informing and analyzing to the many and varied problems of life. This requires applications of mental capacity and reasonings; *leisuring*, the activities of play, amusement or entertainment during free or unoccupied time. On a twenty four hour basis, sleeping, eating and working consume as much as eighty percent of an individual's time. These three are compulsory if one is to live and engage in culture. The remaining activities are on the basis of choice. Often, the choice is somewhat restricted due to government policy, cultural traditions, religious prohibitions or family constraints.

Nonetheless, there are small scattered individuals and groups of individuals in the indifferent masses who are raising important questions about the activities of life. These small groups are asking: "Is there more to life than the eight activities?" "Is that all there is?" "Is something going on that is important to give meaning to life?" "What should I know and do that is crucial to my future existence?" These scattered individuals in the populace are

pursuing these questions with methods of knowing acquired in life itself. They have used a trial and error method. This has often been informal, costly and disastrous. But, it has worked. They have used experimentation as a way of knowing. This is under controlled conditions. This requires a disciplined mind to achieve. They have used available information. This is probably the heaviest use in knowing about life. This is knowledge gained through communications, research, instructions, reading, television, educational programs and the varied forms of sharing. This is a very productive method of knowing except for the interpretations that are needed, conflicts that need to be resolved and contradictions that need to be unraveled. They have also used their own skills of observations. This is noting, watching, measuring and perceiving in the conditions or activities being observed. This has worked well for the skilled, but not the unskilled. They have also used intuition. This may be called “hunches” or “premonitions”. This is an internal, indirect perception of a fact, trend or truth independent of any reasoning or intellectual process. This is a very limited method. Finally, the small scattered individuals have used experiences as a method of knowing. This is a personal encounter or involvement in an activity, problem, challenge, task or pursuit. This method is by far the best and most effective way of knowing and learning.

In spite of these very useful ways of knowing, answers to the mysteries and questions of life are slow and gradual in their forthcoming. The answers are belated, lagging and overdue. They are often nebulous. Nonetheless, there are answers that have been learned by the general public over the years. Here is a sample list of these learnings which might be termed values. A value is a personal belief that one holds true. This belief is a conviction which guides a person’s thinking and behavior. These are values seen today which may change tomorrow. The values come from learning and experiencing.

a. *Classical Values (accepted by most)*

Life has purpose. Man can reason. A human is more important than the state. Do to others what you wish them to do to you. Man does not live by bread alone. A world of peace is a world free of war and conflict. Nature is beautiful. Children should be raised within a family. Free choice is everyone’s endowment. Happiness is everyone’s right. Experience is more valuable than knowledge. The Bible is a spiritual book. Morality is mind control.

b. *Modern Values (accepted by most)*

Success is defined by what one wants to accomplish. Wisdom is practical knowledge. A company is in business to make a profit. All people should be given equal employment opportunities. The government protects person and property. All people should have the opportunity to reach their highest possible educational level. An active life leads to much satisfaction. Productivity goes to those who pursue it intensely. Quality of work life brings satisfaction to employees.

c. *Obsolete Values (rejected by most)*

The earth is flat. The white race is superior to the black race. When the poor work hard, they will not be poor. Money is the root of all evil. Slavery is an efficient way to get work done. It's who you know and not what you know that counts. Needs of employees are food, shelter and security. Working hard is the way to earn eternal life. More is learned by using hands than using minds. To feel is more important than to think.

d. *Recent Values (controversial)*

Freedom without limits brings anarchy. Competition results in gain for the consumer. Hard work produces great rewards. Conflicts can be resolved at the conference table. Corporations should assume social responsibilities. A prosperous life will lead to a comfortable life. Everyone must have an education. Mathematical training develops a logical mind. A job should not be denied on the basis of religion, nationality, race, sex or age. The process of learning is more important than the knowledge learned. Traditional religion should be only a private matter with no public face. The church, the synagogue or the temple are repositories of wisdom. Equality is more important than excellence.

e. *New Values (being tested)*

The world should have one government for all people. There should be one language throughout the world. Every employee should be a manager. People should be paid for what they do and not for the time they put in. Everything is

beautiful in its own way. Leaders can be developed. Corporations doing business in work markets will prosper. Corporate cultures and subcultures are value centers and greatly affect what the corporation can become. Story is more important than information. Emotions trump logic. What we do is more important than who we are. My religion is only to do good. My country is the world rather than where I was born.

These values in one way or another have an effect on culture and civilization. With some, there is an enormous effect. They could hold a civilization in check. They could bring about its demise. They can give civilization its growth and expansion. These values are originally developed by individuals who hold them as beliefs. When the values become beliefs by all the societies, a global civilization can emerge. These values have, at least, helped us enormously with the definition of good and evil. Good is anything you believe and do that enhances or preserves life. Evil is anything you believe or do that diminishes or destroys life. Values from many sources are eventually synthesized. See Figure 1.4.

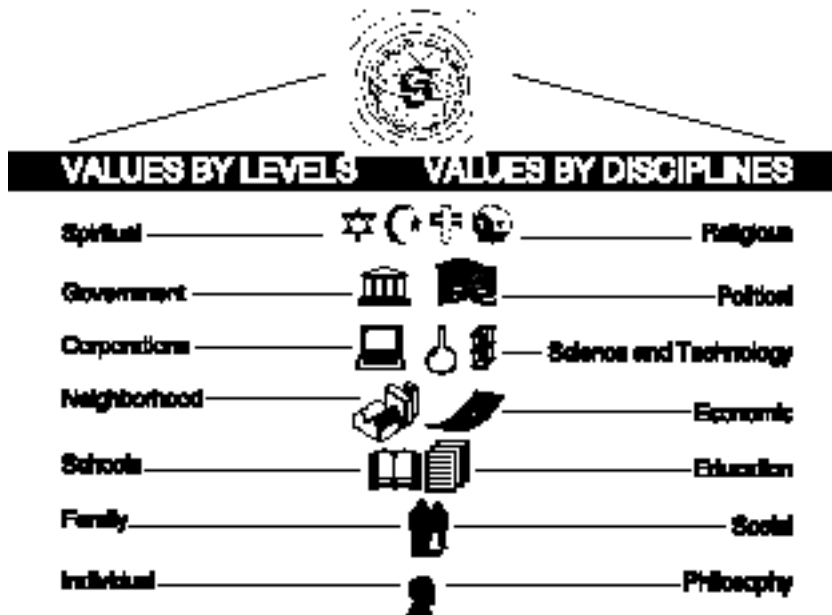


Figure 1.4 Value Synthesis From Many Sources

## THE BIBLE AS A BOOK OF CLAIMS

“God shall reveal even this unto you.” Philippians 3:15

As we consider and connect relevant and insightful contributions of the eight major groups of diggers along with the claims of the Bible, we note the enormous question mark hovering over civilization moves closer and closer to what it’s all about. Archaeologists outline where we were. Historians detail what has been. Anthropologists reveal how we were. Scientists explain why we know. Philosophers indicate what is possible. Forecasters predict what is coming. Bible scholars teach what ought to be. General public wants to know what meaning can we give to the gift of life. These eight groups of diggers for life’s questions are like the proverbial blind men who were asked to describe the elephant. As they feel a small limited portion of the beast, each was sampling a small portion of the total complexity. Each describes with their hands a correct view of the sample, but the wrong conclusion about the totality. The one blind man feels the elephant’s foot and declares the elephant is like the trunk of a tree. A second blind man feels the tail of the elephant and declares the elephant is like a rope. A third blind man feels the soft belly of the elephant and declares the elephant is like a soft wall. Each blind man was correctly sampling a portion of the complex beast, but incorrectly inferring it’s totality. It’s only when you stand back, like the storyteller of the blind men describing the elephant and view the complex elephant at a distance can one see and understand the complex elephant. In the same manner, to understand life’s questions, one must stand back and see as a whole, the past, the present and the future and how they are interrelated and interconnected. This distant view gives the vision of life. *Its this vision of life that gives the meaning to life - to see life in the past, the present and the future..*

The Bible is a book of claims. It claims to be the vision of life. No other book or collection of books has made that claim. It has had such a broad application to so many departments of life. Good health and life are so closely correlated that it is not surprising that the Bible contains many principles and practices that bear directly on health. The Bible claims to know beginnings and ends. It’s a prophetic book! It claims to give purpose for living and reasons for dying. It describes a future life and an ultimate destiny. The Bible helps in the search for meaning. It guides a person’s lifestyle. True, living differs from person-to-person, day-to-day, country-to-country. Nonetheless, the Bible treats life and its many activities in a general way as a movement of people as well as something specific for individuals.



The Bible claims there is a God, a supreme intelligent creator who has given a revelation of his plans and purposes for the human family. As creatures of the Creator, it's reasonable to expect a revelation from Him. This unique book is the oldest book in existence. It has outlived its enemies over thirty-five hundred years. The fact that this book has survived so many centuries is at least strong evidence that the God it claims as its author is also its protector. Bad men could not have written the Bible for this book condemns them. Good men could not have written the Bible for they said it was from God. They would be deceivers if it was from them. Their guilt from falsehood would not make them good men. The Bible claims it has one plan and purpose that permeates its pages from cover-to-cover. The opening pages speak of a lost paradise. The closing pages tell of a paradise restored. The intervening pages show the successive stages for moving from paradise lost to paradise found.

The Bible claims it is a special civilization awaiting a due time to be inaugurated into a global society. This special civilization is the central theme of the Bible. The principal movers of this civilization are the many heroes with their deeds from Genesis to Revelation. These heroes have successfully made many attempts to sustain the civilization movement until due time for its open implementation. These heroes now occupy a place in history as unforgettable. Their contribution to the Biblical stream through history has been invaluable.

The Bible claims humans are designed and developed one level below spiritual angels and one level above animal species. (Psalm 8:3-6) The nature of humans is a special design different from the animals in many respects. In one fundamental respect, humans concern themselves with spiritual matters. In another, humans alone can know the past and be able to reflect on the future. In still another, humans have the faculty of differentiating right from wrong. This is the endowment of morality. This endowment has been diminished in recent years. Some would like to remove the morality endowment from individuals and religion and give it to the government and legislation. This cannot be done since morality and reverence go together. Reverence is religion faced toward God. Morality is religion faced toward the world. In still another respect, humans have the endowment to reason, to create and to have freedom of choice. The reasoning abilities of humans is from cause to effect and affect to cause. This permits humans to trace easily seen effects back to hidden and submerged causes. Many people reason from things they do not know. When they do, they soon believe what is utterly against reason. The creative ability of humans is like the Creator. When verified knowledge, full maturity and experimental judgment is possessed by humans, they arrive in

the image and likeness of their Creator. (Genesis 1:26-27) All of the qualities described above will give the human race the guidelines to live in the ages of eternity.

The Bible claims it has the “best” answers to life’s questions. The reader must compare its claims with other sources. Certainly the Bible’s huge list of devotees is a form of indirect verification of giving satisfaction to the puzzling questions of life. Those who do not see insightful and complete answers is due primarily to the failure of grasping the “big picture”. It’s the overall plan that makes best sense out of the many conflicting mysteries of life. This broad and complete view explains the past and how it produced the present. It gives a view of the future and how the past and the present are leading in that direction. Faith in the Bible and knowledge of its claims has given millions of people a better life and an easier death. There is no other source that can compare with it. In subsequent chapters of this book, every attempt will be made to arrive at this overview. The overview provides the best satisfaction to the search for meaning. See Figure 1.5.

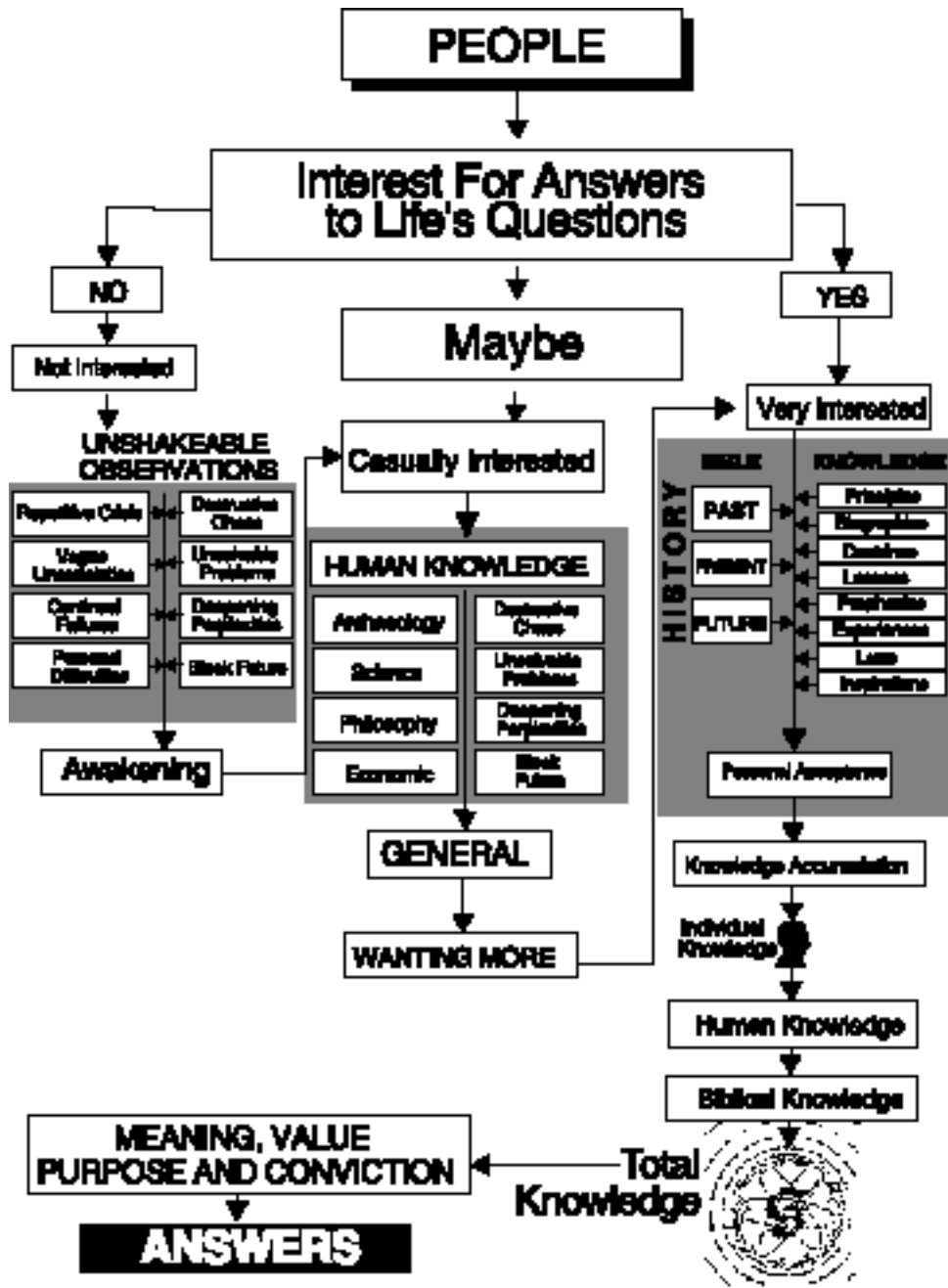


Figure 1.5 Answers to Life's Questions is a Quest

A train of inquiry<sup>6</sup> has been started about life's questions. Needless to say, these questions are both difficult and challenging. Many people do not reflect on these questions because of their formidable difficulty. They abandon the search. They go on living never realizing what's happening. Life's questions will be considered in this book in greater detail integrating the "eight digging" sources with the Bible. The attempt to answer these questions is like groping for the "door" of knowledge that is surrounded in darkness. Nonetheless, light does shine through the crevices of the door. The question of the meaning of life is both critical and central in dealing with life's basic questions. It subsumes all others. If you know what life means, you will then be able to know how to pursue

happiness as an ultimate goal for both this and the future life. The Bible gives the true meaning of life and of history. *When God created, his purpose was to make man in his likeness and image. Life means to each individual to exert the energy and effort to define what this likeness and image is and then proceed to transform one's self and civilization to that model.* In the search for the meaning of life we are faced with the unalterable choice that the will of God for us offers the final answer. Every facet of meaning finds fulfillment in the will of God. *Knowing the will of God for us is the greatest knowledge. Understanding the will of God is the greatest development toward character. Doing the will of God is the greatest achievement. The will of God has personal implications. What am I to do with the life that has been given to me?* This view gives meaning to the requirement of working with God to develop his image and likeness. The more His will is done by the more and more people, the more the Biblical Civilization will rise on planet earth. *The search for the meaning to life is to know, understand and do the will of God. But the will of God is the awesome discovery that this life is a personal opportunity to learn and earn how to qualify for perpetuating life into the ages of eternity. The real issue of life is establishing for ourselves the continuity of life. The real meaning of life is for all of us to develop the image and likeness of God in ourselves.*

Human desires, although not wrong in themselves do not provide answers to the quest for meaning. Real and lasting satisfaction does not occur when these human desires are met. This is easily seen at the materialistic level such as food. The satisfaction of a good meal is only momentary. Acquisitions of other material: money, homes, cars, clothes, etc., do not bring lasting satisfaction. Even with the possessions of all things, one will still feel haunted by the emptiness. To find the meaning to life in these false objects is a great delusion. The search for a lasting and permanent meaning for our lives is found in the formulation of the will of God in us. Nothing short of this "Will", will provide an ultimate meaning.

#### WHAT IS RELIABLE TRUTH?

"For God is not the author of confusion." I Corinthians 14:33

Truth is what God demands from humans. Humans must seek it, speak it, write it, walk in it and live it. This means unwavering conformity with God's will, his principles and his truths. Truth is presented in the Bible as a chief element in the nature of God. Man is bound morally to see and respond to all the demands made of him while living under God. This means there must be truth in man. Truth in man is in response to the truth in God. Truth seekers must come together and agree there is truth in religion. Truth in religion is of great concern since there is religious

diversity throughout the world. There has always been cultural diversity which is desirable as well as unavoidable. This results in cultural pluralism which makes life on planet earth interesting and amusing. But has cultural pluralism fostered religious diversity? Most emphatically, yes! Can there be a unity of truth in religious pluralism, no! The truth in religion is the truth in humans which is the truth of God. There cannot be any variations. For this reason, humans must become truth seekers. The professional truth seeker will follow the path of truth in religion and truth in humans in order to eventually find the truth in God. Pluralism is a desirable practice in all realms of action such as food tastes, dress styles, home building and geographic travel. It should not and cannot be a practice in those areas in which unity is required and of necessity.

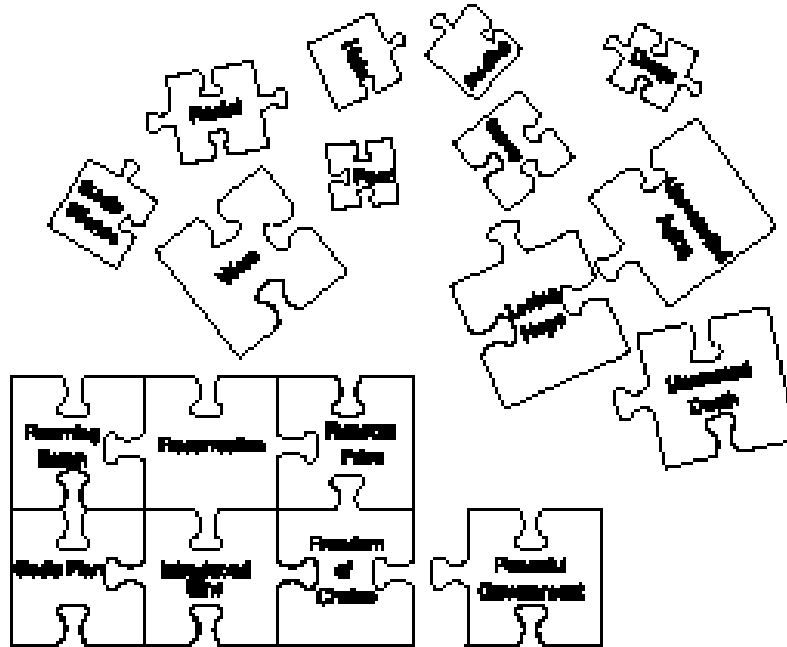
What is truth? Who has the truth? Is it only for the privileged few? Can a wide variety of views of life be correct? The list of questions go on and on. The conflicts also go on and on. What truth can we rely on with certainty? By definition, there's six points of view of truth. The point or points of view in combination would depend on criteria requirements such as time relevance, degree of verification needed, source of facts and information, level of accuracy and clarity and the purpose needed to make a decision. Here are the six points of view of truth:

1. *Reality Truth.* This is truth which conforms to verifiable reality. This is the agreement between what one thinks or believes and the way things really are. Falsity is the disagreement between what one thinks or believes and existing reality. However, many things in the universe are not easily verifiable such as faith, gravity, God and the love of a mother. But for those things are verifiable, reality truth is truth in conformity with reality or facts. That which is seen, felt or experienced by a verifiable number of people is reality truth.
2. *Logical Truth.* This is truth that results from the arrangement of ideas or evidences that leads to a conclusion from effect to cause or from cause to effect. Reality, which may not be verifiable is projected or extended because of a related series of sequences that logically leads to a conclusion. God exists since a series of related evidences are connected to an inevitable, logical conclusion.
3. *Common-sense Truth.* This is truth resulting from good judgment and the right decisions from many choices that one is faced with. Experience guides a decision maker to decide or to do to avoid those choices which leads to disaster. Undesirable experiences are avoided when one learns from these experiences.

4. *Moral Truth.* This is truth that conforms to the laws of God. Conformity is an accurate compliance to the will, knowledge and expectations of the laws of God. An adulterous person is immoral because that behavior is in non-conformity to a law of God. The immorality is termed a sin.
5. *Dispensational Truth.* This is truth pertaining to a period of time exclusively from other periods or at least not relevant to other periods of time. This is truth that has timely meaning. Noah preached the incoming flood which was timely for his period and not ours.
6. *Ultimate Truth.* This is truth that is clearly stated and understood about God, his character, his plans and purposes that are conveyed in the Holy Scriptures. They are statements unverifiable with reality, non-logical, nor common-sense. They are acceptable because so stated by God himself. The prospect of a life after death is an ultimate truth since stated by God.

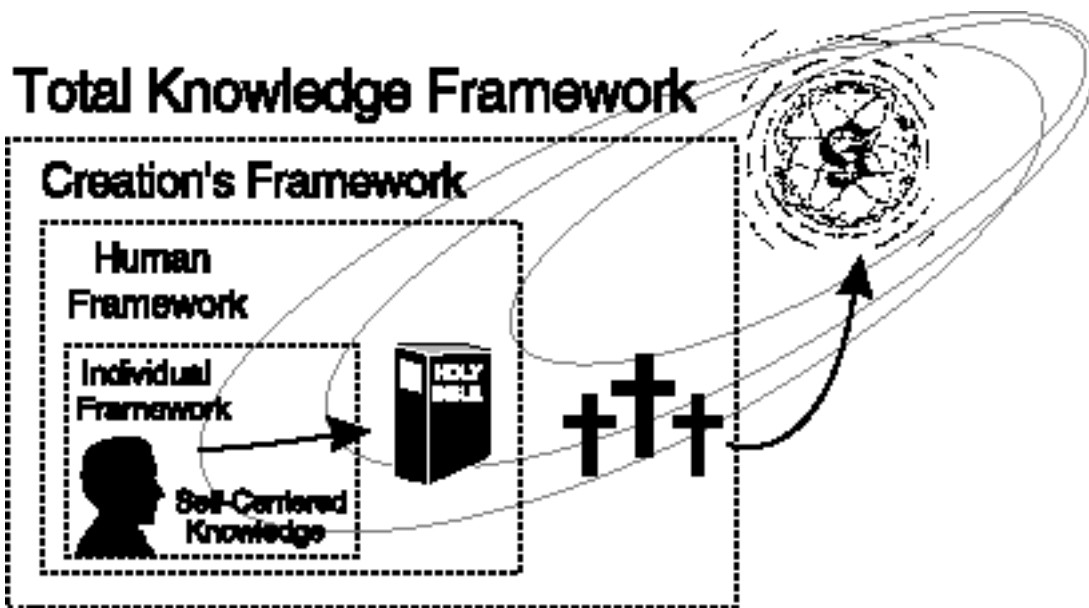
The expression of “being in the truth” means to be an active supporter of truths understood and collected from the Bible whether it be dispensational, moral or ultimate. It is “to feel” commissioned to speak and represent God on statements that God has made in his Holy Scriptures. The Bible claims, it is the truth. (John 17:17) But there are many and varied views of the Biblical statements. There are over 25,000 Christian denominations and over 350,000 churches in America. The number of some denominations are major, but many are minor, some active, most inactive. Throughout the world the proportions get less, but still many groups. World Judaism and Christianity are divided between and among themselves. One must raise questions, why all these views? Why all these churches? Why all these synagogues? Does the God of the Bible want his devotees divided? Which is the true group? Christians are having a problem seeing God and his truth clearly.

There appears to be two reasons for this. First, there’s a failure to acknowledge the Bible as a huge jigsaw puzzle. Such a puzzle consists of thousands of variously shaped pieces. These pieces must be put together. Some church groups have put some puzzle pieces together and then stopped. Other church groups have partially assembled the pieces in a different way and then stopped. Progressing no further. Putting the entire puzzle together requires pursuit, patience, time, skill and prayer. The puzzle is a huge secret because the God of the Bible is a God of secrets. (I Corinthians 2:7) He reveals these secrets to those who dwell in the secret place. (Psalm 91:1) God must be seen in the spirit. (I Corinthians 2:10-16) To assemble the puzzle and unlock the secrets requires being spiritually minded since God’s thoughts and ways are so much higher than human thoughts and ways. (Isaiah 55:9) See Figure 1.6.



**Figure 1.6 The Bible Removes the Puzzling Factors of Life**

A second reason for failure to see God's truth completely and reliably involves ignoring total knowledge. Most people assume total knowledge is available in society by just going down to the library or just purchasing a computer program. But total knowledge is not available. Much as been lost in the past, it is currently being collected and its production in the future is still uncertain. As the volume of the world's information increases, total knowledge increases. Humans react by confining themselves more and more to a special sphere of interest with specialization. Since specialties have grown in recent years, new knowledge and language has also grown. But the musician has a difficult time speaking the language of the theologian and the medical doctor has a tough time speaking his language to either. There are hopeful signs that humans are more and more beginning to move toward a synthesis of language and experience. Total knowledge requires efforts beyond a self-centered framework. See Figure 1.7.



**Figure 1.7 Total Knowledge is Outside the Individual Framework**

Total knowledge can be divided into two categories: the knowns and the unknowns. Since it is not possible to have total knowledge, it is not possible to be totally certain about our understanding. The knowledge that is known is pitifully a small fraction of the total. The much larger fraction, the unknowns, is what creates the uncertainty. This larger fraction contains the invisibles, that which cannot be seen. If people could see God, spirit beings, gravity, black holes, viruses, magnetic fields and the changing seasons, doubt would vanish. Certainty would be enhanced. Seeing is the strongest basis for verifying the truth. Meanwhile, faith carries people along with the unseen and the unknowns. It's faith that bridges the knowable past and present with the unknown future. The more knowns that are made knowable, the more uncertainties are reduced.

A question may be asked, how can we interpret the right understanding of truth from the Bible? It seems there are as many truths as there are people. Each person makes their claim. They employ the slogan "follow your feelings". Believe what seems right to you. Do as you please. One may bring themselves to believe almost anything they are inclined to believe. Everyone wishes to have truth on their side. All cannot be right! To increase the certainty of truth and assume the puzzle pieces are coming together properly, the following guidelines are suggested. All of God's truth must be scripturally based. Traditions or opinions are aids, but only aids. The Bible is more a text than a reference. (II Timothy 3:16) Puzzle pieces must be harmonious, piece to piece regardless of how these pieces



were acquired or received. This means Old and New Testaments, Judaism and Christianity must be compatible and harmonious even though they are transcultural. Truth cannot be based on just a part. This means any interpretation must be reasoned harmonious with the truths of all parts of the Bible. The Bible is a unified book. No contradictions or conflicts. (I Thessalonians 5:2) If there are these contradictions, translations and language must be examined and the conflicts reasoned for harmony. A musical orchestra is harmonious if everyone plays the same score. Truth comes from original manuscripts. (Revelation 22:18-19) Different views emerge over different translations. Language is a problem. Original concepts have been changed or omitted. Truth emerges from manuscripts closer to historic roots. Truth uncovers an overall plan. There are many questions of life's existence. Truth gives the best and most accurate answers to the mysteries that exists. Truth creates a system of thinking, like a key, that unlocks other secrets. The key uncovers God's plan. (Mark 4:11) Puzzle pieces have time fits. Truth generates a sense of mission. The work of the Biblical movement needs helpers. Truth motivates people to help with the movement. A truth possessor engages in activities to share with others who do not possess the truth. Truth squares with proven science. It harmonizes with valid scientific facts. Truth requires reasoning between the Bible and science. Truth creates a lifestyle. There is power in truth. Truth starts off as knowledge and then becomes a lifestyle. It is a living force that moves people to transcend self. (II John 1:2) Truth fits in time sequences. It clarifies the vision of the past, the present and the future. One cannot believe in a concept now when it was relevant or filled in the past. Truth must be based on sufficient sampling. Its not likely that truth is based on a single vague scripture or part of a scripture. There must be a sufficient sampling of texts to support a truth concept. Truth seekers are students of the Bible. (I Timothy 3:16) Finally, truth gives practical benefits. Peace of mind, joy of living, love in relationships, patience in difficulties, faithfulness in uncertainty, gentleness in conflicts, self-control in misuses, are examples of some of these benefits. (Titus 1:3)

Another way to look at truth as knowledge is to see it in three stages. First, knowledge of the present. Second, knowledge of the past which caused the present. Third, knowledge of the past and present which will cause the future. Most people live in the first stage - the present. They have learned many things about themselves and the environment. This knowledge provides useful guidelines for the present life. However, it does little for the past nor the future. A much smaller group are in stage two - knowledge of the past which caused the present. These are mostly professionals and academics who examine origins to explain the present state of affairs. They look at cause-

effect relationships. But they offer little for the long range future and new directions. There is still a third group, very small, in stage three - knowledge of the past and present which will cause a future. These are those who know the purpose of things from original intentions and how these purposes have been subverted. This very small group have knowledge of the unseen, the invisible, the spiritual since this is a critical part of the future. These people have a vision of the future and see how the past and present fits with the vision. The Bible claims it gives knowledge in all these stages. It gives more detailed knowledge of the third stage than any other source which deals with the future. The Bible's contribution to knowledge in the three stages helps with the search for meaning. Knowledge and information is the basis for truth and eternity. Knowledge that is being generated by the various disciplines will one day be integrated and synthesized to equip humans for an eternal existence. See Figure 1.8.

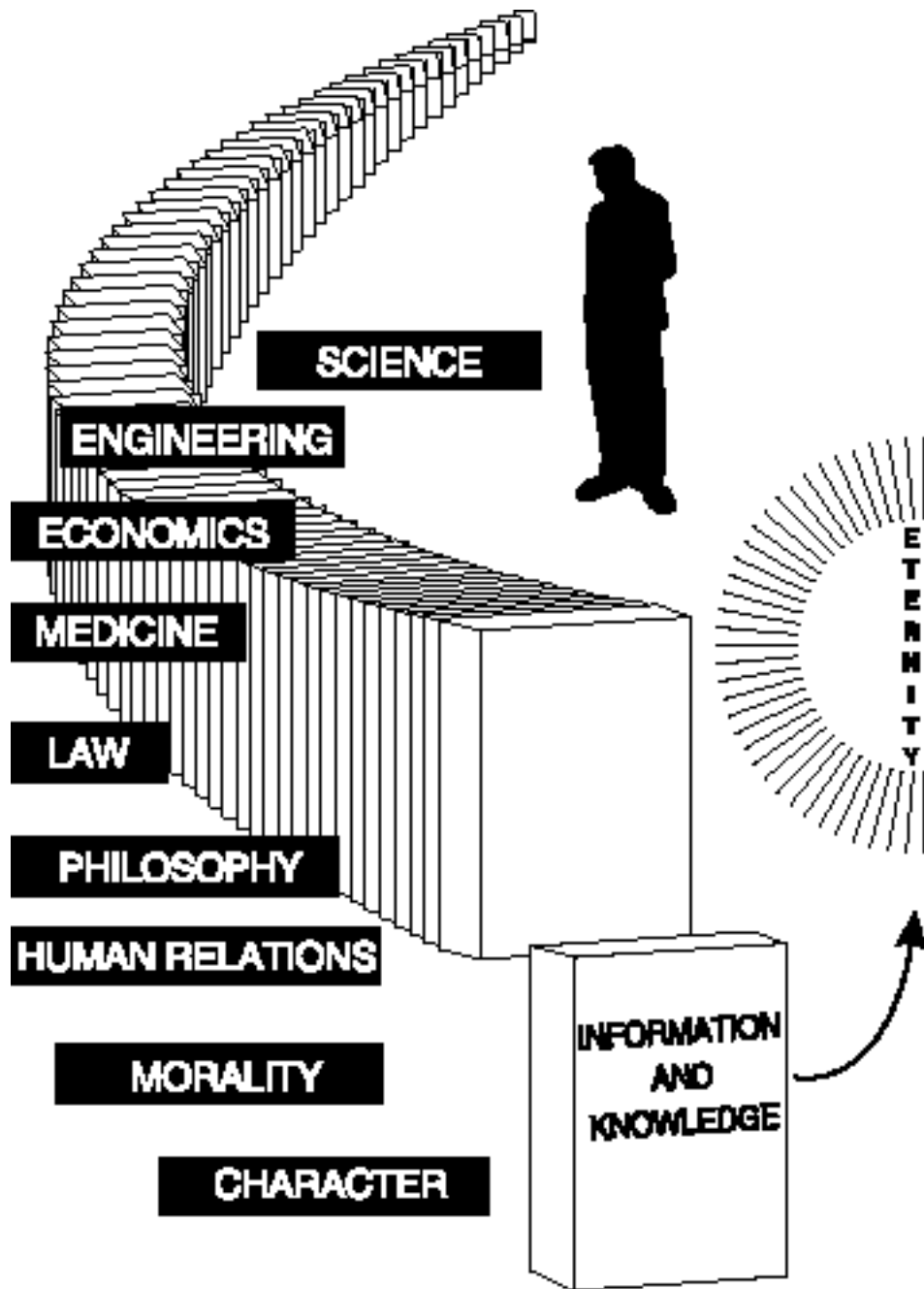


Figure 1.8 Knowledge: The Basis for Future Living

## WHY THE BIBLE IS GOD'S BOOK

“The Lord God of Israel said, write thee all the words that I have spoken unto thee in a book.” Jeremiah 30:2

No one needs to be convinced that the Bible is an extraordinary book. Publishers, authors, scholars, historians, librarians, bookstores and readers know that no book can last as a best seller unless it stands taller than others over a long period of time. One can argue, the Bible stands on an exalted plane, all alone. It has unique credentials. It has outlives the centuries. But why? What makes this book unique? Ten points will now be made to support the notion that the Bible is God's book to humankind. These ten points become evidence that in spite of human writers associated with the books of the Bible, the single author is God himself. Lets examine these ten points.

1. *The unity and harmony of the Bible attests to a single author.*

Forty different men with various professions such as kings, priests, prophets, prime-ministers, herdsmen, soldiers, judges, clergy, doctors, clerks, farm laborers, lawyers, politicians and fishermen living in different geographical areas of the Middle East wrote this book over a span of 1500 years resulting in a unique and harmonious theme. These writers did not nor could not collaborate! There was no prior outline passed on. The central message of the Biblical Civilization that would emerge is a consistent theme from cover to cover. The Bible contains one system of doctrine, code of ethics, plan of salvation and practice of faith. Because of the diversity of writers with different locations over a wide span of time, is it not logical to conclude that an external source who lived throughout this period supervised their work, inspired their minds, and guided their pens. This external source must be God!

2. *The survival of the Bible over time reveals its single author is also its protector.*

Less than 5 percent of published books survive more than 20 years. Less than one-half of one percent survive to more than 100 years. The percentage becomes insignificantly small, immeasurable, to see a book survive more than 2000 years. The Bible has had fierce opposition. It has been banned, burned, lost, hidden, outlawed, expelled, misplaced, misdirected, abandoned, absorbed, forgotten, ostracized, dismissed, excommunicated and destroyed. It has survived this onslaught for over 3500 years. Those who supported it have

been persecuted, exiled, condemned, hated, harassed, oppressed, distressed, afflicted, tortured and killed. Empires, as well as kings, governments and opposers have made a great deal of effort to undermine and destroy the famous book. It's survival has been a miracle. It is now the oldest book in existence. The Bible's continued existence can only be explained that its author has made it indestructible. The author is its protector.

3. *Prophetic declarations proven true could not come from the human genius.*

To predict that far distant future with uncanny accuracy is not a talent found among humans. The future is filled with enormous unknown possibilities and variable alternatives. Even following trends cannot produce detail events. How can we explain hundreds of prophecies which have come to pass with incredible details hundreds of years later. Daniel predicted the famous four empires; Babylon, Medio-Persia, Greece and Rome in a 1100 year span. Moses predicted the rise of the Biblical Civilization 6000 years in advance. Nathan predicted over a period of 1500 years the birth of Jesus coming from the tribe of Judah. Ezekial predicted the destruction of Israel 1200 years before it happened. Jesus predicted the diaspora of the Jews for a period of 1900 years. Humans can predict events in a 24 hour distance, but no human has been able to predict hundreds and thousands of years into the future. The Bible reveals the omnipotence and omniscience of its author.

4. *The Bible's contents and values are inexhaustible.*

The Bible is like a spring of water which never runs dry. The more you study it, the more it seems, the less you know. Every truth that is uncovered reveals more truths. People claim to have read the Bible hundreds of times discovering new truths each time. This makes its contents fresh in spite of its antiquity. How can we explain this marvelous feature of the Bible. It appears to be fathomless. Human books can be mastered and completely assimilated. That may be the reason their life cycle comes to an end. But the Bible goes on and on. What is being experienced is the infinite mind of God who created the Biblical phenomena.

5. *The Bible is God's communications to humans.*

If one believes in a God and the statistics support as much as ninety percent do, is it not reasonable that God would want to communicate with his creatures as to purpose, mission, explanations and expectations. It would seem reasonable that if God created humans with the ability to reason and raise questions, wouldn't He want to supply answers to these questions. Also, wouldn't He want to reveal something of Himself and His character since most of these questions are about Him. Additionally, wouldn't He want to give answers to the future as well as explanations of the past and present? God knows the human need. He has provided a book to fill this need. The Bible claims to be God's communication directed to the human family with sufficient evidence as to the correctness of its claims.

6. *The Bible presents the truth regardless of its consequences.*

Most books are biased and prejudiced to the author's theme, issues or declarations. Heroes are extolled, but seldom criticized. This, often produces a work that spills into fiction, but presented as fact. The Bible does not engage in fiction. Moses was a hero in bringing the Hebrews out of Egypt in the great exodus. But he displeased God at the waters of Meribah and lost the privilege of entering the promised land. David was a leader and king in establishing a Jewish polity and kingdom. But the account describes David as a murderer, liar and adulterer. John the Baptist was the greatest of all prophets. He even baptized Jesus. Yet the record shows he did not have any significant conversations with Jesus, he was neglectful of his support of Jesus and near the end of his life he became a doubter. He asked whether Jesus was the Messiah. The Bible is absolutely honest in its report. No attempt is made to conceal unbelief, wickedness, faults or imperfections.

7. *The Bible influenced and continues to influence a world in chaos.*

The Bible has been recognized as the torch of civilization. This important point was made earlier. The Bible has done more for the emancipation and direction of heathen civilizations than any other book. If these barbaric civilizations were left unattended, they would have brought the human race to an end. Draw a circle around the nations which have been influenced by the Bible versus those who have not, one can easily see civilizations in their

advanced state where the Bible is read and practiced. This unique influence is not arbitrary nor happenstance. This 1900 year old book provides moral precepts, cultural directions and civilizing principles to keep the world moving toward an ultimate destiny.

8. *The Bible has a power to change human lives.*

Biblical authors, in general, have always stirred the emotions and conscience of people. The Bible goes beyond that by influencing the human will, in a manner, that people will change their habits and behavior and alter the directions in their lives. The moral influence of the Bible has been powerful enough as to elevate a person to a purer life. In many cases where conversion occurs, alcoholics become non-alcoholics, smokers become non-smokers, liars become non-liars, stealers become non-stealers, sinners become non-sinners, etc., etc. There's a power to the book! The power would even prompt a person to lay down his life on behalf of others.

9. *The Bible is its own proof.*

Everywhere people demand proof of any claim. It is the scientific feature of human thinking. The demand for truth is a demand for knowledge, facts and positive assurances. This is not all bad. The many claims of the Bible are extraordinary. The one messiah with two comings, the resurrection of all people, spiritual and heavenly expectations are but a few propositions that are unbelievable. The Bible believers are devotees who simply accept these claims because they are influenced by the spirit of the Bible which has been known as the spirit of God. This personal experience becomes a personal conviction of the teachings, doctrines, precepts and claims of the Bible. The Bible is its own proof.

10. *The Bible contains a plan for all human beings.*

The plan is not easily seen. One must dig for it. The plan is one purpose which pervades the contents of the book cover to cover. This plan is the Biblical Civilization on earth. Its opening pages record the fall of humans and the closing pages describes the recovery from the fall. The beginning describes a civilization that failed. The ending cites a civilization found and restored. The ten points reveal a power to the Bible as seen in Figure 1.9.

# THE POWER OF THE BIBLE

- The Bible has changed and redirected civilizations.
- The Bible has altered and uprooted deeply held values.
- The Bible changes people with serious problems.
- The Bible outlasted any book in existence as best seller.
- The Bible's content is inexhaustible.
- The Bible can predict both long and short term futures.
- The Bible is it's own proof.
- The Bible has answers to the mysteries of life.
- The Bible's truth penetrates errors and fables.
- The Bible's extraordinary statement not from human genius.
- The Bible is God's message to humans.
- The Bible contains a plan for all humans.



Figure 1.9 The Bible is an Extraordinary Book

The above ten points give testimony for convincing us, that God not man, is the author of the Bible. The ten points are reasonable arguments that the claims of the Bible are really statements inspired and influenced by God himself. But this is not to say, Bibliolatry is the practice of Bible devotees. To elevate the Bible to a point where every word, letter or grammatical point was dictated by God as if by computer is to place the Bible as the new idol of our time. The Bible does have language difficulties, mistranslations, interpretation challenges, symbolic miscalculations and flaws from historic copying. Reason and compatibility with proven history, science and other validated factual sources is in order.

## WHY IS THE BIBLE DIFFICULT TO UNDERSTAND?

“My thoughts are not your thoughts neither are your ways my ways said the Lord. For as the heavens are higher than the earth so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts.” Isaiah 55:8-11

The Bible could have been written plainer and simpler. It could have been on a literary level such as a newspaper or magazine article where everyone can receive the same thought from it. If contemporary literature can be clearly and simply communicated with the general public, why couldn't the Biblical writers have done the same thing. God, who is behind it all, could have given us a Bible that would be so clear that two opinions nor two interpretations



could be possible. Why God has done this demands an answer. Here are several reasons which may satisfy the query.

*First, the Bible is difficult to understand because it cannot be read as any other book is read.* It is not the same as any other book. Its a special book. It must be approached differently. It's message is directed toward truth seekers. The truth seeker must find the time, take the time, consume the time needed for the pursuit. Study of the Bible requires careful examination of words, sentences, expressions, texts and contexts. It requires raising self-questions for understanding of its concepts. It will demand intense studying with meditation and reflection along the way. It would require a commitment to search and research. (Proverbs 2:1-9)

*Second, God is a spirit and anyone who wishes to understand Him or even pray to Him must do so in the spirit.* Trying to understand the Bible is trying to understand God. This understanding comes about to those who seek to understand the book. (Proverbs 28:5) God reveals his secrets and unfolds the mysteries to those who have been spiritually begotten. The natural, the physical, the earthly cannot see Him or understand Him since humans are natural, physical and fleshly. This is supported in I Corinthian 2:10-16. "The natural man receivith not the things of the Spirit of God, neither can he know them because they are spiritually discerned. But he that is spiritual understands. For who knows the mind of the Lord, save we that have the mind of Christ." This is what makes God a mystery. He is hidden and concealed from the natural human. God moves in mysterious ways because there is a huge gap between two natures: divine and human. Here are a few examples of the difficulties in understand between the physical and the spiritual: "Except ye eat the flesh of the son of man and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. He who eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood hath eternal life and I will raise him up at the last day". (John 6:53-54) Also "to deliver such a one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh that the spirit may be saved in the Day of the Lord". (I Corinthians 5:5) Also "Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord from henceforth, that they may rest from their labors and their works do follow them". (Revelation 14:13) Most religions are organization - centered instead of God-centered. When traditions and rituals are laid aside with a God-centered focus, truths emerge for the seeker.

*Third, the truths of God must be pursued intensely!* God does not reveal to all. God's truth's are not plainly seen, but covered. The old expression that the Bible is an open book is incorrect. It is a closed book. Open to only those who seek the truth. The truths of God must be sought after, pursued since they are hidden like treasure buried

in a field. One must acquire the field, and then dig laboriously until the treasure is found. There are many scriptures that speak of hidden truths as mysteries. Here are ten which contain the word mysteries: mysteries of the kingdom, Matthew 13:13; mystery of Israel's blindness, Romans 11:25; mystery of the translation of the Saints, I Corinthians 15:51-52; mystery of the high calling, Ephesians 3:1-12; mystery of the in-living christ, Galatians 2:20; mystery of the church as bride, Ephesians 5:23; mystery of God's likeness in man, I Timothy 3:16; mystery of iniquity, II Thessalonians 2:7; mystery of the seven stars, Revelations 1:20; mystery of babylon, Revelation 17:5,7. God's covering of his truths is like a secret place. As Job observed "Hast thou heard the secret of God"?

*Fourth, God's thinking is far above humans.* Understanding the Bible is understanding God. This is difficult. "As the heavens are higher than the earth so are my methods, my thoughts higher than your thoughts." (Isaiah 55:8-11) God's thinking, analysis, logic, method and rational is so far above humans that it's simply not possible for us to understand clearly and plainly his activities and his works. His processes are tremendously complicated and therefore much of it will be mysterious, uncertain and even unreachable. Take the DNA as an example. It is the basic unit of life with the most complicated process for bringing life into existence. The DNA molecules contain hereditary instructions for transmitting from parent cells to offspring cells. This is accomplished by progressive separations of strands of a double helix. This process is important in order to get a total replication of parental hereditary to their children. Take the universe as another example. Human perception of the universe is different than God's perception. In the universe, straight lines are curved. There is no concept of a straight line outside the earth. Blackness is not emptiness, but hard to measure particles. Stars are whirlpools of rampant suns that are expanding in direction while chaos and collisions are avoided. Objects that reach the speed of light are transformed into energy. These and others suggest one must rise up to God's level if you want to understand Him. Otherwise it will be an intellectual and discouraging struggle.

*Fifth, God uncovers his secrets to those who revere Him.* "The secret of the Lord is with them that reverence Him." (Psalm 25:14) Secrets are uncovered and made known to those who humble themselves before Him, give honor to Him, revere Him in heart and mind. Reverence for God means communion and prayer with Him. It means a deep desire to do His will and conform to principles of righteousness. Reverence for God for most people is once a week with a few hours. Organized religion with their memberships are having difficulty. In spite of the 90 percent who believe in God, only 40 percent attend on a regular basis, only 73 percent read parts of the Bible in one year,

only 42 percent regard religion as relevant and a needed part of their lives, and only 63 percent of the clergy feel the message in their sermons is right.

*Sixth, God is testing and evaluating the faith of believers.* “Thou has hid these things from the wise and prudent and revealed them unto babes.” (Matthew 11:25) Many will be confused. It is for this reason, the Bible is filled with parables, allegories, metaphors, similes, types and symbols. Unto the humble and the faithful are given the understandings. These are in God’s family. To obtain more uncoverings from God is to be part of His family, to stay in His family and to have faith in His revelation to humankind via the Bible. Too often we presume, hastily, that everyone who believes in God, also believes in God’s Bible. This is not true. Many believe in God, but do not believe God’s Bible contains His message and exhortations for humankind. The faith of believers is being tested.

*Seventh, God reveals truths in due time.* There is a time schedule in which certain truths are uncovered and made known. Truths long hidden in the Bible become providential. Certain people are selected to transmit these truths to God’s believers. Martin Luther was selected for a mission. It was not because he was a grand christian, or more pious, nor because he studied the Bible more than others, but rather it was because the time had come for certain truths to be made plain. Martin Luther was selected for this work. Note, Martin Luther did not add anything to the Bible. He was only permitted to throw focused light on statements already known to be there. Truths which were to be uncovered were made known because it was due time.

*Eighth, God does not intend to convert the world at this time!* This is not to say He’s not interested in converting the world. But rather, not at this time. The work of many people for the conversion of the world is huge. People sacrificing time and personal interests, laboring to find missionaries, laboring to raise money and laboring to bring God’s truth for reconciliation. These are noble deeds. But God has a plan and purpose which has been misunderstood. The plan has milestones of achievements in which truths will unfold at these milestones. The five milestones of Edenism, Noahism, Judaism, Christianity and Messianism appear to be milestones in the progressive unfolding of his plan. This and the preceding seven reasons answer the question why God gave us a Bible which is difficult to understand.

*Ninth, God uses symbols to communicate.* Scriptural content makes great use of symbolic language. Open the Bible to any juncture, one is faced with a symbolic form of communications. For example, the word “man” seldom refers to an individual male. It often refers to both men and women. It may often refer to the entire human race such

as mankind or humankind. Symbolic language includes signs, allegories, parables, types, metaphors, shadows, and visions. Unless a correct understanding is made about these symbols the Bible becomes a book of mysteries. In many ways it is a secret code of language. It appears God wants to keep things a mystery with the exception of those who study and dig for the meanings. (II Timothy 2:15)

*Tenth, and finally, the Book of Books has been mistranslated.* To translate ideas and concepts from ancient languages to modern languages is most challenging. Often there are no equivalent word-for-word replacements. Keep in mind the contents of the Bible contains various books written and brought together over a period of 1500 years. The earliest writing date 1400 BC to the latest around 100 AD. Scribal errors, language mistranslations, manuscript copying and serious manuscript omissions have created a gulf between the Bible and it's readers. The various interpretations have revealed infactions and disunities in the Christian movement as well as Biblical institutions. Modern scholars with their new translations have made an enormous effort to overcome language and word difficulties. An understanding of the Bible demands a research orientation to analyze and decide on what the text is saying. The King James Version contains some of the finest passages of English prose, but there are over 20,000 translations and language mistakes that must be dealt with.

#### HOW TO STUDY THE BIBLE FOR MEANINGS

“All scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction, in righteousness. That the man of God may be complete thoroughly equipped for every good work.” II Timothy 3:16-

17

The confusion over reading the Bible is caused by many factors which were taken up in the previous sections. Those who have come to understand scriptural content usually have a study approach or process that reveals concepts and truths in a clear and insightful way. This section will suggest a method for Bible study that is called the Systematic Understanding Approach. It was mentioned earlier that one cannot read the Bible like any other book since it is unlike any other book. Here is a list of guidelines that could reveal meanings and understandings of scriptural content. This is also a description of the Systematic Understanding Method of studying the Bible for meanings.

1. *Engage in word analysis.* Language continues to be a source of great confusion. The Bible has now been translated in over 1900 languages. Obviously, there are seldom exact word equivalents from one language to another. Those who arrive at true meanings are those who go back to the original languages in which the books of the Bible are written. This is Hebrew, Greek and Aramaic. Translations should be used as close to these languages as possible. Good Bible students should have Hebrew, Greek and Aramaic translations. Reading a text, each word should be clearly defined and understood. Concordances, such as Strong's Concordances, Young's Analytic Concordance and Cruden's Complete Concordance are helpful in finding the meaning of words in the text that's being examined while referencing other texts to add to clarification and meaning. Concordances are useful in identifying other scriptures that contain the same word. Thinking is based on words. If words are faulty, thinking will be faulty.
2. *Follow the context.* The contexts are the texts that precede or follow a specific text which influences its meaning, effect or interpretation. It is the circumstances surrounding a specific text. A judgment is needed to decide on the number of scriptural texts before and after that is needed for an interpretation to make contextual sense. Taking scriptures out of context lead to serious faulty interpretation. For example, one can quote scripture that the Bible claims there is no God. This is wresting the scripture. That is twisting or removing parts of the context. In Psalm 14:1-2, the complete text and context, "The fool hath said in his heart, there is no God. They are corrupt. They have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good. The Lord looked down from heaven upon the children of men to see if there were any that did understand and seek God." All words in the context should be analyzed to be sure their meaning is understood. Identify all the facts of the situation as well as the people and events mentioned. Extract the main idea or theme that is being examined from the context. The context will always determine the interpretations. Any kind of reading requires on-going interpretation. When one reads the Bible interpretation is risky as well as unavoidable since the ideas do not fall in the context of everyday living.
3. *Use cross references.* If there is something unique about the Bible, it is in the cross references. A text in one part of the Bible can be cross referenced, indexed or compared to another part. This permits exploring concepts, definitions and topics as well as specific words from different parts of the Bible. Cross references will guide students into principles which are the "diamonds" of scripture. It's these principles

that bring harmony from cover to cover. Most cross referenced systems of different translated Bibles resemble interlocking chains with many links. The links are extensive, bringing a single word or idea to many parts of the Bible. Cross references normally appear in the center column and sometimes to the right-hand column. The cross references of a Bible are important and extremely useful and the purchase of a Bible can be made on it's extensive cross referencing system.

4. *Analyze scriptures by topics.* Most concordances are organized by topics. That is, scriptures are arranged under each topical heading. The topical heading is usually a word that can be exhaustively studied by the many texts organized under it. The study of topics can be one of the most important approaches in the study of the Bible. It may not always eliminate contradictions, but it contributes a great deal toward interpretations. It permits the Bible in one section to interpret the meaning in another section. For example, the topic of hospitality can be basically defined as a principle or practice in the New Testament, but instances of application are found in the Old Testament.
5. *Scrutinize symbolic language.* The literal interpretation of the Bible of all it's texts will lead to confusion and contradiction. There is a great deal of symbolism in the Bible's content. There are other parts which require a literal interpretation. Topical analysis should clear up a search for an interpretation. When it does not, the correct symbolism can be found by scriptural parallels or the use of symbols in other parts of the Bible. *This is using the Bible to interpret the Bible!* This is a recognition of the Bible as the primary source of information about the Bible. Whatever meaning is adopted for a symbol, it must be harmonious with the context and cross referenced other parts of the bible. Let scripture interpret scripture. Take as an example, the animal metaphors used in the New Testament where a Christian believer is like the humility of a lamb, wise as a serpent, bold as a lion, and harmless as a dove. By looking into the Old Testament, attributes of the animals are described which helps understand their application to a believer.
6. *See the meaning of the text in the bigger picture.* One theme that has been stressed in this book is there is a big picture in the Bible. A theme that connects Genesis with Revelation. Scriptural meaning is derived from an understanding of an individual text as how it relates and fits into a meaningful big picture. The big picture answers the question, why has God given the Bible? What is God doing now? Where is God directing humankind? What has God given to the meaning of life?

7. *Establish the time-line implied in the scripture text.* The Bible has a chronological time-line from Genesis to Revelation. Every interpretation and meaning must fit somewhere in the time-line. The activities and scenarios of the Israeli's were set in it's chronological context, but lessons from the Israeli experience is intended for those in other time-lines. But they should not be confused. One is a lesson for the other. Other scriptural applications are intended only during certain periods and no other time.
8. *For great meaning, apply scripture to one's self.* The letters to the Romans, Philipians and Galatians are powerful lessons for not only the early church in those individual areas, but also lessons for Christians in other area at other times. If these letters are written only for those groups, the letter becomes only of historic value. On the other hand, if the student of scripture wants to receive great meaning, consider the letters were written for one's self. The student of scripture sees the letters to the Romans, Philipians and Galatians as letters to one self. Wherever the name of a group is mentioned, consider replacement with your own name. This study approach with personal interaction with the scripture results in great meanings as well as transformation to live by. After all, is this not the goal of Bible study?
9. *Consult with other students of scripture.* To consult with others is not a sign of weakness nor of failure. It is a sign of humility and resourcefulness. Engaging in Bible studies and discussion groups is a productive way to collect points of view not normally seen. Open discussion either in groups or with other individuals provides an opportunity to be provoked with one's self. Too often an answer to a question emerges in one's mind as the question is asked of others. This does not mean you accept what other Bible scholars have proposed. The aim is to personally explore the scriptures apart from the conclusion of others. But consulting with others can help open a window of understanding not normally available.
10. *Use the Systematic Understanding Method of Bible study.* The Systematic Understanding Method is a way to extract great meanings from your personal study of the Bible. At first the method is seen in steps or stages. With continued and familiar use, the outline steps are built into your approach for self-learning as a matter of habit. Here is an outline of the method.

*First: Preparation and Planning.* What aids can I use to help me understand scriptural texts? Translations concordances and study aids should be collected and available. Prayer would be needed to be guided into the holy book.

*Second: Personal study.* What does the scripture text to be analyzed say? Word analysis, context integrity and cross references are pursued to a point to know what other texts are trying to say with the text under question.

*Third: Interpretation.* What does the texts mean? Scrutinize the symbols, make a topical validation, apply the text in a time sequence and see the text in the bigger picture.

*Fourth: Consult with others.* How do others understand the text? Raising questions, consulting with commentaries and participating in discussion groups to validate one's interpretation.

*Fifth: Application.* How is the text applied? Replacing historic names with one's name, seeking how it could transform one's life and how can it be used for others can be the most important step in the method.

*Sixth: Follow-up.* How has the text changed or transformed one's life? Look for signs and measures of attitude change, greater understanding and behavior correction.

11. *Study of the Bible is Necessary.* The Bible encourages study. (II Timothy 2:15) There is a good deal of significance in the word "study". If the Bible reflects the mind of God which has depth on a much higher level than we ordinarily experience, then a much more intensive application of oneself is required. The Biblical adherer must study the doctrines, the principles, the prophecies, the biographies, the history, the events, the lessons and the experiences. This kind of study will result in learning. Learning will eventually lead to application. Study leads to harmony and compliance to God's expectations. Study of the Bible is a practice of faith. Every religion has a practice of faith. Some do it with choirs and music, some do it with garments and facilities, some do it with rituals and traditions and some do it with fellowship and food. The most effective practice of one's faith is hard work, study and application of the Bible in one's life. God gives everyone food to live, but he does not throw it into a plate on the dining room table.



## CHAPTER 2

### THE BIBLICANS: A NEW ALLEGIANCE

The Bible in the world of books. American Constitutional ideas from the Bible. Biblicans are a growing group. The Bible has a global distribution. The Bible is history's best seller. The Bible is the most translated book. Scripture translations since 1500 AD. The Bible's acceptance rate, globally, keeps rising. The Biblican's allegiance to the Bible is greater than to organizations. Public confidence to organized religion. The Bible is a synthesis of many books. Trust in clergy compared to other professionals. Three groups of Bible owners.

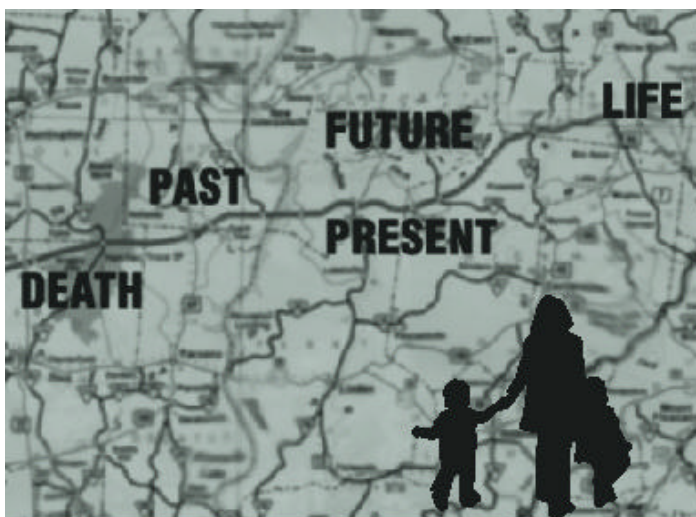
#### THE BIBLE IN THE WORLD OF BOOKS

“And they that dwell on the earth shall wonder whose names were not written in the book of life.” Revelation 17:8

A popular misconception widely held, is that books are ineffective in changing the lives of people and unproductive in the development of new societies. This may be the reason why the number of readers in populations are a small percentage. Further, those who hold this misconception see books belonging to quiet and musty libraries or cloistered in irrelevant universities. According to this delusion, books contain impractical ideas, faulty theories and mystical concepts that are not useful. This view is wrong and misleading. Books are waiting counselors and teachers, always at hand and always interested in conveying messages. They wait patiently to repeat their messages as often as desired. Throughout history the evidence is strong that books are powerful vehicles for change - sometimes for good, sometimes for bad. When leaders have wanted to suppress an opposition or to introduce their own proposals, they would write their book for others to see and compare between two antagonisms. Hitler's “Mein Kampf” or Marx's “Das Kapital” are examples of books introduced in opposition to the prevailing ideas in government and culture. This was years in advance of their ideas taking root in society. There are other books which fill this description. Making a list of such books is a favorite pastime of authors, critics, educators and librarians. One such list has been made noteworthy by Horace Shipp in his little volume, “The Books That Moved The World”. Books have even started some worlds. Books function as lighthouses guiding ships over the sea of time. Without

any restrictions as to time, place or subject categories, Shipps settled on ten books as the world's most powerful ones: the Bible; Plato's, Republic; St. Augustine's, The City of God; the Koran; Dante's, Divine Comedy; Shakespeare's, Plays; Bunyan's, Pilgrim's Progress; Areopagitica; Darwin's Origin of the Species; and Marx's, Das Kapital. A careful look at both titles and contents, we see the origin of many themes of world society today. To cite a few, there is Judaism, Christianity, Islam, democracy, literature, poetry, morality, socialism, history, communism, biology, the future life, evolution, philosophy, and religion. Five out of the ten deal with the issues and concerns of religion. These are only the top ten. If hundreds more are added, one can see the profound influence books have had on the start and perpetuation of civilizations. Shipps included in his list the Bible as a mover in the world, not realizing the Bible is a world in itself awaiting the time to be born. Meanwhile, the Bible is the book that makes people think about life and the many issues about the mysteries around us.

The Bible has been studied more than any other book, refuted more than any other document, defended more than any other writing, repudiated more than any other publication, protected more than any other literature, challenged more than any other proof, recognized more than any other certification, excavated more than any other evidence and discussed more than any other volume in print. With this intense and heightened activity, it goes on greater than ever. The Bible must be taken seriously. Those who trivialize it or idolize it, miss its practical transforming quality. Everyone knows it's a book of the past and the present, but they miss its awesome role as a future. The Bible is really an invitation to allow anyone to enter into its pages and to allow the pages to enter into their lives. The Bible is really a map to life. See Figure 2.1.



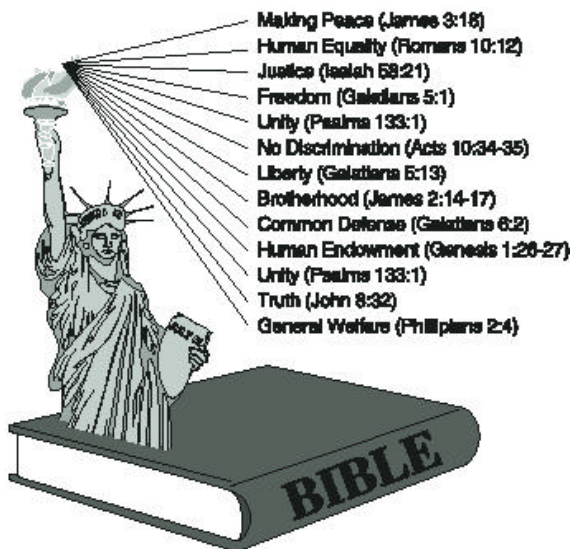
**Figure 2.1 The Bible is a Map to Life**

The Bible, even though in the secular civilizations, influencing them as a torch of light, still it is not a part of these civilizations. It is a civilization unto itself. This is the primary reason the Bible is so different from all other books. Many see the Bible as history. This is myopic. The Bible is a book of truths. It describes the historic goodness as well as the unforgettable badness. One reads of Noah's drunkenness as well as his obedience to build an ark. One reads of David's sins of murder and adultery as well as his successful victories to start a nation. One reads of Peter's denial of Jesus as well as his faithful conversion activities. Had the Bible been written or edited by ordinary people, the traditional biases, preferences, prejudices, favoritisms and precedences would have dominated the contents of the book. The Bible as a book of truths presents the good and the bad about its heroes. The implication is that the author deals with truths. The Bible is a divine book about a divine God with a divine plan dealing with the issues of life.

The Bible over the centuries far exceeds that of books in other categories combined. This is for many reasons, but one is outstanding. It still lives, after 2000 years, in the minds and hearts of a huge population of adherents. A few other books continue, but without the dedication and affection of its devotees. The Bible influences the spirituality of both individuals and nations. America is often referred to as spiritual America. When the puritans left strife-torn England bound to a promised land, they were looking for religious freedom. Others joined them - Anglicans, Catholics, Lutherans, Presbyterians, Quakers, Anabaptists and others. The pursuit of religious freedom became the basis of constitutional freedom in government, free enterprise, and individual rights. The Bible was more than an influence. It was infectious. Adam Smith with his "Wealth of Nations" in 1776 was caught up in the freedom fever sparked by the religious movements. It happened in England first and later migrated to America.

Smith's general thesis on which the "Wealth of Nations" is based might have been influenced by Niccolo Machiavelli's thesis that every human is motivated primarily by self-interest. Individual incentives are the background of all humankind's interests. But it was the religious freedom stream which carried these ideas to new shores where there was little opposition. Freedom and the liberty-oriented American law is America's greatest product both import and export. Its basis falls on the Bible precept "you shall know the truth and it will make you free". (John 8:32)

The founding fathers in America were highly influenced by Biblical precepts. George Washington is quoted as saying, "It is impossible to govern the world without God and the Bible". Also John Quincy Adams said, "So great is my veneration of the Bible, that the earlier my children begin to read it, the more confident will be my hope that they will prove useful citizens of their country and respectable members of society." Andrew Johnson is quoted as saying, "That book (the Bible) sir, is the rock on which this republic rests". Abraham Lincoln is reported to say, "I believe the Bible is the best gift God has ever given to man. All the good from the Savior of the world is communicated to us through this book". The record even shows Herbert Hoover saying, "The whole of the inspiration of our civilization springs from the teachings of Christ and the lessons of the prophets". Dwight D. Eisenhower once said, "To read the Bible is to take a trip to a fair land where the spirit is strengthened and faith renewed". These quotations, as well as others, reveal an attitude in pre-Constitution America as well as post-Constitution America, about the Bible. The framers of the Constitution valued religion's models to society of virtue and morality. So enamored were the founding fathers with the role of the Bible in their thinking that they gave it the greatest support by protecting religious freedom. The Constitution document itself has connections with the Bible. In the Declaration of Independence, the phrase, "that all men are created equal" is based on Romans 10:12. "That men are endowed by their Creator" is an open acknowledgment of Genesis 1:26-27. Article I of the Constitution which describes the selection and election of representatives is based on the selection and election of representatives in the Hebrew exodus under the leadership of Moses. (Exodus 18:19-23) The power to level and collect taxes on incomes without apportionment, Article Sixteen to the amendments is based on individual tithing of income as described in Hebrews 7:1-2 and Deuteronomy 14:22-29. See Figure 2.2.



**Figure 2.2 American Constitutional Ideas from the Bible**

In recent times America has become a troubled nation with crime, deteriorating cities and shattered morality. Many claim the broken families as the chief cause. The social critics of our times wonder if America has lost its moral compass and has left its spiritual heritage. Yale professor Stephen Carter in his book<sup>1</sup> “The Culture of Disbelief” blames the twenty-first century cultural decay on the exclusion of religion in public life. There is a craving for a return to Biblical values which was the foundation start of this country.

In spite of this dilemma, America is the wealthiest, most powerful, best educated and most diverse religious country in the world. In a recent U.S. News and World Report<sup>2</sup> the feelings about the Bible have been as follows: 34 percent say the Bible is the word of God, word for word; 46 percent say the Bible is the inspired word of God; 16 percent say it is an ancient book of history and moral precepts. That’s 96 percent that acknowledge the Bible in some way as a critical role in society, culture and civilization. The Bible has become a window in a prison of hope through which people collect a perspective of the past, the present and the future. The U.S. News and World Report’s survey is confirmed with the 1996 Princeton Religion Research Center’s statistics that 35 percent are Biblical literalists and 48 percent believe the Bible is the word of God. That’s 83 percent that accept the Bible as the book for answers to the questions of life. The truths of the Bible have the power of awakening an intense moral feeling in every human being. When you’re involved with the Bible, you will know it is the word of God and not the words of humans. There is no other book you are willing to put under your head for a pillow when you lie dying. That’s the book you must study when you are living.

## BIBLICANS: A GROWING GROUP

“Ye are a chosen generation.” I Peter 2:9

Many people today own Bibles. These owners are common everyday people throughout the world. They are a significant group beyond the scholars, the philosophers, the archaeologists and the geologists. Despite the large ownership of the Bible found almost everywhere, the level and rate of biblical literacy is low and apparently continues to drop down still further. This Bible owning group cuts across political boundaries, national lines, racial entities, religious affiliations and social classes. They are the ones who have infused the wisdom and instruction into their lifestyles. They are those who try to live the wisdom of the Bible. If you look carefully at their lives, you catch glimpses of this Biblical wisdom. This is not to say all who own a Bible, read and assimilate it. Many own Bibles, but never open them. But to those who open and study the Bible, admire it, meditate on it, write about it, argue about it, love it and live it, this group we would call “Biblicans”. Like those who live in America, we call Americans and those who live in Europe, we call Europeans. those who live in the Bible, we call Biblicans. The Biblicans live in the Bible with its sayings, precepts and principles. These expressions and principles become guidelines for transforming their lives. To the Biblicans, the Bible is more than a book. It’s an existence, a residence, a habitat. They live in it as if in a civilization, a hidden civilization. These Biblicans with their Bibles, walk sympathetically with the prophets. They see the miracles as if they were there. They feel the experiences of the events as if they participated in them. To the Biblicans, the Bible comes to life. It becomes a philosophy in which principles rather than rules from an organization guides behavior and morality. These principles make Biblicanism especially suited for universal extension and acceptance. Principles last forever. They never change. Rules and policies are short-lived as they incorporate change. Reverence for principles, especially righteous principles, becomes the foundation for a religious lifestyle.

Biblicans are a peculiar people - not in dress, nor uniform, nor language, nor rituals. They are peculiar in lifestyle, leisure time, notable characters and preferred activities. Biblicans do not have a formal membership with headquarters in Washington, London or Paris or even Jerusalem. They are a loose, amorphous grouping of individuals drawn from many parts of the world and even from many religious groups of the world. Outwardly, they appear to be a normal part of conventional life. But inwardly, they are private and different from conventional life. Biblicans are citizens of two worlds. The world of the Bible and the world of the culture they live in. They are the

worlds of the now time and the world of eternity. They regard themselves as having a citizenship in heaven. (Philippians 3:20) Biblicans live in framework of injustice, exploitation and even great disadvantage. But they look forward to the time of a great change. Living in two worlds at the same time compels Biblicans to cross back and forth from one to the other. It tends to divide a total life into two department with two goals and two sets of actions. Often Biblicans are caught in a trap because they cannot get a satisfactory adjustment between the demands of the two worlds they inhabit. They criss-cross the two worlds on a tight rope. This tight rope connects the civilization of the now with the civilization of the future. Often living in these two world produces conflicts. The Biblicans give priority, preference and allegiance to the civilization of the future. They give preference to the future civilization because it's so far superior than any of the old civilizations of the past.

Biblicans see the Bible as the world of the Jews. The heroes such as Abraham, Moses, Joshua, David, Solomon, Ezekial, they were all Jews. The Christian heroes, Jesus, Peter, John, Matthew, Paul, the 70 disciples, the 3000 converts at Pentacost, the 50,000 converts up to 100 AD - they were mostly Jews. The Bible states salvation comes from the Jews. (John 4:22) Even non-Biblicans will admit the fact Jews are all over the world. The diaspora is at least responsible for the exposure and encounter of the Jew. If you can understand an immigrated Israeli Jew, you will see the world. It just seems the whole world has a Jewish flavor. Jerusalem is a regathering of Jews from all parts of the world. When Jews immigrate to Jerusalem, they bring parts of the world's culture to it. This makes Jerusalem a microcosm of the world. If you truly understand Jerusalem, you will understand the world. The character of the Jews, like the character of a person, should not be measured by it's worst, but by it's best. Israel's rank among the other ethnic and nationalistic groups is high. Ernest Van DenHaag in his study of the Jewish mystique<sup>3</sup> as a sociologist has noted four names that dominate the thinking of the modern world - Freud, Einstein, Marx and Darwin. Of these four, only Darwin is not Jewish. Jews constitute three percent of the general population, but they produce nine times as many Nobel Laureates in Science. Jews in the professions are overrepresented - 231 percent in medicine, 308 percent in medical specialties, 478 percent in psychiatry, 299 percent in dentistry, 265 percent in law and 283 percent in mathematics. In business, the representation is unmeasurable. The over representation is due partly to minority motivation, but mostly genetic inheritance.

Biblicans experience when they visit Jerusalem, the Bible coming to life! The world of words, the world of sayings, the world of past events emerges as if they are real. The Bible to the Biblicans becomes a living book.

When you visit Elijah's Cave in Haifa, it's as if the prophets of Baal are just outside. When you visit the Cuppola of the Tablets on the Temple Mount, it's as if you were in the Most Holy of the Temple. When you visit the Mount of Olives and see what Jesus saw, you reflect, "Jesus was here!" When you visit the tomb sites - Abraham, David, Absalom, the Garden Tomb - it's as if you were living at that period of time. Biblicans live in the Biblical civilization as if the civilization were alive and going somewhere.

A Biblican is a symbol of an individual who accepts the whole Bible from Genesis to Revelation. The person is neither Jewish nor Christian, but a combination of the two in the context of their original concepts in history. The Biblican does not line-up with Judaism while rejecting Christianity. Nor do they line-up with Christianity while rejecting Judaism. The Biblican has integrated, meaningfully, the role of both toward an ultimate purpose.

How large a group are the Biblicans? Is it a declining or growing group? Do they have a special dedication or allegiance to the scriptures beyond their membership in their personal religious affiliation? Direct world statistics to answer these questions are not available. At best, statistics of world religions, especially those founded on the Bible, are rough approximations. Few religions make an attempt to keep statistical records. Those that do, have different methods of data collections. This is further complicated because one may claim membership by birth without absolutely any involvement. Others may claim membership in several organizations. However, inferences can be made from indirect statistics. These indirect inferences suggest a hidden community who are involved with Biblical commitments. This hidden community seems to be a rising trend in recent times. The following statistical sections<sup>4</sup> are offered to give both the indirect identification as well as their growing numbers.

A distinction should be made between a committed Biblican and a non-committed one, between one who owns a Bible and it rests on a shelf and one who reads and assimilates Biblical principles. Two features measure the committed Biblicans which is not found with non-Biblicans. First, the Biblicans are committed to a moral lifestyle that is squared-off with Biblical principles. One can see the Biblical principles practiced in their life and their relationship with others. Second, Biblicans acquire a mission and compulsion to bring the Biblican message from both Old and New Testaments to those who are non-Biblicans. The non-Biblicans who own Bibles are pretenders. They make-believe they have had a real change of hearts, but it's only an outward pretense. Nor do they strive to live and practice Biblical principles. They are Biblicans in name only. They wear masks! Several different types to be



put on depending on the act and stage scenario they are in. They change their mask when a different act and stage scenario emerges.

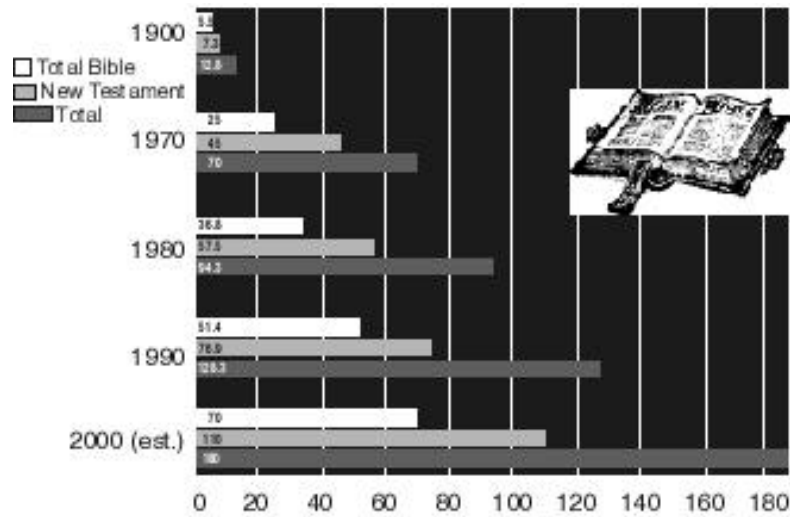
## THE BIBLE HAS A GLOBAL DISTRIBUTION

“Go ye unto all the world and preach the gospel to every creature.” Mark 16:15 Figure 2.3



**Figure 2.3 The Bible is preached throughout the World**

Little did the Biblical writers realize their written records would be a part of a great work revered as the Bible. Little did they realize their written account would be the only source of truth for the living and dying. Little did they realize their written chronicle would contain pure morality, exquisite beauty, powerful history, sublime poetry and insightful spirituality combined in one book. Little did they realize it would be the greatest book ever written down through the ages. These writers had faith and hope in their expectations, but they fell short of the greater vision their contributions would make for humankind. The Bible has become a global book. Three billion copies of the Bible in whole or parts have been distributed by the American Bible Society throughout the world since its beginning in 1816. Little or no data is available on the Bible's distribution before 1816, but we can assume there was a distribution since the Guttenberg Bible was printed in 1450 AD. Worldwide partnerships of Bible Societies distributed 135 million copies in 1992 with a projected distribution of 180 million by 2000 AD. Gideons International since 1908 has distributed nearly 150 million copies worldwide. Today, the Gideon Organization has a global distribution rate of one million copies per month. In 1975 alone, Gideon International distributed 14 million Bibles and New Testaments in 107 countries with 43 separate languages. Since 1900, the percentage growth of Bible distributions reveal a rising crescendo. (Figure 2.4)



**Figure 2.4 The Bible's Global Distribution  
(All sources - millions)**

Using the 1900 date as a base year, the Bible distribution experienced a 902 percentage increase in 1990 and 1306 percentage projected increase for 2000 AD.

#### THE BIBLE IS HISTORY'S BEST SELLING BOOK

“Everyone shall know the Lord from the least to the greatest.” Jeremiah 31:34

The Bible gave the Biblical Civilization it's formally written charter at a time when history was in a state of flux. It's contents has undergone some changes through the centuries to remove copying vagueness, translation errors and disjointed texts. These in themselves have been a source of variations of interpretations in the meanings and experiences of Biblical scenarios. Nonetheless, the Bible has survived the centuries to become the best selling book of the present time. The Bible is not merely a document excavating and preserving the past, but mortar for laying the foundations of the future.

Bible publishing is big business and a recession proof product. It provides an estimated 200 million dollars a year retail market in the United States alone. A recent limited survey<sup>4</sup> reveals the average home has four Bibles and almost all U.S. homes have at least one. Selling price of the Bible ranges from 25 cents in an inexpensive paperback to over 5 million dollars per copy for a rare antique copy. The first book printed in type was the Guttenberg Bible in 1450 AD. Guttenberg, inventor of the printing press printed about 180 copies in 3 years. Only 50 copies have been located. The Library of Congress in the United States paid \$400,000 for one copy. One is still available for purchase for 3.5 million dollars. The first book of importance to be printed in North America translated from the Hebrew is

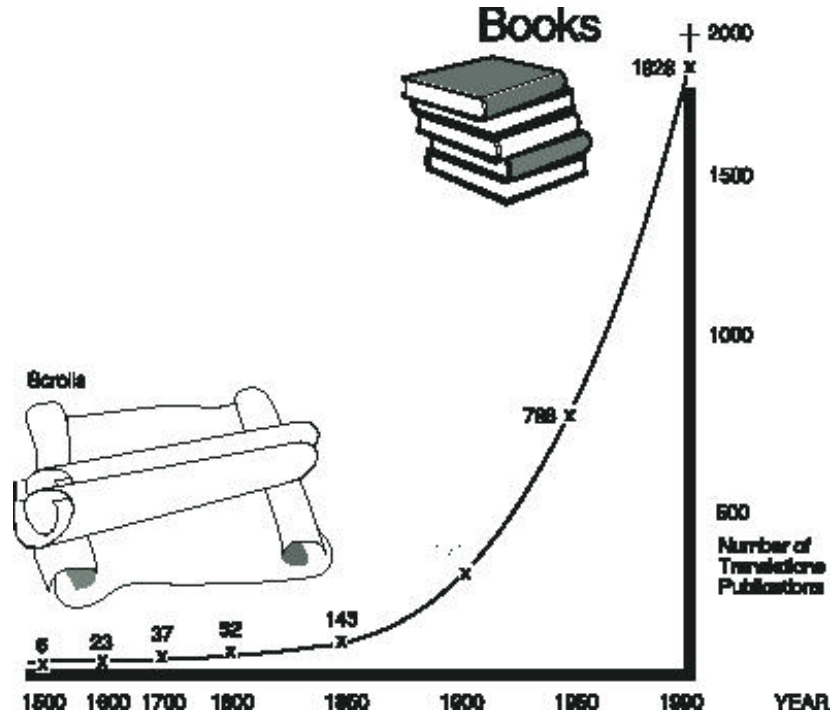
known as the Bay Psalm Book in 1640. The original publication was 1700 copies. Only 4 are known to exist. One was auctioned in New York City for \$151,000.

Publishers have reported extraordinary sales with newly translated Bibles. Tyndale and Doubleday have sold over 5 million copies of the “Living Bible”. Tyndale sold 10 million of the paperback edition. The “Good News” translation by the American Bible Society sold over one million copies in the first month of its introduction. Other translations sold well such as the “Jerusalem Translation” at 2.25 million. The American Standard sold over 130,000 copies. The New Scofield Edition sold over 100,000. This continued sales suggests a demand market that has not peaked. The figures reported here will become obsolete since new record sales are reported each year.

#### THE BIBLE IS THE MOST TRANSLATED BOOK

“and how hear we every man in our own tongue” Acts 2:8

The Bible was written originally in three languages - Hebrew, Aramaic and Greek. Today, parts of it or its entirety has been translated in over 1900 languages and dialects. This makes it available to 90 percent of the world’s population. The Bible has found its way into every nation and language on earth. Along with this availability has been the preaching of the Gospel of the kingdom by many of the Bible’s adherents. Both the preaching of the Gospel and the printing of it has brought its message throughout the world. World translations and global distributions have given the Bible a global acceptance. The Bible is entering an exciting new era. Surveys<sup>5</sup> report a general resurgence in interest in the Bible as seen by the rising crescendo curve of Figure 2.5.



**Figure 2.5 Scripture Translations and Publications since 1500 AD.**  
**Source: United Bible Societies**

The earliest translation of the Bible in another language was the Greek Septuagint around 250 BC. The Vulgate Latin Version was completed around 405 AD. The first English Version translated by John Wycliff was about 1300 AD. Today, the complete Bible, Old and New Testaments, has been translated into more than 240 languages. The New Testament alone has been translated into 560 languages. Famous books with such authors as Karl Marx, Mao Tse-Tung, Vladimir Lenin, Sigmund Freud, Charles Darwin, have been extensively translated and read by millions. But the Bible's translation record is well ahead of the works of these famous authors. According to a United Nations survey of translations in one year, the Bible led with 38 percent, Marx with 22 percent and Lenin with 19 percent. Biblical translations continue, one every two weeks. Add to it, the enormous publications of dictionaries, commentaries, encyclopedias, special studies and interpretations. This one book reaches into the millions. What does it mean when millions of books have been published to understand and interpret one book? The Bible has been and continues to be a cultured integrator by its translators. People from various cultures are being influenced by a common source.

## THE BIBLE'S ACCEPTANCE RATE, GLOBALLY, KEEPS RISING

“For the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea.” Isaiah 11:9

The number of religions with their memberships who use the Bible in total or in parts continue to increase. Judaism and Christianity are founded on the Bible. Islam, New Religionists and other religions use or are influenced by parts of the Bible. The Judaic and Christian trends have fluctuated over time, but overall, the trend has been a growth upward in time. For example, in 100 AD, Christians were less than one tenth of one percent of the world's population of 200 million. In 500 AD, the Christians rose to 22 percent. In 1500 AD, the figure fell to 19 percent. But in 1900 AD, the figure rose to 30 percent. As one can see in Figure 2.6, today the number of Christians in terms of world's population has reached 33.2 percent and the trend for 2000 AD is up to 34.1 percent.

	<b>1995 A.D. Population</b>	<b>Percent of Total</b>	<b>2000 A.D. Population</b>	<b>Percent of Total</b>
<b>CHRISTIANS</b>	<b>1,833.0</b>	<b>33.8</b>	<b>2,190.0</b>	<b>34.1</b>
<b>MUSLIMS</b>	<b>976.0</b>	<b>17.9</b>	<b>1,200.7</b>	<b>19.2</b>
<b>NON-RELIGIOUS</b>	<b>898.4</b>	<b>16.9</b>	<b>1,021.9</b>	<b>16.3</b>
<b>HINDUS</b>	<b>733.0</b>	<b>13.8</b>	<b>869.3</b>	<b>13.7</b>
<b>BUDDHISTS</b>	<b>316.0</b>	<b>5.8</b>	<b>359.1</b>	<b>5.7</b>
<b>ATHEISTS</b>	<b>293.1</b>	<b>4.3</b>	<b>292.4</b>	<b>4.2</b>
<b>NEW RELIGIONISTS</b>	<b>117.8</b>	<b>2.2</b>	<b>198.3</b>	<b>2.2</b>
<b>TRIBAL RELIGIONS</b>	<b>89.4</b>	<b>1.5</b>	<b>100.5</b>	<b>1.6</b>
<b>SIKHS</b>	<b>18.0</b>	<b>0.3</b>	<b>23.8</b>	<b>0.4</b>
<b>JEWS</b>	<b>14.0</b>	<b>0.3</b>	<b>19.2</b>	<b>0.3</b>
<b>OTHER RELIGIONS</b>	<b>221.3</b>	<b>4.1</b>	<b>143.5</b>	<b>2.3</b>
<b>TOTALS</b>	<b>5,423.8</b>	<b>100.0</b>	<b>6,268.7</b>	<b>100.0</b>

**Figure 2.6 World Religions in Millions**

The Judaic-Christian religions, founded on the Bible, together comprise the largest of the many groups of world religions. Two thirds of the world's 233 countries now have Christians as a majority of it's population. The adult literacy rate in the Biblical world has climbed from 61 percent in 1900 AD to 87 percent in 1980 AD giving the Christian nations the highest literacy in the world. Draw a peripheral line around the countries whose literacy is high and you will note the Bible's influence in those countries. Judaic demographics over the centuries are scanty and unavailable because of the diaspora. But a worldwide estimate in 1986 tabulates 14.5 million Jews are divided as

follows: 6 percent - Orthodoxy; 25 percent - Reform; 36 percent - conservative and 32 percent - unaffiliated or secular. This infers 67 percent biblical adherence among the Jews. Thus we see those religions who relate to the Bible, in total or in part, are on the increase. All Christian churches agree that the Bible is authoritative and the final court of appeal. It is the standard in which the highest tests can be made for Christian theology. The acceptance of this authority varies. For many of the Protestant churches, the Bible is the sole authority. For Catholics, the Bible is placed in partnership with church tradition. Catholics see the Bible and church tradition as two forms of God's revelation to humankind. For a small minority of churches, the Bible is placed as a source of reference to be used only when relevant to contemporary times.

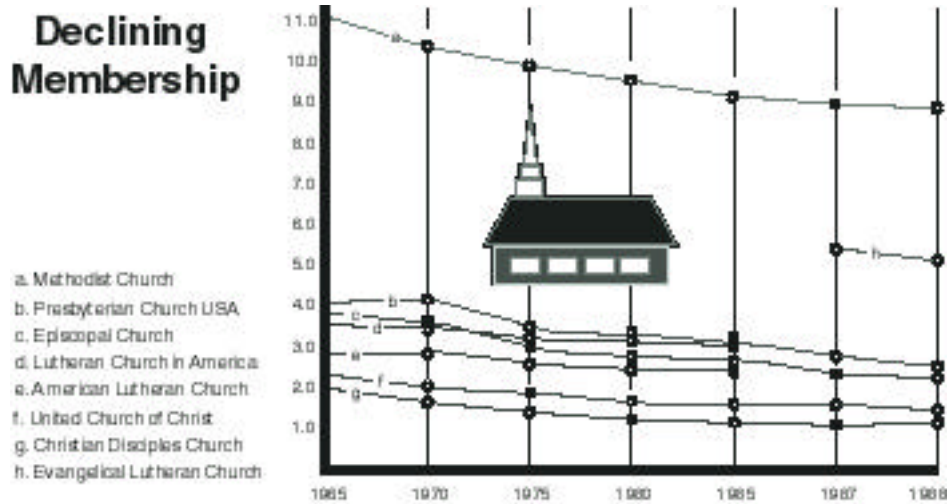
Millions of Bible owners throughout the world are convinced the Bible is central to their faith. It's the Bible, rather than forms of worship, institutional practices, or historic relationships that hold the Christians together. But this does not mean all Christians agree about its interpretation or its authority. Five approaches to Biblical understanding can be identified. The *fundamentalist approach* takes a literal interpretive view of the Bible and insists on its infallibility. They claim the Bible is inerrant. Word for word is important to this first approach. *Conservatists approach* see the Bible as a collection of trustworthy books. But they also incorporate historic and scientific clarification. This is a combination of the Bible and professional validation. The *liberal approach* varies from a mild skepticism about the value of the Bible to a radical distrust. They do not see the Bible as an infallible guide. It must be laid aside often. The *radical approach* sees the Bible as a collection of ancient texts which cannot be relevant and useful for the problems of today. They see many Biblical scenarios as myths. Finally, the *eclectic approach* which follows combinations of the other four approaches. They seem to be eclectic in dealing with different interpretations. All approaches might agree to the Bible as a foundation of Biblical truths. Everything in it is important, but everything is not equally relevant. The genealogy of Esau may be important, but not so relevant today as the Ten Commandments. The incident of John, the Baptist, in prison is important, but not so relevant today as the Sermon on the Mount. This is to suggest the early Christian writers expected the readers of various periods to accept the scriptures with the importance intended, but to apply areas, sections and texts that have immediate relevancy to the needs of the time.

## BIBLICAL ALLEGIANCE TO THE BIBLE IS GREATER THAN TO THEIR ORGANIZATIONS

“Choose you this day whom you will serve.” Joshua 24:15

Rosten<sup>6</sup> in a major study of religions in America showed a national trend of church and synagogue attendance declining from 49 percent to 40 percent from 1955 to 1973 while 97 percent believed in God. In this same study, 73 percent indicated they read parts of the Bible or the whole Bible with men leading at 81 percent over women at 64 percent. The Gallup Organization in 1990 in a separate survey<sup>7</sup> with adults confirmed the 40-43 percent church and synagogue attendance. But Gallup forecasts by 2000 AD attendance will continue to drop to 29 percent even while 90 percent believe in the God of the Bible. Belief in God, worldwide, was estimated at 81 percent. Gallup also revealed that one-third of all Americans believe the Bible as the word of God. Other Christian research organizations have identified trends which say institutional churches in America, estimated at 350,000, will be dead or close to dead within 200 years. The basis of this trend is the decline in religious financial giving. The data shows a tendency to withdraw from national to local congregations and in many cases to individuals or small groups. Others have debated the trends taking the position that institutional churches will not disappear because traditional forms and practices will change. In still another study by Princeton University Sociologist, Robert Wuthrow, author of the “The Restructuring of American Religion” reports a series of studies that have found people less committed to particular denominations and more eclectic and tolerant of other faiths. They are more focused spiritually inward rather than organizationally outward. They are more concerned on their own spiritual journey and on meeting their own personal needs. As Wuthrow put it, “People are becoming less theologically and institutionally grounded and more inclined toward making up their own faith as they go along.” It’s an eclectic design to one’s own spirituality. Organizations have multiplied their membership when they go light on theology and sermon diets and heavy on personal fulfillment in their spiritual journey. People are not finding answers in their churches to their troubles. People want religion to help them as parents, spouses, employees, employers and neighbors. This new individualized orientation has been confirmed with the U.S. News survey on Spiritual America in 1994. 77 percent admit God is guiding the individual to making decisions in their lives rather than their organizations. Each individual must determine what is right or wrong.

According to the 1990 Yearbook of Churches, eight U.S. denominations were compared as to their declining membership from 1965 to 1988. These churches are mainline denominations experiencing tough times even though they once dominated religious life. See Figure 2.7.



**Figure 2.7 Declining Membership (in Millions)**  
 (Source: Yearbook of American and Canadian Churches, 1989, '90)

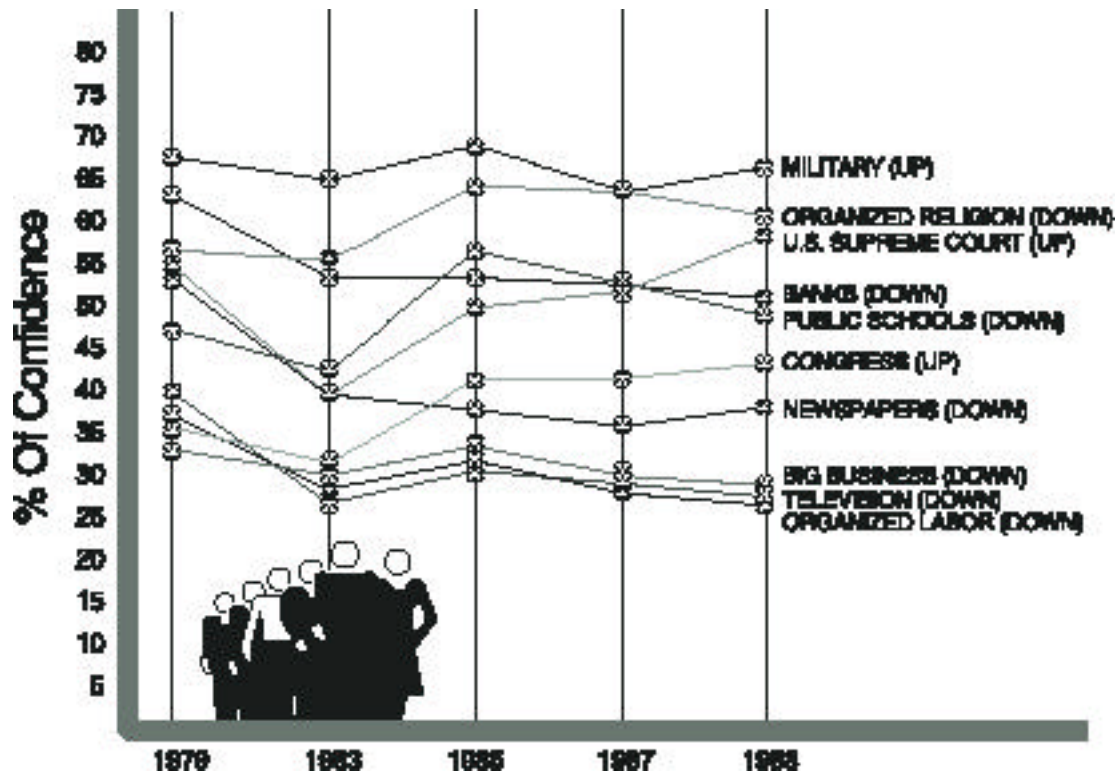
In still another major survey conducted by eight denominational organizations and reported by George Cornell, Associate Press religious writer in a release October 1991 in the New York Times, reveals that church-goers seem more inclined toward church unity than church separation. He cited doctrinal and interpreted differences are greater within denominations than between them. Catholic attitudes seem more typical than those of the Protestants. 46 percent of Catholics prayed to Jesus while among Protestants, it ranged from 8 to 22 percent.

In still another survey reported in USA Today, Wednesday, December 21, 1994, Section D sponsored by CNN and Gallup Poll reaffirms 95 percent believers in God in the United States. The report includes the increase acceptance rate of three doctrines: Heaven believed by 90 percent in 1994 up from 84 percent in 1981; Hell believed by 73 percent in 1994 up from 67 percent in 1981; and the Devil believed by 65 percent in 1994 up from 52 percent in 1991. This data seems to suggest the increased believability of Biblical connected issues.

In still another study<sup>8</sup> by George Gallup, Jr. and Sarah Jones, public confidence in organized religion is high, but slipping. This is seen in Figure 2.8 and compared with other institutions in America. Of the ten institutions, seven reveal a downward trend in confidence in these American institutions. Only three have revealed a steady or upward



trend. Does this trend reveal the dissatisfaction of the American public over the quality and acceptability of its long-timed institutions?



**Figure 2.8. American Public Confidence in Organized Religion compared to other Institutions**  
(Source: Princeton Religions Research Center)

There are still other surveys which reveal public confidence in both church and clergy have dropped in recent years. In the early 1980's organized religion enjoyed the utmost confidence of the public, leading all other institutions. At that time 75-80 percent Americans named the church as an institution in which they placed the utmost trust. Over the years, the confidence rate has dropped to less than 57 percent. Organized religion has taken second or third place to other institutions. The latest confidence ratings have been reported by the Princeton Religious Research Center in their newsletter "Emerging Trends" April, 1996. See Figure 2.9.

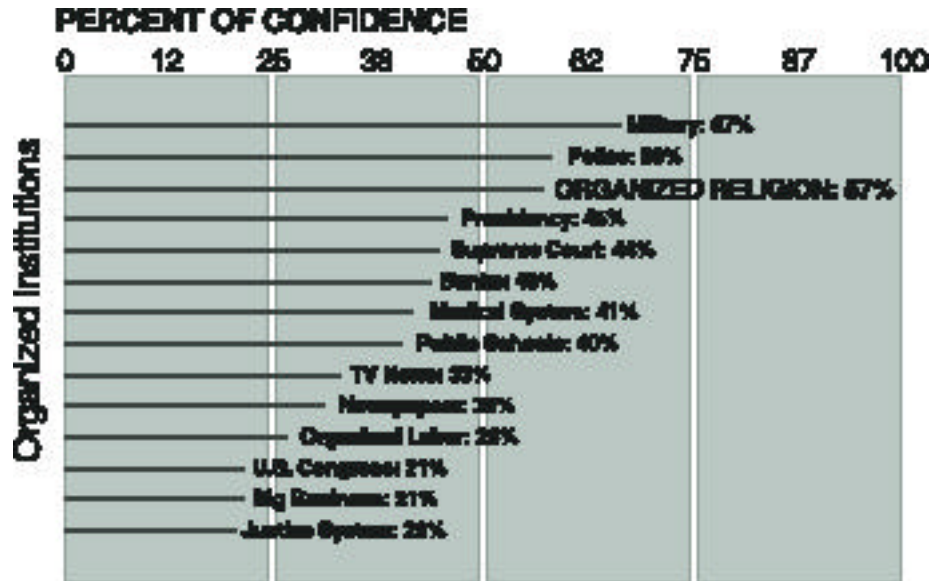


Figure 2.9 Confidence in Organized Religion Compared to Other Institutions  
(Source: Princeton Religious Research Center)

There has also been a drop in the trust of honesty and ethics of the clergy as a group compared to other professionals.

Interesting to note the trust level of other professions especially senators and congressmen. See Figure 2.10.

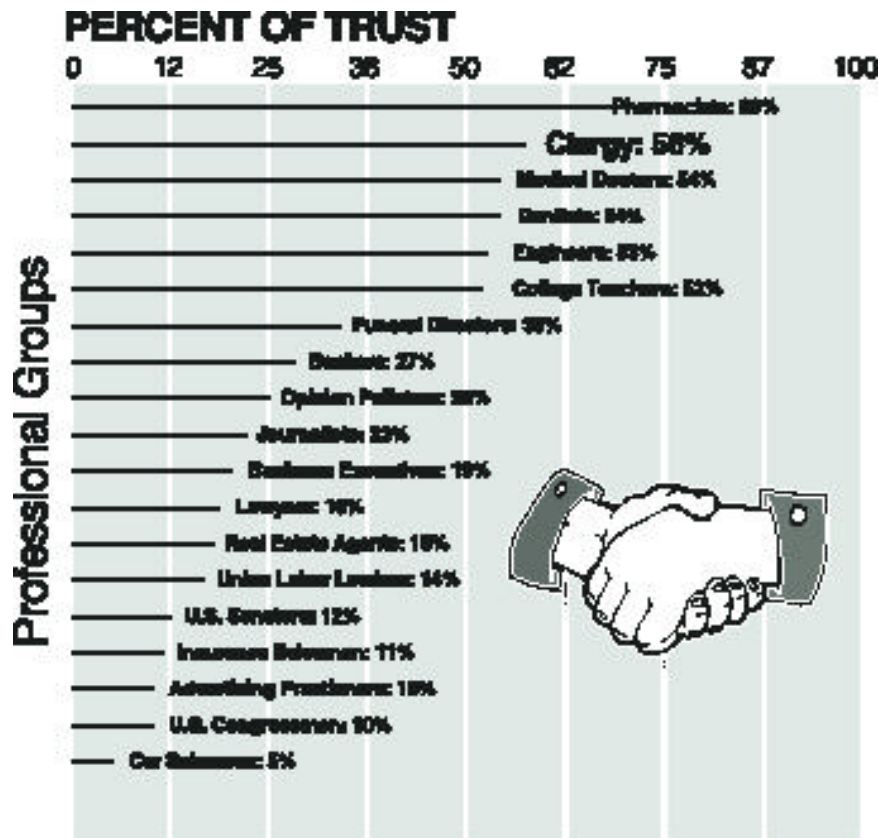


Figure 2.10 Trust in Clergy Compared to Other Professionals

The results of these studies reveal unexpected patterns cropping up from traditional membership and allegiance to religious organizations. One conclusion that can be made from these studies is that religious believers give greater allegiance to Biblical values and guidelines than membership requirements of their religious organizations. More than 8 of every 10 Americans, today, believe that it's possible to be a good Christian or Jew even without attending a church or a synagogue.

#### THE BIBLE IS AN EXTRAORDINARY SYNTHESIS OF MANY BOOKS

“Write the vision and make it plain upon tables that he may run that readeth it.” Habakkuk 2:2

The word “Bible” does not appear anywhere in the Bible. There is reference to the “Scripture of Truth” (singular). (Daniel 10:21) The New Testament writers refer to the entire Old Testament or portions of it as “scriptures”. (Luke 24:32; Galatians 3:22; Marks 12:10; Acts 1:16) Publishing of the original Bible was unique with 40 independent authors writing 66 books over 1500 years of time. These authors represent 20 different occupations ranging from shepherds to kings and includes lawyers, soldiers, wisemen, prophets, priests, peasants, poets, farmers, officials, fishermen, missionaries and one physician. The Old Testament was compiled from 1200 BC to 100 BC. The New Testament from 50 AD to 100 AD. This is a total span of 1500 years in three original languages - Hebrew, Aramaic and Greek. The Bible has a cast of 2930 people in 1551 geographical locations. There are 33,214 verses in the Old Testament and 7,959 in the New Testament for a total of 41,173 texts. There are 774,746 total words in the Bible. The progressive development of the Bible over 1500 years has been a revolution. As a revolution, it never went backward, but always forward. It is not so much where it stood as in what direction it was moving. It's initial introduction was not popular in it's day for it's truth was on the march. The Bible as a revolution was and continues to be a revolution of ideas, perceptions, meanings and expectations. The compilation of the books of the Bible has been progressive over the years even though the order is not the way the books were written chronologically. If one theme permeates all these books, one might suggest a consistent guidance has fostered it's production.

#### THREE GROUPS OF BIBLE OWNERS

“Be ye doers of the word and not hearers only.” James 1:22

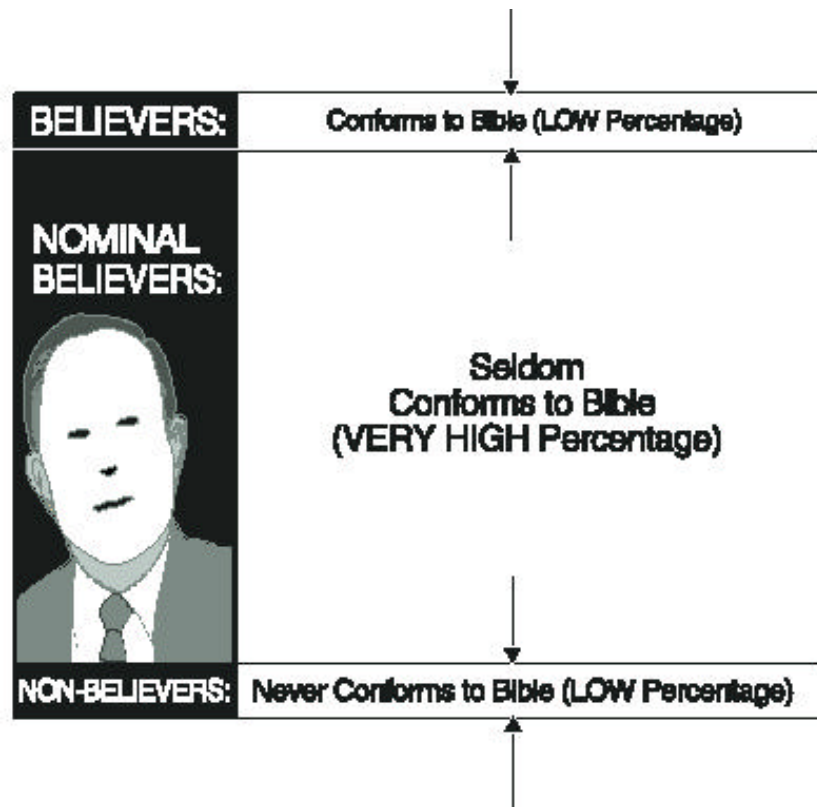
The statistics cited in the earlier sections lead us to classify Bible owners into three groups. A first group are those who own a Bible, but never open them, nor live it's precepts. These are not Biblicans. They have no relationship with the Bible other than to have it on the shelf. An estimate was made that 500 million of the 822

million Europeans have Bibles on the shelf, but never open them, let alone read them. In the United States, 93 percent own Bibles, but only 12 percent read the Bible every day. The Biblical Civilization is far removed from this first group. This first group is not well versed in scripture. But they know at least the names of major personalities and popularized events such as Moses and the Exodus, Samson and his strength, Solomon and his wisdom, Jesus on the cross, Paul with a Paganistic Society. They have learned these scenarios from going to the movies. Their detachment from the Bible is not so much a lack of interest, but stems from accepting the familiar, the famous, the popular as stereotyped. This stereotypic treatment prevents every attempt at deeper and broader understandings. After all, when everyone seems to know, the very thing that everyone knows does not receive the attention the well known deserves. This first group cannot see the importance nor the relevance of the Bible as a civilization for themselves nor humankind. They are totally absorbed in the pressures of life in the now time.

A second group of Bible owners are those who read the Bible, quote from it, claim it's value and importance, but do not live it. Their lifestyles give them away. They treat God as a hobby. They do things for God, but in secret to avoid the shameful or embarrassing comments made by others who are different or disagree. They don't take religion seriously because the culture teaches or reacts in such a way as to force people to be religious in their spare time, on weekends or in private. This second group does not conform to scriptural principles and standards. They do have a relationship with the Bible, but "in name only". They wear masks to give the appearance of a Biblical, but underneath the mask they exhibit a lifestyle from another civilization. They are mask changers. This second group are called "nominal Biblicans". They give the pretense of being Biblical. They may have in the past attempted to penetrate the Biblical mysteries with some degree of depth and interest beyond a veneer, but give it up because it meant leaving a comfortable and satisfying old civilization within. They prefer to avoid a personal commitment to transform from the old to the new. A recent survey in France revealed these nominal Biblicans: 79 percent of the French call themselves Catholic; 53 percent are non-practicing; 26 percent are practicing. Of the practitioners, 31 percent attend services every Sunday; 44 percent only on holidays and 16 percent attend only for special ceremonies. Only 8 percent of the French population, even after 79 percent call themselves Catholic, seriously attend services on Sunday. They are mostly older people, partially involved and somewhat contributing.

There is a third group. The time and devoted Biblicans, who study and dedicate themselves to scriptural tenets and give evidence of it. They prefer to live in a Biblical Civilization even though they reside in another. They have

one foot in the civilization that now exists and the other foot in the civilization that is coming. Biblicans are compelled by necessity of coexisting in two areas of life. But they give priority and preference to the new civilization coming. Paul, the great Christian Apostle, had this same problem. (Romans 7:15-25) This third group looks forward to the time when the Biblical Civilization will become the world's civilization. This third group regards the time-honored Bible as God's presence in history, but will eventually become a reality. This third group gives self-sacrificing allegiance to scriptures more than citizenship of a country or membership in any organization. There is often criticism to this group. They are actively opposed because they are trying to live the precepts of a new civilization while in the context of an old one. This third group allows the Biblical Civilization to pass through them and from them and in the process affects a transformation of their former person to a new person. These Biblicans recognize God's work in the world as a preparation for a new world. See Figure 2.11.



**Figure 2.11 Three Groups of Bible Owners**

## CHAPTER 3

### THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION RISES IN STAGES

Factors shaping a civilization. Cultural stages of a civilization. Civilizations in crisis. The Bible as a hidden civilization. The Bible has a life of it's own. The Bible's awesome value. Archaeology helps bring the Bible to life. Civilizations have stages of growth. Five interconnected religions from the Bible. The Bible's Civilization rises in progressive stages. Cultural stages of the Biblical Civilization. Biblical goals.

#### FACTORS SHAPING A CIVILIZATION

“how shall God judge the world” Romans 3:6

Civilization<sup>1</sup> is the label that is given to the complex phenomena we see all around us and even within us. We touch it. We see it. We hear it. We eat it. We experience it. We live it. It's a baffling complexity because of it's dynamic nature. Civilization is always changing. The parts don't stay still. This means civilization is more than the sum of it's parts because it integrates new parts while retaining the old. Or it rejects the old parts while sustaining the new. The civilizing process is both upward and onward as if toward new and better levels of quality yet to be reached. Some have declared there is no need for a definition of civilization since we possess the thing itself. It's changing complex nature defies a sharp and clear-cut definition. Nonetheless, there is a view of the phenomena that is useful. In fact, historically there are three views. Originally, the civilized person was one possessed with good manners and self-control. Later, this was expanded. The civilized person was one through knowledge and skills exemplified self-controlled behaviors especially in the cities. Today, the definition has expanded still further. The civilized person with self-controlled sets of behaviors and beliefs collaborates and gains agreements with a large aggregation of people beyond cities to nations and network of nations. These sets of behaviors and beliefs form values, creates a common, but distinctive lifestyle. The lifestyle is guided by enforcing laws, agreed-upon values,

religious principles, economic pursuits, inspiring arts, general and technical knowledge, passed-along human experiences and social and traditional structures. It is not civilization that shapes the human nor humans that shape civilizations. It is the mutual collaboration of both. In other words, civilization is a social order. This order allows economic exchanges for making a living, enhances political decisions for operating a government, establishes moral and value standards which guide behavior and religious activities, encourages visions for the future for change and development and stimulates mental thinking and appreciation for knowledge and the arts. Because a civilization consists of many factors, it is readily understood why various civilizations exist. The factors are different, multitudinous and often conflict. The struggle of the factors infer civilizations rise and collapse unexpectedly and informally. There are many reasonable explanations which describe significant causes for the decline and emergence of civilizations. Whitehouse and Wilkins<sup>2</sup> cite a minimum of five: subsistence practices; population pressures; conflict and value resolutions; economic changes; and social and religious organizations. These causes have produced changes in lifestyles to large masses of people. Figure 3.1 summarizes some of the changes that occurs over a large period of time. The three meals a day practice in our present day society is a highly advanced institution. It came about with the domestication of animals and the storage of food. Before this advanced institution got started, it was either feast or famine. When food was available, humans would gorge themselves and fill their stomachs until the supply was gone. When the food supply was gone, it was fasting and starvation.

From Figure 3.1, one can see cultural changes over the years in the form of a rising crescendo. The changes are onward and upward. The changes sometime are giant leaps fostered by war, natural disasters or pestilence, and sometimes, the changes are a subtle, but perceptible crawl such as a government policy, an educational reform or a new technological product. Ten factors are suggested here that can directly affect the start, the rise and the collapse of a civilization. These factors are presented briefly.





PRIMITIVE	ANCIENT	MEDIEVAL	MODERN
			
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Tribe</li> <li>2. Search for food</li> <li>3. Eating to Survive</li> <li>4. Family Economy</li> <li>5. Fireplace</li> <li>6. Walk</li> <li>7. Hand Signs</li> <li>8. Cave Dwelling</li> <li>9. Hands as Tools</li> <li>10. Solo in Decision Making</li> <li>11. Travel to Tribes</li> <li>12. Adding with Fingers</li> <li>13. Wind Energy</li> <li>14. Solo Teaching</li> <li>15. Herbs</li> </ol>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. City</li> <li>2. Storage of Food</li> <li>3. Eating for Needs</li> <li>4. City Economy</li> <li>5. Woodstove</li> <li>6. Horses</li> <li>7. Verbal Language</li> <li>8. Fortress Living</li> <li>9. Materials as Tools</li> <li>10. Dictator in Decision Making</li> <li>11. Travel to Cities</li> <li>12. Group Figuring</li> <li>13. Wood Energy</li> <li>14. Group Teaching</li> <li>15. Medicines</li> </ol>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Nation</li> <li>2. Trading of food</li> <li>3. Eating for Enjoyment</li> <li>4. National Economy</li> <li>5. Oil Stove</li> <li>6. Wagons</li> <li>7. Written Language</li> <li>8. Single Dwelling</li> <li>9. Mechanization as Tools</li> <li>10. Autocratic in Decision Making</li> <li>11. Travel to Nations</li> <li>12. Mechanical Adders</li> <li>13. Coal Energy</li> <li>14. School Systems</li> <li>15. Surgery</li> </ol>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Global</li> <li>2. Supermarkets</li> <li>3. Eating for Nutrition</li> <li>4. Global Economy</li> <li>5. Microwave</li> <li>6. High-speed Jets</li> <li>7. Video Language</li> <li>8. Condominiums</li> <li>9. Automation as Tools</li> <li>10. Consensus in Decision Making</li> <li>11. Travel to Moon</li> <li>12. Electronic Computers</li> <li>13. Nuclear Energy</li> <li>14. Universities</li> <li>15. Transplants</li> </ol>

Figure 3.1. Cultural Stages of a Civilization

- a. *Climate and geological conditions* are probably the foundation stage in the civilizing process. Lifestyle nor life itself could not thrive if it is either too hot or too cold. Climate has a profound effect on the growth and spread of population. Early civilization were river products. The rivers provided water for drinking, irrigation, transportation and energy. It's understandable that the start of civilizations were at the river sites.
- b. *Farming, shelters and commerce* are additional factors to the civilizing process. Human population needs food. Food that is grown, distributed and exchanged for other needed items. When food is collected, stored and traded it produced leisure time. This in turn, allowed time for creativity and innovation in economic and social life. Primitive life was searching and finding food. Barbaric life had food, but they were crude in behavior. Societal life incorporated both sufficient food and acceptable social behavior.



- c. *Knowledge, technology and resources* are still other factors to shape the character of a civilization. The knowledge of these technologies were integrated and accumulated with other technologies over the ages. Thus the Seiko watch is based on the early innovations of the wheel, gears, fulcrums, digitizing and energy storage in batteries.
- d. *Population growth and developing megalopoli* are intimately linked with the character of a civilization. Human life production is the jugular vein of living cities. Population densities spur government, laws, transportation, health services, educational systems, shopping centers and entertainment. Today, over half of the world's population is in 10,000 cities of 300,000 or more people. Worldwide, 50 percent of the global population lives within 30 miles of the sea shore. Megalopolis is really several adjoining cities where it is difficult to see where one super city ends and another begins.
- e. *Language, writing and literacy* are still other factors in the civilizing process. Communications enhances sharing, learning and understanding. Writing perpetuates wisdom, values and beliefs of the past. Symbols convey concepts and expression of ideas. Literacy brings about the educational process. Words are the great breakthroughs in the language communications. When Noah Webster wrote the first dictionary in 1828, it was 70,000 words. Today's dictionary is over 600,000 words with over 6,000 distinct languages throughout the world. The number of books in our lending libraries doubles every fourteen years.
- f. *Laws and authority* are additional conditions to the civilizing process. These are crucial for large populations if they are to live in a mutual community. No culture can thrive with order and harmony if there is no agreement with regulations, laws and authority. Wars have been and continue to be human experiences in which individuals impose their wills on other individuals. This is in regard to land disputes, labor markets, ambitious for power, scarcity of resources, revenge, need for women, religious conflicts and rebellious non-conforming groups.
- g. *Morality, values and religion* are still other factors that help shape the character of a civilization. Morality has been a sense of what is right or wrong. This is often defined by values and religious beliefs. When values and beliefs are upheld by a large group, a lifestyle emerges. Government laws and religious values have a reciprocating influence on one another. One advances and the other preserves. When a large group

of people have a common lifestyle, a culture starts which when integrated with other cultures can start a civilization.

- h. *Families and freedom* are also factors to characterize the civilizing process. Membership in social groups, restrict or allow free choice and independent decision making. The family has been the first group which allows or disallows freedom of choices. Later it was the school. Still later, government assumed the role of confining or allowing freedom of choice. Seldom is an individual a completely free agent. To the extent individuals are free is the extent in which individuals can influence the character of civilizations. In the 1980's, 66 countries with 42 percent of the world's population has been classified "not free". Freedom of choice is not allowed.
- i. *Ideas and innovations* are other elements in the civilizing process. Ideas try to serve a mission of it's own - to be implemented. Therefore, they are predictors. An innovative and novel idea has the potential to start or change a civilization. Thinking up ideas are the sources of innovations. Psychologists today claim that 5 to 10,000 thoughts go through the human mind in one day. That's almost 3,650,000 thoughts a year by one person. Multiply this figure by the number of individuals with leisure time, the potential for innovations is enormous. As ideas are coaxed into existence and assimilated into society, civilization will change it's character and direction.
- j. *Finally, twenty-first century factors* are new agents to influence and shape the character of civilization. These are: high technology, computerized decision making, information storage and retrieval, electronic homes, single-world economy, self-health care, entrepreneurial mentality, participative democracy, effective nutritional diets, megalopoli in energy-free climates, free market socialism, cultural nationalism, women in leadership and changing religious practices.

## CIVILIZATIONS IN CRISIS

"Think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to test you." I Peter 4:12

Civilizations are stages in a long-range view of man's development. When one civilization ends and another begins, it signals changes in man's developmental direction. Thus, various plateaus such as "the dawn of

civilization”, “medieval civilization” or “modern civilization” are levels of attainment in the longer look of where humankind has been, where they are and where they are going.

A crisis occurs in an existing civilization when one or more powerful changes events, perhaps one or two central and other contributing, threaten to block the movement of the civilization or change it’s direction. A civilization crisis is a turning point, a condition of instability. It means the life cycle of the civilization is unpredictable since one of four events are likely: abrupt collapse, long-term decline, obsolescence and then rejection or regrowth into a new direction. Whatever may occur in civilization, humankind continues on. In other words, the end of a civilization does not mean the end of humankind. Thus civilizations such as Greece, Rome, Spain and Ottoman have met their crisis points and disintegrated, but humankind has not come to an end. These civilizations made the attempt to shape their laws and cultural practices based on their perceptions of justice and lessons of history, but failed to secure the rights and happiness for all.

The following briefly identifies potential and actual, powerful causes which can bring a civilization to it’s crisis point and even to a breakdown:

1. *Physical Disasters.* Violent climatic changes, earthquakes, floods, hurricanes, tornadoes, volcanic eruptions and severe storms have involved great loss of life with immense disruption of the life cycles of a culture. The ancient city of Pompeii experienced in 62 AD a violent earthquake which killed thousands of people and badly damaged much of the city. The city was in the process of repairing it’s earthquake damage and restoring it’s culture when in 79 AD a colossal volcanic eruption of Mount Vesuvius destroyed Pompeii in it’s entirety. Over 2,000 skeletons were found in the rivers. Prior to this physical disaster, Pompeii was a blending of Italic, Hellenistic and Etruscan cultures and controlled as a Roman colony. After the disaster, Pompeii’s remnant old citizens mixed with the new immigrant colonists. Eventually, Pompeii’s old culture gave way to the Paganistic Roman culture. Here a major physical disaster wiped away an old and moved in the new.
2. *Epidemic Diseases.* In world history, diseases have affected the course and life cycle movement of civilizations. An epidemic disease may start in one part of the world and spread through countries and continents. The most famous epidemic in world history has been the Bubonic Plague commonly referred to as the Black Death. This disease existed from the 14th Century through the 17th Century. It was

responsible for the death of up to one third of the population of Europe and unknown effects throughout Asia and Africa. Florence alone lost 70,000 people with the plague. The disease disrupted in a major way the movement and direction of civilization.

3. *Warfare.* This is a state of belligerency when two or more hostile powers carry on violent conflicts of force to gain the will of one power over the others. According to a major study<sup>3</sup> of world history, the world has had since 3600 BC only 292 years of peace. During this time, there have been 14,531 wars both large and small in which 3.6 billion people were killed. Eight thousand treaties have been broken during this time. In wars, entire cities are leveled and conquered people indentured into slavery. Cultural changes are imposed upon the conquered. Often the warfare can cause a situation just the reverse of what it intended. The Crusades of the eleventh and twelfth centuries was an obvious example of conflict between European Christians seeking to free the Holy Land from Moslem domination. Nazareth, Bethlehem and other sites associated with the life of Christ were places of special devotion for Christians. Also the Temple Mount, Western Wall and other sites were sacred to the Jews. The effects of the Crusades, as bloody as they were, were largely negative. At the conclusion of the warfare movement, the Holy land became more thoroughly Moslem in culture and lifestyle than it was at the beginning.
4. *Revolutions, Civil Upheaval and Violence.* A revolutionary upheaval in a nation or culture can cause lives and values of people to radically and violently change. Governments are usually powerless to stop it or the upheaval is aimed at them. There have been many revolutions and civil upheavals in the human experience. A theme of the human experience has been the dissatisfaction of governments and the cultural policies they enforce. The American Civil War where the North lost 360,000 men and the South 258,000 was an example of a tragic and horrible civil upheaval. Thousands were disabled and an incalculable loss of property resulted. The great change of this upheaval brought the planter aristocratic culture of the South based on slave labor to an end. Other upheavals had similar results - the Helot revolts against the Grecian aristocracy, the conquered slave revolt against the Roman Republic, the American Revolution against a taxing monarchy, the French Revolution against an unsympathetic monarchy, the Russian Revolution against the Czar. All of these wiped away old values and introduced new ones. Violence is another factor to bring about the demise of a civilization. Especially if people live in a culture of violence where violence

is seen as the method of change. There was a time when violence was the method used to resolve disputes between nations or countries. Today it seems to be the method used to resolve disputes between individuals or individuals with governments. The violence often increases to a point of cultural anarchy.

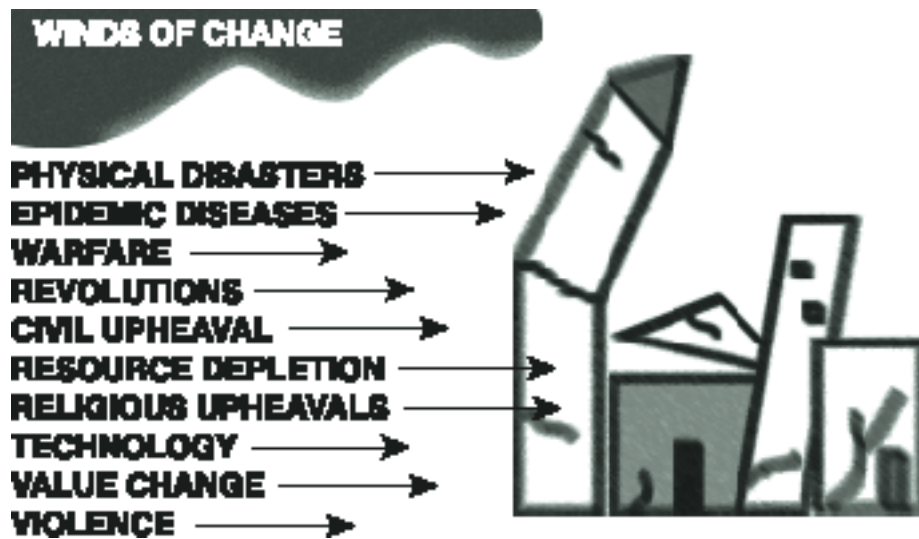
5. *Resource Depletion.* There is a scripture “Anyone planning to build a tower should first sit down and figure out what it will cost to see if enough resources are available to finish the job.”<sup>4</sup> Serious questions have been raised on the fast growth of resource consumption in our civilization. Can Planet Earth accommodate this rapid consumption. Cities, the centrality of civilizations, are growing exponentially. Babies are born exponentially. Investment savings accumulated exponentially. Exponential growth means an accumulated doubling with equal period of time. Every culture needs a continual supply of resources of a varied kind to support this exponential growth. Oil, in recent years is being consumed in unprecedented amounts. It took thousands of years of limited fossils to develop this fuel. Can a limited fossil fuel resource sustain a civilization whose use is unlimited? A superb study<sup>5</sup> by the Club of Rome, identified five elements to civilizations which undergoes exponential growth. These elements are interdependent and make up the global system operating in civilization. The five interdependent exponential growth components are: 1.) Population explosion; 2.) Economic stagnation; 3.) Environmental deterioration; 4.) Food in sufficiency and 5.) Consumption of non-renewable natural resources. These five interdependent components are trends which interact together. They have been computerized for a future look. The study indicates unless major changes are made in 2035 AD, an equilibrium point will be reached when earth’s resources will be at a limit for sustaining the type of civilization that prevails on Planet Earth. It appears present day cultures need to subordinate their ancient quarrels and join together in a global partnership to resource depletion limits.
6. *Religious Upheavals.* Religion is not only part of a civilization, but in many ways have been the vision of civilizations. Religious beliefs and perceptions centers on that which lies behind the world of the ordinary sensory experience. Specially, the future life has been the primary focus of most religious thought. Throughout history, perceptions and thoughts about the future life have changed. Sometimes this change is without disturbance and sometimes the change is cataclysmic. Mankind is now approaching the eye of a storm where the fortress of traditional faiths are experiencing the most profound alterations in centuries.

The fortresses are many: Islam, Hinduism, Buddhism, Taoism, Zoroastrianism, Christianity, Orthodoxy, Shintoism, Judaism, Scientism and Maoism. Values, authority, beliefs and leadership within these traditional creeds are being challenged and even revised. Debates, seminars, conclaves, re-examinations, discussions, scrutinizing and revisiting ancient sources and origins are the order of the day. Leo Rosten presents data<sup>6</sup> that religious institutions are being shaken as never before. 75 percent of the people think religion is losing its influence. 98 percent of Americans say they believe in God, but 43 percent or less attend regular religious services. The issues are many: doctrinal validity is questioned, interfaith marriages breaking down, religious restrictions on food intake laid aside, women as religious leaders on the increase, attendance for spiritual needs falling off, traditional prohibitions in abortions, birth control and other family factors are ignored. Religion has always been a major influence in the development and sustaining of a society and a culture. As these beliefs and credos change, so will the nature and character of the culture change.

7. *Inventions and Technology.* Technology is the application of scientific and engineering knowledge for practical individual and societal use. This application involves inventors, processes, methods and products. The impact of technology and invention on cultural improvement and civilization change has been potent throughout humankind history. When Edison invented the light bulb it was more than a new product or a company or an industry. The light bulb started a new civilization in which human activities were now able to extend throughout the night. Inventions and technology has continued to be workers of miracles in a positive way as suggested by the following inventions: printing, ships, coal mining, railroads, agricultural machinery, steam engines, glass making, pumps, road construction, telescopes, electric lights, oil wells, batteries, gasoline engines, turbines, textiles, aluminum, silicones, steel, rubber, electric appliances, computers, electrical machinery, refrigeration, zippers, fertilizers, frozen foods, tractors, poultry production, DDT, motion pictures, the pill, vitamins, automobiles, jet aircraft, radar, telephone, television, penicillin, nuclear power plants, xerography, and satellites. These and other technological inventions have literally changed the character and nature of civilization. But inventions and technology has been a precipitator of negative effects in civilization. It has the potency of creating dangers for altering civilizations and even eliminating it. This is suggested by the following negative applications of

technology: cannons, dynamite, poison, guns, mustard gas, tanks, nuclear bombs, automatic weapons, submarines, radioactivity, drugs, missiles, artificial insemination of humans, ozone, bacterial warfare. The crucial influence inventions and technology has on human affairs must be reckoned with both its constructive and destructive impact. Rarely has there been a time when human values, beliefs and expectations become more deterministic in the use of these inventions than it is today. Civilization will depend greatly on the use of inventions and technology.

8. *Value Change.* Ethical and social concepts have fostered the emergence and decline of a civilization. Thus for classical Judaism, the covenant with God implied keeping the Torah as a pattern of holy living. The Muslim observance of the Koran gave Islam its lifestyle. The Hindu acceptance of the Dharma fostered Hindu practices. The Confucian tradition produced the balance between social relations in the family and the state. The Taoist concept engendered the quiet contemplation with minimum government. The Christian adoption of the Bible introduced principles and practices of living the Christian life. These and countless others yield ethical values and social arrangements that more than often define a culture. More specifically, they define personal beliefs and values that guide everyday speech and behavior. This makes people what they are, where they come from, where they think they are going and how they should respond in a given situation. Values become the basis of personal perceptions about “the good”, “the beautiful”, “the bad”, “the unjust” and countless end behaviors to be reached. They act as standards that guide human behaviors and moral practices. See Figure 3.2.



**Figure 3.2 Winds of Change that can Destroy a Civilization**

Albert Schweitzer in his excellent book on the “Decay and Restoration of Civilization” cites the real essential nature of any civilization is morality. Historical elements, material knowledge and power practices do not of themselves form the essence of civilization. Rather, the mental disposition of individuals and nations is the weighty determiner. Creative artistic, intellectual and material attainment can only emerge when the civilization has been secured on the mental and moral disposition of those in the civilization. If this moral and ethical foundation is lacking in the people and in the leaders, civilization will collapse even when creative and intellectual forces are strong at work. Schweitzer makes clear that the collapse of our existing civilization is now in progress. What remains is no longer safe even though it still stands. Like the rest, which is in rubble, the next landslide will very likely carry what remains away.

Robert Ringer<sup>7</sup> highlights the importance of values, beliefs and morality in his book which presents Western Civilization in a state of collapse. According to Ringer, Western Civilization has peaked. He sees signs of decline through the new values being introduced and practiced by the emerging younger generation. Many have thought the collapse far into the future. Ringer sees the collapse as an ongoing phenomenon on the present scene. The virtues that have given the Western way of life were honesty, self-discipline, non-violence, self-sufficiency, work ethic, respect for elders, aggrandizement of achievement, planning for the future, respect for the property of others, a stable economic system, reverence for the family unit, courtesy, consideration toward others and above all, the right of the individual to be left alone. The demise of these virtues have started. A decadence of morals combined with a financial crisis seem to be evidence of the deterioration of the lifestyle traditionally found in the Western



Civilization. The list is as long as you care to make it. Perhaps, worst of all, the cornerstone of Western Civilization is the family unit. It seems the family unit is relinquishing its place of prominence in the lives of people. The major breakdown causes of the family unit are drugs, alcohol, homosexuality, divorces and immorality. Drug dependence, alcoholic addiction and moral breakdown with such leaders as teachers, clergymen, doctors, policepersons and politicians can bring Western Civilization to the crisis point. The proof of a civilization's worth is its usefulness. When this usefulness diminishes, so does the civilization diminish as well.

Former Education Secretary Bill Bennett in a public release in March of 1993 presented his newly developed "Index of Leading Cultural Indicators". This index is to signal the growth or decline of the United States. In this first presentation of the index, America shows a decline in cultural values in ways economic statistics cannot. The measures he used ranged from SAT scores to births to unmarried women, to number of abortions. Here are some of the indicators:

- a. Violent crime has tripled from 1960 to 1991, up from 189 to 600 per 10,000 people. That's an annual rate of 1,900,000. In 1991 alone, there was 24,703 murders.
- b. Juvenile violent crime and arrest rate, 1991 is three times the 1965 rate.
- c. Aid to Families with dependent children in 1991 is up 3.5 times the 1960 rate.
- d. Teenage suicide rate in 1990 is triple that of 1960.
- e. Single-parent families in 1991 is triple that of 1960. Single-parent percentage of total families is 28.6 percentage.
- f. Births to unmarried women in 1990 is 28 percent up from 5.3 percent in 1960. In 1960, there were 243 children living with a never-married parent. By 1990, the figure rose to 5,680,000. As these children are raised, they are six times more likely to be unmarried parents themselves.

The figures show the United States has lost ground and a decline is indicated. Bennett urges a public policy action be taken or face an unprecedented peril. Solutions lie in upgrading personal morality, self-restraint, respect for people, maintaining the family and self-control. He noted the poor influence Hollywood has on mass media for putting morality and religion into a Sunday morning box to be ridiculed. Bennett like Ringer sees a major turn in Western Civilization as we have known it in the past. Morality has become diffused.

## THE BIBLE AS A HIDDEN CIVILIZATION

“I have shown thee new things from this time, even hidden things and thou didst not know them.” Isaiah 48:6

Civilization is like fascinating tapestry. One can gaze at the visible front designs with their exquisite colors and unique geometrics, but seldom is the underside seen for examining the complicated weaved threads and strong supporting fabrics. Judgments are often made based on what is seen in front while ignoring the foundation influences in the back. A question has often been asked, “Are there civilizations that have escaped the recognition of the historians?” Arnold Toynbee<sup>8</sup> takes the human experience and divides it into 34 discrete civilizations with an average age of 200 years. These distinct and identifiable civilizations rose, crested and later declined. Toynbee admits there may be others between and among those that are identified. Another question, “Are there long-term civilizations that had their beginnings at the dawn of history that continue with us today?” Alvin Toffler<sup>9</sup> identifies three long-term major civilizations which he likens as waves or major changes in the human experience. These three waves are: domestication of animals, the industrial revolution and the electronic computers. There is also the question, “Are there civilizations concealed as vibrations within our lifestyles?” Will Durant<sup>10</sup> felt there were so many civilizations interacting and overlapping that it would be difficult to define, identify and count them. What Durant is saying is there is an uncountable number of civilizations, some existing in coincidence, some inclining, while others are declining, some in tandem, while others are in parallel, some are major, but many are minor. An inhabitant of one civilization may well be residing in a second or third simultaneously. It seems there is an interaction among many civilizations passing or transferring human experiences and values between and among them. And still another question, “Are civilizations only those visible with brick, mortar and artifacts?” “Are there some civilizations that have eluded Toynbee’s, Toffler’s or Durant’s identifications?”

Daniel Boorstin<sup>11</sup> has awakened us to “hidden histories”. Histories of human experiences containing influences and pressures from the past which are still with us in our daily lives, but not seen nor recorded. These hidden histories are invisible, seldom recognized, but deep determiners in the behavior of people. This is to suggest there are two categories of civilizations in human history: those visible and those hidden with interconnections between the two. Conceivably, the hidden commences the civilizing process with ideas, thoughts, inspirations, values, attitudes and needs. These are drivers, like hidden machinery. They start and force a movement of change. First clashing

with the existing cultures, then later forcing it's demise or possibly being assimilated. The new movement starts in a behind the scene force and later ends up with visible and tangible results such as technology, buildings, medicine, law, lifestyles, habits, concrete, institutions, vehicles, music and social arrangements. Thus, we see the visible American Civilization with skyscrapers, highways, the Congress, the jet planes, the sewer systems, the corporations, the televisions and the telephones. Too often, one forgets the hidden historical and weightier determiners of the American Civilization with pilgrims in search of religious freedom to pursue Biblical ideas, the revolution which set down the "Bill of Rights" for a new human development, the colonialists with entrepreneurial fever to better their ways of making a living and the constitutional architects inspired by Biblical principles making value applications to remove monarchies and relics of an old world. One can also see, modern civilizations with medical science, hospitals, surgeons, clinical laboratories, transplants, immunizations, therapeutic clinics, drug store networks, solariums, laser surgeries, pharmaceutical industries, research institutions and a variety of nutritional dietary practices. Too often one forgets the hidden historical weightier determiners of the modern medical phenomena: Egyptians with their medical records on papyri to disseminate information on healing to all parts of an empire; the Hebrews who set-up restriction standard insisting on prohibitions of eating fat or blood (Leviticus 3:17); the 60 treatises written by the Greek Physician Hippocrates which personified the ideal western medical practitioners; the Roman Physician Galen carried out experiments on animals for human betterment which gave rise to modern medical research; the discoveries of microbes by Louis Pasteur opened an understanding of infectious agents and human immunity. In early history, physicians were able to carry all their instruments and medications in one bag. Today, a vast array of huge health care systems and institutions are necessary to sustain and perpetuate modern medical civilizations. Thus, the invisible weightier determiners are the real causes of the start of the visible civilization.

The Bible has and continues to be a hidden influence on people. This is not easily seen. It is held deeply within the lifestyles of people. The Biblical Old Testament, the Torah and the Talmud produced Judaism giving the Jews a way of civilized life while influencing other civilizations. The Biblical New Testament along with the Old Testament produced Christianity, giving the Gentiles a way of civilized life while influencing and even destroying a Paganistic Civilization. Parts of the Biblical Old Testament and parts of the New Testament along with the Koran produced Islam giving the Muslims a way of civilized life while influencing and changing other civilizations. If the Bible is accepted as merely religious writing and a set of precepts to guide a person's morality, it's most awesome role is

missed. But if the Bible is seen as a production to all that comprises life, now and in the future, then the reality of a hidden civilization will seize us to see the changes that have and will occur in the lifestyles of people. These concepts, principles and values obtained from the Bible become the driving influences in the lives of people in other activities of the human drama.

If the character of a civilization of the past continues into the present, the past is not gone. The past is present. Civilizations born in the past, like a fisherman's net sweeps in and gathers those usable values or elements over the centuries and brings them up to the present. A civilization acquires its character from the retained elements of the past integrated with new elements of the present. Elements which have no utility are rejected. Societies which have not accepted the new and rejected the old, have diminished or disappeared. Societies which have made their infrastructure responsive to the civilizing process have grown and matured. The ultimate test of any civilization is not the census, not the city sizes, nor the food production nor the industrial production. It is the content and quality of the character of its citizens. The Biblical Civilization was born in the early years of human development. Over time, it swept in and gathered values and experiences as a preparation for its implementation with the human family.

#### THE BIBLE HAS A LIFE OF IT'S OWN

“The words I speak unto you, they are spirit and they are life.” John 6:63

The world is awakening more than ever to how deeply religious it is. Take any continent - Europe, Middle East, Far-East, South America, religious values and practices are major activities in the lives of people and even governments. Americans are deeply religious in terms of Biblical attitudes, values, behaviors, habits and commitments. If these attitudes and values are carried within people, books, families, holidays, rituals, and cultural practices, the Bible and its precepts are alive. If these are transmitted from generation to generation, it gives the Bible a life of its own. The Bible lives within people, reverberating their concerns, coloring their future and guiding their decisions. This is “the secret” of the vitality of the Bible. Interesting to note, atheists who do not believe in a God are nonetheless convinced of the Bible's role in the civilizing process as well as its influence on an individual.

The Bible is only a book, but it gives meaning to life! It conveys the “whys” and the “wherefores” of existence. It supplies the answers for a future life to come. It has predictions that enrich hope. It provides guidelines for law and order. These guidelines contain instructions for keeping the peace, minimizing conflicts and ensuring justice for aggregate living. It has a storehouse of laws, legal principles and procedures, much of it is already incorporated in

the existing civilization. The Bible contains and encourages family values for raising children and for enhancing community. The family unit is central to the civilizing process since it not only perpetuates the family, but gives values to protect and enhance it. The Bible is a repository of wisdom and learning: poetry from the Psalms, skilled crafts from the Tabernacle, leadership from extraordinary heroes, human behavior from the Gospels, conceptual beginnings from the Garden of Eden, prophecy from prophets of old, perpetuating values from rituals and festivals, educational processes from temples, synagogues and churches, examples of religious vigor from the Acts of the Apostles, a view of the universe from Job, medical help from Deuteronomy, and predictions from Revelations. The list is enormous. Many of these will be described in greater detail later in this book.

The Bible’s most awesome value is it’s ability to start a spiritual life for an individual. This is also referred to as spiritual begettal. Some view this as “born again”. The Bible’s influence is like a seed which enters the mind of a believer and starts to grow like an embryo in the form of spiritual pregnancy. (Colossians 1:27) A new creature develops. The new creature undergoes phases of development as it’s ultimate aim is to change humans to spiritual creatures. The Bible provides the diet necessary for this transformation from humans to spiritual. See Figure 3.3 for an outline of this development.

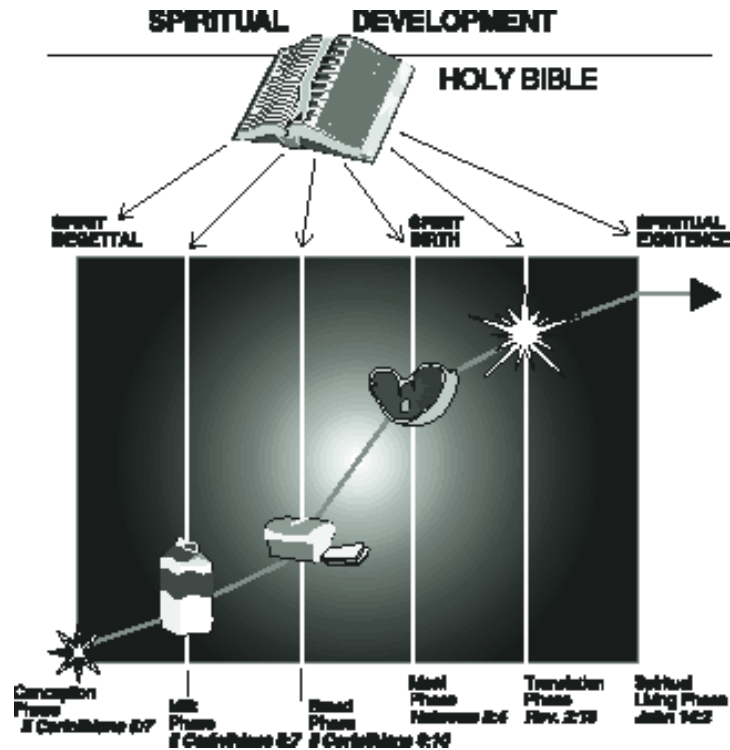


Figure 3.3 The Bible is an Opportunity for Spiritual Living

The Biblical concepts and guidelines continue to live and function long after their historic presentations. They have infected and continue to infect individuals supporting the thesis that the Bible has a living existence of its own. This is an existence that continues generation after generation. The Bible was written over 2000 years ago over a period of 1500 years, but its life is unabated. The chief value of the Bible is not in its literary power, nor its persuasive influence on Western culture, nor its useful insight into human behavior, nor its unfailing concern of human needs, nor in its exacting morality on a religious community. *Its chief value is in the "message" as a movement and vision of reconciliation of humans with God in the future.*

Equally important, the Biblical Civilization is a world-view civilization. It is not a civilization that will favor one people and exclude others. It is for all people. Its essence is moral conformity with God. Its mission is globular. Its character is the reverence for God and life. The reason why there have been many civilizations that have come and gone is they failed to arrive at the needed moral level. Nor have they developed the expected character. Nor have they acquired the right reverence for life. Nor have they involved all people on a globular scale. These failed civilizations wandered about with a poverty stricken morality and a parochial impaired divisiveness which made them homeless and anchorless. The Biblical Civilization expects to attain the needed moral level with a unification of all races, nationalities or ethnic affiliation. God is in the facts of Biblical history as truly He is in the cycles of the seasons, the architecture of the trees, the revolution of the planets and the expansion of the universe.

#### ARCHAEOLOGY HELPS BRING THE BIBLE TO LIFE

A civilization is confirmed when archaeologists uncover and excavate ruins, relics and historic sites that reveal the reality of a past existence. In fact, this uncovering is more than confirmation. They reveal knowledge and information of the characters and makeup of the culture. Some may disagree with the term "Biblical Archaeology" because they have no interest in Biblical matters, but the major thesis of this book is that the Bible is a civilization unto itself and there is profound evidence in its reality of a past existence. Archaeology and science may not "prove" the Bible true, but can confirm and enhance the evidence of Biblical Themes.

Keller<sup>12</sup> has presented an overwhelming mass of evidence that validates the Bible step-by-step, event-by-event and episode-by-episode. Biblical narratives of the patriarchs and the unusual scenarios have long time been regarded as folklore and hand-me-down tales. Keller's evidences not only corroborates the book of books, but awakens us to come to closer grips to Biblical meanings and implications. This evidence has caused us to revise the popular

folktale view of the Bible and to consider more seriously the claims and the purposes of the Bible. In Israel, places and towns that are described in the Bible are being awakened from their quiet tombs of the past. They lie and look exactly where the Bible locates them. There are other confirmations in addition to Keller, Albright, Cornfeld, Mazar, Kenyon, Yadin and Gleuck. These and others will be described and related to the theme of this book in later sections. Archaeological discoveries continue to have an important indirect impact on scholarly analysis and interpretation of the Bible. The resultant effect has been to support the trustworthiness of the historicity of Biblical scenarios and its supporting activities. This means, archaeology gives a large measure of credence to Biblical claims. The surviving written records provide glimpses of life in Biblical antiquity.

Archaeology does overlap with other disciplines such as history, anthropology, geology and geography. These help with the confirmation of facts without necessarily contributing to interpretation. Excavations have confirmed the early records of Arad, Jericho, Megiddo and Tzirzah. The city of Elba ruins revealed the existence of Sodom and Gomorrah. Jacob's well is genuine at the bottom of Mount Gerizim. Atop Mount Gerizim excavators of the Samaritan Temple competing with the Jerusalem Temple has been uncovered. The Robinson Arch jutting out from the Western Wall reveal a huge stairway system from Main Street to the Temple Mount in the days of Herod. Dead Sea Scrolls excavated in the Qumran Caves confirm much of Maccabean struggles and the accuracy of both New and Old Testaments. The synagogue of Capernaum where Jesus taught is relatively well preserved. Graffiti on plaster walls clearly link it with Peter's house in Capernaum.

As excavation and findings continue in the land of the Bible, additional discoveries confirm the movement of the Biblical Civilization that started in the past and continues with us to the present. One cannot separate the very existence of archaeology in the Holy Land from the religious orientation of its origins. Most see the excavated ruins as a revelation of a dead past. This is a shortsighted view. The excavated ruins not only validate the Biblical events as true, but give confirmation that the "message" of these events still live on. A collection and integration of these messages adds to the continuity of the Biblical's overall theme. But the excavations continue. New discoveries are frequently reported. The Biblical Civilization has been seen conflicting with other civilizations which put it into a hidden and invisible role. But since the Bible has outlived the many conflicting civilizations, its survival attests to its eventual emergence to a more visible status.

## CIVILIZATIONS HAVE STAGES OF GROWTH

Living organisms undergo a phenomena called “life cycles”. These organisms start from seeds grow, mature, peak, age, decline and eventually go out of existence. Life cycle existence give organic systems predictable stages. These stages manifest themselves as struggles or difficulties in moving from one stage to another and to an eventual maturity or to an eventual decline. Thus, plants, animals, and even humans can be described as having life cycles with distinct stages from beginning to end. Similarly, all civilizations have beginnings. Something starts them. They grow, mature, peak, decline and go out of existence. The “Cyclical Theory” of history according to Arnold Toynbee states human history can be divided into progressive stages firmly interlinked from beginning to end. A civilization goes through these stages under stress of acceptability or rejectability by it’s citizenry. This process may well be what gives civilization it’s growth or decline. It also appears acceptability features in one civilization may have been adopted from a previous civilization, but later it may be rejected. A civilization at it’s peak will exhibit a unique blend of beliefs, politics, philosophy, institutions, and values accumulated over the many stages of development. If in a late stage of maturity, a new innovative wave emerges in conflict with the maturity stage, either the new wave no longer survives or the mature civilization begins to decline. The new innovative wave increases and a new civilization develops. Thus civilizations may be short-lived like the 200 years of the Aztecs or long-lives like the 3500 years of the Egyptians. Longevity is either influenced or in conflict with completion prospects of an emerging new civilization. When the innovative spirit of a people dies, a civilization no longer has ideas to advance it. Consequently it undergoes decline and eventual termination. Toynbee sees all 34 civilizations he has identified as undergoing stages of increase or decrease. Furthermore, he indicates none of the 34 civilizations will survive the destructive challenges of the new ones emerging. He does concede, there is always the possibility of an emerging new civilization which will succeed and remain with humankind for an extended period never experienced before.

The life cycle of a civilization can be seen as six distinct stages: a) beginnings; b) emergence; c) development; d) growth; e) maturity and f) decline or regrowth. These stages are time connected with varying intervals between. The beginning stage is the first stage in which new conceptions or innovative proposals are introduced. The emergence, second stage, allow these conceptions and innovations to fill important human and environmental needs. The third stage is the development period in which the conceptions or proposals are acted upon in a gradual, but ascending manner. The conceptions are either embraced or rejected. If embraced the conceptions are rooted and life is infused.



The fourth stage is the growth stage. This is when the majority of the aggregate population accepts the original conceptions. The maturity stage is the fifth stage in which the conceptions are completely assimilated into the culture and a full fledged character of effects is exhibited. The decline stage is the sixth stage in which the original conceptions and proposals are no longer useful to the needs of the culture. The civilization is washing out. The decline stage, however, can be turned into a regrowth stage if the original conceptions and proposals are appended or adjusted or enlarged by additional conceptions and proposals. Civilizations have declined out of existence because their original conceptions ran their course of values and utilities with no addendums. The most characteristic feature of the decline stage is the conflicts and collisions between new and old conceptions. There is opposition, confrontation and struggle. The old gives way to the new. The old begins to lose the spirit of creativity, innovation and change that brought about it's existence in the first place.

The Bible is a proposal for a global civilization for all nations. Biblicans, who have seen the "vision of life" have accepted this proposal in advance of others. There are many features to this proposal. This book intends to highlight some of these features. The proposal can be seen as an interconnected series of stages from the beginning to the end. These stages are progressive. That is, they are cumulative. It starts in the Garden of Eden with conceptions where there are no political nations, no religious groupings nor social classifications. It ends with a vision of what the revelator calls "New Heavens and a New Earth". In this Biblical Civilization, the long plagued divisions of the human family is erased into one unifying people under God. It is not so much races disappear, nor languages become obsolete nor cultured variations are no longer wanted. It is rather a unity of rights and laws to the human family, an agreement on a future direction and goals to be achieved and an integration of values for all people. This vision operating on Planet Earth under conditions of a paradise.

The Bible's civilization has a life cycle like all it's competing predecessors. It starts, grows, matures, peaks and then either declines and goes out of existence or experiences a regrowth through new seeds for a new period. This life cycle has interconnected progressive stages. Taken as a whole, this proposed plan unlocks the secrets of understanding the Bible. Otherwise, the Bible is a book being ripped into pieces by different religious groups. It is this ripping apart that has given rise to the profane proverb, "The Bible is just like an old fiddle on which any tune can be played". There are wide and significant differences to be sure among the stages. But there are unites and connections. Perceptions of the Bible should be divided for examination and analysis. But to leave it in a divided

state is to ignore the wholeness to the Biblical message. The Bible has a phenomenal unity that gives it an organic relationship among what started, what follows, and what will eventually happen. There are three dimensions that give the Bible it's unity. First, is the continuity. The themes at the beginning continue to the very end without disruption. This continuity reaches to contemporaneous times and extends into the future. Second, is change. Continuity is not enough. Change through reinterpretation occurs to accommodate the applications to reality. Without relooks, reexaminations and reinterpretations, change would not be necessary. Third, there is finality of an ultimate purpose. These are age old goals of the designer of the human race and of the universe. These three dimensions of continuity, change and purpose results in a unified Bible with wholeness and totality. To end the Bible at the end of the first five books of the Bible or at the end of the Old Testament or to start it with the New Testament is to disrupt the wholeness and totality of the Biblical message.

#### FIVE INTERCONNECTED RELIGIONS FROM THE BIBLE

“That you may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God.” Colossians 4:12

Religion is a universal phenomena. Take away God and religion and humans live to no purpose. Humans just drift into the future. Religion is found among all nations and races. How it is practiced differs immensely. It will cost something to be religious, but it will cost more not to be so. If a religion is defined as a system of faith and doctrines in the worship of a deity especially if a covenant relationship has been defined with the deity, then there are at least five broad conceptual religions which have sprung from the Bible over it's history. There is really only one religion in the Bible, but five views of it. They are Edenism, Noahism, Judaism, Christianity and Messianism. The first two existed in ancient times. The next two are still with us. The fifth and last is being formulated and yet to come. The Bible has shaped the character of these religions more than any other book in print. Each of these religious systems of worship claim the Bible or portions of the Bible as a holy book. Each of them claim God as their deity even though there may be variations of perceptions. But most important, they are defined as a religion because they have a covenant relationship with God which makes them unique in their period of time. It's this covenant relationship which defines their religious standing with God. Each covenant is different! Each of them have sufficient differences to perceive and determine their uniqueness and yet they have many commonalties to establish an interconnection among the five.

A covenant relationship means two parties have come together, established agreed-upon terms and consent to abide by these terms. The covenant binds both parties. If there is a default on either party, the benefits of the relationship is lost. It's no secret that God will give life to any and all, but only on his terms. This is to say, one set of terms is balanced by another set of terms. Justice is intrinsically created when these two sets of terms are balanced. God said, if you will do this, then I will do that. If you will conform to my laws then I will give you life. He gives life to those who conform to laws and agreed upon terms of a covenant relationship. Here is a brief description of the terms of each of the covenant relationships of the five interconnected religions which made and continue to make them a religion.

1. *Edenism*. The first phase of this covenant was given to Adam. This might be called the "Edenic Covenant". God said propagate the human race, subdue the earth, have dominion, care for the garden, eat fruit and vegetables and abstain from eating of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. (Genesis, Chapter 2 and 3) If you comply with these terms you will have life in an Edenic paradise. The pair defaulted. They broke their covenant with God, lost life, and were expelled out of the Garden of Eden. There was a second phase between the pair and God. This might be call the "Adamic Covenant". It was given after the fall. God said to the woman, propagate children in pain, live motherhood in sorrow and accept your husband's headship. To the man, God said the earth's yield will be hard and filled with struggles. Live life even though short with death as the end. If you do this, I will give you a promise of a seed (The Messianic Redeemer) who will come to save you. He will bruise the serpent's head.
2. *Noahism*. God reaffirms the conditions for life for fallen humankind. He insists the sanctity of human life and the role of government to protect it. (Genesis 8:22; 9:1-17) Noah was told to propagate and fill the earth, eat animals as well as fruit and vegetables, but eating of animal blood was prohibited. Most important, the chief provision in this covenant, was human life must be preserved. Those who kill humans would have to give their lives as payment. (capital punishment) If you will do this, God promised never to destroy life by water. He would give the environmental seasons. Animals would fear man. Japhet's descendants will be enlarged. Shem will be specially used. Canaan will be servant to others.
3. *Judaism*. The first phase of the overall Judaic relationship was the "Abrahamic Covenant". (Genesis 12:1-4; 13:14-17; 15:1-17; 17:1-8) This was the condition for life for the faithful ones. God said to Abram to

separate from family, friends and home if he would go to a certain unknown land. If he would do this, he would make his seed a great nation where all the families of the earth would be blessed. The second phase was the “Law Covenant”. (Exodus 19:5-8; 20:1-26; 21:1-24) This detailed the conditions for life for Israel as a nation. Israel had to obey the 10 Commandments, adhere to judgments governing social life and follow the ordinances governing religious life. God said if Israel would meet these provisions and keep his law, He would make Israel a superior nation among nations. He would give Israel life and continued life. (Leviticus 18:5) The third phase was the “Promise Land Covenant”. This established the condition for possessing the promised land. God said to Israel there must be a national conversion to law. Israel must obey God. Repentance must be sincere without murmuring and complaining. God said if Israel would do this, He would regather all to the land of promise, defeat Israel’s enemies and give national prosperity. (Deuteronomy 30:1-10)

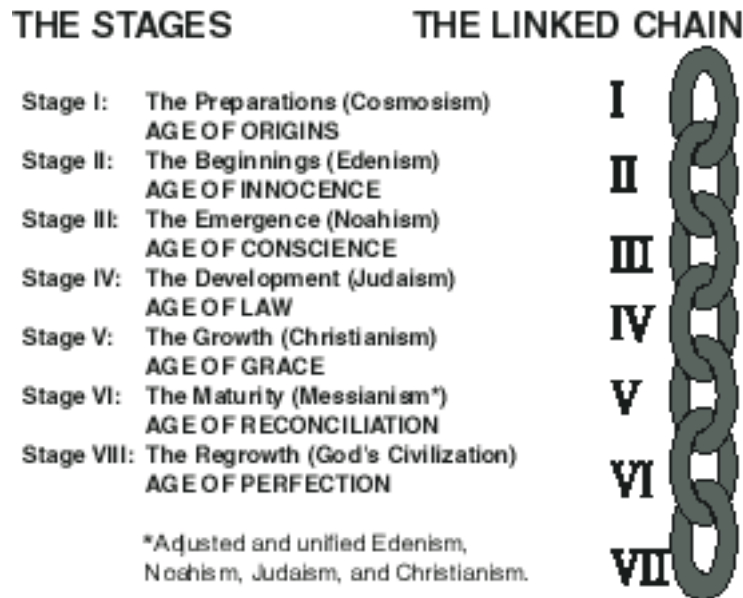
4. *Christianism*. This covenant is often referred to as the “Grace Covenant”. Other names have been used such as the “Covenant of Sacrifice”, “The Covenant of High Calling” or “the Sarah Feature of the Abrahamic Promise”. The “Grace Covenant” is a covenant for life. (Romans 12:1; 6:3-8; Psalms 50:5) Three major parts are in this covenant. God said if you will separate and not touch the unclean things, go on a journey of spirit-mindedness which would arrive in a spiritual-home and to sacrifice your prized possessions even your human life, then He would give a spiritually oriented eternal life. This means learn the mysteries of God (Ephesians 1:17-18), transform one’s character to the Christian model (Romans 12:2), engage in the work of Christ (Revelation 5:10), develop as spiritual new creatures (II Corinthians 5:7), preach the mission of the Church (Isaiah 61:1), and practice the love for both God and humans. (I John 3:14)
5. *Messianism*. This covenant is yet future. It will be the basic agreement between God and humankind in the Biblical Civilization. It is a covenant which will earn for an individual the right to life. It is an integrated, but adjusted covenant of the previous four. It is called “The New Covenant”. One can easily see continuity links among the previous four covenants. Yet, there are disparities. Biblicans will resolve and clarify these disparities. The Tree of Life in the Garden of Eden will now be available to all. Those original goals that were lost in the Edenic paradise will now be restored. The sanctity of life and the role of

government to protect, initiated in Noahism will be a major responsibility. The judgments of social life and human behavior of Judaism will be prevalent throughout the earth. The love of God and humans will be an easily accepted ordinance. The New Covenant (Jeremiah 31:31) as well as other covenants will be instituted. God gives life through covenants and no single creature in the universe will have the right to life without a covenant relationship with God.

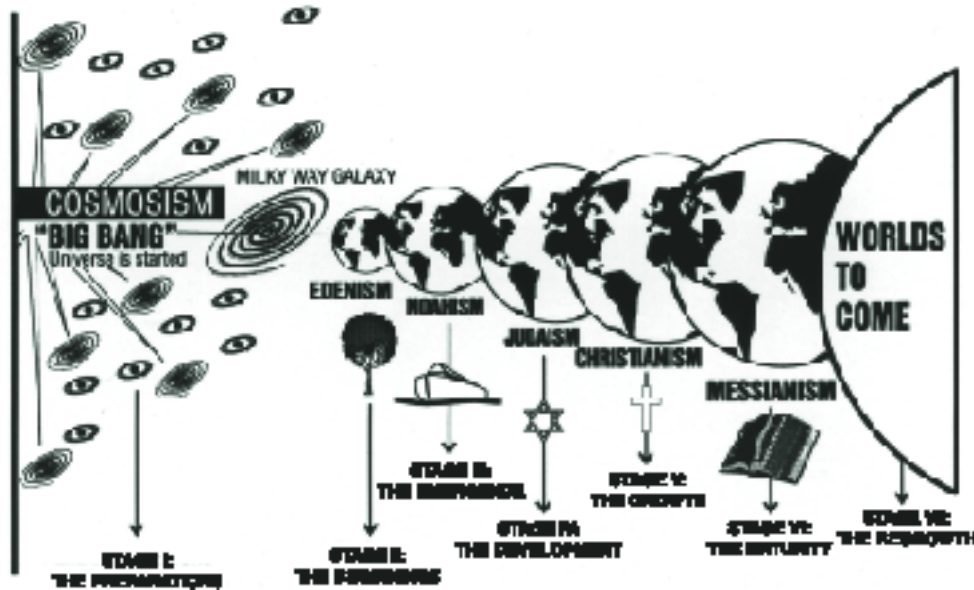
**THE BIBLE’S CIVILIZATION RISES IN PROGRESSIVE STAGES**

“The path of the just is like a shining light that shineth more and more unto the perfect day.” Proverbs 4:12

The central theme of the Bible is a proposal of a civilization for humans on earth. This infers the events recorded are not a flimsy series of disconnected happenings, but rather a unified series of successive events linked in a critical path from beginning to end. It’s this linked unity that gives the Bible it’s unshakable position. Without this unity, the Bible’s central theme would collapse. This theme is like a magnetic force which has a powerful attraction and in the process, unifies all that it attracts. The critical path through the Bible can be seen in seven progressive, but interconnected stages<sup>13</sup> from start to finish. (see Figure 3.4 and 3.5)



**Figure 3.4 The Bible has Seven Interconnected Stages that are Linked into a Chain**



**Figure 3.5 Stages of the Bible as a Rising Civilization for Planet Earth**

The progressive nature as a gradually ascending system of development has support from many scriptural texts. It was the Apostle Peter who conceptualized the stages idea in history when he said “*The world that was, the present world and the world to come*”. (II Peter 3:6-13) He also spoke of a “*light that shineth in a dark place until the day dawn and the day star arise in your hearts*”. (II Peter 1:19) Solomon spoke of the “*path of the just is as a shining light that shineth more and more unto the perfect day*”. (Proverbs 4:18) Apostle Paul refers this ascending as “*increasing in the knowledge of God*”. (Colossius 1:10) Again Apostle Paul refers to “*growth in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord*”. (II Peter 3:18)

The principle of a gradually ascending system in stages of development is the character of the Plan of God. This plan becomes a critical path through the Bible like a stream of water that begins its journey as a small spring. As it flows on through the ages, there are many contributing riverlets. The human experiences enrich and increase its waters. Other civilizations who rise and fall also contribute its experiences to the stream. The stream becomes a river getting broader and richer as time goes on. The essence of the stream are the human experiences collected for future use. The collection of these experiences are cultural and value connected. This is illustrated in Figure 3.6. Each stage is a period of time with its unique problems for that period. Each stage has a unique relationship with God as depicted in the covenant relationship of that period. Each stage does not supersede, but builds itself on the preceding stage. The great perception of this additive progression is not so much where people are as it is what

direction they are moving. Any direction, if not the fulfillment of an ultimate purpose, is heading for chaos. It is for this ultimate purpose that God makes changes and adjustments in the progression within and between stages. God’s willingness to make changes is borne out in Genesis 6:6, “And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth and it grieved him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth both man and beast and the creeping thing and the fowls of the air for it repented me that I have made them”. Also in Jeremiah 18:8, “If that nation, against whom I have pronounced, turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do unto them”.

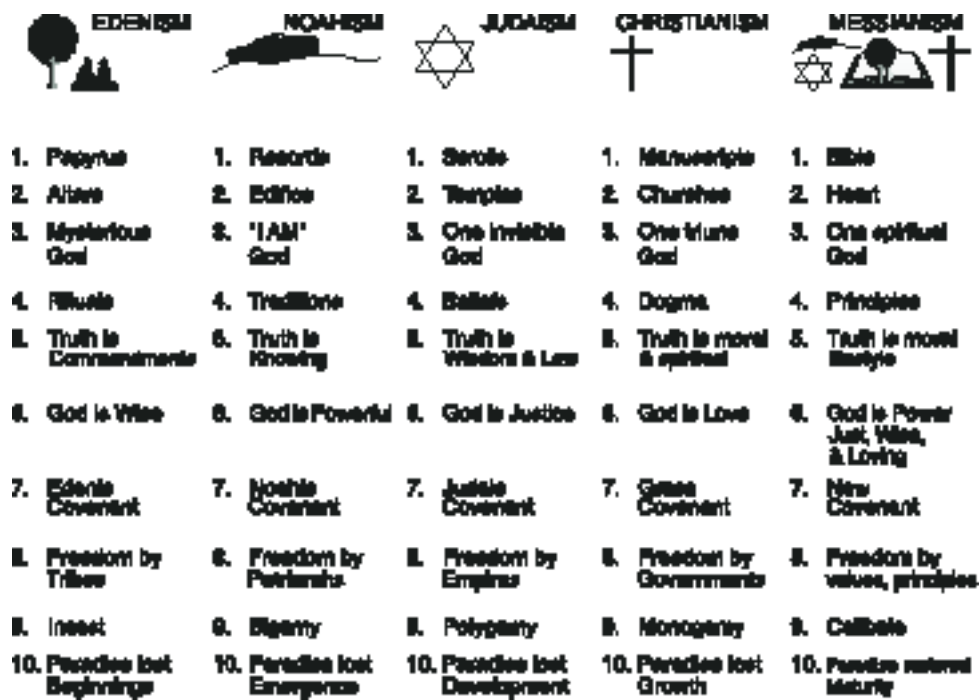


Figure 3.6. Cultural Stages of the Biblical Civilization

Also from Luke 14:23, “And the Lord said unto the servant go out into the highways and hedges and compel them to come in that my house may be filled. For I say unto you that none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper”. These and other scriptures indicate the Bible is not shy of the idea that God has changed and modified an original direction in order to reach an ultimate purpose.

Stage I is the preparation stage. To create the human species required two basic activities: a plan and a structure. God set up his plan long before the earth itself was created. This is inferred in Revelation 13:8, “The lamb slain from the foundation of the world”. The plan of redemption was conceived and known before the earth came into

existence. The second activity of preparation was to create a cosmos of galaxies, solar systems, stars and planets for the future home of humans. The Big Bang explosion resulted in a visible structure for humans in the age of eternity.

Stage II has all the classical signs of the beginnings of a civilization. This is the period when many conceptual seeds are planted on a completed physical earth: food production, relationships, family units, aggregate living, cities, agricultural products, commerce, trading, governments, taxes and the worship of a deity. Mesopotamia and Egypt emerged during this stage with Israel as a buffer land between. Hammurabi, the great law giver around 2100 BC, united many city-state governments into a vast Babylonian Empire. Hammurabi was the Moses of the Babylonians. The laws he introduced gave civilization, at that time, the needed guidance in society as much as the code of law Moses gave the Hebrews 650 years later. During Stage II, the history of man had been of the Adamic lineage. Stage II had a long period of beginnings. It is labeled Edenism. This is the period where many seeds were planted. They will be identified and described in the chapter on Edenism. There was neither Jew nor Gentile in Stage II.

Stage III is identified as Noahism. This is the period following the great flood. It is well known the flood washed away an old civilization with its physical and natural features. Also the flood washed away its cultural features as well. Noah and his family, according to the Bible, were the only human survivors. Hence, they were the only transmitters of culture after the flood. But they were a different family than those of the pre-flood period. A new culture was started after the flood subsided. Noah became like Adam, an ancestral progenitor of the whole human race. He entered a worshipping covenant relationship with God. The original conceptual seeds planted in Edenism now emerged with Noah in the period of Noahism. The conceptual seeds were continued from Stage I to Stage II even though they were changes made in the progression of the Bible's critical path.

Stage IV is described as the development stage. This is where structure of the Biblical Civilization develops from the seeds that emerged from the flood. This structure is Judaic and results in formalizing the Jewish culture. This Judaic structure spread throughout the world especially during the diaspora. The diaspora is often described in negative terms because the Jews were uprooted out of their homeland. But the diaspora can be seen in a positive way in which Jewish values were scattered into many different cultures. This is like the metaphor of a tree, seeds are planted (Edenism), the roots emerge (Noahism), the trunk and branches give structure, spread and support (Judaism). For example, a great seed in Stage II was the free will endowment of choice given to the human pair in Eden. In Stage III, there was serious abuse with this endowment which brought about the flood. In Stage IV, laws were



enacted to provide guidelines for this endowment to help humans make choices between right and wrong. In Stage II and III, there was neither Jew nor Gentile. Jews came on the scene when Abraham was called from the city of UR in Mesopotamia. Later the Jewish origin was formalized when Jacob became the father of the twelve tribes. The Arabs claim Abraham as their founder through Ishmael. The Jews claim him through Isaac. His origin was Mesopotamia or what is now called Iraq. Arabs consider Abraham an Iraqi. It was as much as 2200 years from Adam to Abraham as it is from Abraham to Jesus. These are long periods of time. We will not enter the controversy as to whether Judaism started with Abraham or with Jacob. As a point in fact, the name Jew does not appear in the five books of Moses call the Torah. It emerged in the days of Esther. It's derivation is from the tribal patriarch Judah which was one of the twelve tribes. The term Jew was applied to all members of the returning two tribes after their captivity from Babylon approximately 486 BC. The controversy over the start of Judaism is understandable since Abraham is a character at the interface of Stage III and IV. For our purposes, we shall include him in Stage IV as the founder of Judaism.

Stage V is labeled Christianity. This is where growth and expansion on a worldwide basis occurs for the Biblical Civilization. To continue with the metaphor of the tree, Edenism provided the seeds, Noahism provided the roots, Judaism provided the trunks and branches, then Christianity provides the leaves as the forerunner of fruit in Stage VI. Christian growth continues in the world even into today. Two major events occurred in Stage V that stimulated growth. First, Jesus, a Jew, gave the Biblical Civilization movement an adjustment in order to penetrate a hostile and overwhelming Pagan world. Unless this adjustment was made, the Biblical Civilization would have declined and gone out of existence. The Pagan world, fostered principally by the great empires including Greece and Rome was a fast growing civilization of it's own. Several features made up it's character: polytheism, idol worship, human sacrifice, drunkenness, orgies, lustfulness, superstitions, immoralities, polygamy, emperor worship, low value to human life, diet without restrictions, such as eating blood, food sacrificed to idols, self-starvation, divination, and after life rituals. Christianity, which is an adjusted Judaism, competed head-on with a Paganistic civilization. The beginning of Christianity was solely with Jews. However, the Judaic society resisted the new goals and insisted on the continuance of the old goals as found in Stage IV. Hence, the Gentiles were invited to join in the movement. Gentiles continue to be involved which was critical to control a growing Paganistic society. The Gentile converts

along with the Biblical movement brought about the clashes of two civilizations. The Christians in the Roman Empire and the conversion of Romans brought about the demise of the Paganistic society.

The second important event in Stage IV was the Jewish diaspora. The Jews were already without a government from 606 BC when Nebuchanezzar destroyed their polity. But in 70 AD with Titus, the Roman General, the Jews were dispersed and scattered throughout the known world by the Roman scattering plan. The Jewish diaspora went on for 1878 years up to 1948 when Israel became a new state. The diaspora was a significant experience since it put Judaism with its character and goals “on hold” to allow Christianity to grow and become well entrenched throughout the world. Today, Christianity is the world’s largest religion and its growth continues unabated. Features of the Christian society that were goals for Stage V are also for Stages VI and VII and include the return of Christ to earth to govern the new Biblical Civilization., to resurrect the dead for a future life, to give God’s message a non-exclusivity, to develop a spiritual church, to transform humans from their fallen nature, to cleanse the sanctuary of false religions, and to sustain the movement of the Bible as a rising civilization.

In Stage VI, the maturity stage the Biblical Civilization has displaced all competing civilizations. Fruitage appears with the leaves and the branches. Some other civilizations may be around, but in a state of decline. In this stage the movement of the Bible is clearly and openly in operation. This acceptance of the Biblical Civilization is not in its literacy power, although we note its literary value is a classic. Nor is its value its persuasive influence on the global culture for surely there is no disagreement among the scholars about this influence. Nor is its value for Jewish identify and separation since the Bible has given the Jews an enormous distinction. Nor is its chief value to perpetuate Christianity as it is now known and growing even though it has absorbed much of former secular civilizations. Nor is its value as history although we applaud the Bible filling in the silent gaps in secular history. Its chief value will be to make the Bible’s Civilization a reality. It will be God’s civilization on Planet Earth. Stage VI will be an adjusted, but ramified Edenism, Noahism, Judaism, and Christianity into one religion. This is intended to mean one unified system of worship. This unification will require major changes. It will generate resistance and struggles by those who wish to perpetuate stage goals of the past. The struggles and opposition will give way to the new operating global civilization.

The last stage, Stage VII is the decline or regrowth stage. It was cited earlier that seeds of innovations are sown in all stages. It is expected that new seeds would be sown in Stage VI which become goals that would continue the

Biblical Civilization to greater heights than ever before experienced in the previous stages. Unless these new goals are introduced and fostered, the Biblical Civilization will decline and go the way of all previous civilizations. The confidence is high the world will be reconciled to God. This means the Biblical Civilization will become God's Civilization in the future ages of eternity.

Thus, each stage has its goals to be accomplished. When they are, they form the basis of building up the subsequent stages. Each preceding stage is assimilated by a succeeding stage. In other words, early stages are creative periods with seeds of innovation that influence the rise of later stages. As these innovations are assimilated, attitudes, values and behaviors emerge. This leads to new lifestyles, different economic and social activities and renewed political and cultural movements. The progressive character of the stages are adapted to the capacity and potential of the people as individuals as well as a new society. After all, milk is for babies, bread is for growing youth and meat is for them of full age.

#### BIBLICAL GOALS

Seeds are goals. They are planted, nurtured and cultivated with a state of expectations. Seeds are planted in all five stages as goals to be reached within the stage as well as an overall expectation at the end of all stages. There are earlier goals that span and bridge all stages to provide the continuity for interlinking the stages toward its maturity. This explains with profound insight why a people in one stage may never realize the completion of a goal that was introduced in the stage. Its completion is for a later stage. Abraham never saw himself as the Father of many nations. Signs are emerging now for this prospect. But its fulfillment is still future. This was a disappointment to Abraham. The failure to reach a goal in one stage means it is to be fulfilled in a next or ultimate stage. It's unfortunate that religious groups over the centuries polarize themselves around the goals of a stage. This polarization prompts them to pursue goals of the past while the progressive movement continues ahead to the future. In many ways this explains the religious diversity in understanding the Bible. Some have polarized themselves around goals, sections, parts or testaments failing to see an overall structure and progressive outline to an ultimate purpose. Settling on any one stage removes the overview of the total Biblical movement.

Examples of this settling within a past stage can be seen with the Samaritans who worshipped God on Mount Gerizim which lies in ancient Shechem. Samaritans maintain Shechem was the first capitol of Israel chosen by God in conflict with the Jews' claim of the chosen Jerusalem. The people of Shechem founded a holy temple sanctuary on

the mountain overlooking Shechem. To this day, Samaritans still make animal sacrifices in accordance with the law of Moses such as their ancestors did. Lambs are killed, their blood is sprinkled and a sacrifice is offered on Mount Gerizan in celebration of the Passover. Just this year 500 Gerizan worshippers have continued this ritual exactly as they did 3200 years ago. According to Samaritan tradition, Gerizan now called Jebel et-tor is seen by the Samaritans as Mount Moriah on which Abraham was instructed to sacrifice his son Isaac. Jews and Samaritans continue to quarrel over this issue of the past. Each claiming their view is the correct view. There is much stressful discussion resulting from this controversy. Thus, there are those who polarize around something of the past while the Biblical movement moves ahead.

Another example of goal polarization is seen with the Judaizing Christians. In the early phases of the Christian church, most Christians were converted Jews who recognized Jesus as the Messiah. But the issue emerged with the conversion of Gentiles, shouldn't the Gentiles become Jews first before becoming Christians? The Judaizing Christians who were a party to the Pharisees, insisted the Gentiles be circumcised, follow dietary laws and observe the Judaic festivals of the past. (Acts 15:5) It was the Apostle Paul in a major conference in Jerusalem, with other Apostles, insisted the converted Gentile did not have to become a Jew. His argument was "ye are not under the law but under grace". (Romans 6:14) At this conference the Apostle Peter supported Paul with a quotation from the Old Testament which indicated that at the return of Christ there will not only be believing Jews, but also believing Gentiles. Gentiles were not required to become Jewish proselytes by circumcision. Thus, we see the Judaizing Christians had one foot in a past stage and one foot in a coming stage attempting to implement new goals while perpetuating goals of the past. Judaizing Christians still remain today, eager to move on to the next stage while still holding on to a previous stage. This is clearly the history of Biblical adherents - polarizing and upholding goals of the past while failing to see the progressive nature of the Biblical Civilization.

The whole Bible is arranged into one system of truth instead of a disjointed compilation of events, sayings and promises. All the parts fit as puzzle pieces which help reduce the enormous question mark hovering over humankind. The odds are against the Biblicans to unravel the mystery of the Bible unless they see the totality. It requires grasping all the stages as a system of truth which is progressive in it's character. Each stage of the Biblical system is higher than the preceding one. Each stage has goals to be achieved. When another stage starts, it is not because the former stage has failed. Rather, another work is to be done. The upheavals that occur at the end of each stage is the

result of the redirection of the movement of the civilization. The old order yields to the new. Onward is also upward. Each stage builds on the previous stage, both in events and people. Had there been no Adam, there would have been no Noah. Had there been no Noah, there would have been no Abraham. Had there been no Abraham, there would have been no Moses. Had there been no Moses, there would have been no David. Had there been no David, there would have been no Jesus. Had there been no Jesus, there would have been no Paul. Had there been no Paul, there would have been no sharing of God throughout the world. God would be unknown.

The progressive linking character of the Bible was highlighted by Solomon when he said, “The path of the just shineth more and more unto the perfect day”. (Proverbs 4:18) Is this not the principle of growth? To continue with the metaphor of the tree, a tree starts with a seed, it grows, it matures and bears fruit which means it can reproduce and perpetuate itself. Similarly with life, a baby starts with a seed, it grows, it matures and eventually is able to reproduce itself. The Biblical Civilization starts with seeds, it grows, it matures and eventually reaches goals capable of reproducing itself. The movement of the Biblical Civilization continues unabated with an ever growing number of devoted Biblicans. This is the secret to the vitality of the Bible so constant through changing cultures over the many centuries.

There are four major goals which were introduced in the Garden of Eden and have bridged all the stages over the centuries. These goals were introduced by God Himself. The goals are still to be accomplished. (Genesis 1:26-27) Goals are visions and where “there is no vision the people perish”. (Proverbs 29:18) These goals are:

1. “Fill the Earth”. This is a commission given to Adam as well as his progeny. The population has grown over the years. The end is not in sight. There is a design limit to filling the earth. That figure is only known to earth’s Designer. Population continues unabated.
2. “Subdue the Earth”. This is the commission to finish an unfinished earth. To make the earth a paradise for all humans to live throughout eternity. Much has been accomplished toward this goal. There is more to be done. Ecological and conservation activities have been accelerated.
3. “Have a Dominion”. This commission puts humans in charge and overseer over the fish of the sea, the fowl of the air and over every living thing that moves upon the earth. This means to actively care, maintain, produce and perpetuate the lives and species of these creatures in the dominion.

4. “Man to be in the image and likeness of God”. The character and moral content and lifestyle of humans must reflect the image and likeness of God. For the past 60 to 70 centuries, the movement of humankind has been learning and experiencing this likeness. Much has been done. Much more needs to be done.

The Biblical Civilization has incorporated these four major goals. The history and meaning to human experiences is directed toward these accomplishments. See Figure 3.7. The four major goals are historic visions that are driving the Biblical Civilization in a future role. Each goal has an engine with energy to accomplish it's intent. A vision is the ability to see an invisible dream become visible.

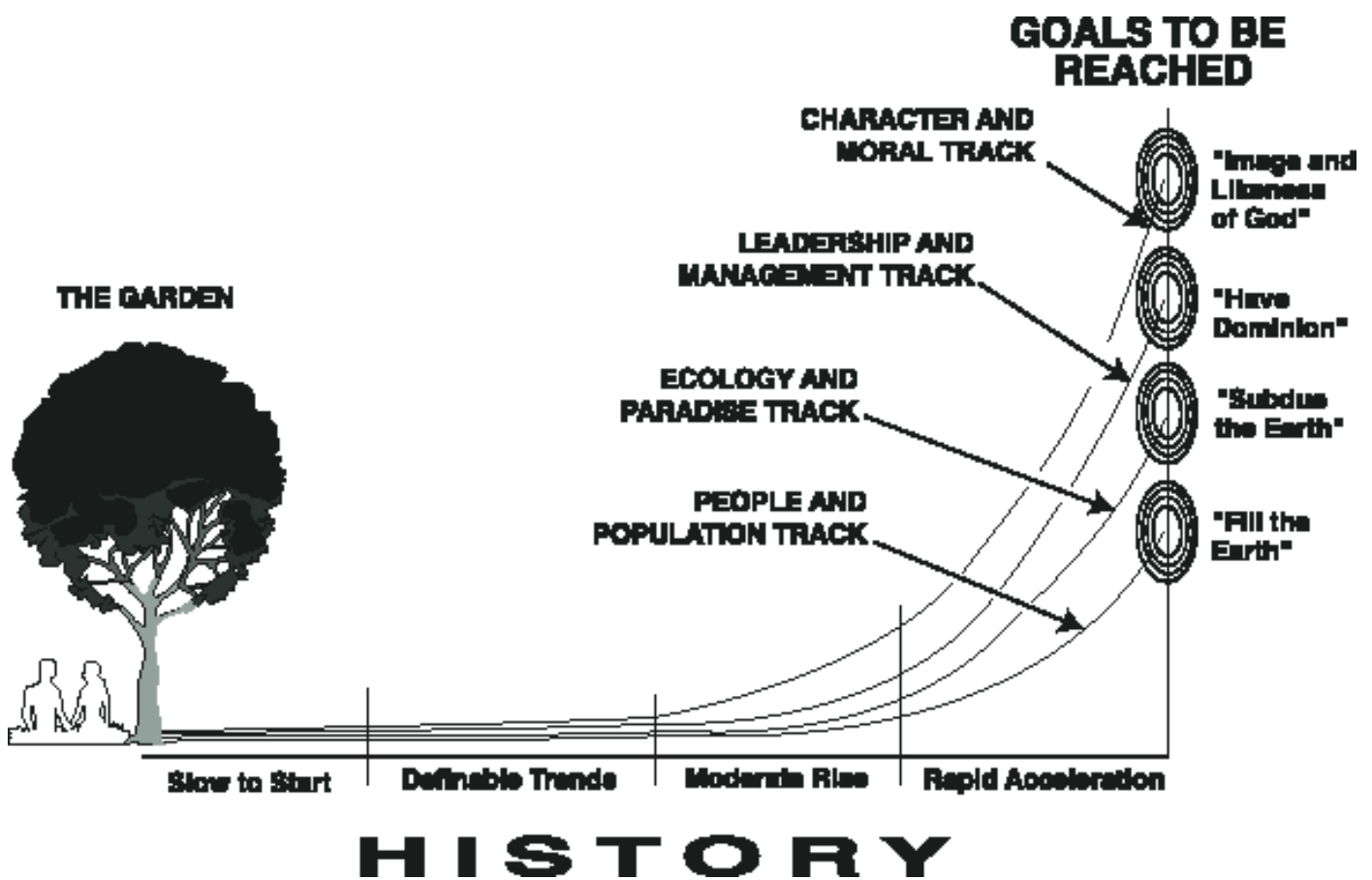


Figure 3.7 History and Human Experiences are Directed toward Four Goals

## CHAPTER 4

### COSMOSISM: THE PREPARATION OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION

The awesome universe. Mind boggling statistics. Can the universe create itself. Earth's visible universe among multiple universes. Theories and views how the universe started. Author's view of how the universe was started. Big Bang singularity. Cosmic Plan. Elements of the Cosmic Plan. A designed universe with order and hierarchy. Mysteries of the universe. Black holes seen to perpetuating the universe. God exists. Ten arguments from reasoning for God's existence. God has no origin. Perceptions of God. The grasp of infinity with numbers. God as a spirit. Monotheism.

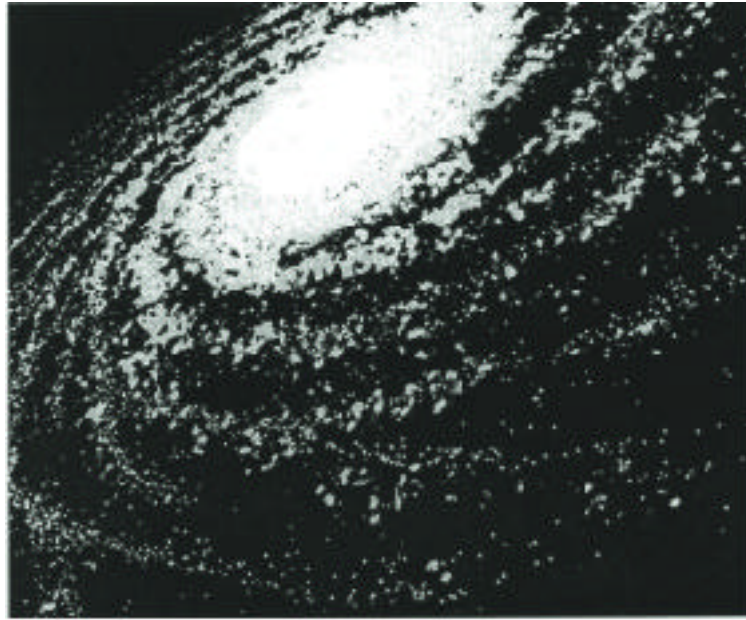
#### THE AWESOME UNIVERSE

“In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth.” Genesis 1:1

God's great universe with all its myriads of galaxies, stars, planets, and other stellar bodies reveal movements, activities, shape, form, energy, light and vitality. The universe is an awesome contrast to the smallness of the earth and the puny size of humans. The universe is one of God's thoughts! Can you imagine the awesomeness of His other thoughts. The Cosmos, its impressive immensity, its rich diversity of forms and its coherent unity cannot be accepted as a brute random fact. It has design! The universe with its enormous size, difficult to measure distances and remarkable order is astonishing. Throughout the ages, the mysteries of the universe has always seized the attention of astronomers, scientists and the intellectual inquirers. But lately, new evidence and new statistics have excited even the ordinary truth seeker. Within the past few decades, a vast wealth of new scientific data and theological reflections, has been accumulated. This has made dramatic progress into the mysteries of the universe. There are few fields of science or theology which has not been fundamentally impacted by these new measurements

and discoveries. The estimates<sup>1</sup> and the data concerning the celestial objects are staggering. Here is a brief look. The universe contains 100 billion galaxies with each galaxy holding 100 billion stars. This totals approximately 25 sextillion stars. This is one followed by 23 zeros. The universe spans across between 8 to 20 billion light years. Of the galaxies, 5 percent are spirals in shape and the other 95 percent are elliptical or irregular. The galaxy Andromeda lies at a distance of 1.6 to 2.5 million light years from our sun. The light coming from this source has traveled 4,500 million years before registering as a faint blur on a photographic plate. It's awesome to think light as an energy can travel with such intensity for so long. The Milky Way Galaxy, the one earth belongs to, travels 500,000 miles per hour. With this speed it pulls the sun and the earth along with it. It takes the Milky Way 250 million years to make at least one rotation. Since humans were created, the Milky Way has not made one complete circuit. With this incredible time, can one possibly tell the galaxy's life or say where it is going. In contrast, the earth travels 67,000 miles per hour and takes 365 days to make one circuit around the sun. The earth's rotational velocity is 24,800 miles per hour. The earth does this regularly with the same precision. Black holes, which are large collapsing stars with extremely dense gravity, pulls its own light inward as well as weak, nearby stars. It is estimated each galaxy has its own huge black hole. The larger black holes have masses about 100 million times the mass of our sun and are located at the center of the galaxy's quasars. The temperature found everywhere throughout the universe is minus 460 degree fahrenheit (minus 73 degrees centigrade). This means the hot stars including our own sun is surrounded with a cold environment. This has a cooling effect on the stars. All the matter and energy observable in the visible universe was originally in a sphere no bigger than a dime. This might be termed the Cosmic Atom. However, this gaseous sphere was unbelievably dense with an equally unbelievably high temperature. When the Big Bang explosion occurred with this sphere, emanating clusters cooled at an incredibly fast rate. The present properties of the universe assumed its character after the temperature dropped 100 million times to that of the sun's core. The first results from this explosion was the shaping of the galaxies in a spiraling elliptical form as seen in Figure 4.1.



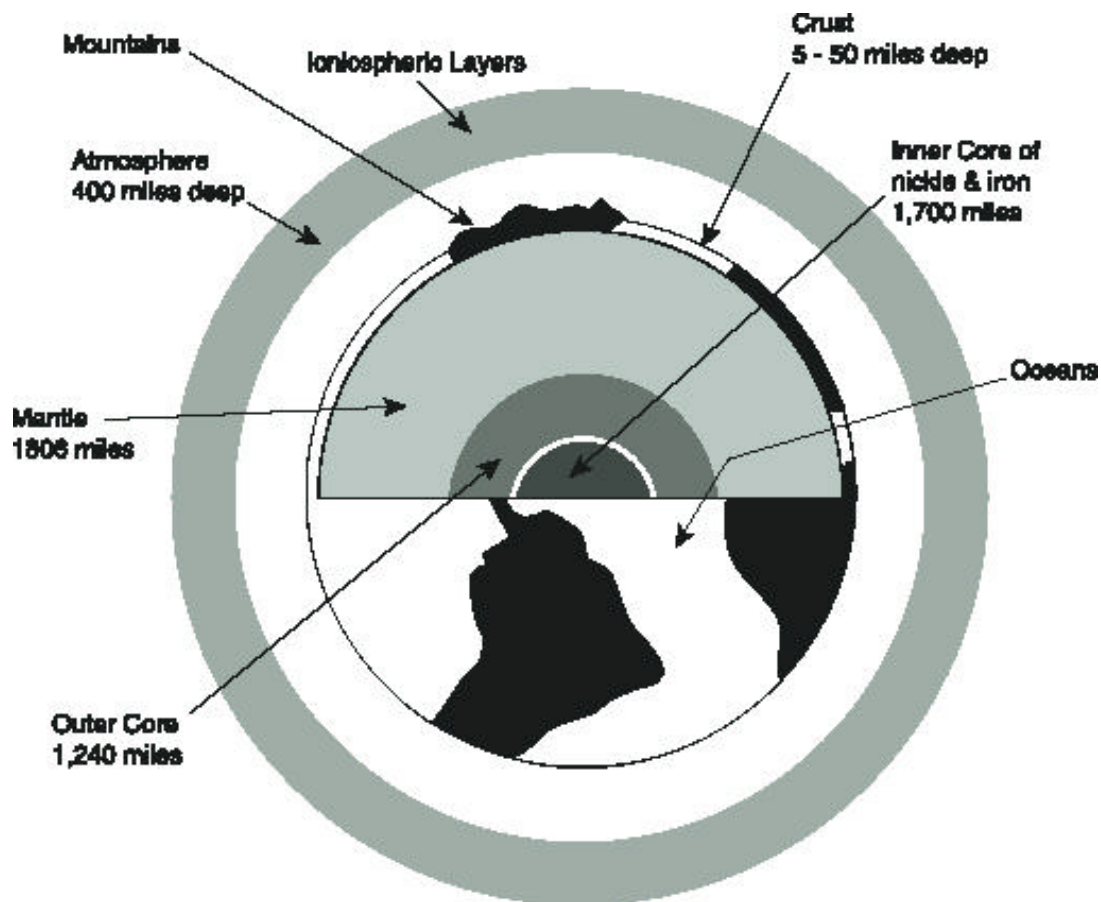


**Figure 4.1 The spiraling shape of a galaxy**

Our sun, 865,000 miles in diameter, is similarly impressive. It is equivalent to a row of 108 earths. It is a star. It is moving through space at the rate of 500,000 miles per hour while pulling the earth and all its planets with it. The life of a star lasts approximately 10 million years. They then begin to collapse or are sucked into the intense gravity of black holes to be reenergized and refueled. Once the weak stars energy is replaced, the black holes finally shoots them out of their tubular configuration as new stars in a new position. The sun's total lifetime, as a star, maintained the life bearing earth approximately 10 billion years. Nearly half of the sun's time has passed. It is estimated that each of the stars may have as many planets like our earth. This would yield a minimum of one sixtrillion planets similar to earth. If our sun were hollow, one million earths would fit into the sun's hollow sphere. This indicates our sun is quite large even at a distance of 93 million miles away. The number of atoms estimated in the visible universe is 10 followed by 620 zeros. Although stars or suns are fundamentally the same, being balls of glowing gas about 80 percent hydrogen, 15 percent helium, with the remaining 5 percent of a variety of gases, 90 percent of the stars in the universe is between one tenth and ten times as massive as the sun. The temperature of the stars vary. The white and blue stars with the hottest about 100 times that of the sun. The reds are of lessor heat ranging several times that of the sun. The solar energy reaching the earth is at the rate of one million kilowatts per square kilometer. The utilization of this energy is less than one percent.

Our earth is equally impressive as the universe and the sun. The earth orbits around the sun in 365 days, 5 hours, 48 minutes and 45.1 seconds. This orbiting of the earth continues year-in and year-out like the precision of a clock with the huge weight of 6.5 sextillion tons. Over 70 percent of the earth is ocean water. 30 percent is land. We know

the importance of the ocean in our ecology. From the oceans, we get our drinking water. From the oceans, we may well get our future food. For a planet to support life as we know it, it is essential to have the right quality of water vapor, the right temperature, the right gravity and the right gaseous atmosphere. A 2 percent change in the distance to or from the sun would rid the planet of all life. The earth receives only one-half of one-billionth of the sun's radiant energy. In only a few days, the earth gets as much heat and light from the sun as could be produced by burning all the oil, coal and wood on the planet. The deepest part of earth's oceans is farther below sea level than that of the land above it. The Mariana Trench, a great fissure in the floor of the Pacific Ocean reaches a depth of 36,198 feet at its lowest point just off the coast of the Philippines. Mount Everest, considered the highest mountain on the Nepal-Tibet border is 29,028 feet. The great fissure of Mariana is deeper than the highest mountain of Everest. A conceptual cross-section of the view of the earth is seen in Figure 4.2.



**Figure 4.2** Cross-sectional view of the Earth and Atmosphere

The earth's temperature increases with depth into the earth to its core. The heat increases to an estimate of 6,700 degrees Fahrenheit at the center. One can boil coffee at the 15,000 feet depth of the earth's diameter of 8,000 miles with a circumference of 25,000 miles. Gravity diminishes as one goes upward into space. At the 4,000 miles upward distance, the gravity is low enough that an object traveling at the rate of 25,000 miles per second can escape the pull of the earth. The moon, 240,000 miles away weighs 81 quintillion tons proving a stone with this huge weight can be made to float without any means of support, except of course gravity. The earth has 2,000 identifiable minerals. We are only using 100 of them. Trillions of fish are estimated at 200 million tons of food per person with today's technology and productivity. Some 100 times more than what is needed. Earth's resources are still unexplored. Even the earth itself is getting larger at the rate of two and one-half inches per mantle distance per century.

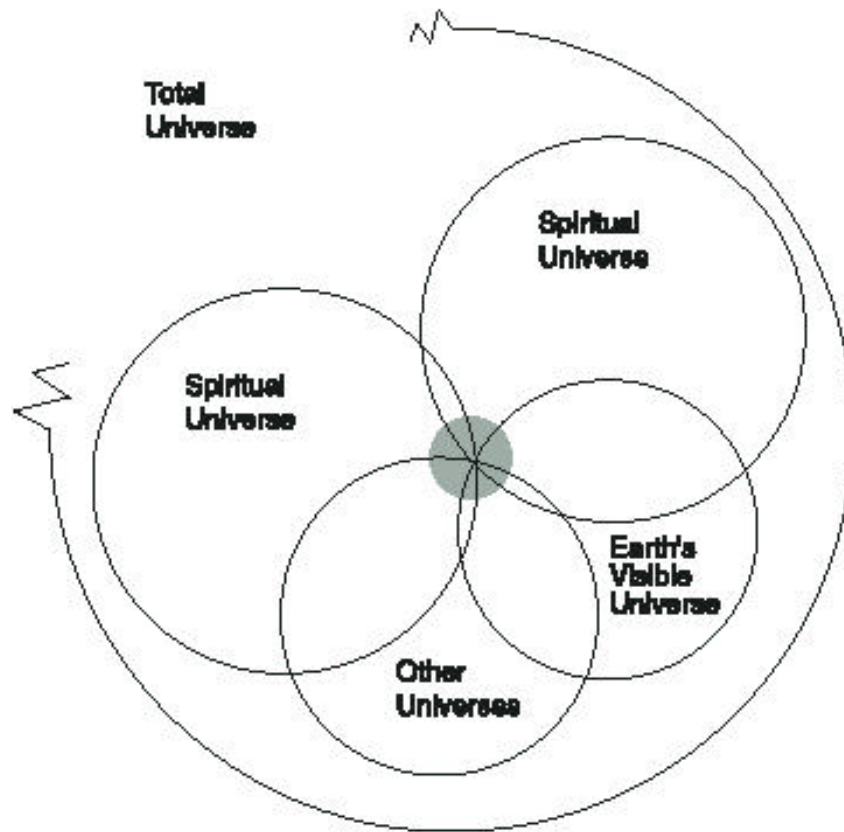
The mind boggles in trying to grasp these few detail estimates and statistics. Celestial bodies are woven together to make the universe suitable for life. The astonishing statistics and approximate estimates just briefly described becomes more stunning when one thinks these figures do not change nor are they variable. This emphasizes and supports the Biblical concept of order, symmetry, systems and unity built into the universe by a supreme designer. God is the designer. God is the principal of the Bible. Everything narrated, enjoined or foretold is related to Him. The God of the Bible was and continues to be proclaimed by the Bible. It is readily accepted by a small group of followers, moved by an enormous throng of devotees and now, acknowledged by 81 percent of the world's population. "Light shines more and more unto the perfect day." (Proverbs 4:18)

#### CAN THE UNIVERSE CREATE ITSELF?

"The heavens are thine; the earth also is thine; as for the world and the fullness thereof, thou hast founded them." Psalms 89:11

In the most broadest sense, the term universe refers to the totality of all existing universes, entities, systems and processes found in the aggregate whole. In a more restricted sense, the term universe refers to what is taken to be the most inclusive systems of astronomical bodies. Since several theories have been introduced by Fred Wolf in his parallel universes, Steven Hawking with his universes within the total universe, Carl Sagan with the hierarchy of universes, Andrei Linde's with his countless baby universes called "bubbles", and Richard Gott with his infinite number of universes. This book in its description of the universe will be restricted still further and confined to the visible universe which humans can see both with the naked eye and radio-telescopes. This excludes non-visible or

spiritual universes beyond the human conception. See Figure 4.3. “And it is only by faith that our minds accept the fact that the whole universe was formed by God’s command - that the world which we can see has come into being through what is invisible.” (Hebrews 11:3; Phillips)



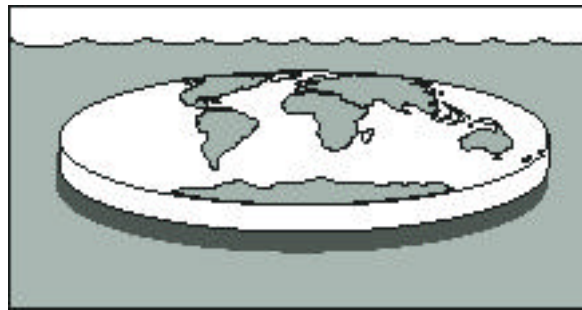
**Figure 4.3 The Earth’s visible universe is among multiple universes**

Only recently has science come to realize the universe as a totality is incredibly larger than we have ever been able to conceive. After all, God existed long before the Big Bang. His created abilities and energies were exercised in other total worlds that we know nothing of. A human looking at the sky on a clear night sees with the naked eye approximately 7,000 stars. If this human looks at the sky with observable telescopes, such as the 200 incher at Mount Palomar, one can see several billion. With the use of radio-telescopes and telescopes on satellites, sixtrillion stars are now located in the visible universe of which the earth belongs. The 7,000 stars is as a single drop of water in the boundless sea of the universe.

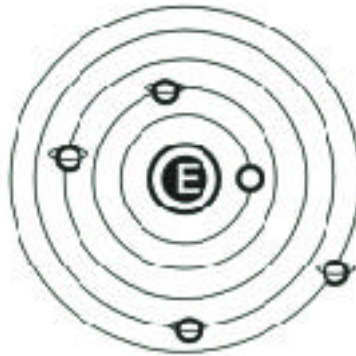
Theories and views of how the universe was started and how it is held up has been many and varied. Figure 4.4 is a summarization of some of them over the ages.



**Figure 4.4 Views of the Universe over the ages**



**Figure 4.4 Views of the Universe over the ages (Continued)**



**Figure 4.4 Views of the Universe over the ages (Continued)**

Everything, including the visible as well as the invisible (spiritual universes) are put together with an ingenuity so astonishing that it's difficult and even impossible to accept this phenomena as resulting from natural selection or chance. The Big Bang Theory advanced by Edwin Hubble in 1929 gave the most plausible explanation. This theory states the universe had a start. Somehow, this start appeals to the reasoned thinker of those in the Western Culture that something "must have started it all" as opposed to "it was just there". Even Einstein had a change in view about this start. When Albert Einstein published his Theory of Relativity in 1917, his assumption was

based on the static universe theory. This static theory claimed the universe is infinite in age with no start or beginnings. The stars drifted about randomly without apparent directions toward or away from us. After seeing Hubble's evidence, Einstein changed his view and said of the necessity of a beginning. Other scientific colleagues who were solving Einstein's field equations were convincing him also that the universe was not infinitely old, but that it must have had a beginning. A universe with a beginning requires a beginner. Later, Einstein once remarked that what interested him most about the beginning creation and God was the alternatives that God had before He selected the alternative of the universe as it is. Science has now formulated a clearer picture of the alternative God decided upon in formulating the universe. Edwin Hubble's Big Bang Explosion provided the basis. Here is a brief summary of his theory and this author's view of how it explains the start of the universe. See Figure 4.5

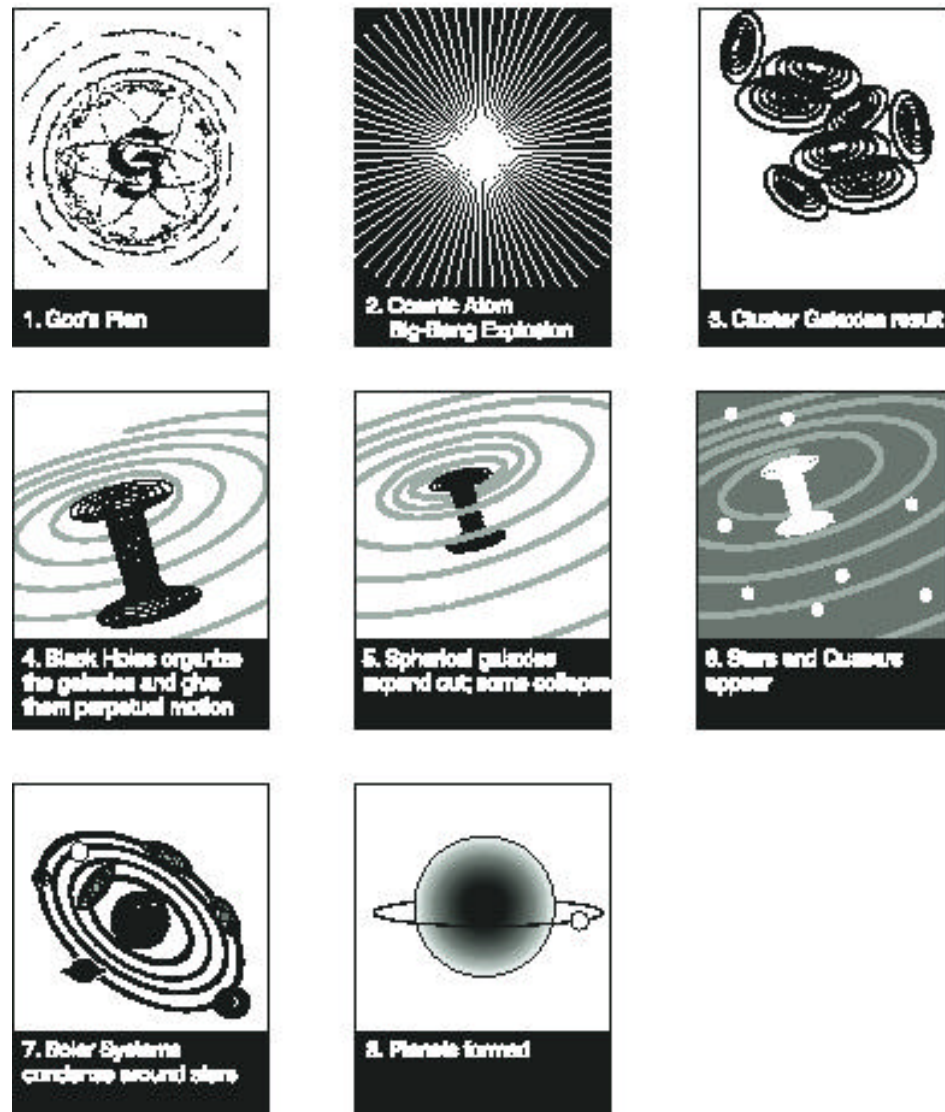
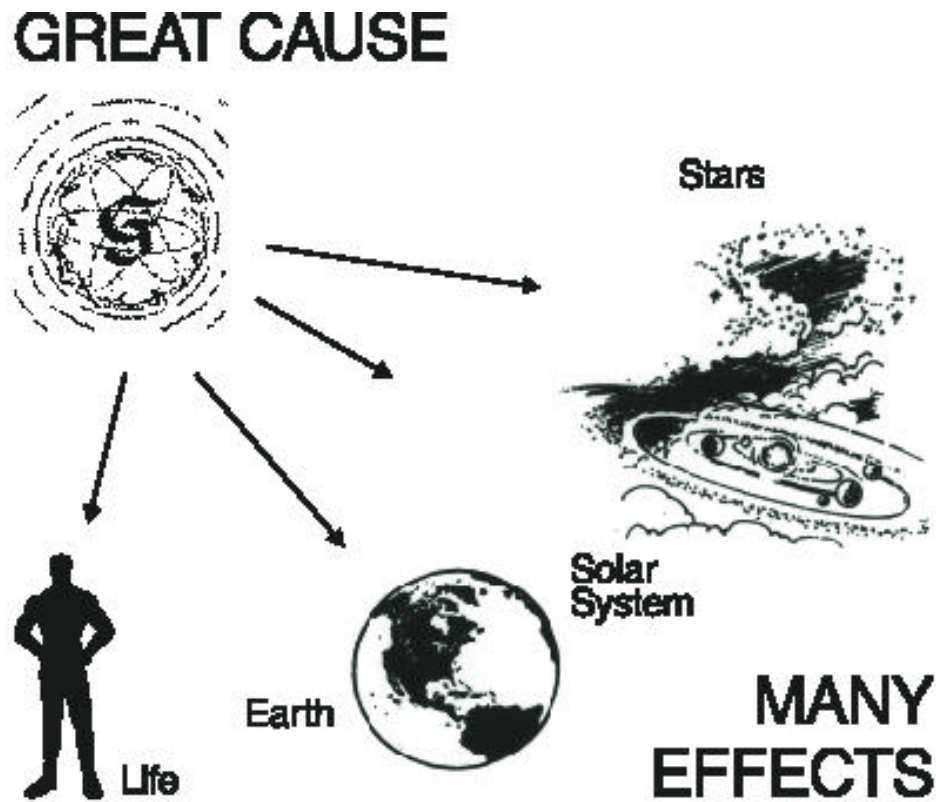


Figure 4.5 How the Universe Started (Simplified view)

Approximately eleven billion years ago, an immense and incredible force caused directly “a Big Bang Explosion”. This explosion came from an unbelievably hot ball of gases. In less than a trillionth of a second, this small ball like a seed expanded widely faster than the speed of light. The gas fragments and clusters moved in all spherical directions. This resulted in the expansion, spreading and cooling of gaseous clusters which formed the galaxies, black holes, solar systems, stars and planets as we know them. The number of planets resulting from this explosion is as countless as the number of stars. The original ball of hot gases could have been a transference of energy and gas from one form to another. God created this ball and was the force that ignited the explosion. This follows the First Law of Thermodynamics which states matter or gas cannot be created, but only transferred from one state to another. God appears to be a follower of his own laws. The law holds true for humans. Proponents of the “Big Bang Theory” support the idea of the beginning of all things in the universe. It was the COBE satellite on April 24, 1992 which gave the Big Bang creation theorized by Edwin Hubble in 1922 a stunning confirmation. Stephen Hawking said, “The COBE satellite findings is the discovery of the century if not of all time”. COBE was able to measure the temperature difference between clumped cluster waves in a galaxy. The inner wave is hotter than the outer wave. If this temperature differential is extended toward a centrality, it becomes hotter and hotter. If this measured temperature differential continued away from the centrality, it becomes cooler and cooler. Since the waves were moving and expanding from the hot source, the conclusion affirms the singularity of the explosion. What the COBE satellite found was “evidence of the birth of the universe”. It is like looking at what God did billions of years ago. Basically, the hot big bang model states the physical universe - matter, energy, length, width, height, time - started or began with a very small volume with extremely unbelievable high temperatures and erupted from a single explosive event from a single penetrating force. The big bang view discards the idea of a universe that just existed with no course nor direction. The big bang view of the start of the universe suggests an extremely powerful cause was in motion as if a design was in progress. This cause penetrated and exploded the unbelievably hot volume which produced it’s spiral galaxies and hot moving particles we call stars. Of necessity, the cause must be greater than the resulting effects. We usually think of causes as preceding their effects. This is an acknowledgment that the great single cause is God. This is seen pictorially in Figure 4.6.



**LIFE'S BEGINNINGS — REVERSE GEOMETRIC PROGRESSION:**

$$a, ar, ar^2, ar^3, \dots, \text{III } a = \frac{a}{1-r}$$

**Figure 4.6 A Great Cause Produces Many Effects**

The results of the Big Bang was not only a universe, but the creation of space and time as well. This is a mind boggling idea. The bang did not occur at a point in space at all. *Space itself came into existence with the big bang.* There was no space before that. Space, therefore started distances as we know it. Since it takes time to travel from one body to another in space, time was started. Time itself began at the moment of the big bang. The universe was created with time and not in time. Time is defined only within the universe. Outside of space, time has no meaning. Hubble's thinking on these matters has been a major breakthrough into both the origin of the universe and the movement of the galaxies. His statement that distant galaxies are retreating from us with a velocity that is directly proportional to these distances from us is now known as Hubble's Law. Earth is a product of that explosion



which cooled approximately 2 to 4 billion years ago. At that time, the earth was without form and void. Darkness was upon the face of the deep. (Genesis 1:2) Surrounding the earth was a collection of dense gaseous rings or canopies. The planet finally solidified with a 25,000 mile circumference, 8,000 miles in diameter and 6.5 sixtrillion tons in weight.

If we lay aside the mystery of where the big bang fireball of gases came from and ask how did the universe and physical matter develop into the universe as we know it from that fireball, the answer comes from the famous formula of Einstein's Theory of Relativity where matter and energy were the same thing. His formula is:

$$E = mc^2$$

where E denotes energy, m denotes matter and c denotes the speed of light (186,282 miles per second in a vacuum). This formula states that matter can be converted into energy and energy into matter. Moreover, because of the large value of  $c^2$ , a little bit of matter will produce enormous amounts of energy. The formula also states a vast amount of energy is required to produce a small amount of matter. This explains the huge energy required to produce a very tiny earth, relatively.

The formula for determining the age of the universe depends on the speed at which the universe is expanding in terms of the big bang. Disagreements on the age of the visible universe exists because scientists cannot agree on the rate of expansion. One group will polarize between 9 billion to 12 billion. The other group will say between 11 billion to 14 billion year old. For our purposes we have averaged the figures to 11 billion years. The disagreement on the rate of expansion is based on the pulse speed of light from various stars.

#### THE COSMIC PLAN

“Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? Declare if thou hast understanding.” Job 38:4

Whether it's understandable or not, the universe is not complete. It is unfinished. It is still unfolding and even developing. The creation of the universe has been thought of as a singular, abrupt and instantaneous event that took place in the remote past and has remained fixed to the eons of the future. But, the unfurling and spreading of cosmic bodies implies organizing principles and laws continue to shape matter, energy, arrangements and order toward even a higher state of structure and complexity. We cannot assume the continuous varieties of natural forms and structure have ended. God has not designed once and it is over forever. The utilization of what He has started, in

a boundless universe, will continue as a labor of creation throughout time. There is a “Cosmic Plan” for celestial bodies, even though it’s unknown with perplexing mysteries. None of the celestial objects and systems that make up the universe as we now perceive it existed when the big bang occurred some eleven billion years ago. Nor should we assume these same celestial objects and systems will make up the universe in future time. The problem of the ultimate design of the universe lies beyond our existing data and even rational thought. However, we know God to be the greatest economist of all. Surely, our reason prompts us to at least propose the development and utilization of celestial bodies which appear unutilized. The universe is unfinished as it now exists. Yet, there are very small signs that a vast construction is going on in the universe. It seems, relatively, we’re at the beginning of eternity and not the end. The earth and it’s contents is in the process of completion. This is to say the challenge of the ultimate design of the universe lies beyond science and falls in the arena of theology and spirituality. “And I saw a new heaven and a new earth for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away.” (Revelation 21:1) If God is a creator which continues to exist, creation is really a continuing process. The “Big Bang” was only a primeval explosion which started things off. The completion of things is still into the future.

One issue among scientists is the “heat” decline of the universe. This is often referred to as the “heat death” of the universe. It is an apocalyptic prediction based on the Second Law of Thermodynamics. This law states that the contents of the universe, if left to itself will become less ordered and more random. Celestial bodies with their systems unless upgraded and updated will become disorganized and dissipate into a random chaos. The Second Law of Thermodynamics states the universe depletes it’s available heat energy, unless it’s replenished, into useless waste heat. This implies the universe is slowly, but surely dying. Sooner or later the fuel runs out. The galaxies will expand and scatter in all directions, but cools down until it reaches the environment of minus 460 degrees fahrenheit. This would imply the universe will become a cold, dark and lifeless space. It is like a clock slowly running down. Just as a clock cannot keep running forever, so the universe cannot run forever without being rewound.

Nonetheless, more insight and data are being collected about the functions of the black holes. These holes are highly dense stars, tubular in shape which draw in weak and diminishing stars, reigniting them to an original state which subsequently shoots them out to a new position in the galaxy. With this process, the black holes replenishes and restores the lost heat. Is this the process the Designer will use to perpetuate the conditions of the universe? Will the universe’s designer bring into play another process for sustaining the stated conditions? Rewinding the universe,

against the Second Law of Thermodynamics, will not happen at the end, but is now happening to sustain the present character of the universe. It appears the black holes are responsible for “rewinding the clock”. Additionally, it will be billions of years before this issue becomes pronounced. It is not possible that the creation’s designer will introduce a new law that will reverse the negative effects of the Second Law of Thermodynamics?

If the universe behaves like a rigid, structured machine in the strict mathematical sense then at some future time the end of the universe is predictable. On the other hand, if the universe behaves like a computer with programming that will permit, flexible reorganization and reordering, then the universe will perpetuate itself infinitely. The latter case seems to be true since the unfolding universe is both developing and progressing as it expands and scatters in all directions. This is to say progress brings growth and strength rather than decay and disintegration. This portrays a universe continually reproducing it’s elements so that it’s chief feature is immortality. Some elements of a Cosmos Plan are already in place. As new discoveries are made, more will be learned about the plan. Here are some suggested elements:

- a. *Laws of the Universe.* By laws, we mean rules of behavior for celestial bodies that works consistently and continuously without failure. No exceptions are permitted. In this sense, they are perfect. It’s these laws that give the universe it’s order, harmony and unity. These laws prevent randomness. They regulate how and why the universe operates as it does. They are set within very narrow, very critical parameters. A one to two percent deviation will render the laws useless. The universe would fall apart. Laws keep a designed universe in a organized variety.
- b. *System Interrelatedness.* A system consists of many parts that operate together to give the system it’s wholeness and completeness. Every part is important for the whole to operate. Galaxies, black holes, solar systems, stars, nebular, red giants, supernovas, quasars, star clusters, pulsars, asteroids, moons, comets and planets are some of the interrelated parts. They are all needed to give the universe it’s character and function. We all know when an automobile has a missing part or a part that’s not working in it’s engine, the engine won’t work. Similarly, in the universe every part of it is the right part. They are needed to sustain the universe. These parts of the universe are ordered. They are ordered and prepared to continue the progress toward some future spectacular work.

- c. *Chemistry in the Universe.* The universe contains the right chemical elements in type and supply needed to form and sustain life. Atoms of carbon, oxygen, helium, hydrogen, nitrogen, beryllium and scores of others are designed in a mass ratio of proton/electron (1,800 times) that only that ratio would sustain life as we know it. The importance of the atomic structure and the mass ratio is so critical that life in the universe would not exist without it. The present utilization of these atoms is so insignificant where the supply is so abundant that a future utilization is inferred.
- d. *Universe's Expansion and Collapse in Equilibrium.* Hubble's Big Bang explosion has started a movement among the celestial bodies to expand outwardly. But there is the thought of crashing back on itself or to the original source. It's gravity and the black holes that supplies sufficient force to keep the expansion going in balance for preventing the collapse. If the expansion is too fast, the stars and the galaxy would clump ahead. If the expansion is too slow, again, clumping would occur behind. The present balance is just right.
- e. *Universe with Structure, Levels and Hierarchy.* The universe is designed from lowest to the highest. This can be seen in Figure 4.7. This is a perspective from the earth's position.

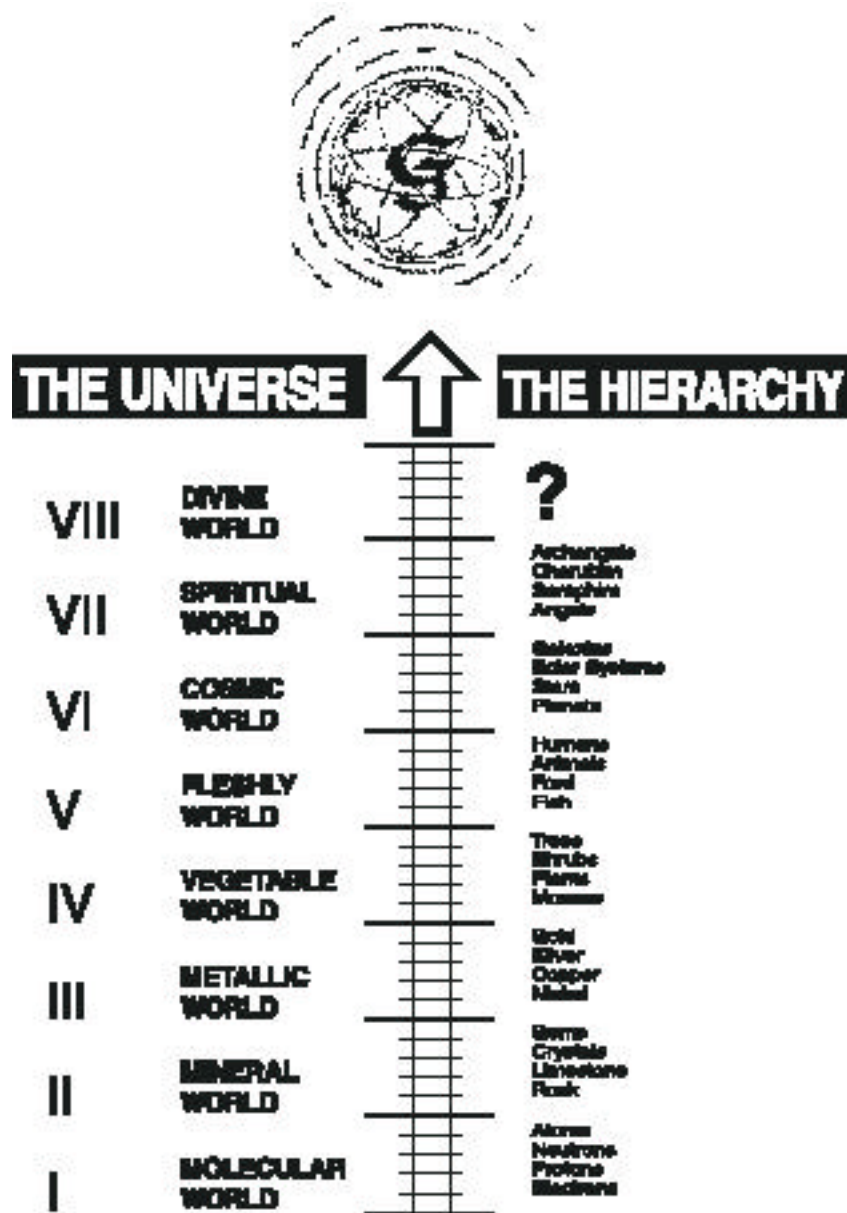


Figure 4.7 A Designed Universe with Order and Hierarchy

- f. *Gravity for Equilibrium and Equidistances.* Gravity can be described into two component forces - centripetal and centrifugal. Centrifugal forces tend to move celestial bodies outward away from their normal path. This would cause celestial bodies to collide with other bodies. Centripetal forces tend to move celestial bodies inward toward a center. This would bring celestial bodies in downward crashes with other celestial bodies. Both centripetal and centrifugal components act together to produce an equilibrium and equidistance among the celestial bodies. For this reason, the celestial bodies are held in tact with a unique unity. Gravity, a most powerful force, invisible holds the universe operating as a whole.

- g. *Planets in other Solar Systems.* New reports of planet discoveries in neighboring galaxies have raised the issue of whether life of a different form exists in these areas or whether human travel can find colonies on these planets as possible. This would put the earth in the position of a model to be followed by other planetary development. Armstrong landing on the moon was open evidence that humans can travel to nearby planets. Earth's systems and development are being completed. The human family has not done too badly to complete the earth with food production, transportation, waterways, communications, housing and cultural activities. Much more needs to be done. Meanwhile, 3 new planets have been discovered recently. Our planet with its conduciveness to life conditions might not be unique in the Cosmos. The new planets are temperate enough to allow water to exist in its liquid form. The planets are roughly 34 light years away (200 trillion miles) and may have large and small moons that could make conditions hospitable to life. These discoveries imply the billions of stars may be loaded with other planets circulating in their orbits. It won't be long with new telescopes to verify factually, that there may be more planets outside our Milky Way than inside.

The emerging perception of the cosmos is bright and optimistic. There is a Cosmic Plan as well as a Cosmic Designer which we ascribe as God. We know little of this plan, other than its foundation for creating the earth, humans and all of its contents. As we will see in subsequent sections, the extraordinarily designed earth is only a seed and model for future "earth designs" in other planets that are now being discovered at the rate of the discovery of new stars. The optimistic view of this Cosmic Plan traces the handiwork of the Designer who is behind the "something" that's going on.

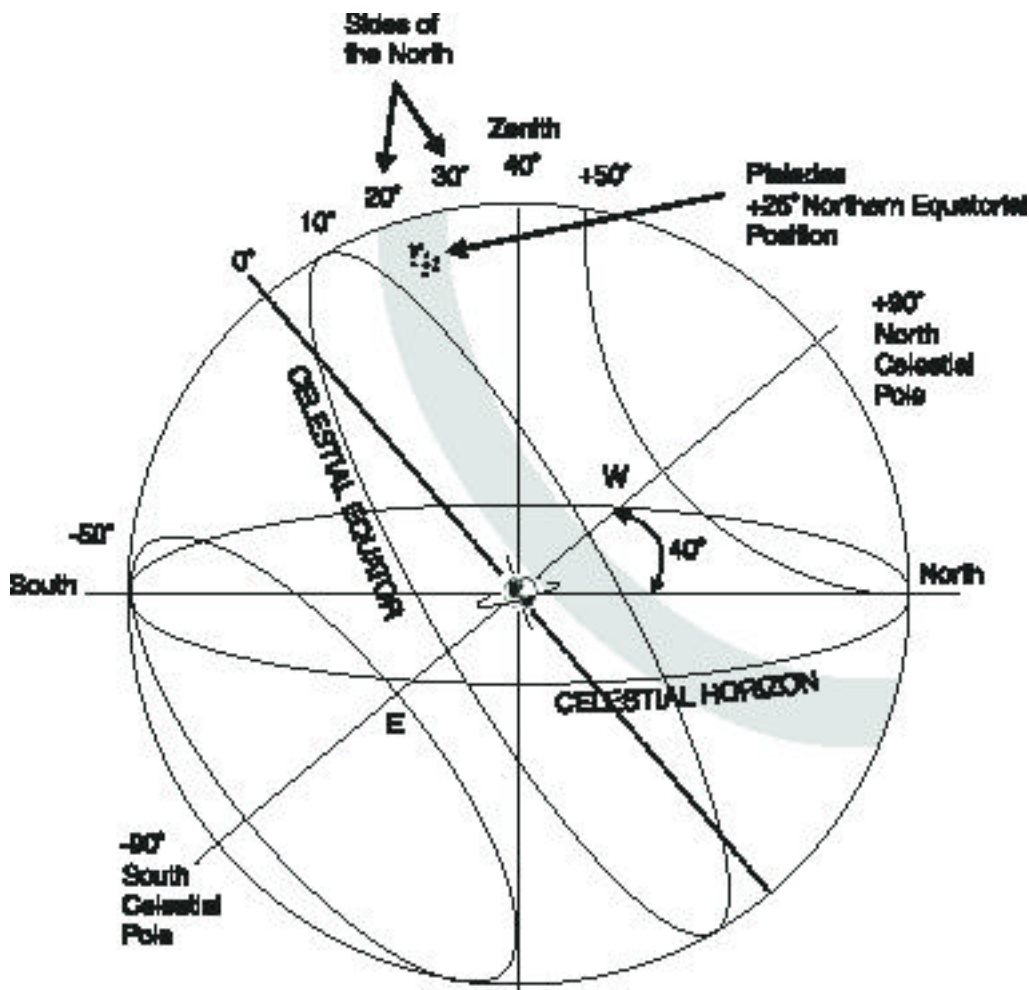
#### MYSTERIES OF THE UNIVERSE

"For by him were all things created that are in heaven and that are in earth,  
visible and invisible." Colossians 1:17

Much of the total universe including the earth's visible universe is hidden, unrevealed and secluded. Because the heavens are silent, peaceful and serene does not mean they give no messages. Their messages are given in quiet, whispers. Even at that level, we're not sure we have clearly seen nor heard. We know a great deal about the earth. We've studied it. We've built on it. We've experienced it. We know what it is to be human. Probably the greatest treasure we have as humans is the human experiences. The beautiful earth is inspirational, but the universe is

contemplative for there are many mysteries. Here is an attempt to capture some of the mysteries which are gradually unfolding to a point of appreciation and knowledge.

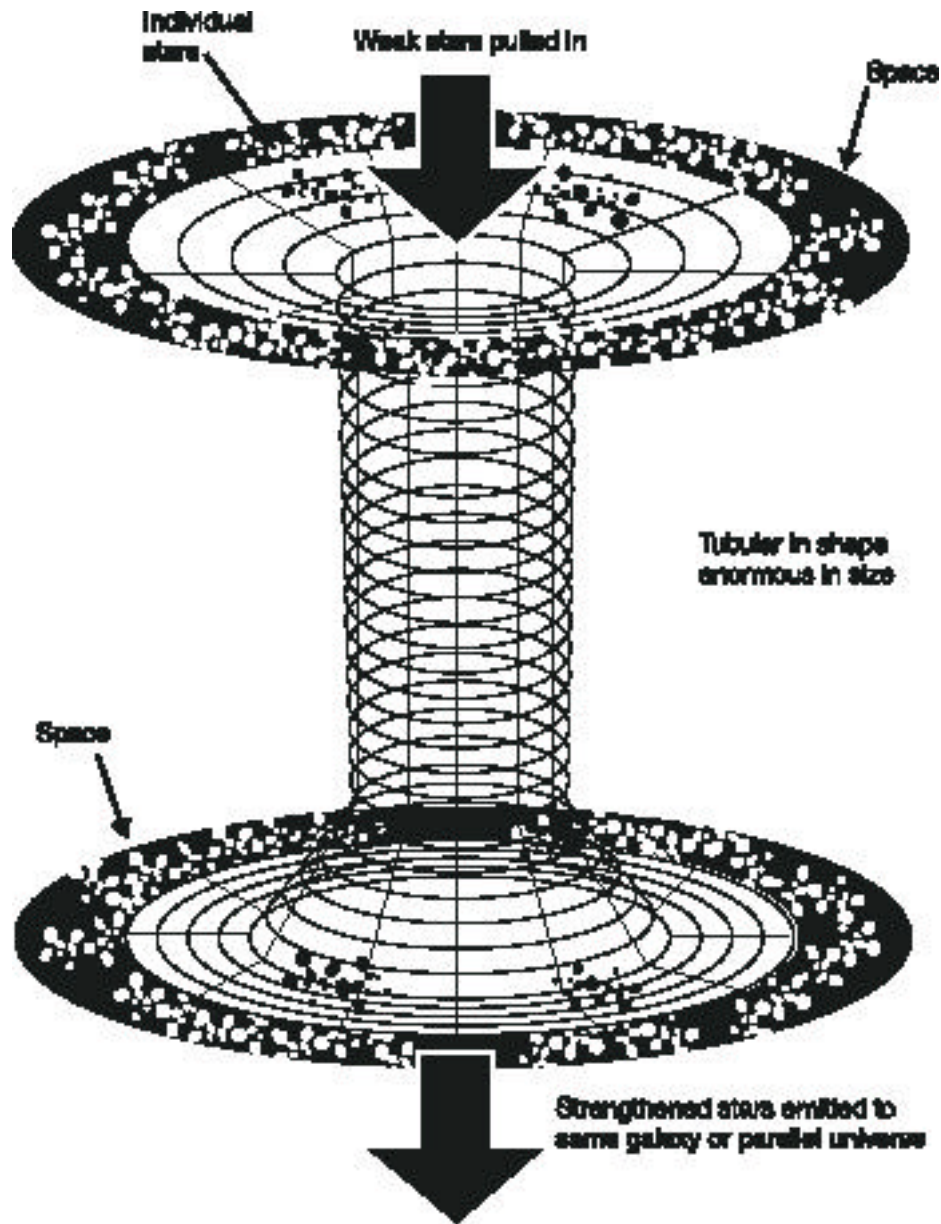
- a. *Low utilization of the sun's energy.* We know we are a part of the universe since when we eat greens, this means we are eating the sun and the universe. It's the universe that holds our sun in place. We cannot live without the universe. When we look at greenery, we are looking at the universe. Have we used all the benefits from our star? Is much being lost from the rays of the sun? The latest estimate of utilization of the sun's rays, according to Rand McNally's "Our Magnificent Earth", is 30 percent reflected back into space as light, 47 percent absorbed by earth, but eventually it 's wasted heat, 20 percent drives the hydrological cycle, .02 percent used in photosynthesis, and 1-3 percent absorbed by ozone layer. The search for ways of greater use of our star must become more intense.
  
- b. *Location of God's Throne.* A careful observer of stars and galaxies will find celestial bodies, including the visible universe, revolving about a fixed point in the universe. This point is the North- Polaris. This could be a sign that the center of the universe is in the North. God's Throne may be located there. Several scriptures allude to this. (Psalm 75:6-7) "Promotion cometh neither from the east, the west nor the south." (Isaiah 14:12-17) "Satan wanted to sit upon the sides of the north to be like the most high." (Psalms 48:2) "The joy of the whole earth is Mount Zion on the sides of the north." (Job 26:7) "He stretched out the north over the empty place and hangeth the earth upon nothing." There seems to be a strong indication that God resides on the sides of the north between the North Horizon and the North Star, but beyond the visible universe. Figure 4.8 is an extreme condensation of the visible universe to show the earth's position in relation to the sides of the north.



**Figure 4.8 God's Throne Beyond the Visible Universe**

- c. *Black Holes have pivotal role in the universe.* As a star cools, it begins to collapse and shrink. The star becomes more dense which increases its gravity. It then pulls in other smaller and weaker stars accelerating more its gravity which pulls in more of its light. When a certain level of potential gravity exists, it becomes a black hole. It appears each galaxy has huge black holes. Those existing and those that are forming. New stars are born when the size of the black holes are large enough to emit new stars. This appears to be the process for perpetuating the universe and recycling lost heat. If each galaxy has at least one black hole and some have more, there must be at least 100 billion black holes in the universe. These holes cannot be seen, but their gravitational pull and push adds to the networking of the universe. The black holes may very well be the basis of perpetuating the universe. The latest conceptual view of the black holes are that they are tubular in shape and huge in size as seen in Figure 4.9.






**Figure 4.9 Black Holes seem to perpetuate Universe**

- d. *An unfinished universe.* The universe is not made. It is now being made. The universe should not be seen as a continuation of the past with no future. If one recognizes the Great Designer behind it all, the greatest economist, then the utilization of the remainder of the universe is still future. What, when, where, how and why celestial bodies will fit into a cosmic plan is unknown. We can only move forward following the principle of utilization. An unfinished universe needs to be finished. If we assume the earth alone is the

finished product from the 100 billion galaxies with each 100 billion stars with possibly 100 billion planets, then the earth is but a small seed to be replicated in the future. The amount of time for earth's replication for other planets would be defined as eternity. Is it possible that each human will be given a planet as a dominion in the ages of the future?

- e. *Numbers reveal the Universe's Designer a Great Mathematician.* The awesome numbers in the universe are so impressive that they become inspirational. Here is a listing of some of the component parts of the universe. They are listed from small to large. Handful of sand contains 10,000 particles. Temperature of the sun is 10 million degrees Celsius. Number of people who have ever live is 20-30 billion. The number of galaxies is 100 billion. The number of stars in earth's visible universe is sixtrillion (10 followed by 22 zeros). Number of atoms in the universe is 10 followed by 620 zeros. Number of years the momentum expansion from the Big Bang will stop is termed coogle-plex (from Carl Sagan's book). It is the largest number in existence. The number of years is so huge that the word eternity can be applied. See Figure 4.13.
- f. *Universes in a total universe.* If earth's visible universe was started approximately 11 billion years by the Great Designer who had no beginning, it's reasonable and logical to presume other creative works were in the making before earth's visible universe. Earth's universe is only one of many universes. Each different in make up and character. Earth's universe may very well be the "Johnny come lately". If this holds true, earth's universe is at the beginning of eternity. Is it possible black holes are creating parallel universes?
- g. *The universe has many dimensions.* Since the universe is much larger than we have ever conceived, there must be additional dimensions then we do not know to define it's character and make up. Our primitive estimate of the diameter size of the visible universe is between 8 to 20 billion light years in the form of an ellipse looking at it from a top view. The dimensions we know are length, width, height, matter, energy, motion, time and gravity. There may be more than is known. In the spiritual world there surely must be at least energy, motion, time and thought, but what else?
- h. *The universe supports an earth home for humans.* Humans are not aliens in the universe. The universe, solar system, sun and earth are structures of hierarchies which support an earth home for humankind. Humans should come to know it better. They should be comfortable with it. Man's trip to the moon

involved a huge expenditure of mankind and money. The Apollo moon program involved 400,000 people, 120 universities and laboratories and 20,000 industrial firms. In the year of 1996, the budget was close to 6 billion dollars. At that rate, the cost per pound of payload was 22,187 dollars. Humans are very insignificant compared to the relevance and measures of the universe. Nonetheless, the universe is the home of humans both now and in the future. Space probes and travel will not cease since the universe is the new frontier. We are now at the beginning of eternity. A summary of the mysteries of the universe is seen in Figure 4.10. These mysteries can be thought of as secrets yet to be discovered.

QUESTIONS	? ? ?	ANSWERS	
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. How was the universe created?</li> <li>2. Is there only one universe?</li> <li>3. Where is heaven?</li> <li>4. How is order kept in the universe?</li> <li>5. How was time created?</li> <li>6. How is the universe perpetuated?</li> <li>7. Why is the universe unfinished?</li> <li>8. Why are universe numbers in the trillions?</li> <li>9. How much of the sun's energy are we using?</li> <li>10. Are universe's dimensions the same as the earth?</li> <li>11. Are humans aliens to the universe?</li> </ol>		<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Big Bang explosion caused by God.</li> <li>2. Our universe and parallel universes are subsets.</li> <li>3. God's Throne is in the North parts beyond the visible universe.</li> <li>4. Equilibrium between centripetal and centrifugal forces.</li> <li>5. Big Bang created space, resulting in the start of time.</li> <li>6. Black holes refuel dying stars.</li> <li>7. Eternity defined as finishing the universe.</li> <li>8. Universe is enormously abundant and dynamic.</li> <li>9. Less than one percent; the rest is wasted.</li> <li>10. The universe has additional dimensions.</li> <li>11. No, the universe supports an earth home.</li> </ol>	

**Figure 4.10** Mysteries of the Universe

## GOD EXISTS

“Without faith it is impossible to please God. For he that cometh to God must believe He is and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him.”

Hebrews 11:6

There exists a God. “God” is the name we give to the oneness of it all. This perception is by far the most significant and prominent conclusion presented by the Bible. It is the central question of any and all religions. If the existence of God can be established without a doubt and even without the Bible, the worth of religion is firmly anchored. God is defined as the greatest conceivable phenomena that a finite mind can grasp. It is both an idea and a reality. However, a phenomena which really exists is obviously greater than the mere idea of it. This is the essence of truth. Truth is the reality and not merely the idea of it. Although it is not possible to develop a rigorous proof for the existence of God since faith is needed, yet there are logical arguments that can be made for his existence. The logical arguments are important since God is an invisible spirit and physical proof is not possible. He is not anthropomorphic. Ten arguments from reasoning will now be presented aside or external to the Bible using logical thinking and deliberation for the existence of God. When we speak of presenting an argument, we don’t infer engaging in an emotional quarrel. What we mean is presenting a conclusion or set of results properly related to it’s supporting evidence or logical reasons even though the evidence is partial, skimpy or debatable. We’re very much aware that conclusions maybe with unsupported opinions to factually oriented skeptics. Nonetheless, a truth often starts with a reflection, an idea, an unsupported opinion which if it remains true gathers the evidence need to validate it’s existence. The static universe theory was introduced as an unsupported opinion. Some evidence was accumulated such as the equidistance between the stars and the motionless movement of the stars. When Isaac Newton accepted it and provided further evidence it became a theory. Einstein accepted the theory and based his relativity on it. Now that the Big Bang of Hubble has been generally accepted by science, the static universe theory is on it’s way out.

*The first argument* for the existence of God is called the Cosmological Argument. This states harmony among enormous diversity can only be achieved through design and order. Order and control through laws keeps billions and billions of elements in the universe as well as earth’s ecological systems from falling into a state of chaos,

confusion, collisions or disorganization. There is harmony and alignment in the supermacro systems of galaxies, black holes, stars, comets, asteroids, moons, nebulas and star clusters. This same order and harmony prevails in the supermacro systems of the electron, protons, atoms, molecules and cells. The macro harmonizes with the micro. Underlying this order hierarchy is the crucial observation that the universe is both rational and intelligible. Everything in the world is, as it is, for a design reason. Why does a black cow with red tongue, eat green grass and produce white milk cannot be dismissed with the statement “because that’s just the way it is”. There is some order and rational that makes it like that. An oak tree grows because an acorn is planted in soil. The sun rises regularly and the earth rotates to receive it’s needed radiation. The sky is blue because of the daily refraction and reflection of light through the atmosphere. Squirrels have bushy tails for balancing in the branches of trees. Lions and tigers have eyes in front of their heads useful for the food they seek as predators. Rabbits have eyes on the sides of their heads to watch every direction for approaching foes. The universe is rational. There seems to be a reason to be accomplished for the way it is structured. It is because of the reasons that we conclude the universe is rational through design and order.

*The second argument* is called the Teleological Argument. This says there exists a designed universe with a central purpose to be accomplished. A great mind planned and set up laws that regulate the function and mission of the design toward that purpose. This great mind, the designer, has an ultimate direction and set of results to be reached. What’s unique about this design is that free will and choice is granted to humans while the mission is being achieved. The Milky Way Galaxy travels 500,000 miles per hour, but takes 250 million light years to make one circuit. In contrast, the earth travels 67,000 miles per hour and takes 365 days to make one circuit. These are designed parameters that do not vary from year to year. Yet, humans living under these fixed parameters are free to decide independently. Order does not just happen accidentally or randomly. The famous eighteenth century theologian, William Paley, with his watch maker analogy adds to the design and purposeful concept of the universe. Paley stated, if you kicked a stone on the ground and wondered how the stone got there, you might simply state it was laying there forever. On the other hand, if you found a watch on the ground, you would not make the same statement. The watch with it’s interconnections, gears, cogs, springs which function collectively to give accurate time must have a watch-maker who developed the watch for a purpose. A watch is too complicated and too functional to have sprung into existence by accident. The probability of the elements of a watch to assemble itself to give accurate time would

be so huge that it's figure would fall in the area of impossibility. So it is with living things and their great complexities. The physical universe is put together with an ingenuity so astonishing that you cannot accept it as a random fact. There is a deeper level of explanation. The overall organization of the universe appears to have been designed by a great mathematician and economist. The universe with it's preciseness and efficiency is more like a great plan than like a great mechanical machine.

*The third argument* is the religious and spiritual experiences of the devotees. Prodigious testimonies by a huge number of people in every walk of life, nations, races and religious groups over a long period of time feel comforted and are sustained by the knowledge and presence of God. The number of people who believe in God reaches the 95 percentile. This translates into 4 to 5 billion people on the contemporary scene believe God exists. Surely among this huge group there are those having positive experiences with that belief. Humans seem to be incurably God-conscience. If God didn't exist, humans would not think about Him as much as they do. If God does exist, one would expect to note his presence from time to time in the course of history. The fact that devotees have had experiences indicates there is some degree of truth in every religion. This suggests a personal experience of God in their lives. Their testimonies is that God supports and solves their problems.

*The fourth argument* is the argument of a moral universe. The good sustains and perpetuates a universe that sustains and perpetuates life. That's the definition of what is good. The bad diminishes or disrupts existing arrangements which threatens or removes life. Judgments of "good" or "bad" reveal free choice. This implies moral responsibility. Choosing that which enhances life is good. Choosing that which diminishes life is evil. A superhuman power must prevail to give humans conscience intelligence to make choices for sustaining existing arrangements. Animals, infants and insane people are not morally responsible for they lack the moral conscience. The moral experience of humankind even with it's imperfections and inconsistencies seem to advance the quality of human activity and life. Can one believe that no greater intelligence than human intelligence has been operational in this development? Should not one observe in the human achievements of history, law, literature and science that there is gain in the realization of the thoughts of God.

*The fifth argument* is the argument of virtuous judgment. No one needs to be convinced that virtuous people suffer unmerited misfortunes of all kinds while wicked people often undeservedly prosper. A sense of justice indicates there must be a future reckoning where the wrongs of the world will be righted and the rights of the world

will receive rewards. There must be a highest court who as judge will remove the serious disparity between virtue and evil. That everywhere seems to prevail. Accountability for one's actions seems to be intuitively perceived as a future event.

*The sixth argument* is the pragmatic argument. This follows the principle that an idea, a theory, a belief or a doctrine can be verified by testing it with the practical consequences that follow from accepting it and acting upon it. If the idea, the theory or the belief is true, it will work out beneficially in practice. If it does not work out beneficially, it probably is not true. If acceptance of God leads to desirable consequences in the life of an individual then this acceptance is true. If not, it is false. Again the experiences of a huge number of believers of the existence of God highly confirm that God is central in their lives.

*The seventh argument* is the argument of intuitive dependence. Humans know, without a doubt, they are dependent on so many vital resources such as sunshine, air, climate, food and water. These resources are both critical and immediate. Without them life would not exist. The scarcity or abundance of the utilization of these resources can be the determiner of human existence. Individuals reach out for a higher power to assure the maintenance of these resources which they have little or no power to control. Prayer and praise to this higher power is an acknowledgment of this dependency. Humans know they are mortal. Without these resources, death is imminent. Intuitive insight pulls humans toward the creator knowing He is the source of supplying life's needs. See Figure 4.11.

### Intuitive Insight Pulls Us To Our Creator

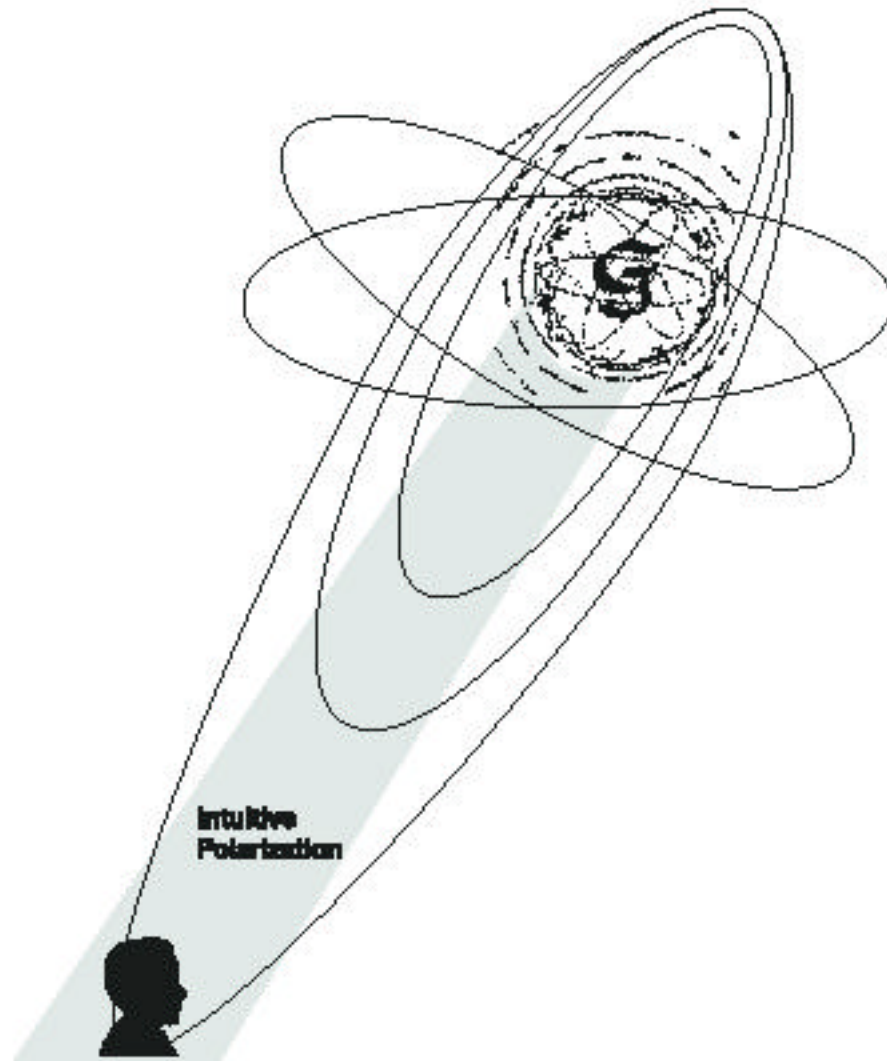


Figure 4.11 Humans depend on the Creator



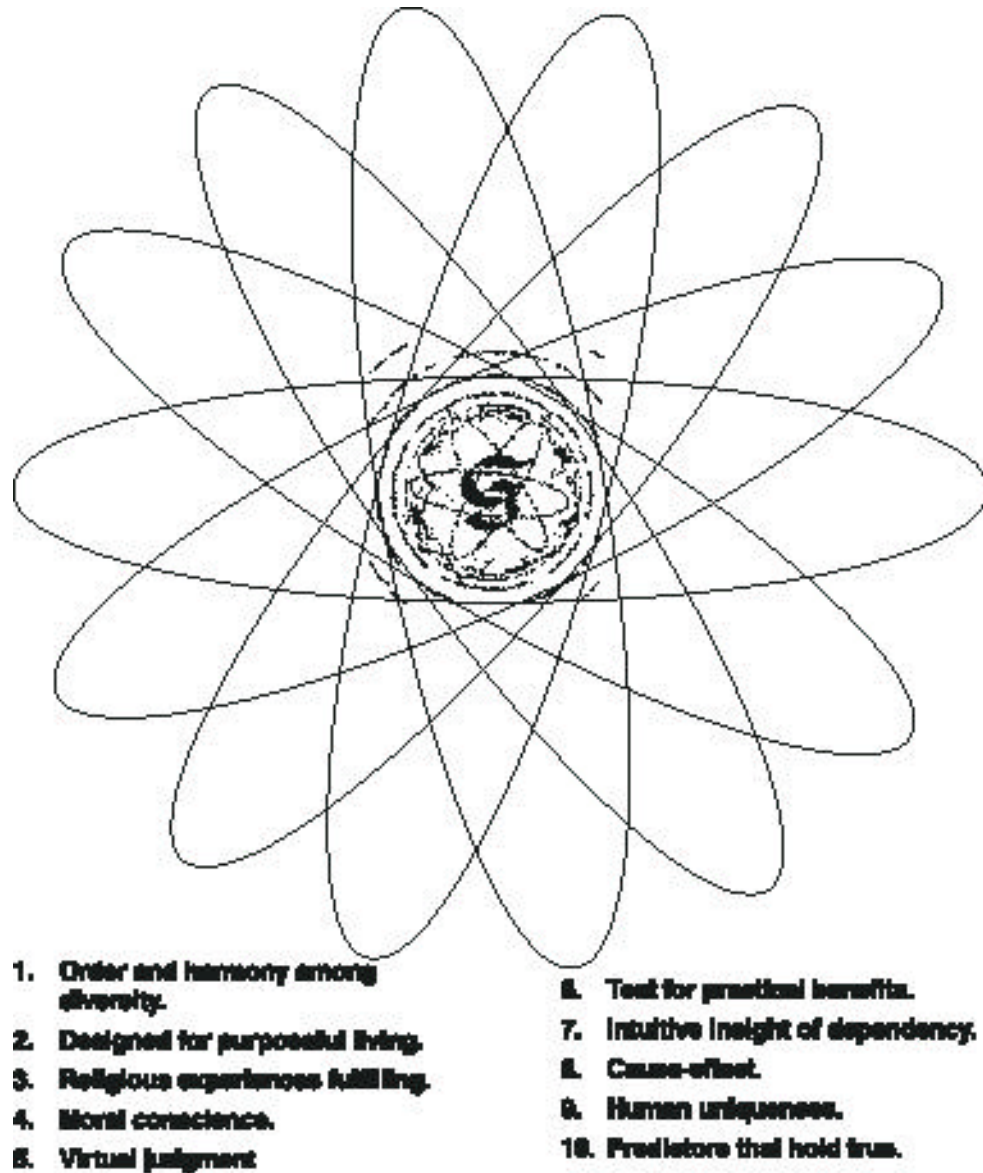
*The eighth argument* is the argument of cause-effect. There are many origins or beginnings. In the universe, there are beginnings of itself, galaxies, solar systems, stars and planets. On planet earth, there are the beginnings of itself, the water cycle, the nitrogen cycle, the biocycle and the ecology cycle. In the human world there are human births, races, languages and nationalities. Everything has a beginning. Seldom can you cite anything that just existed. God is the only exception. If there are beginnings, there must be a beginner. If there are starts, there must be a starter. If there are origins, there must be an originator. If this observation is universal, then something, someone, some force or some cause started the origins. This relates to the principle of cause-effect. For every effect there must be a cause and the cause must of necessity be greater than the effect.

*The ninth argument* is the argument of the special nature of human beings. Humans are unique. Nothing in earth's habitat can compare to their mental, emotional and physical capabilities. One big difference between humans and the lower forms of animals is humans concern themselves with religion. No other animal nor lower form are able to conceive of God or respond or engage in spiritual matters. Humans have the ability to be grateful and appreciate to a point of adoration and praise of the value of life and all the resources to sustain life. Even the uncivilized savages in history exhibited this appreciation to a point they needed to worship something. This tendency to worship something is sufficient evidence that humans came into existence different from the rest of organic life. Still another difference is humans can create and change. Animals and the lower forms are instinctive. Birds build nests, fish roam the seas, turtles lay eggs in the same unalterable manner as they have for thousands of years. Human creativity started with straw huts, then stick structures, then mudclay habitats, then wood houses, then concrete dwellings, now wood and concrete home combinations. These are physical endowments, special to humans. Humans when combining ears and eyes can receive messages and signals far superior than other creatures. Seeing and hearing is a result of receiving vibrations or wave frequencies. The lowest tone an ear can hear is 16.5 vibrations per second. The highest is 38,000 vibrations per second. Beyond the ear, the eye takes over up to 100,000,000 vibrations per second. Over this figure, heat is received. The range still continues up to 48,000,000,000 to reach the ultraviolet frequencies.

*The tenth argument* is the argument of reliability, accuracy and predictions of the Bible. Out of all the religious and non-religious literature ever written and published, one book stands above all in terms of longevity, authenticity, authority and reliability. How could 40 different writers from different cultural and occupational backgrounds

writing over a period of 1500 years describe events and circumstances out of their historical context and result in a phenomenal unity. This unity over 14 centuries made one book. Surely, an outside intellect over the 1500 years guided and inspired the authors to produce a document that has lasted into today. The information given in the Bible must have been given by God because many writers did not know what they were writing about and yet, fell into an overall common purpose and unified themes. Still further the predictions and prophecies of the Bible is another feature of affirming the existence of God. No humans have this capability. Many of these predictions have been made. Many await fulfillment. For example, two major ones are the coming of the Messiah and the Bible as a civilization on earth. The Messiah has taken place and the Biblical Civilization still awaits fulfillment. If the existence of God is accepted, is it not reasonable that He would want to give a knowledge of Himself and His plans for the future.

If the evidence in favor of God's existence seems reasonable, and if a human knows that the acceptance of this belief will enable the person to be a better person, achieve a noble life, and be of more service to others than would otherwise be possible, is it not a duty to behave and adjust one's life to that belief? Of course! The existence of God argued from a reasoning standpoint appears to support His presence. If we add the Bible itself with the above logical arguments, God's existence is assured. The ten arguments described are summarized in Figure 4.12.



**Figure 4.12 Reasoning Arguments for God's Existence**

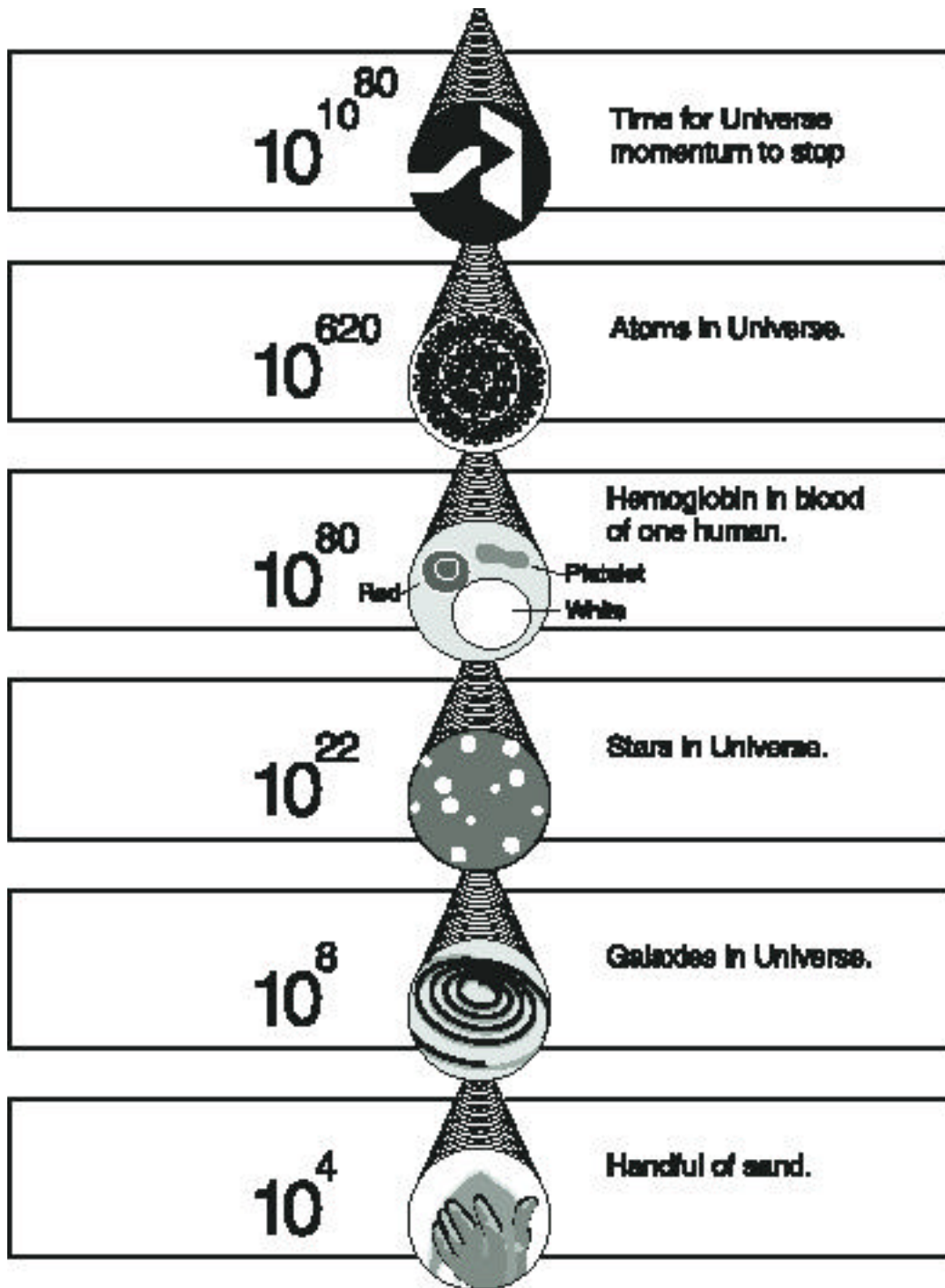
## GOD HAS NO ORIGIN

“In the beginning, ... God.” Genesis 1:1

In the beginning refers to the beginning of the earth and human life. It does not refer to the beginning of God nor His spiritual heavens. God has no origin. This concept of a no origin God is what distinguishes God from the universe. Anything with an origin is not God. Anything without an origin is God. Since God is the only being without an origin, then He is God. This is a mind boggling concept. God had no start, no beginning, no initiation and

no genesis. These are earthly and human connected descriptions. Since God had no beginning, He has no end, no termination, no expiration. “God is from everlasting to everlasting.” (Psalms 90:2) God of the universe traverses a life essence like a circle, perfect, unending, without origin or end. Like a perfect circle, try to find where it begins and where it ends. God is self-existent, self-contained and self-perpetuating. This is not an attempt to define God for He cannot be defined. He can only be encountered. Only a vague perspective can be grasped. God is a spirit, eternal and unchangeable.

Another mind boggling concept is there will never be a change in Gods. God will never end since He is infinite. Grasping the concept of infinity for human finite minds is a difficult challenge if not impossible. One way to comprehend the endlessness of infinity is by stating the following thesis: infinity is a number so big that it is bigger than any number you can know. Here are some huge numbers. The stars in the heavens seem uncountable. They can only be estimated. They total ten to the 22nd power. That’s ten followed with twenty-two zeros. Infinity is more than and further than that number. The hemoglobin count of red blood cells seems to be unimaginably vast. The latest estimate of this count is a manageable number of ten raised to the 80th power. That’s ten followed by eighty zeros. Infinity is more than and further than that number. The number of atoms in the universe is a real large number. The latest estimate is ten raised to the 620th power. That’s ten followed with six hundred and twenty zeros. Infinity is more than and further than that number. Let’s get to the largest number calculated by the human mind. It was developed at Princeton University in connection with the estimated number of years during which all celestial bodies will continue in their momentum under the Big Bang Theory of Hubble. The number is ten raised to the 100th power which is raised to the 80th power. In practical terms it’s a number that can’t be written. It approaches Carl Sagan’s famous Astronomer’s number called “Gugle-plex”. It is ten raised to the hundredth power which is raised to the hundredth power. The gugle-plex is a number written on paper that has filled the interstices of the universe. Since infinity is a number so big that it is bigger than any number you can think of, bigger than any number you can know, infinity is bigger than a gugle-plex. Infinity will always be beyond any new number that is estimated. Since infinity is boundless, unending and innumerable God is beyond infinity. God’s life continuity is without end. This grasp for infinity with numerics is seen in Figure 4.13. To see numbers like this helps our finite minds to see infinity.



**Figure 4.13 The Grasp of Infinity with Numbers**

Genesis 1:2 states “the spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters”. This suggests God is a spirit which cannot be seen with the naked eye. He is invisible. He cannot be described in human parameters. The greatest forces in the universe are invisible, silent, but powerful. Their effects are enormous. Gravity is an invisible and

silent force. It holds the celestial bodies in prescribed paths to follow the designed laws of order. This force is enormous. Greater than any force found on planet earth. The natural processes for changing the earthly seasons is another example of an invisible and silent force. The ecology systems, the biosystems, the water cycle and the changing atmospheric seasons move from Spring to Summer, to Fall, to Winter without disruption and requiring huge amounts of energy. Even the flow of electrons in electricity, a flow that is invisible and powerful, it only can be measured. Who can dispute the enormous power with the flow of electrons. More examples are available to illustrate the greatest forces of the universe are invisible, silent, but active. God is an invisible spirit, silent, but dynamically active in the universe.

Since most people have no doubt about the invisible existence of God, the question remains how can one know Him. Biblicans know God because of their insights of Him through the Bible and personal experiences. They know God as one great power and not a crowd of many powers, as found in other civilizations. Several methods have been used by God to communicate himself with humans. In a few rare cases, He spoke directly to individuals such as Moses, Ezekial and Jesus. He also made Himself known through natural signs linked to nature such as thunder, lightening, trumpets, etc. He also used dreams and visions with such people as Jacob, Ezekial, Daniel and Peter. Finally, the greatest and most frequent channel of communicating to humans is with selected people who wrote the Bible. This last method of uncovering Himself reached an enormous throng of people.

#### GOD AS A SPIRIT

“In the beginning God created” Genesis 1:1

The most distinctive perception of God is He is a creator. He is the cause of an existent universe, real atoms, orderly galaxies and possessed life. The doctrine of God being a creator is to say He was and continues to be the exclusive agent in the production of everything known and unknown. This ability to create something out of nothing is exclusive to his being. When He creates, like a designer, it's assumed a purpose is to be reached. This purpose is the product of the free action of His will. These creative products are not necessary to His own completeness or perfection since He is already perfect. God was under no constraint nor obligation to create. His choice to create is purely a sovereign act on His part.

But what is God like? How can one know Him? What is the Biblical view of God? To know God must surely be the ultimate aim of religion. There are many perceptions even with His name. The Muslims have 99 different

names for God, but among them all, they do not have “Our Father”. Some see God in history, consequently they focus on events of his encounters with humans. Some see God in the universe and environment. Therefore, they focus on the dynamics of nature. Some see God in people. These focus on character and behavior. Some see God in contemplation. These focus on meditations to gain insights. Still others see God in all or parts of the above categories. He is seen in historic events, in the universe and nature, in people and behavior, and in meditation and contemplation. These are a variety of religious experiences.

God is the hero of the Bible. Everything that is narrated, enjoined or foretold is related to Him. Since most people are convinced of the invisible existence of a one God, the question remains how can we know Him in more detail. Many have said, anyone who knows God have discovered Him not because of their ability to conduct research or analysis. It’s because God has uncovered Himself in such a way to those who want to know Him. God’s uncovering is necessary since God cannot be seen directly. He is invisible and will remain invisible.

The Bible claims insights into the nature of God. None of these insights incorporate natural or physical features as humans would have. God has a face or front part. (Matthew 18:10) He is spiritual since angels behold His face all the time. If God has a face, He must have other parts. Moses saw His back. (Exodus 33:23) God laughs. (Psalms 2:4) God gets angry. (Psalm 7:11) God hates iniquity. (Psalms 5:5) God gets jealous. (Exodus 34:14) God can become sad. (Genesis 6:6) God is patient. (Romans 8:31) God can create, reason, innovate, predict and make judgments. (Genesis 1:26) God is light. (Isaiah 60:20) God is not like anything on earth except man in His mental and moral image. If God exhibits behaviors similar to human begins it is because man was created in His image.

God is a spirit which cannot be seen with the naked eye. He cannot and should not be described in human parameters. He is not of human substance. Since no one has seen God, there is no idea what God looks like. The anthropomorphic expressions collected from the Bible with reference to human features such as fingers, eyes, ears, legs, feet are more symbolic of his nature. God Himself has prohibited making any physical image of Him. This is severely forbidden. The innumerable pictures which display the Creator as a hairy, old gentleman in flowering robes seated on a bank of clouds is a pathetic and poignant description.

God must also be distinguished from nature. God is not “Mother Nature”. Mother Nature is an expression that describes the self-perpetuating physical environment around us with natural laws allocating abundant resources.

Mother Nature is the product and results of God's creative ability. The only physical parameter that can be assigned to God is light. The most powerful light in the universe suggesting a never ending source of energy and power. His judgments of law and order is seen with his dealings with his people. His wisdom and power is exhibited in His creative activities and works. His love is exemplified through His plan for the eventual benefit of humankind. God is love. These attributes add up to four - power, justice, wisdom and love. This helps humans to perceive God as a being. God is given the name of "the good". It is only by dropping an "o" that good becomes God again. The search for meaning is a search for a better and clearer perception of God, His personality and His attributes.

Monotheism is largely accepted among Jews, Christians and Mohammeds only so long as the term is undefined. When an attempt is made to define it, it creates insurmountable problems. The Jews see God as one individual personality who cannot be seen, but only encountered. The majority of Christians see God as three beings in one. The Mohammeds prefer to just say and remain at that "there is no God, but God". Neither of the three want to define God beyond this formula for fear of arriving at a false conception of God. Perceiving God as a spirit adds much to the conception of God since we need not see Him in human parameters and familiar forms. At least for the present time, God as a person remains vague and ethereal. Although Jesus has declared, "If you have seen me, you have seen the father". This is not referring to His substance, but to the practice of principles in His life. All one can say about God is He is a spirit who cannot be seen by anyone because He can only be comprehended by Himself. This means perception of God is only both mental and spiritual.

In summary, God is not merely a vague, cosmic force, incapable of doing stupendous things for and around individuals. He is a vibrantly alive, omnipotent, personal being with a magnificent plan for humans in both the near and far future. This plan incorporates the whole essence of the Biblical Civilization from the past and the present to an awaiting future. God exercises four attributes of his nature - wisdom, love, justice and power to complete His plan according to His pre-expected schedule. God has provided humans with the Bible which gives details of His plan as to it's purpose, direction and expected outcomes. God is the greatest individual that one can identify in the whole of the universe.



## **CHAPTER 5**

### **EDENISM: THE SEEDS OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION**

Great achievements have small beginnings. Archaeology confirms the Garden of Eden. Views of the formation of life. Time is started. The development of human life. The universe and life are interdependent. Beginning of religions. Endowing humans with freedom. Government is started in Eden. Farming, the first occupation. Management concepts originate. Music is initiated. Vegetarianism springs up. The first wedding, family life and the home. The start of law and law enforcement. Evil and sin introduced. Beginning of lies, truth, knowledge and wisdom. Paradise lost - paradise restored. The first children. Start of population growth. Genealogy is the first information system. The first murder. The vision of the Messiah conceived. The first two civilizations. Brotherhood. The first prayers are institutionalized. The first preacher. Longevity of the antediluvians.

#### **GREAT ACHIEVEMENTS HAVE SMALL BEGINNINGS**

Seldom do great achievements happen instantly! They start small, like seeds and undergo stages. The first is a preparation. The second is a beginning. Emergence is the third stage. Growth then occurs. Finally, there is a harvest. Most living creatures and most non-living substances start as a seed or a small particle. The seeds then become the causes or starts for something big. With proper care, nourishment and direction, seeds can be progressively nurtured to a maturity stage described as a harvest or completion. The Biblical Civilization is like a living organism. The idea of a seed and a plant emerging from the seed can be seen as a metaphor to express the sense of growth. The Biblical Civilization germinates in the ground of the human heart, develops and rises like a plant. While the plant is intrinsically related to the seed, it still looks quite different from the original seed. Just like an oak tree looks very different from the acorn from which it grew. The Biblical Civilization starts with seeds that become powerful causes. It too is being progressively nurtured to a harvest. The universe started as a single seed, 11

billion years ago. This was a very small gaseous ball with unbelievably high temperatures. When it exploded, the cooling results was 100,000 galaxies and 100,000 stars in each galaxy. Adam and Eve were two seeds. From this pair, came over 20 billion people which is the estimated total population of the human race since Eden. This population is distributed in three fundamentally different racial forms: caucasoids, mongoloids and negroids. The population growth has not ended. The seed approach by God is also seen in the lower animals. Eggs are spawned in great number. Some survive and develop, some are lost in the environment and many, even the majority are eaten or destroyed. How many Americans think of their breakfast eggs as seeds for perpetuating the chicken species. Most fish lay millions of eggs per year. Some have a modest output of less than one hundred per year. Birds hatch five to twelve eggs yearly. Mammals who exercise care for their young average three to four young per year. As parental care within a species increases, destruction and loss of the eggs decreases. As parental care within a species decrease even to a point of utter neglect, the loss and destruction of eggs increases.

The Garden of Eden was a small finished tract of land. It was a paradise for the original pair. This small tract of land was also a seed. As Adam and his progeny moved out into the unfinished earth, the earth commenced it's transformation. Globally, land development and reclamation is a major effort of most countries. This development continues. From Lucifer's success in bringing about non-conformity to God's laws, what is termed "sin", evil entered the world. It too was a seed. The results of evil is reaping an enormous harvest of hate, violence and death.

The right question to ask of those who regard the Garden of Eden as a myth is not, is it true?, but rather, what is it's purpose? What meaning does it intend to convey? What are the ideas that have such a powerful impact millennia ago, but the vibrations are still with us today? It's the ideas that are introduced in a myth that are critically significant in an explanation. Why do people reject myths so easily. A myth is the start of an explanation of an unknown and mysterious complexity. A myth can be a hunch. It can be an insight. Why do we so early reject hunches and insights so readily. Hunches and insights can tell us why things are the way they are and where they may come from. Myths do more than explain. They guide mental processes into the mysterious and the unknown. Myths come to life by serving as models for further research and investigation. The myth starts the collection of facts from which the myth can be rejected entirely or confirmed with the facts.

There are persuasive evidences that confirm the real existence of the Garden of Eden. These evidences will be taken up in greater detail in this chapter. Genesis intends to give insight into the origin of things. It also gives,

basically, what's wrong with individuals as well as society. Genesis gives the beginnings of the heavens, the earth, the planets, the animals as well as human life. It also gives the beginnings of values, relationships and institutions as found in civilizations.

Edenism, as Stage II, identifies these powerful ideas as origins which form the building blocks of later stages. These origins, like seeds, have an eventual future harvest. After all, one cannot understand the present nor predict the future without first seeing what had come in the past. The history and development of any civilization is the history and development of ideas and their utilization. Trace ideas and you will trace civilizations. Trace Biblical ideas through secular history and you will see the Biblical Civilization within other civilizations. The best test of truth is the power of an idea to survive the centuries to a stated of achievement. Thousands of ideas as seeds have through the centuries fallen by the way-side. Does this suggest these truths were so-called truths, but have not been truths to begin with. Time is the appraiser of truth. Time eventually evaluates a proposed truth of an idea by it's survival. Biblical ideas have survived and continue to have an impact on civilizations. Many civilizations have come and gone, but these ideas have remained.

Stage II on the beginnings of Edenism examines the ideas as seeds for the start of the Biblical Civilization. Seeds seem small and hardly noticeable, but in the course of time they are the start of movements and processes. Many of the secular civilizations that rose after Edenic time can be traced by the influences of these early beginnings. Genesis takes us back to origins. This is important as it describes the beginning of history. The great questions about who ancient humans were, how they developed and why they did what they did and the legacy we have today are in great measure explained by the origins in the Edenic stage. Genesis is significant since it gives insight and descriptions to the origins of life, start of values, introduction of evil, how families formulated and the general cultural features found in a civilization.

The Genesis account of the creation and the early history of the universe, the earth, humans, animals, trees and plants is plain, condensed and straightforward. There are no excess words nor superfluous phrases. Genesis tells what occurred in the beginning of time. The author and compiler of Genesis has been generally agreed by scholars to be Moses in a period between 1450 - 1410 BC. To some, it may be puzzling just how could Moses have possibly known the events, people, places and exact circumstances and incidents described in Genesis. According to the record, Moses was not born until 2500 years later. How did Moses know? He was not an eyewitness to the Genesis

events. How did he get the details? We would suggest the following: 1) Moses must have had in his possession written account by people who were eyewitnesses. Cuneiform picture language on clay tablets have been unearthed to confirm this. 2) There was an oral transmission of many events and incidents carried on from generation to generation. The Hebrews were phenomenal for their memories and recordings of family genealogies and tribes. 3) Direct inspiration by God or from some angelic host to Moses. This may be true for many books of the Bible. This would make Moses an editor, coordinator and compiler as well as an author to the book of Genesis.

#### ARCHAEOLOGY CONFIRMS THE GARDEN OF EDEN

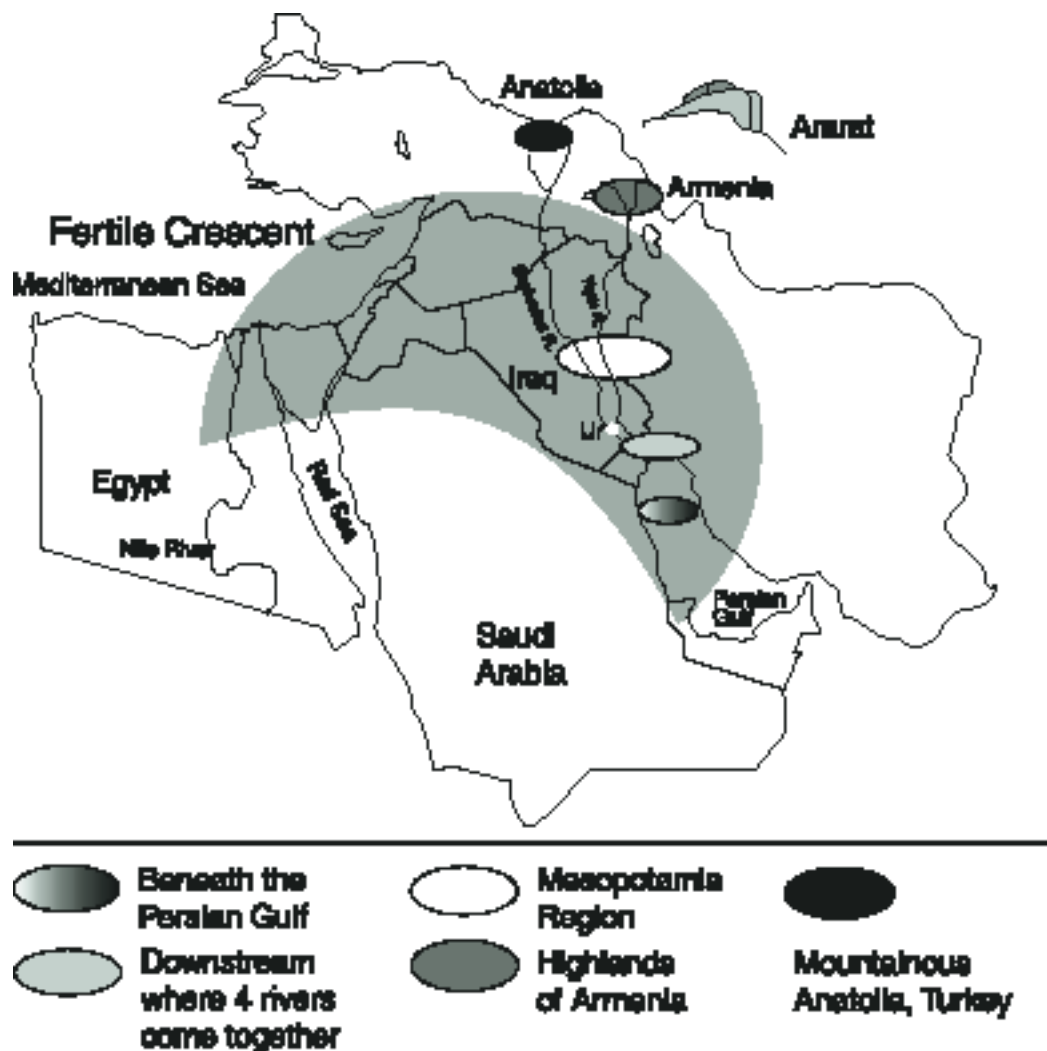
The Biblical Civilization came to life near the valley and rivers of the Tigris and the Euphrates which is known historically as Mesopotamia. The Genesis account locates the beginning of life in the very region which archaeological research has demonstrated to be the Cradle of Civilization. John Albright of John Hopkins University<sup>1</sup> as well as others in the scientific community has established beyond a doubt that there is no focus of civilization that can begin to compete in antiquity with the basin of Eastern Mediterranean and the region immediately east of it called the Fertile Crescent. Interesting to note the rivers of the Garden of Eden confirm the Mesopotamia area. The Mesopotamia area also confirms the rivers of the Garden of Eden. Since that time over 500,000 Biblical artifacts, relics, sites, ruins and tablets have been discovered<sup>2</sup>. These Biblical findings with spade and pick brings amazing archaeological confirmation to the Genesis account. Some researchers have treated the Garden as only a legend. Others have rejected it for it's time claims. Still others have ignored it for lack of full proof evidence. And still others see the Garden may have been the whole world. Whatever position is taken by the reader, the fact remains civilization concepts and ideas introduced in the record of the Garden have influenced and contributed through the ages.

Recent archaeological findings are beginning to give credence to the existence of the Garden in spite of the fact that more than 80 theories have been identified as the true location of the Garden of Eden. Some have been illustrated with detailed maps. Even Columbus when sighting the mouth of the Orinico River said the huge river must come from the Paradise of the Garden of Eden. Cornfield and Freedman<sup>3</sup> identify tablets that compare the Mesopotamian versions of the origins with the Biblical versions of creation. Their comparisons find much in common. Another archaeologist, Gonzalo Baez Camargo cites three tables<sup>4</sup> discovered in 1974 referring to the Divinity who created the garden and the universe. Clifford Wilson cites the Ebla tablets<sup>5</sup> from the land of Dilmun

which records a land without distress. The lion does not kill and he dwells peacefully with the lamb. Merrill Unger identifies the four cuneiform tablets<sup>6</sup> in the seventh century, BC, describing man's failure to seize the opportunity of gaining eternal life. Sumerian literature reported by Thompson<sup>7</sup> contains the story of the man created from clay and then was filled with the breath of life. This is an interesting variation of the man created from the dust of the earth and God gave him the breath of life. Richard Hess reported<sup>8</sup> in the *Biblical Review* an excavated life-sized royal statue in Northeast Syria near an ancient mound known as Tell Fakhariyah with a noteworthy inscription. The excavation was found by a farmer with his bulldozer in 1979. The life-size statue's inscription was in two languages - Assyrian and Aramaic. The Aramaic version was written in an early style of the Semitic Alphabet. The inscriptions correlates with the Sumerian "edin" and describes a "garden of edin" to be a garden of abundance. That is, a garden that can be described as luxuriant and fruitful. The inscription emphasizes a well-watered garden. Genesis 2:6 is associated with four rivers.

Since the Biblical description of Eden is so specific, scores of people have sought to locate it. The account in Genesis 2:8-14 describes a river flowing out of Eden to water the garden and from the garden then dividing into four streams. The first two rivers are Pishon and Gihon which no longer exists. The other two rivers which do exist are the Tigris and the Euphrates. The one river that fed the four through the garden and can be considered the River of Eden. Professor Juris Zarins<sup>9</sup> reports the Garden of Eden lies beneath the waters of the Persian Gulf south of the four rivers. The Great Ice Age and geological erosion has caused changes and subsequently covered the site. Avraham Neger<sup>10</sup> reports various possibilities such as north of the four rivers at the headwaters from Armenia to Egypt to Ethiopia. McClintock and Strong<sup>11</sup> place the garden in the highlands of Armenia near the collection of springs at the origin of the Tigris and the Euphrates. This is at the border of Turkey, Iran and Armenian Russia. The Genesis account describes the river rising in Eden, flows into the garden and from thence is divided into four branches. The Armenian view connects closely as to the site where Noah's Ark eventually came to rest after the flood. This would suggest there were two beginnings in that location - the Garden of Eden with the beginning of the human race and Mt. Ararat where the human family had a second beginning with Noah and his family. Frank Shallieu<sup>12</sup>, a Biblical scholar, followed the clues of Genesis and place the garden to the headwaters of the Tigris and the Euphrates. These river headwaters must descend from a high plateau surrounded on three sides by formidable mountain slopes which would prohibit access. Shallieu, locates the garden somewhere in the mountainous terrain of Anatolia, Turkey. Dr.

Walter Martin<sup>13</sup> sees the land of Eden as a vast region even the entire Fertile Crescent. Inside this territory is the garden. The four rivers that flowed went downstream and merged into one river which flowed through the garden and erupted into the Persian Gulf. Thus, according to Martin, the heads would be mouths or where they empty. Martin would then place Eden as having it's southern border at the head of the Persian Gulf. The garden itself, would be located upstream a few miles at the place where the four rivers came together. See Figure 5.1 for the location of the various sites possible for the Garden of Eden.



**Figure 5.1 Possible sites for the Garden of Eden**

There are several conjectures with regard to the size of the garden. These conjectures differ widely as those which assign it's location. There is one conjecture that the whole earth was a garden. This is contradicted with the idea that Adam and Eve was expelled from the garden to an unfinished earth. Another conjecture is the garden was extended over Syria, Arabia and Mesopotamia, an area of 800-1000 miles in diameter. This is refuted on grounds

Adam and Eve when expelled from the garden, walked out on foot. Finally, there is the conjecture the garden was between 20 to 30 miles in diameter within the Fertile Crescent. This makes a lot of sense since it enables the pair to walk out of the garden. Also this size would encompass a full variety of trees and all the animals which were named by Adam.

The living features of the garden have prompted both archaeologists and geologists to locate other sites on Planet Earth with conditions favorable for perpetuating life indefinitely. Three sites<sup>14</sup> have environmental conditions for producing health and vigorous old age. People living at these sites have become centenarians. These sites are Adrean Village in Ecuador in South America, the Hunza Village in Pakistan and the Abkanzia Village of Georgia very near the headwaters of the Tigris and Euphrates. What is common to these villages is a steep mountain terrain, forest atmosphere, running water, and a vigorous exercising lifestyle. These may very well describe the near conditions of the Garden of Eden which tends to favor the site of Southern Armenia or Eastern Turkey.

#### LIFE IS FORMED

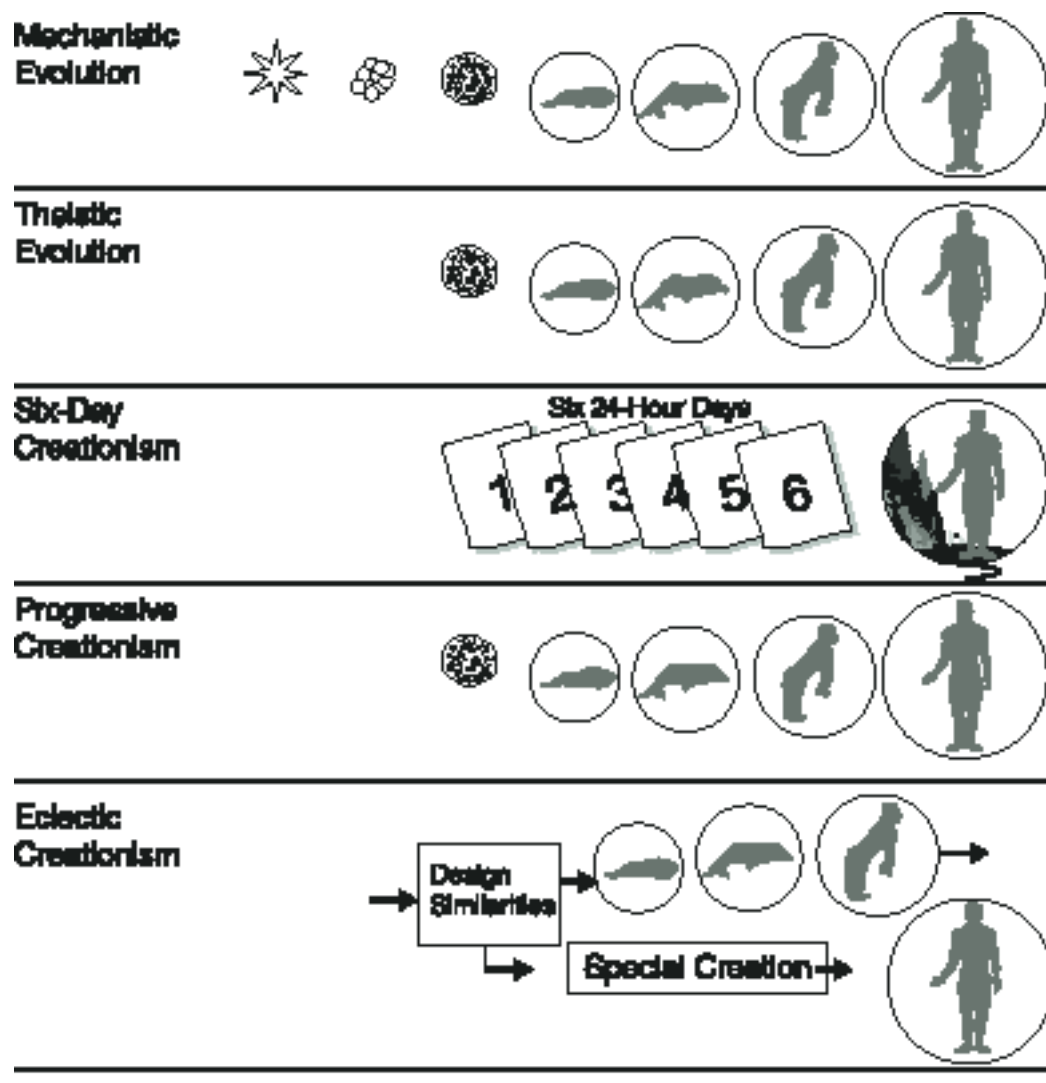
“In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth.” Genesis 1:1

People have all sorts of views on all sorts of matters. How they arrive at these views varies from logical arguments based on facts to blind faith based on feelings. Sometimes the views are based on scriptural interpretations and understandings. Other times, they are based on religions and secular education. Still other times they are based on indoctrination from leaders, counselors or teachers. Some views come from indirect or informal sources such as a movie, TV program, magazine article or a group discussion. Regardless of the source, most people are persuaded by reasonable arguments based on facts especially when it appeals to common sense. For the most part people are convinced that life has been formulated rationally and logically. Most people do not accept important events that happen arbitrarily or happenstance.

Obviously many beliefs are wrong. This is either because they conflicts with other beliefs that seem to be more reasonable or because they are not factually based. When it comes to addressing the deep issues of existence, origins and meanings of life and the universe, the beliefs are varied and different. Even the scientific community has a wide range of views on these issues since there is uncertainty and facts are not complete. Scientists are even attempting to formulate a Theory of Everything (TOE). This theory intends to describe the world in terms of a closed system of

logical truths. The search for TOE is like the search for the “Tree of Life” - mysterious, difficult and near impossible.

Until then there are five views of the formulation of life and the universe that appears accepted in many areas of studies. There are certainly other views not included in these five. Or, variations of the five exist even though they are not recognizable in the fundamental five views. These five views are: 1) Mechanistic Evolution; 2) Theistic Evolution; 3) Literal Six-day Creationism; 4) Progressive Creationism; 5) Eclectic Creationism. Each of these views will be described briefly. See Figure 5.2.



**Figure 5.2 Pictorial Comparison of the Views on the Origin of Life**

1. *Mechanistic Evolution.* This first view as a concept has been around for a long time. Greek and Roman philosophers observed everything as a constant process of flux and change. The change was a movement from



something elementary to something complex. But it wasn't until 1859 with Charles Darwin did the evolution theory become more formal. This formal view states new species arise by the continual survival and reproduction of the individuals best suited to a particular environment. Natural selection or chance permits one individual to survive over another. The principle involved is the principle of adaptation. All organisms in spite of their diversities, share a common quality of adaptiveness. Each organism is built and behaves to survive if they are able to adapt. This is also known as "survival of the fittest". This supports the idea that the present state of organisms is a more or less change from an original state. The Swedish biologist Carolus Linnaeus named 4,325 animal species and 5,250 plant species. Each survived through adaptation. Also, the Mechanistic view sees the cosmos, the world and life as having no origin. The basic element even to the cellular stages existed from eons of early time and are not purposeful, but arbitrary and random. The legacy of human life is a result of spontaneous choices guided by unchanging natural laws that operate under mathematical precision. In this view, there is no purposeful plan. There is, however, self-organization. Lifeless physical systems that are faced with increasing disruption will often, through self-organization, grow, adjust and reform to be differentially structured to survive the original and many subsequent causes of disruption. This first view encourages a mechanical explanation of all the phenomena in and around humans. Civilization has developed more from challenge-response activities.

This view with self-organization and adaptiveness to the environment has merit. Organisms has practiced this principle in the past and even in present circumstances. A species must adapt to surrounding circumstances or not survive. The free will choices upholds the human endowment described in the scriptures. A major criticism of this view relates to the fossil records, since fossils are the historic evidence of evolution. One should expect to find a generally continuous development from the simplest forms to the higher forms. The simple form development may be there, but the more advanced forms are not. There are gaps. The major gap is often referred to as the "missing link" between animals and humans. Another criticism is the origin or beginning of the whole process. It's not enough to say the original elements was just there. Still another criticism is the uniqueness of man in terms of personality, religious devotion, intellectual capacity and emotional abilities not found in it's predecessor forms. This makes this view untenable. Finally, evolutionists claim the development is a continuing process. The species and man not only have evolved, but they still are evolving. There is no evidence on this present scene of the changes or transitions between species that one would expect if the development is continuing.

2. *Theistic Evolution.* This is the view of some who would retain the evolution process, but reject the atheistic idea that there is no God who is involved with the origin of life. Theistic evolutionists state that the God of the Bible has providentially started life and has set the evolutionary process in motion from the simplest form to the most advanced levels. Fixed laws have been established to continue the guidance of the process. God set down these fixed laws and principles to govern the universe and maintain the evolutionary process. It appears he has since left the universe to allow life on earth to evolve and develop according to the laws. God does not intervene or alter these laws unless there is an expediency. God did create matter and life in the beginning stages, but has since abandoned to allow life to adapt self-select and self-organize.

The theistic evolutionist view sees the world as not purposeful. That is, there is no plan or ultimate set of results which is to be achieved. The unchanging laws which have been set down are purely mechanistic. Explanations of phenomena is singly clear-cut, law-conforming and without meaning. All organisms obey the same physical laws without exception. There are no variations nor exceptions. All organisms behave like machines. There are two ways of looking at a machine. You can examine each part, lever, wheel axle or spring to see how it's action is caused by the action of some other part with which it is connected. Such an explanation is a mechanistic explanation. The machine works and operates in a mechanical process with no meaning. A second way is to see the machine having a purpose to perform. It's parts have been manufactured for work with other parts to reach a certain kind of results. The mechanistic evolutionist favors the first approach as the machine has come together without purpose, but simply is there as a result of adaptation and natural selection.

The theistic evolutionist view that God started and was the originator of life is an astounding and commendable admission for evolutionists. The Theory of Evolution, prominent in scientific circles has removed God from the formation of life. Hence to keep Him there by the theistic evolutionists is strikingly notable. But the theistic evolutionists regard Genesis as nothing more than an allegory with poetic representation of spiritual truths. They see Genesis descriptions as more symbolic acts. They give too much credence to the poorly formulated theory of evolution. They do accept the trustworthiness of the scriptures. They accept the processes of organic evolution as the way God followed to create humans even with choice events of natural selection. There is the possibility that God did use the evolution model for the lower forms where one fish may have evolved from another or a cat came from a primate which was the same source as other land animals. But theistic evolutionists ignore God created

humans in the image and likeness in the historicity of the first Adam. They ignore man was a special creation separate from other forms. They do little verification to the Biblical records of the creation of God. Their position is untenable. The criticism of the atheistic evolutionist would apply here. The lack of a fossilized record of the higher forms are missing as well as the missing links.

3. *Six-day Creationism.* This view sees Genesis describing a literal and actual six 24 hour day in the creation of all things. Those holding this view see a strict, literal and exact description of the many episodes in the Bible such as Joshua commanding the sun to stand still and the moon to stay. (Joshua 10:12-13) Or the earth being flat because angels are standing on the four corners of the earth. (Revelation 7:1) Or the fire and brimstone in the center of the earth where the beast and the false prophet will be tormented day and night forever and forever. (Revelation 20:10) Six-day creationists reject any form of evolutionary development of life attributing the difference in organisms are due to God's intended design variations of the basic species. Their view also suggests the creative process is almost instantaneous. Instead of a 2 billion year earth, they see it more about 10,000 years. The view rejects any and all scientific data that seemingly appears to contradict the Genesis account. The fossil record which is the fundamental basis of the evolution theory is explained by the effects of the great flood in Noah's time. The flood was not only universal, but immensely destructive.

The view proposed by the six-day creationist is that evolution does not fit the Biblical model which is regarded as the word of God. For example the creation of the universe and earth, the fall of man and the destructive flood are truly basis facts to which historical data must be in conformity. Fossil-bearing strata were apparently laid down by the hydrodynamic activity of the flood. There are several points they stress. For one, Biblical teaching is deterministic. The evolution view wipes away the Biblical model. For another, since God created the earth in six days and there is no contextual basis for understanding these days in a symbolic sense, it is an act of both faith and reason to accept the six 24 hour days as literal and real days. For still another, the fossil formation under present-day conditions is not in evidence. This verifies the catastrophic effects of the flood which first produced them. A universal flood accounts more accurately the geological strata that is in evidence than the slow evolutionary development claimed by the evolutionists.

The insistence of the Biblical model and the catastrophic effects of the flood by the six-day creationists is commendable. The evolutionists position is untenable. But there are difficulties with the literal six-day view and the

short period of time of their descriptions. Data from many sources such as astronomy, physics and geology involves the speed of light. If light travels at the speed of 186,000 miles per second and this light comes from stars, a distance which has accurately been measured, the travel time coming from the stars are far greater than 10,000 years. The age of the universe must be at least in the billions. Also radio active methods of dating stable or unstable elements on the earth within strata show the earth itself is in the few billions of years. This is a far deviation from an earth of only a few thousand of years old. Hence, whatever else may be true of the creationist's view of creation, it's hard to accept that the creation of the earth and the universe was only recent. Add to this, the Bible does not say fish and plant were destroyed in the flood. The creationists view insists everything was destroyed. How could plants re-establish themselves so quickly so that a dove can bring back an olive leaf. Finally, another puzzling point of the six-day creationists is the rings of a tree. These rings are a measure of the age of a tree. How could these multiple-ringed trees come into existence within six literal days. If this is true, trees were created within minutes or hours.

4. *Progressive Creationism.* This view of creation states God created the world directly and deliberately without leaving anything to chance. But he did it over a long period of time that correspond roughly to the geological ages. The whole first chapter of Genesis is based on the principle of progressive stages in the method of creating the universe, the solar system, human life and animal and plant existence. This was not done instantly. Stages of development were needed. It took 6 stages or days to create on a lifeless and formless earth, the conditions necessary for human life. This stage approach seems to be the method done in other creative acts. In corn, first the seed, then the stalk, then the blade, then the ear finally, the corn in the ears. The earth was without form and void, then the light, then the water, then the land, then the vegetation, then the fish, then the animals and finally humans. This progressive process is described in Genesis. The creation of God has not stopped. It continues. The integration and harmonization of the Biblical account with established scientific fact is appealing since the Biblical account is lacking in the countless details that is necessary to understand the process. This would make science and the Bible complementary. Progressive creationists are willing to interpret scriptures, if necessary, to fit the findings of established facts. For example, the six days of creation mentioned in Genesis are not 24 hour periods, but longer periods of time. Does not the scripture say "a day with the Lord is a thousand years and a thousand years as one day". (2 Peter 3:8) Also Moses' writings in several areas means a period of time. (Genesis 2:4; Psalm 90:4)

Progressive creationists are cautious in their evaluation of evolution. They appear to accept microevolutionary notions of mutations of the lower forms, but are skeptical about macroevolutionary descriptions from ape to man. They view the present day varieties of organisms are the result of the diversification and variation of the prototypes originally created by God. It's possible God could have used the evolution process to start the elemental forms and gradually, but progressively bring the species up to the level that now exists then fixed them. When the Genesis record said, "it was good" that species were fixed and made unchangeable. This theory integrates both science and religion. There is a kind of religion in science. It is the religion of a person who believes there is order and harmony in the universe and every event can be explained in a rational way as the product of some previous event or some great intelligence. Every effect must have a cause. As Albert Einstein once said, "Scientists are possessed by a sense of universal causation". This first view of the origin of the universe is compatible with the Bible claims, "Thou Lord, in the beginning, hast laid the foundation of the earth and the heavens are the work of thine hands". (Psalms 102:25)

There is serious objection to any attempt to downgrade the Bible to be merely a book of religion out of step with facts and reality. Scientists have a tendency to do this because of it's history with religion. Evolutionary extremism has not helped in this matter. Progressive creationists attempt to bring reality and facts with Biblical precepts and principles. This is commendable especially in getting away from the twenty-four hour solar day. Besides the sun's visible function of defining day and night did not begin until the fourth creative day. This in itself strongly refutes the first four days were not 24 hour solar days. Conversely, it is difficult to align the creative days to the various geological periods with their actual fossil records. The record of the great flood and it's cataclysmic results in altering fossil periods is most likely true. Yet the fossil find in geological strata does reveal a longer time especially in the age of the earth.

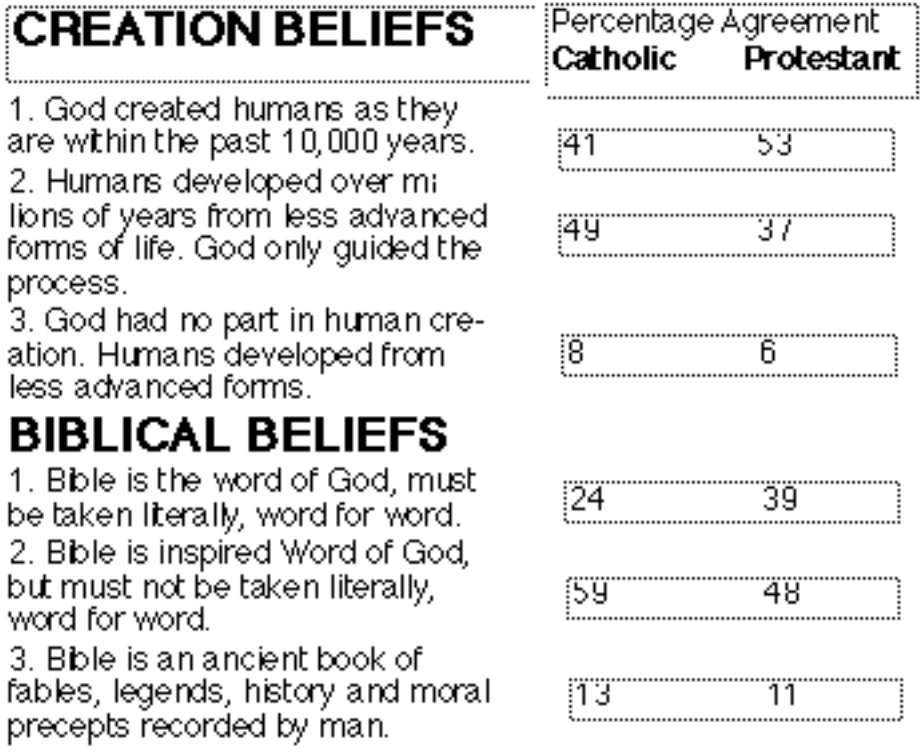
5. *Eclectic Creationism.* Finally, there is the eclectic view of creation. This view selects and combines portions of the first four views of the formation and development of the universe and life. Eclecticism recognizes there are kernels of truth found within each of the prior views. The truths have been mixed-in with errors and traditions. The eclectic view selects good features while rejecting the remaining. Here is a summary of this selection and integration.

- a. *God used a Cosmic Blueprint and plan in His creative works.* There is purpose to a designed universe, solar system and the unchanging natural laws, but at the same time God allows individuals

- free choice with these laws to affect and influence how life and civilization is to be. The plan guides the movement and activities, steadily and progressively to nurture and sustain human life, but stops short of interfering with the free world of created entities. The purposeful plan allows God to select and choose certain people to move the plan in a future direction. Thus Noah, Abraham, Moses, David, Jesus and Paul were some selected ones. But Alexander, Caesar, Solomon, Khan, Stalin and Hitler were not selected to contribute to the plan. They worked against the plan for their own free will. As a result, they did in fact shape the 34 civilizations as it was and as history records it. The allowance of these negative influences provide valuable experiences.
- b. *God used common design patterns in creation, but humans are “special”.* The eclectic creationists sees no objections to the process of progressive evolution for certain forms of life. God created elemental design forms of life and progressively developed these forms to higher complex stages. The heart and it’s circulatory system found in frogs are also found in mice, cats, dogs and monkeys. The frog’s system is a simple and of elementary design. This same design has been used in the higher forms of animals as well as humans. After arriving at a desirable state of design, the designer fixes the organism or species. The Bible describes it as “it is good”. Man has been an exception to this evolutionary process because he was created whole even though his infrastructure reflects design patterns of the lower forms. He was created from the dust of the earth as the literal Biblical record states. In spite of a species being fixed, it can develop to a higher standard of perfected behavior, or change to a lower level of behavior, but within a conceptual design.
- c. *God designed living organisms to adapt and self-organize when faced with life threatening factors.* The adaptation and self-organization of the atheistic view has some merit. Surviving species rise, grow and develop by their continual survival and reproduction of their design. Racial color and physical features and capabilities are examples of adaptation to a local environment. Theistic evolution states God could have used the evolutionary process to bring each species to an advanced form. The familiar food digestive system is found in nearly every level of life from the lowest to the highest. God used common design patterns as progressive creation was taking place. But He later fixed them and made them unchangeable. The evolutionary process no longer continues. It has come

- to an end. It is this reason, present evidence of evolution does not exist for it's continuity. Transitional forms which link major groups are absent. In the progressive approach, creative periods in early times continue to unfold in some form during later times. In other words, later creative accomplishments build on earlier achievements.
- d. *God used a much longer period than six twenty-four hour days.* The time periods of the universe, the Milky Way, the solar system and plant earth is far greater than the literal period advocated by the six-day creationists. Here is where reliance in science is useful. The scientific view estimate are: 11 billion years as to the beginning of the visible universe; 2-4 billion years to the solidification of planet earth; 6-10,000 years as to the beginning of human life. On the other hand, the beginning of human life as advocated by atheistic evolutionists requiring vast amounts of time is far too extreme. The disruptive effects of the flood did cause misleading time periods of fossils in strata. But there is sufficient evidence to accept life formation within a 10,000 year period. The Biblical model should be followed accurately and conceptually. But scientific evidence should fill in the details. To ignore science completely with their vast amount of evidence is a refusal to be open-minded. This is like continuing a medieval mentality which held the earth was the center of the universe.

At this writing, Pope John Paul II recently stated that evolutionary theory is not incompatible with religious faith. Many Christians, especially Roman Catholics, were already predisposed to hear and accept this position on the view of how life came into existence. The Princeton Religious Research Center in the December 1966 newsletter tabulated figures, based on a survey to show the differences in beliefs between the Catholics and the Protestants. The results of this survey is summarized in Figure 5.3.



**Figure 5.3 Comparing Catholic and Protestant Beliefs**

**TIME IS STARTED**

“And God blessed the seventh day and rested from all His work.” Genesis 2:3

The Genesis account is not a scientific dissertation. It is a common language description. Criticism with this vernacular is unjustified. The purpose of Genesis is twofold. To announce and imprint upon all, the one God who created all things and to give a vision of beginnings in a broad, but conceptual outline. After all, those who read the account, for the most part, have little sophistication in the natural or physical sciences. If the account were highly scientific and explicitly technical, only a few would understand. The existing approach permits millions upon millions of people to gain insight and understanding how the earth and it’s inhabitants came about.

A calendar is a rule on which time and chronology can be calculated and traced. The basic calendar unit is the day of the week from which the week, month and year are measured. This unit is derived from the rotation of the earth on it’s axis and it’s subsequent revolution around the sun. The week as a calendar unit is in use today in almost all civilized nations. The length of seven days is the basic unit of time. The Genesis beginning introduced this unit which has been adopted by all civilizations. Six days was used to arrange creation on earth and the seventh was cessation of creative activities to start human life. The number seven is probably the most important number in society. In the Bible, it is a sacred number such as the seventh millennium, seven branches of the lampstand, sprinkling of the blood seven times, seven messages to the churches of Revelation, seven stars, seven spirits, etc. In



society the number seven has become important such as the seven day work week. When the calendar was constructed the names of the days of the week were identified with celestial bodies: Sunday - the sun; Monday - the moon; Tuesday - mars; Wednesday - mercury; Thursday - jupiter; Friday - venus; Saturday - saturn. The Emperor Augustus renamed the 30 day month of Sextilis giving it the name of August to honor himself. He took a day from February so that his month would have as many days as July. July was named after Julius Caesar.

The creation of time itself follows two approaches. Time is created when space is created such as the “Big Bang”. Two bodies with space and distance between them creates time since time is required to go from one body to the other. When the causal force started the Big Bang phenomena theorized by Hubble in which the gaseous fragments emanated outward, time was started since measurable distances existed between the fragments. This is to suggest an additional dimension of time must now be added to the other measures of the physical universe. These measures are length, breath, width, matter, energy, motion and gravity. In most cases in the universe, the traditional dimensions had no relevance in space since the distances are enormous. Distance must be measured by the amount of time is taken for light to travel at the rate of 186,000 miles per second. One light year is approximately 5.8 trillion miles. Thus, hundreds of light years are distances to and among the stars.

A second approach to create time is to measure change. When Adam was evicted from the Garden of Eden, he began to age and change. This change was measured with years of time. With God, who does not age because He does not change, but remains constant in His life cycle, time has no relevance. Thus, the hands of the clock indicate units of change expressed as units of time. If humans did not change, that is, they are perfect, time would cease for them. When the hands of a clock go from twelve noon to six in the evening, it means six units of change has occurred. When one wants to change something, time will be generated. When nothing changes, time ceases and becomes constant.

The Genesis account does not give the age of planet earth nor the universe, nor the solar system. Genesis only says “in the beginning”. Three categories of beginnings were introduced in the first chapter of Genesis: the heavens and earth; plant and animal life; and human life. The first category refers to a dateless past. The second and third can be reasoned approximately. The word day in the Bible can refer to a twenty-four hour period as well as a longer period of time or epoch. Thus, there is the day in the wilderness, the day of deliverance or the day of judgment. In each of these cases, the day refers to a longer period of time rather than a twenty-four hour period. If the last or

seventh creative day which is the recorded history from Adam to now is 7,000 years. One can reason, all creative days are of equal amounts resulting in 49,000 years as the creative week. See Figure 5.4. If planning periods for each day were interspaced between creative days for design and projections, it's conceivable the creative week may be longer than 49,000 years.

The Bible appears to be the only book in existence that has kept up the genealogy in an unbroken line with minute exactness from Adam to Jesus. If recorded history is added to this genealogy after Jesus, there is a trustworthy record that traces from Adam to modern times. Finally, the Sabbath, the rest day, is given the crowning feature with special prominence by announcing "God rested on the seventh day". This does not mean God was tired or energy depleted. It means the goals to be accomplished in bringing about human life and the means of sustaining it was complete. God could now turn His attention to other creative works.

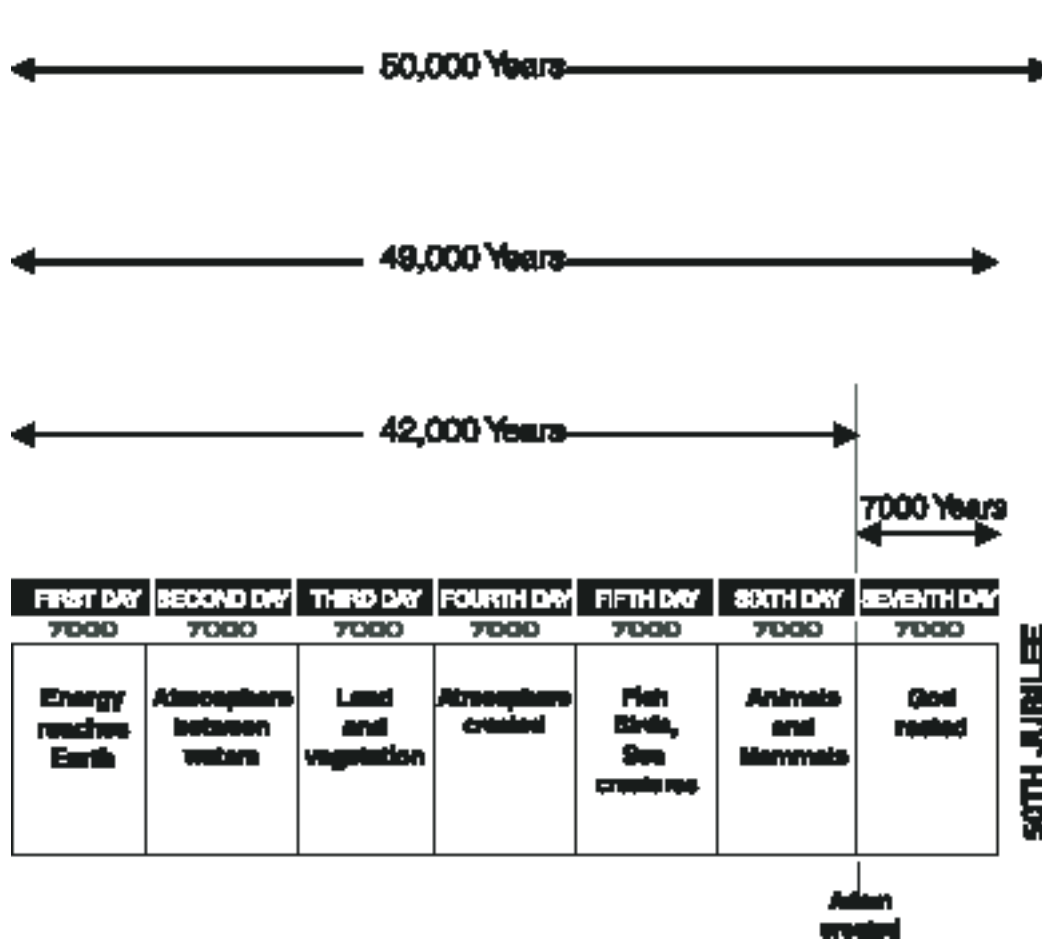


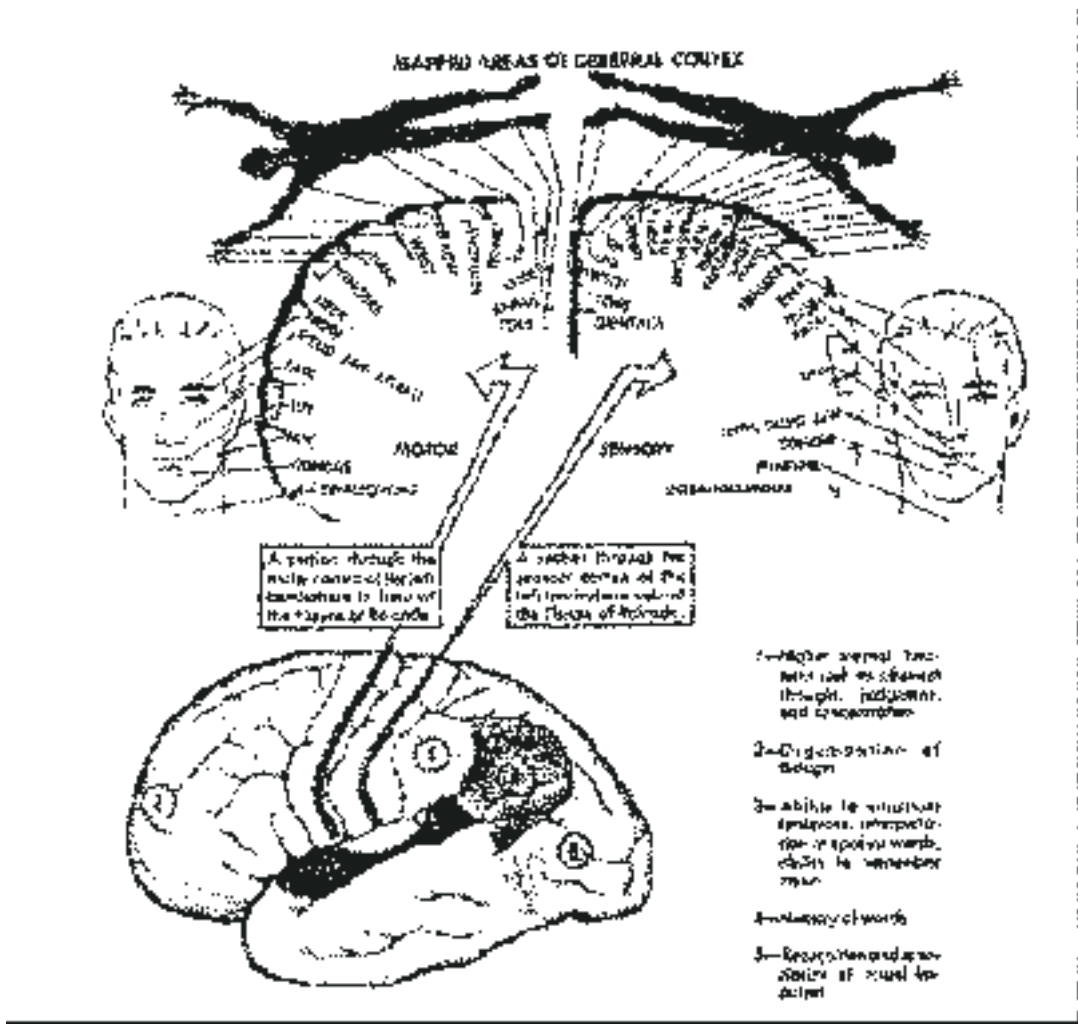
Figure 5.4 Period of Creative Work

## THE DEVELOPMENT OF HUMAN LIFE

“And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground and breathe into his nostrils the breath of life and man became a living soul.” Genesis 2:7

The concept of human life is enormously difficult and mysterious. Some see it as an event which happens when certain elements are present. Some see it as nutriment energy both stored and utilized. Some see it as a combination of the flesh and the soul. Still others see it as physical and biological systems operating in a unity. The search for a meaningful definition continues. But life in the beginning of it's design was a chemical combination. The human body is known to have major and minor traces of 23 different minerals as found in the dust of the earth. As these chemical combinations unite structures and systems emerge. The structures and systems are dynamic. That is, they start and stop at different times for different reasons. For example, the passage from life to death involves the successive stoppage of a great number of biological processes. Similarly, the same may be said for the time life begins. It involves a great number of biological processes, each triggered at different times to start life from conception to birth. This suggests they are the same processes. At early stages, they start and enhance life. At later stages, the same processes decline and diminish life. But what is the force that triggers and moves the process along? This force is like genetic triggering that switches the processes from positive to negative aging. The DNA, which is the basic unit of life, contains tens of thousands of genes linked into 48 sets of chromosomes which when fertilizes a human egg weighs about two ten trillionths of an ounce. This DNA has built within it information for blue printing the type of human structure and type to be developed. Once fertilized, the DNA finds itself within a receptive environment - the womb. The womb is a detailed manual with a built-in set of instructions, a placenta, an umbilical cord and the amnion in which organs function naturally and easily to develop the embryo to a full size baby. Conception, formation, gestation, fetal development and birth are stages in the process definition of the start of life. The big mystery of life is the force that triggers these stages once conception is instituted. A force that pushes the stages along to bring life into existence. Is it a tandomized program built into the DNA? Is it an electrical scheduling package passed on by progenitors to offspring? Since it is automatic and choice is not an option, is it part of a design originally incorporated into the genetic package passed on from generation to generation? Or was it altered after the design was completed? The Bible claims it was altered later when the human couple fell in non-conformance to established laws. It is because of this unknown force that we see life as more than the sum of the countless physical

and chemical reactions occurring in every part of a human life. Every part behaves as a part, but when constituted as a whole, the whole causes the parts to behave beyond it's limits. Truly, life is more than the sum of it's parts. This mystery is enhanced as humans are designed and prepared to live a never-ending existence, but for some uncontrolled reason it stops. To consider another example, the brain is designed to hold 100 billion cells; linked by 100 trillion synaptic connections which are focused into an individual cable called the optic nerve. This nerve is connected to the retina of the human eye which it alone has three million cells. The human eye is capable of taking in unlimited pictures and words. With the brain, it can analyze and store unlimited information. The brain is able to build on previous information. Animals do not have this capacity. Figure 5.5 shows the functions of the brain associated with it's parts.



**Figure 5.5 The Functions of the Brain with Body Parts**  
 (Source - Americana Vol 4 pg. 425: Reproduced by permission)

When one thinks the human body contains more than ten trillion cells, one easily concludes the human is the most complicated body in the universe. Still another example is cell renewal in the body. Cells are continually replaced when needed. New cells are formed to take the place of old ones. The internal structures, organs, tissues, glands and systems are so automated that they can go on-and-on. There seems to be absolutely no limit to the potentiality of continuous and uninterrupted life. That's where the mystery comes in. Humans are designed to continue indefinitely, but something triggers the human systems into a state of decline. Life comes to an end. Life, then, is a process curve like the parabola of a projectile. See Figure 5.6.

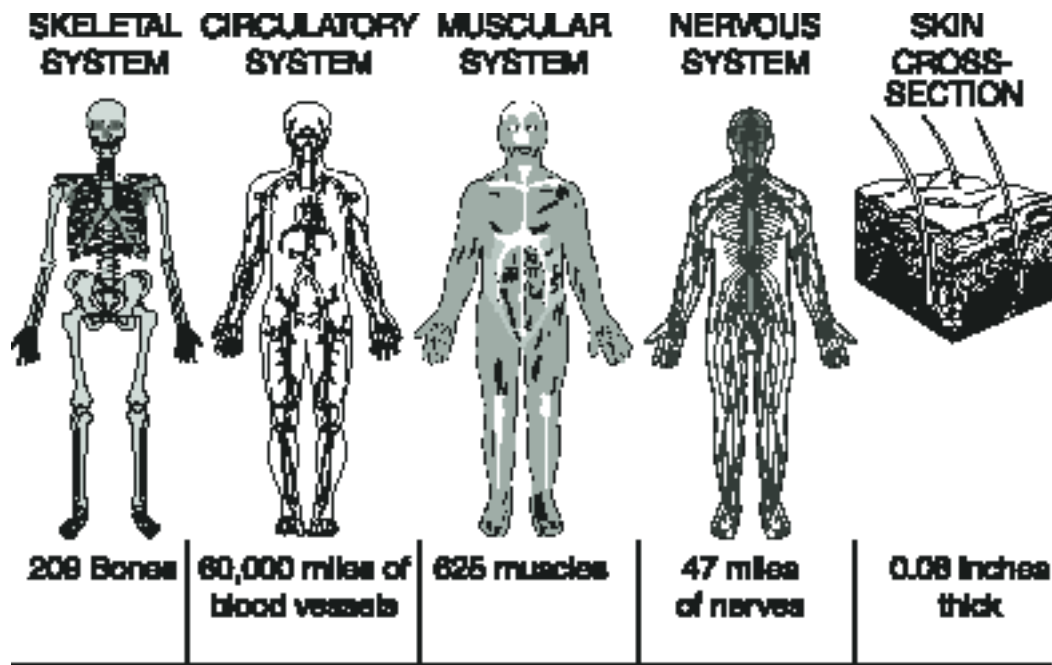


**Figure 5.6 The Present Curve of Life**

Life is conceptualized at the initial state (birth), ascends, peaks, reaches a summit (maturity), then declines and descends to a stage of repose (death). To travel on the curve of life is to experience growth, maturity and decline. The curve of life is under a limited life span. In the future, the two ends of the parabolic curve will be tied together to form a perfect circle. Under this perfect condition, one cannot find, as in a circle, the start nor the finish. Human life will not intensify, nor peak, nor diminish, but remain steady, consistent, reliable and never-ending. The mystery of the future and the mystery of the past are both locked and united in the curve of life.

The human body with all its specific capabilities helps define human life. The eyes even though they blink 15 times per minute enables the body to see and react to the world around. The eyes can distinguish among more than 300,000 different color variations. The eyes can see a small candle flame from 30 miles away on a clear, dark night. How emotions are connected with the eyes so that they tear during crying still remains a mystery. The ears work in

pairs to collect sound vibrations and turns them into signals to the brain. Ears can detect 1500 different tones and 350 degrees of loudness. They can sense the direction of sound based on a .00004 second difference in its arrival from one ear to another. The nose can distinguish between 2,000 and 4,000 different smells. There are specialized nerve endings called receptors at the back of the nose extremely sensitive to chemicals in the air stream so that one drop of diffused perfume can be detected in a large house. The brain can become accustomed to smells, even the most horrible ones. The brain simply switches off the smells. The tongue, approximately 4 inches long, has over 1,000 taste buds so that .04 ounces of salt dissolved in 500 quarts of water can be detected. Taste buds work only when saliva dissolves chemicals in food as it rolls over the buds. The skin is a marvelous organ. It is the largest organ of the body with thousands of nerve cells. These nerve cells respond to touch, heat and pain. It can feel the weight of a mosquito landing on the skin. In most places, the skin's thickness is 0.08 inches, but protects internal organs from injury and infection. The brain is the major organ of the body. It is the control system of all parts of the body automated and non-automated. It is responsible for thought, memory, language and emotion. In a typical adult it weighs 3 pounds and contains 100 billion cells. Roughly 2 pints of blood travels through the brain every minute. The total number of brain cells is fixed at birth. The best of efforts can only retain what was received at birth. A good alcoholic drunk or drug dosage can destroy as much as 600 million cells. Alcoholics and drug addicts have seriously failing memories. The heart is a fist-sized muscular pump that pushes blood around the body through 172,000 circuits whose length is 60,000 miles of blood vessels. This pump circulates annually 875,000 gallons of blood. The human consists of seven basic systems: the respiratory system; the digestive system; the skeleton system; the circulatory system; the muscular system; the nervous system and the skin system. Each of these systems have countless parts, but each part is needed in the body. Parts are interrelated and interdependent. Parts operate as a totality. Disturbance of one part affects all. The human body with its myriad of functions and parts is truly amazing and astonishing. See Figure 5.7.



**Figure 5.7 The Body Systems**

Valerie Fahey<sup>15</sup> provided a fascinating look into the results of the functions of the body by aggregating totals for an individual in a lifetime. The number of sperm produced by a male is 400,000,000,000. For a female, it's 400 eggs. The number of heart beats in a lifetime is 2,500,000,000. The number of breaths from the lungs is 740,000,000. Quarts of blood pumped by the heart in a lifetime is 350,000,000. The eye blinks is 333,000,000. Finger flexes is 25,000,000. The average laughs in a lifetime is 540,000. The hours of sleep is 202,300 which also includes 127,500 dreams or nightmares. 40,520 quarts of urine is produced by an individual. There may be as much as 3,000 cries, 350 miles of hair and 60 feet of finger nails. The human body with it's myriad of functions and parts is truly amazing and astonishing.

Over the years, science, medicine and technology has raised the statistical life expectancy, but the longevity or span of life has not changed. The scriptural account (Genesis 6:3) specifies the limit of life to be 120 years. There may be a few unique individuals who have surpassed this, but not by much. The greater majority remains living within this limit. Life expectancy is a statistical average of the number of years between birth and death of a large population. It is the time between an individual's position on the curve of life to a predicted date of death. Life expectancy been increasing. Approximations can be as follows: In ancient Greece and Rome, 20 years was the estimated life expectancy; In Medieval Europe, it was 30 years; In the United States in the mid-nineteenth century it rose to 40 years; Again in 1900, it rose to 50; Today, it has arrived at 75 years. Forecasters have estimated it will rise

to 80 to 100 years in the next 50 years. More will be described on life expectancy in a later section of this book. The Bible claims it could be forever when critical conditions have been restored to humankind. Life expectancy is affected by a variety of controllable and non-controllable factors. The controllable ones have given humans an upward trend. The non-controllable ones will limit humans to the 120 year span.

The loss of life's continuity prompts a search to restore this continuity. People sense somehow they are disconnected with something vital, something crucial to life's continuity. They seem to be in a meaningless cycle of birth-death with no hope for change. This is like the ancient myth Sisyphus who in Greek Mythology was condemned by the Gods to roll a stone to the top of a hill, then to allow the stone to roll back to the bottom of the hill, then to roll the stone up the hill, and then to allow it to roll down again, and so on, again and again, forever. This is a picture of a pointless, meaningless cycle of existence. Sisyphus would love to see this meaningless cycle cease. If the Genesis account reveals anything, it reveals a disconnection with God which has resulted in this meaningless cycle of life and death. God said if you choose evil, you will enter this life-death cycle. Conversely, if you choose good, you will break this life-death cycle. Choosing good is the great choice and an opportunity to enter a new cycle of life-life. Choosing good reconciles and reconnects the person with God. When this reconciliation occurs fully and completely, continuity of life will also occur. This, then is the mission of the Biblical Civilization. Life has been removed because of a disconnection with God. The Biblical Civilization with its full practice of good and its avoidance of evil will result in a reconnection. As it were in our mythical character Sisyphus, the Biblical Civilization will give him the strength and the persuasiveness to roll the stone over the top to the other side of the hill and away permanently.

#### THE UNIVERSE AND LIFE ARE INTERDEPENDENT

“By love serve one another.” Galatians 5:13

How do we relate to others and to things around us? How do we fit in to an overall context? Why are we dependent for so many things to sustain life? A purposeful universe suggests the endless variety of elements on earth as well as in the cosmos have an interactive and interdependent relationship. Everything is held together in a hierarchical order by levels and interrelated functions. Nutrient soil cannot function without rain and temperature. Plants cannot live without soil that feeds them. Animals and humans cannot live without the plants. All in turn are nourished by the sun. Planets cannot exist alone. They revolve around their stars. Stars are part of the orbiting solar



systems. Solar systems are held in place by the galaxies. All in turn depend on their central black holes which restores their energies and perpetuates their existence. All in the world and the cosmos is dependent on others in one way or another. One cannot exist apart from the other. Everyone serves everyone. Everything depends on everything. God has made no one absolute. Dependence is a perpetual call. It has been ordered that humans are in need of each other. This is one reason why humans must learn to love each other since their existence is vitally dependent on others. This vast interdependence serves an hierarchy up to the highest level. Going up the hierarchy means going up in complexity. Going down the hierarchy means going down to simplicity.

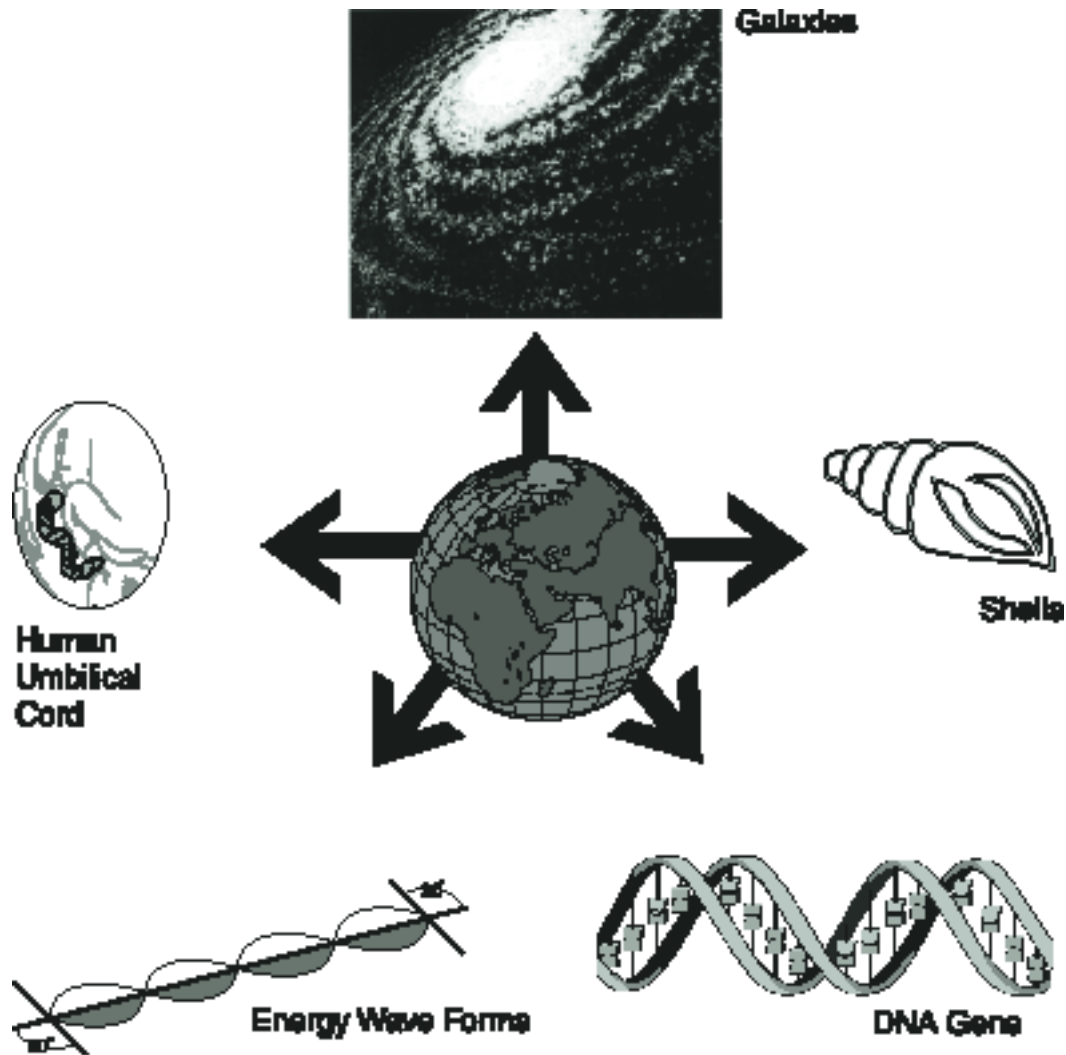
The meaning of self-existence in the context of the way things are is to see, understand and acknowledge one's place in the total matrix of the surrounding worlds. It is like being a puzzle piece that fits to form the total picture. The universal variety with the enormous abundance is held together in a unique macro and micro unity. This phenomenal unity requires a system of laws which regulates and controls order and harmony. This gives the universe a sense of equilibrium. This order and harmony is not arbitrary, but results from a designed universe. A universe in which every component serves. This might suggest the "law of service". There are components which serve upward, downward, sideward, inward and outward. The search for meaning is to see and know the law of order and the law of service operating in the universe. Serving each other and each thing sustains the system of which we are a part. When everyone and everything serves, life is no longer meaningless.

Interdependence is emerging as the dominate principle of the future. We must learn how to make interconnections between people, principles and events. Especially is this true within interconnected regional pockets of interest. While each pocket will have it's own goals and activities, developments in one pocket will influence conditions in all pockets. Nothing is isolated. We can only understand one phenomenon if we look at it in relation to the totality of which it is a part.

In the beginning suggests a start, a plot, a rhythm, a vibration, a plan which over the many centuries and millennia had had a movement in a certain direction. But the movement has allowed must free choice and varied adaptations. Toynbee's 34 civilizations are manifestations of these many and varied choices. In the beginning suggests a new design within the context of a new plan. God was the great cause producing phenomenal effects. These effects we see in life, nature, beauty, order, symmetry and systems. The organic world in this new design has intricately constructed parts that work together for originating and sustaining human life. All organisms including

plants and animals depend upon one another and are designed to cooperate for the purpose intended. Life and ways to sustain it is written into a cosmic code. A cover story by Robert Wright in Time Magazine (12/28/92) supports the idea that “the universe seems calibrated for life’s existence, purpose and design”. If the force of gravity were pushed upward, just a few units, stars would burn out faster, leaving little time for the existence of non-life bodies as well as life bodies. Even if protons and neutrons are changed by a small iota, stars may never be born since the hydrogen that feeds them would not exist. This extremely sensitive equilibrium supports the view that the cosmos and earthly systems did not come about by coincidence nor happenstance. It is a purposeful plan regulated to sustain the design of the universe and the life as we know it. We are now only, gradually, working out the stages in a scheduled time sequence.

Spiral formations in God’s designs are more than an artistic display. These spiral formations are found throughout the macroscopic and microscopic worlds. The formations are intimately connected with the phenomena of life and growth. It may be said about spiral formations with few exceptions have been used as incremental steps of energy from a start or beginning to a maturity or end place. The inner part of a spiral is the beginning. Moving along the spirals is moving expansively to new levels of growth. See Figure 5.8. Interdependence can be seen in the designs and curves of life as well as the services of life.



**Figure 5.8 Spirial Formations are the Curves of Life**

#### BEGINNING OF RELIGION

“And they heard the voice of the Lord walking in the garden in the cool of the day.” Genesis 3:8

Adam heard the voice of the Lord God in the evening of the day. God did not make a personal appearance, but there was an encounter and conversations. The conversations recorded in the scriptures are in Hebrew, but this may not have been the language between God and Adam. Hebrew was not an identifiable language until approximately 2000 BC. It is not known the precise language of the early Bible people such as Adam, Enoch or Noah. At the dawn of recorded Jewish history, Hebrew was already the vernacular of the Israeli's. But it was one in a constellation of many languages called “Semitic”. These include Akkadian, Canaanite, Aramaic, Ugaritic and Arabic. There is no

reason to believe the Hebrew language was invented by the Jews since it was in existence in the lands of the fertile crescent long before Abraham appeared.

Adam did not see God as He is a spirit. God held conversations in an outward manner with the first couple. It's conceivable, the voice of God was the logos known as the Word of God in his pre-human condition. It's also conceivable it was the logos who instructed the couple in the beginnings of the ways of life. After all, the couple had no experience, nor information, nor guidelines of what to do and what not to do in everyday living. It's also conceivable that Adam and Eve had fellowship and conversations with angels in the garden during the day. The record shows a Cherubim guarded the tree of life. There may have been conversation with this Cherubim.

Adam's relationship with God and their conversations started solemn acts of religious worship. For one, devotions were started in the evening at the cool of the day in the garden. The evening encounter is a time of day when work ceases and humans are quiet and contemplative. The evening is a time of rest when the activities of the day diminishes. As time went on through history, external devices and buildings were used to create this devotional atmosphere of quiet, restful and contemplative mood of the garden. Synagogues, churches, mosques, temples and other religious buildings were constructed to provide a believer with a setting for worship as practiced originally in the garden. These buildings often housed objects and copies of scriptures to symbolize the meaning of the worship.

Another religious practice started was prayer. The couple originally enjoyed a two way conversation with God. Regrettably, the serious mistake in disobeying God interrupted this conversational relationship. Prayer was consequently instituted when they were expelled from the garden. Since the pair conversed regularly in the evening hour with God, prayer to Him was the replaced activity. It was outreach for the individual who was critically important in their lives. After all, there was no one else that they could converse with. There was a new loneliness. There was a disconnection. Prayer helped immensely to bridge between daily conversations with God and the eventual arrival of children and other humans.

Another religious conduct originating at the time was "feelings" for the spiritual. This involved a sense of awe, mystery and an intuitive dependence and support for an outside power. Adam and Eve had this feeling. It quickly resulted in worship and meditation. The worship of God was concerned with praising God, thanking God for benefits, repenting for sins and pleading for help with the problems of life. But most important these feelings were a recognition of the need for God to direct and support the worshippers life.

Sacrifice was also another religious practice after the banishment from the garden. The record indicates animals were slain as an offering. The animal skins were made into clothing for dealing with the environment. Sacrifice was more formal with Cain and Abel as both sons of Adam offered their best in sacrifice to God. Sacrifice was an attitude of a systematic effort at propitiation for transgression against God. The human couple regretted the mistake they made in the garden. Their sacrifices were exhibits of remorse and acts of attrition. These sacrifices eventually became a religious ceremony formalizing a relationship with the receiver. The sacrificing ceremony is the offerers way of showing gratitude for life, conditions for life, that arrangements for sustaining life such as food and the forgiveness requested for mistakes made in life. The continual sacrifices implies a continual communion or relationship with God. As time went on, information, knowledge and experiences were added to devotion, feelings, prayer and sacrifices. This started a value system eventually expressed as doctrines and beliefs. Since the information, knowledge and experiences were different for different groups of people, obviously, the value system of doctrines and beliefs were different as well.

The original practices with the first human pair of devotion, prayer, meditations, worship and sacrifices was enlarged over the thousands of years so that traditions, rituals, customs and protocols were included in religious ceremonies. What was lacked originally was knowledge, experience and reasoned thought. Since Adam and Eve were the first pair, it is understandable that they had this deficiency. This lack had been found in human life since the distant past. Later, values were added based on the limited amount of knowledge and accumulated experience. The variation of religious experiences can be explained as more a variation of feelings and values over the years rather than a variance of reasoned thought.

The origin of religions, in general, is difficult to describe for at least two reasons. First, the search for the mysteries of life is so perplexing that faith, hope and dependency are required to make up for the lack of knowledge, experiences and reasoned thought. Since diverse tribes, groups and cultures had individualized knowledge and experiences, different faiths evolved from this variations. It may be for this reason, religious affiliations are often called different faiths. The second reason was how God and his principles were incorporated in every day life. Religious practice in the past was no different than the religious practice of the present. People would be devout on the day of worship and secular for the other days. This mixture of devoutness and secularity produced a religious pattern of worship that became traditional. These patterns took on a character of it's own as they connected with a

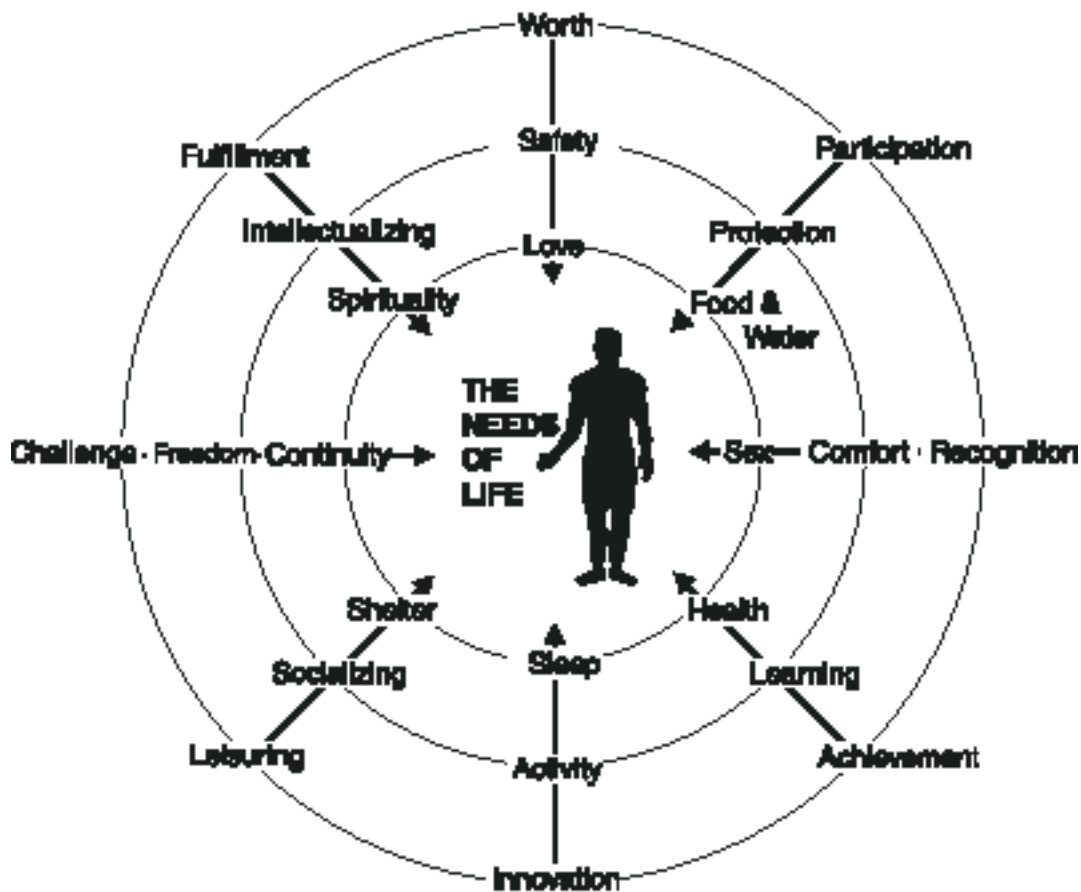
spiritual experience. Prayer, visions, perceptions, interpretations, were influenced by these traditions. Hence the development of religions has been a mixture from the original experience in the garden to the inclusions that were made throughout history.

Today, the human population can be segmented<sup>16</sup> into three worlds: East, West and the Third World developing countries. Thirty-three recognized major religious blocks are found in seven continents and 233 recognized countries. The number of religions in these blocks are countless perhaps reaching into the thousands. In the United States, over 25,000 have been identified. With this variety of religious groups faithful to one God, how must this be viewed by God himself? These worshippers of every denominations lifting their hearts and voices in the most diverse ways. How must it sound to God? Is it harmony or dissonance? Like a choir, do the voices blend into melody and harmony or does it sound like disharmony and noise. This is difficult to assess. All that can be done is to listen carefully to find and eliminate the discord. What may be needed is a revisit to the origins and make every attempt to be in concord with these origins.

Down through the ages, one can see how important the quality of religion is to the way civilization goes. If the doctrines and beliefs have wide disparities and the conflicts are severe, civilization loses it's homogeneity and disruption occurs. This may explain why so many civilizations rose, declined and disappeared. The conflicts are unresolvable. A brief look at many of the world religions, even with their disparities, do have important commonalties. Most religions seem to embrace five concepts:

1. *Life needs God.* This acknowledges there stands in the midst of everything a being which gives and sustains life.
2. *Life needs worth* because life is worth living. In spite of the difficulties and problems humans have in the conduct of life, life is an experience well worth the effort to continue it.
3. *Life needs love and understanding.* Humans depend on other humans as they do food, water, sunshine, comfort and rest.
4. *Life needs learning.* If experience is the greatest teacher, the greatest lesson is to learn from experience so that a second time around, perfection can be reached.
5. *Life needs continuity.* Most everyone enjoys living life and will pursue any and all avenues which may perpetuate it.

The influence of these five principles has been profound and represents important commonalities among many religions. Yet there are secondary needs that support the eight primary ones. This is seen in Figure 5.9. God has a plan for supplying these needs. In fact, every human life from it's beginning to it's reconciliation to God is a plan of God.



**Figure 5.9 The Needs of Life on Three Levels: Primary, Secondary and Tertiary**

#### FREEDOM IS A NATURAL ENDOWMENT

“Let us make man in our image, after our likeness.” Genesis 1:26

The cause of freedom can be identified with the destiny of humans. How humans handle this endowment of freedom, can essentially make or break the civilization in which they live. God gave this endowment of freedom to select good or evil, but prefers the choice would be good. Through experience they are learning that lesson. Man's special endowment from God falls into two categories - in God's image and after God's likeness. A careful study of human intellect and capability will confirm these two deeply held endowments described in the Genesis account.

They are not physical qualities since God is not physical. They are mental qualities as part and parcel of God's design objectives for humans. These are separate from the animals and the lower forms. A clear manifestation of these two endowments in a human will reveal a faint portrait of God in man as well as woman. The scriptural citation of God's image and likeness is something to be shared by male and female alike. This is to suggest God's major goal with humans in the Biblical Civilization is to reproduce himself in humans. This is to say man can become like God, but never can become God. If man were perfect in these two endowments, one would be able to see God clearly in man. Man is the only species that possesses these two endowments. Other species concern themselves exclusively with food, shelter, mating and safety. The following might be a suggested characterization for image and likeness:

1. *Image*

- a. Reasoning and intelligence. Man's thinking is similar to God.
- b. Judgment and decision making. Man's judgment is similar to God.
- c. Freedom of choice and self-rule. Man's independence is similar to God.

2. *Likeness*

- a. Communication and language. Man speaks like God.
- b. Curiosity and creativity. Man creates like God.
- c. Conscience and morality. Man knows right from wrong like God.

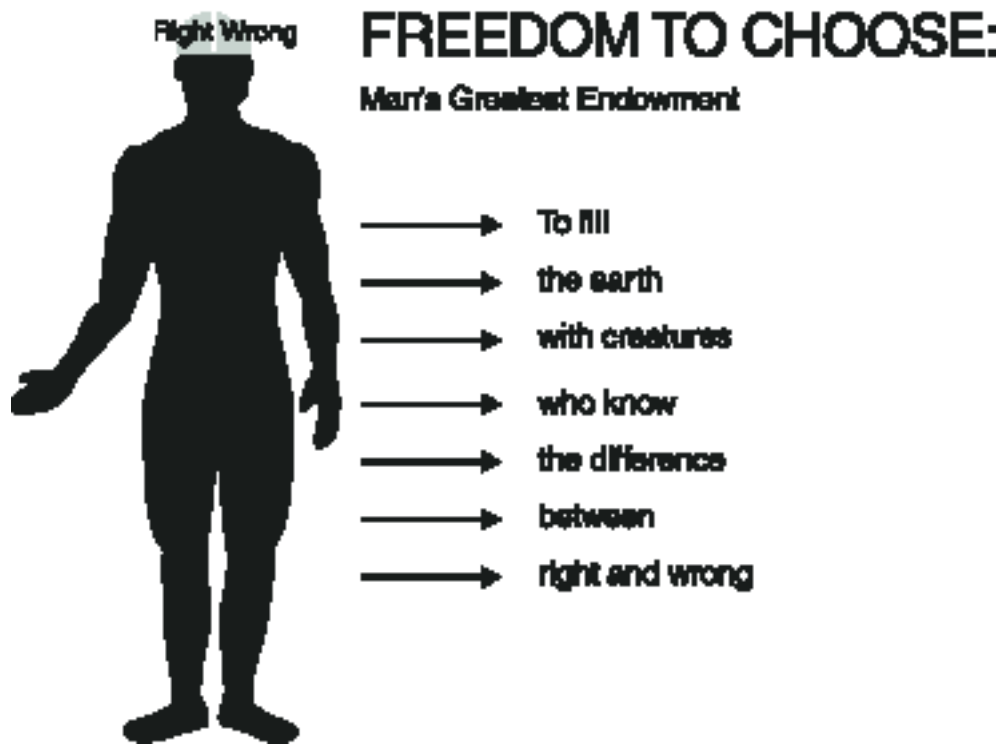
Man was to be a king on earth as God is king of the universe. Man was to be an earthly representation of a spiritual God. Man's ability to love and sacrifice parallels that of his creator.

The history of human curiosity and creativity has been a history of releasing the hidden potential within humans. It appears God chose not to completely create all that was necessary for humans, but to give humans the opportunity to exercise the innovative ability. After all, one who thinks for himself and rarely imitates others is a free person. This makes creativity better than learning. This is seen when Adam and Eve were cast out of the garden to an unfinished earth. They had to use this innovative ability to survive living outside the garden. The history of inventions is a history of releasing these creative potential. Early inventions included basket weaving, pottery, the wheel, sailing ships, lamps, iron, the alphabet, the calendar and glass. Inventions of the classical world included engines, roads, lead pipes, bridges, concrete, the screw and the furnace. Inventions of the Middle Ages included



soap, windmill, wheelbarrow, spectacles, paddle boat, gunpowder, paper, printing, steam engines, telescope, submarine, barometer. Finally, inventions of the twenty-first century includes television, radar, jet engines, helicopter, microwave oven, nylon, automobile, telephone, fiber optics, lasers, nuclear power plants and electronic computers. Man's release of this creative ability has been impressive. But creative ability does not necessarily suggest good judgment. Creative inclinations has the tendency to experiment with ideas that are unproven or unsound. Thus the need for early man to acquire the experience and maturity to channel his creative inclinations with good judgments for the betterment of man and culture. It will take 7,000 years of human history to develop this good judgment. In the final analysis with a long perspective of human history, we see what God is really doing. He is reproducing his image and likeness in man. God is doing the impossible!

The history of freedom of choice and self-rule has been a disaster. The garden was arranged to give man the choice of two opposites with the tree of knowledge. Refrain from taking the fruit (good) and you will live forever or take the fruit (evil) and you will die. Eating the fruit itself was not the issue. See Figure 5.10. Selecting the right choice over alternatives is the issue. God himself knows opposites: right/wrong; male/female; black/white; clothed/naked; order/disorder; fortune/misfortune; life/death. When man made the wrong choice he became like God to know opposites. *Knowledge of good and evil means nothing more than cognizance of opposites!* If people rightly and clearly understand what is meant by good and evil and their effects, humans inevitably will select and choose good over evil. Look at the choices Americans have in our modern days and the effects these choices can bring: conservatives/liberals; heterosexuals/homosexuals; labor/management; republicans/democrats; formal education/experience education; pro-life/pro-choice; affirmative action/non-affirmative action. Interesting to note by removing a "o" from good and adding a "d" to evil another fascinating pair of opposites emerge - God/Devil. Humans have learned bitterly the effects of making mistakes with the wrong choices. There is a joy in being correct. It is a positive reinforcement of the good use of the endowment of freedom.



**Figure 5.10 Freedom to Choose is Differentiating Right from Wrong**

What has happened with this freedom of choice endowment with humans? Has history produced results that have been favorable? Taking a brief look at the past it has been both favorable and unfavorable. Unfavorably, humans have entered demeaning struggles, open conflicts, anxious uncertainties and painful experiences with marriages, family life, communities, governments, exilements and victims of conquering despots. Favorably, humans have technologically innovated, controlled environmental abuses, initiated high food productivity, learned a great deal about moral decadence and have progressively matured in organizations, human relations, public policy, communications and global travel. This dichotomous experiences have had the effect of subverting and concealing the unfavorable while revealing and pursuing the favorable. What is needed lies in the realm of good judgment guided by trustworthy conscience and high morality. The cause of morality and alignment with God's universe must be given high priority. Here is another area that differentiates humans from animals. Only humans possess the spiritual faculty for making moral choices. When the principles of right are built into conscience, good judgments are made.

The entire universe as well as the earth operates under laws. This is how the enormous complexities work in harmony and running like the precision of a clock. The earth circles the sun at a speed of 67,000 miles per hour in 365 days, 5 hours, 48 minutes and 45.51 seconds. The 6.5 sextillion ton earth maintains this accurate and consistent

time schedule year-in and year-out with strict and rigid conformity. The earth conforms to this law. Suppose anyone is allowed to set the speed of the earth to suit their personal wishes. If one wants to delay time, 450 days could be selected for the calendar year. Or, if one wishes to accelerate time, 200 days could be selected. If six billion humans that live on this earth were allowed this prerogative, the earth would be in chaos. Order would be disrupted. By setting one speed law for the earth's migration and requiring all humans to adjust to this law, order is maintained. Let's take another example. In the world, a red stoplight for autos means to stop the vehicle. Green means to go. This is true in any country, culture or language. The red stoplight is a human invention which has become a human law of behavior throughout the world. This produces harmony. Suppose it were different. In the United States stop was red. In England it was yellow. In France it was blue. In Israel it was orange, etc, etc. There would be confusion and disorder. When everyone follows and conforms to common laws, there is order, harmony, balance and compatibility. When Adam and Eve decided to be in non-conformity with moral laws it introduced disorder into the universe. The tree of knowledge was really a choice of a pair of alternatives - good or evil. That's why it was called the tree of knowledge. Humans have and continue to learn choices could lead to great blessings or dreadful evils.

The judgment and decision making endowment of man has been debated from time immemorial among the idealists, the liberals, the radicals and the conservatists. Each will make their own assumptions. Human bondage under the empires or a totalitarian government is a matter of record and reveals the history of judgment. In the garden, humans were given a free will to exercise judgment and decision making. The lack of experience was their cause for failure. Experience is guiding humankind today from lessons of the past. Humans have learned and continue to learn that making good choices with their endowed freedom can result in extraordinary possibilities in ordinary people. Interesting to note today, 66 countries with 42 percent of the world's population is termed "not free". This is a reduction from the time when greater than 70 percent of the world's population were colonialists. Humans are learning the lessons that freedom of choice and poor judgment can get you into trouble. Uncontrollable alcohol drinking, drug use, smoking addiction, excessive food intake are examples of the abuse of freedom of choice. The divine intention was to give humankind the experience and the lessons that would guide freedom of choice. Once these endowments are fully developed, they will guide humans to good decisions. Then the latest human potential can be released for even greater challenges and opportunities. The human potential is latent in man's brain cells. The latest estimate is the brain has over 100 billion cells. Humankind only utilizes ten percent of these cells.

If more of this internal capacity is utilized, an expansion will occur in memory, emotions, imagination, innovations and intelligence. This eventually will exhibit for us a thinking and speaking like God. This development can enhance the civilization in which humans dwell.

#### GOVERNMENT IS STARTED IN EDEN

“Let them have dominion over all the earth...fill the earth and subdue it.” Genesis 1:27-28

God’s major goal has been and continues to be “let us make man in our image and after our likeness”. Many events have been formulated for that purpose. First, the visible and tangible physical universe was started. This is different from the invisible and spiritual universe. Second, the planet earth was developed for human habitation. This made planet earth distinct from the millions of other planets. Third, an environment of plants and animals was provided for the support and development of humans. Without these two features, humans could not survive. Fourth, man was created with his special endowments. He had all the necessary abilities for reading God’s design objective. Fifth, woman was created and thus, family propagation commenced. This feature gave man a companion of inestimable value. Sixth, a dominion was given to man. This meant Adam had the authority and the right to self-rule, as a government, to control the activities and the territories under a sovereign rule. This rule was not to be over other people, but over the beasts of the field, the fowls of the air and the fish of the sea. None of the created angels were even given a dominion as Adam had. This favored Adam with a special gift. Adam’s original power over the subjects of his kingdom were far greater than seen today. Human eyes are sharp as eagles. Human strength as strong as bears. Human endurance in water as good as fish. Human intellect keener than the keenest animals. Our present day scientists, inventors or professors have not as bright an intellect as Adam had when he was created. The fall of Adam in the garden was more than a moral alienation with God. It was a fall of his personal, individual powers.

Dominion of any kind, but particularly of the scope given to Adam implied authority, responsibility, morality and social leadership. At first, it was to be in a garden. In the course of time, it was expected to move into city life and society. Eventually, it was to be globular. This authority to rule in a dominion meant government. The government of Adam hardly existed since there were only two in the garden. But as offspring would appear, the need for laws and policies to regulate people to desirable standards and expectations would rise. This would be government. It would be necessary. From the early beginnings, government grew because there was population growth. The form of Adam’s government and how it would develop was not clearly known. However, since God endowed humans with

freedom of choice and free will in decision making, the concept of a free society supported by a government allowing participative decision making would be a necessity. This would infer that any form of dictatorship, tyranny, autocracy or self-appointed rulers would not work. These governmental forms would work against the natural endowments of humans. It would seem free will among a large population where individual rights had high priority, would require a republic form of government in which the sovereignty of the commonwealth was in the whole body of the citizens. These citizens would have the power for initiatives, referendums and recalls. The government would operate for the good of all with the special protection of the freedom endowment of its citizens. The American republic form of government, despite its problems, comes closest in the world of 233 nations that maintains the free will of humans. Other forms of government “isms” that claim freedom are not Biblically oriented. Thus, communism, imperialism, socialism, fascism, nationalism and anarchism would work against the freedom of choice inherent in the human endowment. Of course the best of all governments is that which teaches and supports its citizens to govern themselves. This self-government concept is hundred times stronger than one that is autocratic, but for this one point on freedom of choice. Self-rule makes good government provided the individual has the capability and moral responsibility for living with others.

Throughout history’s many civilizations, governments have changed as if they were searching for the right formula in which to govern its citizenry. America, originally was a Christian nation. This was confirmed by the Supreme Court in 1892 when an exhaustive study of hundreds of historic documents that revealed the strong connection between Christian concepts and the fundamental principles and practices of the American government. It was the freedom of individuals as seen in God’s endowment to humans that gave and continues to give Americans the highest living standard in the world. More will be written on this matter in a later section.

Slowly and painfully governments have learned through experience of success and failure. They have acquired the knowledge and even mastery of the forces of nature. The accumulated knowledge and learning has given humans endless experiences in transforming human life. Only recently, has the passing on knowledge and learning been a key activity in the civilizing process through speech, language, writing, books and other forms of communications. No civilization can be advanced nor even made permanent except the whole human family be lifted to such a plane of understanding that it discards all inhibiting traditions and superstitions. The Bible contains many books passed on

from generation to generation. But they are lamps that emerged, from many lands, many leaders and wide variety of thought. Each lamp added light from previous lamps.

If television has accomplished anything, it has made mankind aware and even concerned over kindred people from many lands of the world. Television viewers now realize Africans, Azerbaijanis, Kuwaitis, Russians, Sri Lankians, Chinese, Bosnians, Serbians live, learn, love, struggle and die the same as anyone else on the globe even though governments with their parochial attitudes has taught them differently. Today, the world is faced with serious problems: overpopulation of the economic have-nots, 100,000 net additional people each day; nuclear meltdown or fall out, 100 nuclear power plants in the world with varying degrees of reliability and safety; 35,000 chemicals contributing to the pollution problem of the environment by running off into wells, rivers, lakes and oceans. Most of the cities of the world do not have sewage plants. These problems ignore political boundaries and natural borders. They are global concerns. The time for world government has come since problems do not confine themselves to ethnic and political boundaries. As the world moves into the twenty-first century, a key value will be the global view and collaboration. We are formally citizens of our countries and informally, citizens of a “rising global civilization”.

#### FARMING IS THE FIRST OCCUPATION

“God put man in the garden to till it.” Genesis 2:15

Eden was a real place. It was perfectly suited to humans in their unfallen state. Eden was located in what the historians call the Fertile Crescent. The word fertile is intended to mean capable of producing vegetables and crops abundantly. The Fertile Crescent was near or incorporated the four rivers of the Garden of Eden. Genesis records indicated a river through the garden which watered it as well. A heavy morning dew also watered the garden. This dew came from a water canopy around the earth. With these water conditions and fertile soil, it was no wonder Eden was a paradise. It was a beautiful place with the wide variety of eating plants, fruit trees and roaming animals. The abundance there left no scarcity nor need. It might be thought of as Adam’s vegetarian department. The garden was suited to the nature and capabilities of humans.

Nonetheless, God expected Adam and Eve to work the garden and take care of it by working the ground, pruning the trees and harvesting the results. Thus, Adam became the first farmer on record. Tilling the soil became humankind’s first occupation and thus, the foundation industry of civilizations. In early times, the Edenic farmers looked upon the land as a gift from God. Tilling the soil was a matter of stewardship. Walls were built around

gardens as a way to protect the crops. These walls later became the method of identifying the ownership of land boundaries. The breeding of animals was part of the development of farming. Adam's son Cain tilled the soil while his other son Abel tended sheep. The breeding of animals, used mainly for clothing and shelter, was a major step in the reduction of time needed for hunting. As animals were raised on the farm, the farm concept grew and expanded. The free time produced by the domestication of animals permitted the farmer to engage in cultural items such as writing, language, arts, crafts, music and socializing. Later, in Noah's time animals were used for food as well as for clothing. This may very well be the basic reason sheep were raised in great numbers. They served both food and clothing. The sheep's wool provided warm garments during the cold periods. Shepherding paralleled the farmer as an early occupation. Sheep are mentioned over 700 times in scripture. Many lessons are drawn from this interesting animal. The breeding and caring of sheep also instituted a nomadic lifestyle as described by the early patriarchs of the Bible.

Farming and gardening were starter occupations. The work of farming and gardening seem to be well suited to the design and configuration of the human body. This type of work required walking, bending, kneeling, grasping, holding, lifting, turning and twisting. The whole human body is utilized and exercised with these functions. Through most of history 85 to 95 percent of the world's population were farmers. Today, it is down to approximately 25 percent of the world's population and continues to decline. In the United States, farming is down to four percent. It would seem natural that farming was a beginning occupation since it was and still is of critical importance as the major activity of food for people in all nations. Without food life would not be sustained. Eighty percent of the total world's supply of food comes from farms while twenty percent comes from fishing and hunting. Settlements around productive farms in ancient times resulted in the concentration of surpluses which fostered trade and bartering. This did several things to help form early civilizations. Farm settlements, especially near rivers were the forerunners of cities which started the civilizing process. The physical market place in the center of the city formed the basis of people coming together to barter and trade for food. Communities and later cities sprung up around these market places. Bartering also spurred the specialization of labor and agricultural products which fostered intersettlement trade and communications. This promoted relationships between and among emerging cities. Civilization may be regarded as a mediating effort between humans and the physical world. Civilizations of the past were and still are a human invention.

## MANAGEMENT CONCEPTS ORIGINATE

“God put man in the garden to till it and take care of it.” Genesis 2:15

Adam was not idle in the garden. All work was not done for him. Through work, he learned and developed his faculties and mental abilities. One might label his work as a farmer. But it was more. He was the forerunner of the agricultural industry. When Adam worked, he paralleled what his creator did in the creative work days. Adam’s “tilling” and “keeping” gave him challenge and responsibilities. This, in a sense, allowed Adam to supervise his environment, plan it, organize it, order it, operate it and maintain it. This was the beginning of management. There is no question that many courses of action confronted Adam. He had to analyze alternatives and predict outcomes. This is problem solving and decision making. Outlining the steps to carry out a decision, once it was made, is planning and implementing. Watching and evaluating is the step of appraisal and auditing. Concern over the outcome of his decision brought self-responsibility and accountability. The practice of management substantially involves these steps. Once trading and bartering were introduced, value and price were also started. Farming methods and technology for greater productivity, weather forecasting and rain prediction for scheduling, labor selection and employment for production and harvesting, all added to the management practice of the time.

Farming and management were the first activities of humans and have continued over the many centuries. It seems to me work was more than a means of surviving. It was a means of doing something important and meaningful. This results in shaping an identity and an individuality. Work means developing and subduing the environment useful to one’s self and for others. Adam may have followed a management process as shown in Figure 5.11.



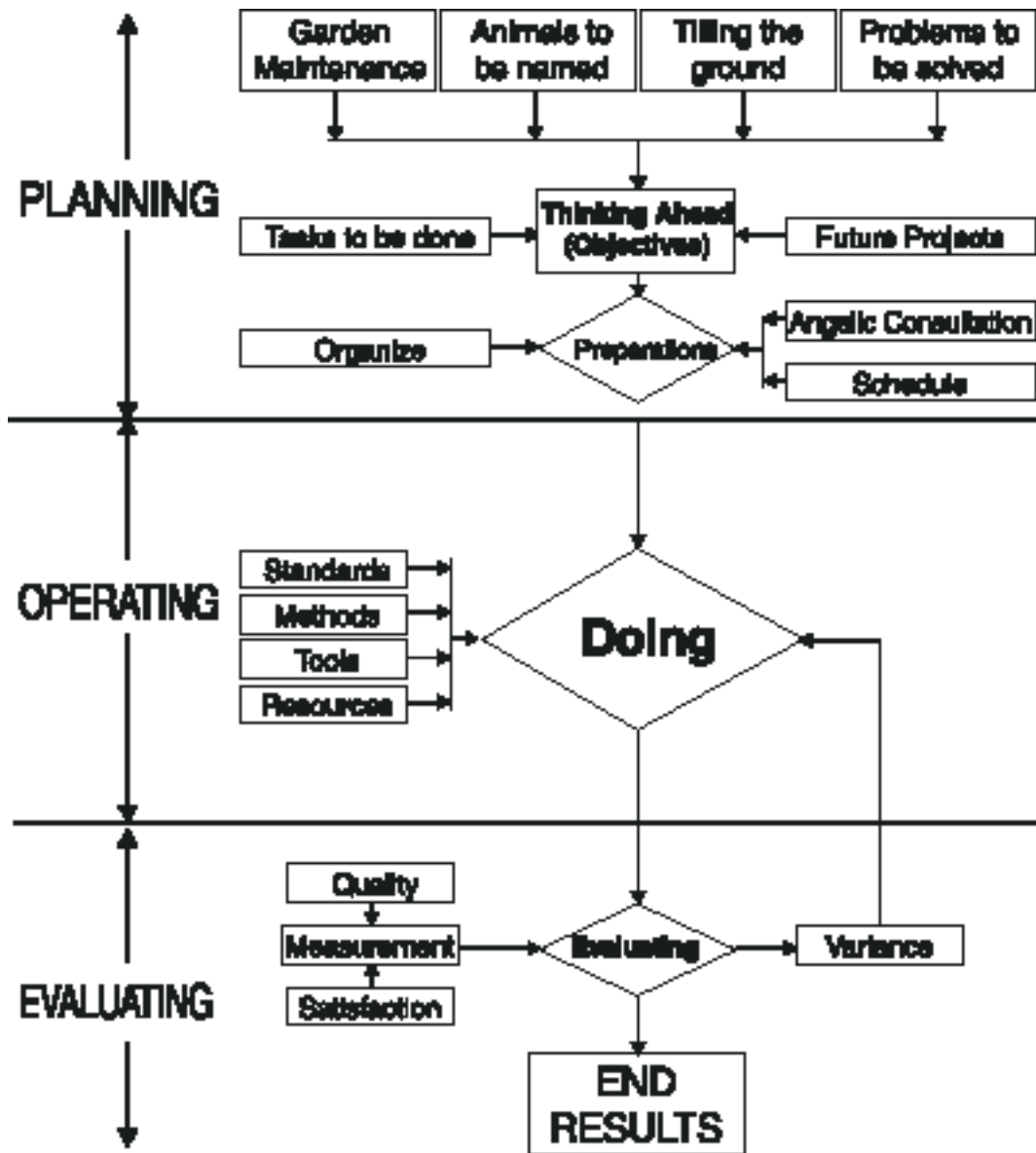


Figure 5.11 Adam's Simplified Management System

The management of farm work, the garden, caring and naming of animals, and everything that needed control is to suggest leadership is not a recent phenomenon. It existed in the earliest time. Wherever and whenever work was to be done, management thinking was there. Advance thinking, planning, scheduling, organizing, implementing and controlling were all there in the garden for tilling and keeping. In these early days, other disciplines such as science, economics, technology, religion and sociology overshadowed management since very little was reported. The most outstanding contribution made in these early days was the domestication of animals. Indeed, Alvin Toffler identifies this contribution as the first of three great civilization waves that have changed the direction of humankind. Domestication of animals started food inventories, reduced hunting time and produced leisure activities. This

brought about a settled existence and the start of small villages and towns. These villages grew and eventually became cities. The domestication and breeding of plants and animals near rivers and waterways did more for the development of city life than any other factors that can be identified.

From these early times, management has risen today to be the central activity of our age and economy. It is the determiner of economic progress, guide for effective government, allocator for efficient utilization of resources, planner for great achievements for people and society, strength for security and human care and even molder of society. The origins of a number of so-called modern concepts and practice of management started with Adam tilling the soil, Cain for farming the land, Abel for domesticating animals, Enoch for building a city and Tubal-cain, instructor of every bronze and iron craft. As the small village grew, civilization evolved, but management grew as well. One might infer the history of man is the history of management.

#### MUSIC IS INITIATED

“Jubal was the father of all such as handle the harp and organ.” Genesis 4:21

Music may have started when the first person beat a stick on a hollow rock. An unusual, but pleasant sound emerged. By making interrupted and non-cadence beats with the stick, a rhythmic sound is produced. People began to realize other sounds more pleasant and easier to hear can be created with strings and horns. Thus, music was developed. Later music developed not just as a collection of sounds, but a means of communicating to a listener ideas, feelings or a condition of mood. It certainly appealed to the emotions of a listener.

The references to music in the Edenic period are infrequent. Painting and sculpturing are almost entirely ignored since they are images and images in early Biblical times were prohibited. This prohibition became the second commandment of the laws of Moses. Song was a term often used in connection with music. Instruments such as harp, organ, trumpet and drums were early identified and referred to in musical activities. Inventors of these instruments are not known. The reference to Jubal as the father of the instruments of harp and organ indicated the use of these instruments were formal and extensive. In those and later times, music played an important role in cultural activities.

There were several uses of music in the cultural and social activities in Edenic life. Music was used in connection with the arrival or departure of invited guests. This was done to give special recognition or honor. Music was used in important processions such as marriages, funerals, holy festivals or sacred marches. Song and sound

expressed a range of emotions that are closely associated with these activities. Music was also used to soothe the temper or raise emotional depression. It was also thought to exorcise an evil influence. Music was also used in special devotions, prayers and worship of God during the times of religious services.

The formal use of music as an industry has not been known since its use by many groups in many cultures were involved. A reference is made in I Chronicles 25 in the first temple when a huge choir as much as four thousand was brought together trained and practiced for temple activities. This combined music with religious life since music served as an accompaniment to worship. This has made music the language of praise. When music is sung to God, it is a form of prayer.

Today, music has reached unprecedented levels with such forms as the choir, folk songs, concerts, operas, bands and instrumentals. Edenism, Noahism, Judaism and Christianity are singing religions. Atheism is songless. One might say, it has little to sing about. It is known that the funeral of Robert Ingersoll, the published agnostic had a notice that there would be no singing at his funeral. Today's practice of hymn singing is so important to the Christian faith that more than 500,000 hymns have been composed and sung. Music has been an important need for humans. See Figure 5.9.

#### VEGETARIANISM SPRINGS UP

“Then God said, I give you every seed bearing plant on the face of the whole earth and every tree that has fruit with seed in it. They will be yours for food.(MIV) Genesis 1:29

The earth is the fifth largest planet and the third from the sun. Almost three-quarters of the earth is covered with water leaving one-quarter for land and soil. This land surface ranges from forests to sparse and dry surfaces. The plants and trees on earth are extraordinary. What makes them extraordinary is the enormous number of seeds that each plant can produce. Additionally, each seed is capable of enormous reproduction. This abundance is only one example of the countless other plants whose yield can be thousands of times more than its own original plant. A medium size mustard plant has roughly 85 seeds in each pod, but two crops can be harvested in a given year. In a given period from February to October, one mustard plant can produce over 460,000 seeds. Turnips, under favorable conditions, can increase their weight 15 times a minute or increase its weight 15,000 times a day. Squash, 18 days

old in it's growing process can lift 50 pounds, but 20 days later, it can lift the equivalent of 5,000 pounds. These give examples of the powerful force of seeds and the potential abundance in their yields.

It was not until after the flood that God sanctioned the eating of animal food. (Genesis 9:1-4) Prior to the flood within the Edenic period, fresh fruits, vegetables, grains, legumes and seeds were the basic food for living. In other words, humans in the Edenic period were vegetarians. The command was not what humans may eat, but rather that humans may not eat flesh. There were three probable reasons for this. First, humans were to be at peace with the animals. An idea that came from the garden when Adam named and lived with them. Second, vegetable eating was and still is the most healthy diet one can follow. Note the long and healthy lives of those who lived prior to the flood. Of course, there were other environmental factors that contributed to longevity. The experts today encourage the reduction, if not the elimination of meat in the diet. Third, the production of animals in the Edenic period was not very significant. Animals both domestic and wild were few in numbers. It was after the flood that animal production took on a significant rate of growth since eating the animals was now permitted. God wanted to give both animals and humans sufficient time to grow in number and kind.

Today, a growing body of scientific evidence supports a positive relationship between the consumption of a plant-based diet and the prevention of certain diseases. The evidence indicates plant foods should make up at least, if not more, two-thirds of consumed meals. Additionally, vegetarians are less likely to be overweight, a major health reducing factor, than meat eaters. Even the modern day concern for high cholesterol is reduced significantly since vegetables and fruit are high in fiber and very low in saturated fat. Vegetarians have far lower cholesterol levels than meat eaters. A report by Dr. William Castelli in the Famous Framingham heart study in Massachusetts said he has never seen anyone with a cholesterol level below 150 suffer a heart attack. The fact is that many of the healthiest, most long-lived people on planet earth are largely vegetarians. More and more people seem to be looking toward vegetarianism as a partial solution to what might be perceived as the world's food crisis as the population increases.

After thousands of years of human experience, the Garden of Eden with it's high diet of fruits and vegetables seems to be the healthiest course for humans to live long lives. God set up these original conditions to define the formula for both Adam and his progeny. The return to foods naturally grown in simple, but delicious meals is part of the rich heritage extracted from the Bible. We are moving full circle to reach again the ancient wisdom of Ecclesiastes 1:9 (NIV). "What has been, will be again. What has been done will be done again. There is nothing

new under the sun.” The Bible begins in the book of Genesis 1:29 when God tells Adam, “I have given you every plant yielding seed which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree with seed in it’s fruit; you shall have them for food”. Here is a brief listing of vegetarian and fruit foods from the Bible that have healing and therapeutic value.

- a. The apple. SS 2:5. Lowers cholesterol, blood pressure and blood sugar; prevents constipation, tooth decay and cancer propensities.
- b. Barley. Deut 8:8. Fiber that lowers risk of heart disease by reducing levels of LDL, blocks cancer development and wards off digestive problems.
- c. Beans. Ezekiel 4:9. Lowers blood pressure and LDL, inhibits cancer growth, controls sugar levels and regulates the digestion processes.
- d. Figs. SS 2:11-13. High levels of fiber, magnesium, vitamin C and other nutrients. Reduces blood pressure, cancer and malignant tumors.
- e. Garlic. Numbers 11:5. Acts as an antiseptic, cures headaches, sore throats, arthritis, asthma, bronchitis, common colds, diabetes, measles, piles, rheumatism and tuberculosis. The claims are enormous.
- f. Grapes. Numbers 13:23. Loaded with vitamins - A,B,C including calcium, zinc, potassium and no cholesterol. Reduces cancer, heart disease and bacteria infections.
- g. Herbs. Hebrews 6:7. Includes coriander, hyssop, mint and parsley. These herbs serve to assist in healing colds, headaches, fever, heartburn and insomnia. Reduces blood pressure and cancer growth.
- h. Melons. Numbers 11:5-6. Reduces cancer and acts as a blood thinner to prevent coagulation.

The above list is only an example of Biblically sponsored vegetables and fruits beneficial to humans. Others are nuts, olives, leeks, onions, wheat and honey.

#### THE FIRST WEDDING, FAMILY LIFE AND THE HOME

“I will make him a help mate for him...therefore shall man cleave unto his wife and they shall be one flesh.” Genesis 2:18,24

As Adam was king of his domain, he studied the relationship factors of plants, trees, fish, birds and animals. From this research, he proceeded to assign names to them. Quite possibly, he recorded those names on clay tablets. But Adam was lonely. None of the creatures in his domain was a suitable companion and mate. In spite of the friendliness of dogs, dogs are not on the same level as humans. Dogs are not created in the image and likeness of

God. There is a radical discontinuity between human and animal levels which in itself refutes the evolutionary theory of humans. Thus, God proceeded to create woman from man, made for man and was given to man. Traditionally, the Hebrew word for rib has been used to indicate the part that God used to create Eve. This is a mistranslation. It should be side instead of rib. This indicates that Adam originally was created with both male and female physical and mental features. When Adam was alone, he had no one for companionship on his same level of specie. Creating Eve was removing the feminine aspects of Adam into a separate and complementary human being. He then joined the two in marriage “as they were made one flesh”.

God instituted marriage to accomplish several goals: 1) to foster the highest of human experiences in the human family - the love and joy between a man and woman in the most intimate of all relationships. 2) to set down the process for perpetuating life and reproducing humankind. The mystery of the continuity of life is the intimate unity of husband and wife being of one flesh. This is necessary to fill the earth. 3) to provide a companion and a colleague for communicating, sharing, participating, encouraging and cleaving to each other in life’s problems and activities. 4) to provide a vehicle, the family, for transmitting values, experiences and lessons from parents to children so that each generation improves from the previous generation. 5) to develop a sense of community to share and preserve values, principles and advantages needed as communities, societies and cultures . This is seen as a means of growth into a civilization.

A Biblical marriage is a covenant or contract among three parties: man, woman and God. God is involved in providing the principles and guidelines for sanctifying the marriage through life. To break-up a marriage is to interrupt the whole process for perpetuating the quality of the progeny. God established marriage as the first and most basic of all human institutions. marriage was to establish a relationship of mutual respect and love of a husband and wife. The two were and still are “to be one flesh”. From this intimate relationship, a family unit was developed in which the human species would be reproduced to “fill the earth”. The family unit of father, mother and raising children to perpetuate their kind is probably the greatest of all institutions. Other institutions emerged from the family unit. From the authority of the father, patriarchal, tribal and governmental systems started. From parental upbringing, education, schools, colleges and universities emerged. The home is humankind’s first and most important educational agency. It was only natural that within the family, fathers and mothers taught language, behaviors, skills and knowledge. The educational activity was twofold: to give the offspring what is needed to

survive and grow and to set up the basis of transmitting these skills from one generation to another. From the family's health care activities for one another came medical care, physicians and hospitals. From the family's reverence for God and conformance to moral standards, temples, sanctuaries, synagogues, chapels and churches sprung up. From the occupation and ways of making a living, the father and other members of the family, jobs, careers, vocations, crafts, professions and employment began. Marriage and childbearing act as cohesives to hold the family together. Sexual activity and childbearing outside the family unit tends to dissolve the family unit along with the other institutions that the family tends to uphold.

Today, the breakdown of marriage and the social and psychological problems that are generated from that breakdown are causing serious cultural changes. The marriage and family institutions, an age long value of society for perpetuating and reproducing the human species, is undergoing a major change. Many see this change with insurmountable problems. The marriage breakdown is also creating secondary problems in other institutions such as family relationships with other families, communities, governments, business, churches, hospitals, welfare, schools and friendships. As the marriage institution falls, inevitably all these other value institutions which was produced by it, will fall with it or undergo major changes.

Over the years, the number of marriage partners has undergone a whirlwind. The decline and breakup of families can be traced to the inability of the marriage partners to solve their problems, failure to adjust to new circumstances of the marriage relationship and falling short in following the principles and guidelines set up by the Creator. At this writing marriage failures is reaching 60 percent. Six out of ten married couples end up in divorce. Modern factors which cause the breakdown of marriage are: pursuit of pleasure as the highest priority, the avoidance of sacrifice which is the basic definition of love between a man and a woman, the wide-spread acceptance of extra-marital affairs which has been sanctioned by government and culture, the inability to solve relationship problems which is so common in a marital commitment and the acceptance of adultery as a moral standard between a man and a woman. The government doesn't help since they make it easy for two people to execute a divorce. Additionally, abortions do not help since abortions tend to break up the family.

The failure to respond to the original design for marriage has developed new forms for family living. Polygamy is one. In Stages II, III and IV, polygamy was often practiced. Lamech had 2 wives. Abraham had Sarah and Hagar. Jacob had several. David and Solomon had multiple wives. Monogamy principles and movements were introduced

from Stage V of the Biblical Civilization and has virtually replaced polygamy. However, in recent times new variations of the male female relationship and its purpose have emerged furthering the breakdown of the family unit. To cite a few - homosexuality, surrogacy, abortion, test-tube pregnancies and no-fault divorces. Two in five children are now growing up in broken families. One in two marriages end up in divorce or separation. These practices are from non-Biblical Civilizations. These non-Biblical Civilizations are in crisis as a means of perpetuating old values and traditions. Meanwhile, the hidden, but strongly emerging Biblical Civilization which fosters a lifetime commitment continues on unabated with incremental rises.

#### START OF LAW AND LAW ENFORCEMENT

“Of every tree of the Garden, thou may freely eat but of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, thou shall not eat of it for in the day thou eatest, thou shall surely die.” Genesis 2:16-17

There was an important tree in the Garden of Eden which challenged Adam and Eve and now, every human being that ever lived. The tree has changed the course of the entire human race. Its significance will, in the future, alter the course of many lives. The tree is called the “knowledge of good and evil”. This tree is still with us continuing to challenge humans. It is in everyone’s life every day. It seems everyone has tasted the fruit of this tree. But today, the tree is symbolic. The tree is defined as the law of choice. The tree was in the center of the garden suggesting its symbolic centralness in people’s lives. When Adam and Eve ate of the tree of choice, they picked the alternative of non-compliance to the law of God. Consequently, they reaped upon themselves and their descendants, dying and death. Had they chosen the other alternative, health and life would have been the legacy for Adam and his descendants. Choosing conformity to God’s law will bring health and life. Choosing non-conformity will bring dying and death. This law of choice is valuable not because it is law, but because there is right in it if the right choice is made. The law of choice is a natural endowment in humans. To remove this law of choice is to remove freedom from human endowment.

Laws are rules for regulating human behavior by a lawful society. Total freedom means unlimited choices in decision making. When laws are enacted, alternatives are limited reducing the freedom of choice. Literally laws remove undesirable alternatives forcing people to make the right choices. This is the philosophy of law enactment. Laws are enacted or imposed by an authoritarian source or a politically organized culture to force people to make the



right and wise choice according to cultural values or standards of civilizations. Laws remove freedom of choices as seen in Figure 5.12.

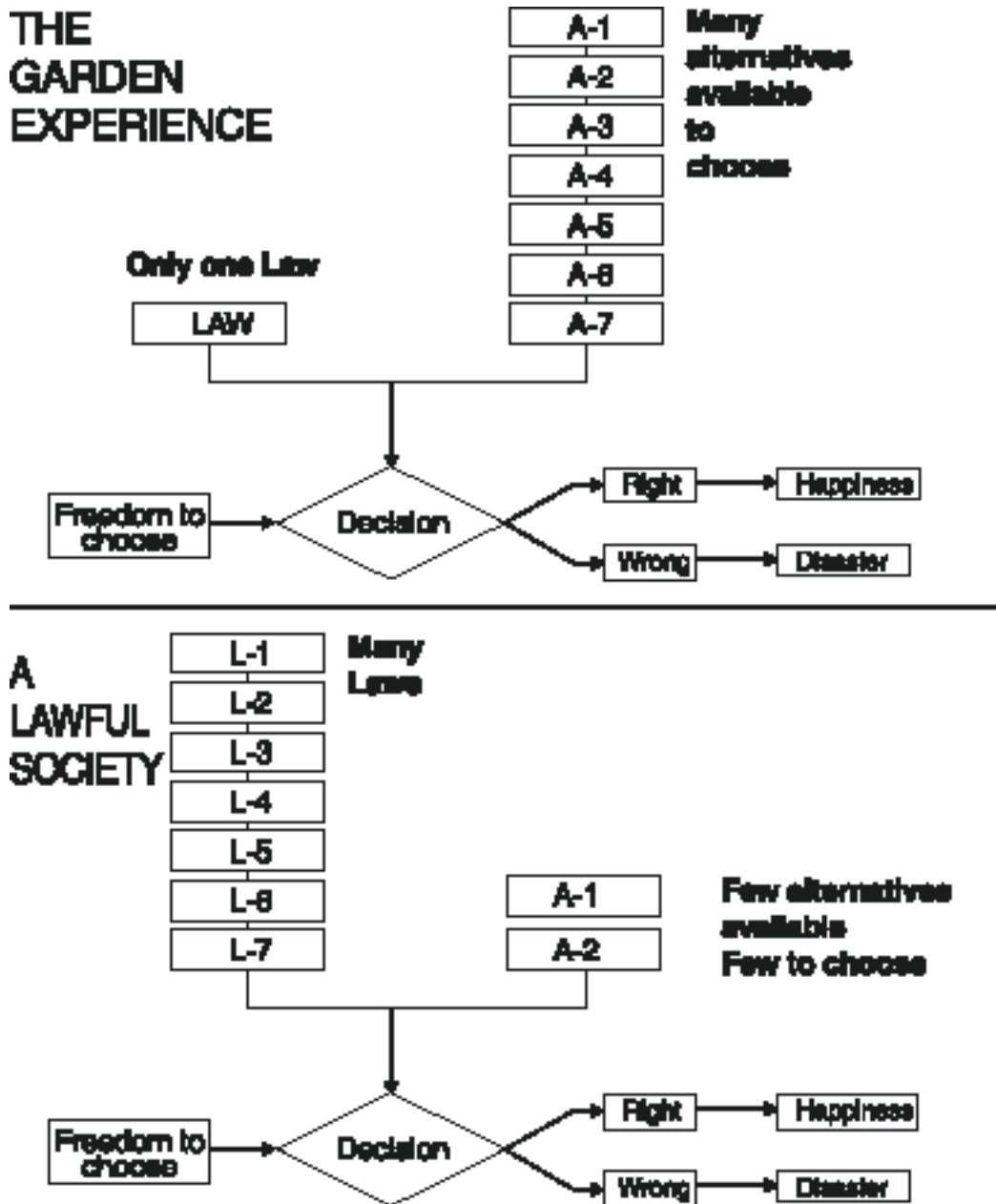


Figure 5.12 Laws Reduce Freedom of Choices

In a democracy, laws are enacted by representatives of the people to regulate human conduct in the society. Every society from primitive to complex has it's own system of laws. The more complex a society becomes, the more numerous and complex are it's laws. Interesting to note<sup>17</sup> how the United States with 5 percent of the world's population has 70 percent of the world's lawyers. The complexity of laws in the United States is unparalleled - 30 times more lawsuits per person than Japan, 17 months to probate a will compared to Britian's 3 weeks and 14 months

to litigate a suit after it is filed. This and other examples show that a complex legal system emerges from a complex series of laws which in turn will bring about a complex punishment system. To illustrate this complexity, the United States from all levels of government, federal, state and local generate 150,000 new laws and 2 million new regulations *every year*. It is an historic truth that every law passed fringes on someone's freedom. As laws increase freedom decreases. There is nothing more dangerous to freedom than laws enacted in haste, with little value and catering to special groups.

The Bible is a storehouse of laws, legal descriptions, legal principles and philosophies and legal procedures. Much of this content is already incorporated in legal systems throughout the world. This, no doubt, has enhanced the civility nature of our civilization. Protecting property, keeping peace, minimizing conflicts are defined by law and enforced by government. This is essential for a civilization's coherence. Today's issue of Natural Law as the higher law compared to man's law, a lessor and yielding law has emerged from Biblical origins. Thomas Jefferson believed the U.S. Declaration of Independence to be the "Laws of Nature" and of "Nature's God". This is strong support that the law of nature dictated by God is binding in all countries and at all times. No human law is of any validity if contrary to this. Harry Jaffa of the Claremont Institute of Natural Law argues that the organic document of the United States is not the Constitution, but the Declaration of Independence which proclaims that Americans, "hold these truths to be self-evident that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights, that among these are life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness". The Declaration of Independence is an example of natural law. It's reasoning is a derivative of it's origin:

"And God (the Creator) said, let us make man (all men) in our image and after  
our likeness (created equal) and let them have dominion (rights given by God)  
... And God said, be fruitful and multiply and fill the earth and subdue it."  
(right to pursue happiness) Genesis 1:26,28

The origin and roots of justice, law and punishment is Biblical. It started with the law of choice as represented by the tree of knowledge of good and evil. Also covenants are agreements which bind partners to terms, responsibilities, and guide behavior. If these terms are observed and followed by two parties, the parties are "just", "equal" or "right". The Edenic Covenant manifested in the tree of choice was between Adam and God. The issue was conformity to law would reap prosperity, non-conformity would result in disaster.

Throughout the history of civilizations, this basic concept, originating in the Garden, has been sustained and adopted by many and varied cultures. Even though laws vary from time to time and civilization to civilization, this basic introduction has given prime importance to the concept of justice. Laws are so well established in many disciplines that one must see its common links. Most of God's devotees conceive God as a lawgiver. He being independent of and separate from his creation, is best able to set up these laws. Humans as well as "Mother Nature" are regulated by these laws. Here are some: First, laws are universal and non-discriminatory. They apply to all. There are no exceptions. This first law may be called the law of harmony. A second is the law of the absolute. Humans are independent with their freedom in a context of interdependent phenomena. God has set up an automated universe. But this implies the law of relatedness as every creature and universal element relates to other creature and element. Then there is the third law of inflexibility. Laws must be observed by all. Fourth, laws are eternal. Changes are not to be expected in these laws. Finally, laws are powerful. Nothing escapes them. They more than influence. They control. The law of gravity is found everywhere even under us. It is inflexible, interrelated, timeless and powerful. Humans must adjust to gravity. Gravity cannot be adjusted. There will always be gravity. Gravity controls the universe as well as earth bound objects.

The history of freedom of choice and self rule has been disaster in the human experience. Toynbee's 34 Civilizations exemplify the human inability to set up a lasting civilization. Rome, the longest of civilizations eventually came to an end. It had a start, a development, a maturity and a decline. Many civilizations, if not all, followed this process. With this process, the human experience has come to learn opposites: right from wrong, order from disorder, moral from immoral. Humans are learning that the knowledge of good and evil, first means cognizance of opposites. Then it involves the issue of choice between the two alternatives and finally, the consequences of the choice. The Garden of Eden was the start of law and law enforcement.

The areas of law and law enforcement compared to freedom and free choice are on opposite ends of a spectrum. Law on one end and freedom on the other. But not all actions fall on these extremes. Laws regulate behavior. Freedom gives no restrictions to behavior. A midpoint between these two extremities seems to be desirable in our living styles. That is, there is no desire to have total laws for every behavioral action. Conversely, there is no wish to give every human total freedom of behavior. This would result in chaos. The midpoint appears to be the best standard. However, this requires humans at the midpoint be guided by moral responsibility. The midpoint is the

obedience to the unenforceable. It is the actions we take not determined by law, but in which we are not free to behave in any way we choose. Obedience to moral principle is the obedience of a human to that which a person cannot be forced to obey. Humans are the enforcers of the moral principles by themselves.

#### BEGINNING OF LIES, TRUTH, KNOWLEDGE AND WISDOM

“And the serpent said unto the woman, ye shall not die.” Genesis 3:4

The statement “you shall not die” surely must be the first lie in history. This lie has been perpetuated throughout the ages with the idea that non-conformity to God’s laws has no relevance to the continuity of life. Adam and Eve and their progeny have discovered otherwise. The most common experience of humankind throughout the centuries has been and continues to be death. The serious thinker of life sees the world progressing on many fronts: housing, ecology, civil rights, human relations and food production. This may be occasion for pride and satisfaction. But with all this progress, humankind has not been able to penetrate the most fundamental problem of all. Humans live but a few brief years and involuntarily give up their lives. Humans are on a irreversible, irretrievable and irrevocable journey to the grave. The death of the original pair was a tragedy. The greater tragedy is the death of every human being who lived afterward. They died as offspring because of Adam’s transgression. The effects of non-conformity to God’s laws is a powerful and lasting one. It was Satan who deceived and lied to Eve. His was a deliberate and pre-meditative effort to bring about the fall of the original pair and to seize control of their progeny. As a result, Satan has become an adversary of humans. His efforts continue to be a source of lies. He is the father of lies.

To lie is to intentionally give inaccurate information or a falsehood as to deceive a person into an undesirable behavior or to induce another into error. Lying becomes intrinsically evil. There are different types of lies. *Pathological lies* are lies without motivation or intentions. It is a schizophrenic type of mentality. There are *lies of exaggeration*. This type of lie is practiced by people for personal gain by overemphasizing and overinflating the reality of a situation. There are *defensive lies*. This is to give false information to save face or cover guilt. There are the *lies of omission*. This is deliberately omitting important information to avoid a censure or a condemnation. There are *perpetual lies*. These are lies that had their origins in the past either from mistakes or misinformation and are continually perpetuated. Then there are the *white lies* which are lies intended to create a good. Stories about Santa Claus are intended to create a good, but in fact, they falsify a child’s mind and their imagination. This creates a mentality that the whole truth is not essential. This allows the mind to live with disorder. Nothing can falsify a

child's sense of truth as much as a mixture of what is real and true with what is not real and false. Regardless of the type of lie in question, a lie subtracts the truth. The truth becomes error. Often, lying is looked upon as a minor fault, yet, it opens the door to more serious deviations later on. A small initial deviation from the truth is so often multiplied a thousandfold as it journeys down through the ages.

A lie is known when it is compared to a reality, a fact, or a truth. A lie is then, defined with respect to a truth. There is intelligence behind a lie as the lie intends to persuade and convince the hearer it is truth. It is this intelligence that makes the lie appear as truth. When Satan persuaded Eve to transgress, a high level of intelligence was the force of convincing her to make that decision. There must have been several encounters between the Adversary and Eve. Eve was no match for the continued assaults. Satan was a skilled liar capable of lying not only with words, but also with his whole being. For this reason, he possessed a beautiful and subtle serpent. Lying means the transmission of countertruth with the intention to deceive. The liar knows the truth, but deforms and disunites it.

The most effective way to prevent lying is to know and experience in advance the knowledge and truth of a matter before the deception is encountered. This is accomplished by being fully informed and experienced. This is followed by giving a living lifestyle the highest priority for truth as a living principle or standard of behavior. This forces a person to be careful in communicating with others. This means speaking only with facts and reality. Facts and reality should permeate the entire thought and communication process. The chips of fiction are so great in our society that many do not find fulfillment in reality living. Fictitious forms of living seem more enjoyable as found in such area as TV, books, theaters and movies. The continued involvement with these fictitious experiences creates disappointments when an individual must live and deal with non-fictitious and non-entertaining experiences.

Following the truth principle as a lifestyle is to have a passion for the truth regardless of its consequences. The love of truth is both the desire for seeking it as well as possessing it. Truth is freedom! Truth nourishes life! Freedom and life are realities that put us into the same creative categories as sunshine, food and water. Truth cannot be possessed in its entirety. It must be pursued continually since new information, knowledge and experiences are being generated as we move into the future. What is true today may be error tomorrow. Wisdom of one generation may be the folly of the next. Knowledge that has outlived the centuries which is not affected by new information becomes truth since it is unchanged. Wisdom is acquired from the unchanging knowledge. Wisdom provides the guidelines for making decisions to pick the right and the good alternatives from the many that are available. The first

point of wisdom is to discern that which is false. The second it to know which is true. The third, is how to decide between them in a practical way in life. Cultural wisdom is the aggregate of all human experiences that have been screened, selected, accumulated and reorganized for it's utilization in a civilization. The great lesson of history is to unlearn false and untrue knowledge and information possessed by people and society. Society and civilization needs to be purified and cleansed of the errors of the past. This would required a "relook" and a "return" to origins and beginnings which started the historic processes.

Wisdom is the right use of knowledge. To know is not to be wise. But to know how to use knowledge effectively, practically and successfully is to be wise. Wisdom is the practical application of knowledge in one's life. Wisdom begins with knowledge and ends with usefulness. Karl Marx, who authored communism, thought communism would not catch on in Russia. He was right. The Russians failed in their application and use of communistic knowledge which had some merit. Adam had learned a great deal in his "pre" and "post" garden experiences. He learned how things grow. How to use the skin's of animals for clothing. How to weave wool for cloth. How to grow grains and make bread. How to sow seeds for future growth. How to till the soil, irrigate, and fertilize it. How to make a home out of natural shelters. How to store food. He also learned how to live with a wife. How to raise children. How to maintain a relationship. How to handle conflicts. He named all of the animals, managed and controlled animal life, sustained the conditions necessary for animals to live and reproduce. Adam learned a good many things. Most likely his ingenuity and creative ability developed new ways of furthering and expanding the mini-culture he was in with his wife and his children.

Wisdom is multifaceted, discerned in different ways by different people. Here is a list of guidelines for the development of wisdom:

- a. *Wisdom is the product of instructions.* It's lessons are learned in the school of life, in the books of truth and in the people who know. You must first know before you can be wise. The first point of wisdom is to discern that which is error and false. The second to know that which is correct and true.
- b. *Wisdom is essentially practical.* It does not deal with theory or conjecture, but in proven and reliable values. It is practical knowledge that works rightly for an individual. It is the result of proven knowledge over the past ages.

- c. *Wisdom is insight.* It provides for the possessor the ability to discern mentally the total scenarios from merely parts of it. The insight guides action toward total scenarios rather than parts.
- d. *Wisdom is the right behavior at the right time.* It is good judgment in the face of foolishness. This requires summoning quickly alternatives for alternative actions. A wise person is also just, upright and one who walks in the way of truth.
- e. *Wisdom's more listening than talking.* It is less complaining and more consideration for others. It is listening beyond words, sentences and statements to concerns, motives and attitudes. The world would be better if we had less people with brains and more with wisdom.
- f. *Wisdom is understanding.* It is the ability to decide what is important and what is unimportant. This is separating the critical from the trivial, the essential from the insignificant. Knowledge can be memorized, but wisdom requires thinking things through.
- g. *Wisdom is solving problems permanently.* It uses solutions that clearly solve problems without the problems emerging for another period of time. This requires looking for lasting solutions rather than quick and first solutions. He is wise who knows the sources of useful knowledge, who knows who has written and where it may be found.
- h. *Wisdom foresees the consequences of an action.* It is able to avert a coming disaster or take advantage of a coming opportunity. This requires thinking ahead in both action and time. He that knows not and knows not that he knows not is an unwise person - do not listen nor follow him.
- i. *Wisdom is knowing the principles of God.* It allows these principles to be standards for knowing between right and wrong. The wise person follows these principles in both thought and behavior. Wisdom is to the mind what health is to the body.

Truth is conformity to fact. Truths are kernels of knowledge that have been verified as accurate and real while being unified with other kernels of verified truth. Kernels of knowledge that are not unified with other verified knowledge is of the lowest kind and eventually is displaced, replaced or changed. Knowledge that builds on previous knowledge is most likely to be truth. Knowledge becomes the basis from which truth is recognized and held. Knowledge as a state of knowing is produced by activities such as speaking, listening, observing, writing, experimenting, investing, processing, analyzing, discovering, evaluating and experiencing. These activities have

produced a knowledge industry never before known in history. Sometimes information and knowledge are the same. But linguistically, they are different. To inform is an activity by which formal and structured knowledge is conveyed to others. To know is a state of possessing and retrieving the knowledge that has been conveyed. The first is the communications and the second is the possession. Studies have estimated that formal and structured knowledge is growing exponentially. The halfway point of all human knowledge never stays still since present production of knowledge keeps it moving ahead. This is what is called doubling of knowledge. At one time knowledge doubled every 200 years - then 100 years, then 50 years, then 25 years, then 13 years. Now the figure is every 7 years. More than 90 percent of all the scientists who have ever lived are alive today. More than 98 percent of all knowledge producers who have ever lived are alive today. These knowledge producers, in addition to scientists are teachers, lawyers, professionals, bureaucrats, politicians, physicians, engineers, social workers and business people. We are living at time when truth and wisdom are derivatives of generating and storing knowledge. Adam did not have this opportunity since he was at the point in which knowledge had a beginning.

#### THE INTRODUCTION OF SIN AND EVIL

“And the serpent said unto the woman, ye shall not surely die for God does know that in the day ye eat there of, ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.”

Genesis 3:4-5

The serpent as a creature in it's Edenic form should not be thought of as an ugly, writhing reptile. The serpent as a creature may well have been one of the most beautiful animals in the garden. It was the most subtle of Edenic creatures. Traces of the beauty with it's fascinating colors remain despite the curse. It is certain that Satan, the devil and adversary who opposes God, possessed this beautiful animal and introduced both sin and evil into the world. Satan's strategy was to separate the pair from God and then take over the direction and control of the pair's progeny and future generations. His subtlety was exemplified by his assaults on the weaker vessel, the woman. Satan tempted Eve to break God's law and through her, he tempted and reached Adam to do the same. He is the one who has subsequently led and continues to lead the whole world astray.

There are those who deny the existence of Satan as a being originally created by God. No doubt there are many mysteries connected with Satan, who he is and how he fell, what real effect does he have on the world and what will happen to him. Several scriptures give some insight into these questions. Isaiah 14:12-15 claims he fell from heaven



as Lucifer, son of the morning for his profane ambitions. The Isaiah text reveals five selfish, self-centered conditions of his ambitions. They are: “I will ascend into heaven.” “I will exalt my throne above the stars of God.” “I will sit also upon the Mount of the Congregation in the sides of the north.” “I will ascend above the heights of the clouds.” “I will be like the most high.” With these aspirations, Lucifer sinned and fell from heaven. Clearly, when Satan appears in Eden in a disguise, it was an attempt to implement his ambitions. Failing to take over heaven, he determined to seize the earth and its future inhabitants.

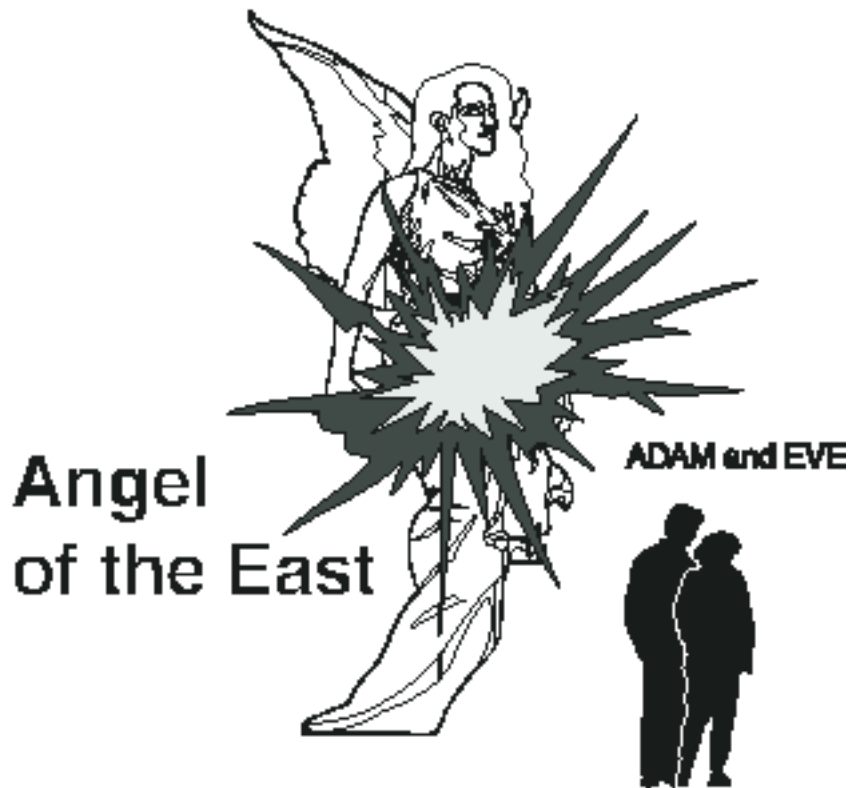
Sins are serious. They are departures from what God expects. It is through infractions of God’s laws that evil emerges. Sin is the seed, evil is the harvest. Sin always implies a certain degree of willfulness or deliberateness. Sinners commit sins knowingly with self-will. Mistakes or shortcomings are not intentional. When Satan sinned, it was willful and premeditated. The intentional sinner goes against God. As it were, the sinner opposes God. The faultier, on the other hand, does not intentionally sin, therefore, does not oppose God. This is the reason why people who unintentionally sin, pray for forgiveness of sins. In spite of this difference between shortcomings and sins, evil or misfortunes can emerge from the intentional and unintentional sinners. The effects of the fall was to introduce a legacy of imperfections for all of the human progeny. Aging and death are a part of this legacy. Since both sins and shortcomings are non-conformance to Biblical laws and principles, the results are unwanted evils. Conforming to principle or moral laws is a definition of perfection. The recognition of sin in one’s life is the vision of a future salvation. Where the Bible promotes perfection from its devotees, it is demanding conformance to principle or moral law. The first lesson of life is to decide on alternatives or activities which promote and enhance life. Engaging in good activities or behavior is far better for enhancing life than evil alternatives or activities. Suffering has been permitted as a human experience to give people lasting and valuable lessons which results from non-conformance to principles and moral laws. Learning through experience has always been the best way to learn. Unfortunately it teaches slowly and at the cost of mistakes. This learning will be useful to the human family in the future life since built-in memories will give decision makers the consequences of breaking laws. Such natural laws as gravity, changing seasons, digestion and exposure to the sun are inflexible. One must conform to them. Humans must, therefore, adjust to these inflexible laws. If there is failure in this adjustment, evil consequences will result. Similarly, such moral laws which involve flexible choices such as violence, adultery, prevarication, strife, hatred, drunkenness and murders can result in evil if the wrong choice is made. Humans must learn from poor choices to

avoid the harvest of evil. Humans are now collecting a magnificent body of instructional information and experiential knowledge to develop and maintain a moral sense of knowing right from wrong. The pain and suffering to gain this knowledge is necessary to prepare humankind as moral personalities for the life of the future. Pain and suffering can be seen in a positive way when related to a promising future. As the Bible states it “to be made perfect through sufferings”. (Hebrews 2:10) Humankind themselves is God’s workshop for making perfect humans.

#### A PARADISE WAS LOST

“So he drove out the man and placed at the east of the garden a Cherubum with a flaming sword which turned every way to guard the way of the tree of life.”

Genesis 3:24 See Figure 5.13.



**Figure 5.13 Paradise Lost**

God gave man and woman in Eden a maximum of freedom, total dominion and a unity with God himself. There were no restrictions excepting the eating of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. The restriction was to remind the pair that they were responsible and accountable to the spiritual realm. Eating the forbidden fruit brought

about the expulsion of the garden, loss of total dominion and alienation with God. The Edenic experience was both exciting and sad. It was exciting because many seeds of the Biblical Civilization were planted at the time. It was sad since an enormous set-back occurred in which the Biblical Civilization was thwarted. Many seeds continued, but many seeds were lost. Here is a list of seeds that were lost at the time:

- a. *An original design was lost!* God had a design objective. It was a major goal. It was “let us make man in our image and after our likeness”. This is to infer God’s major goal was to reproduce his image and likeness in man. Man can be like God. Man can develop a character like God. But man can never be God. This goal is still alive. It is a major goal of the Biblical Civilization. It has taken many years of experiences to reach this goal. The pursuit of this goal still continues. This objective needs to be firmly reestablished.
- b. *The Kingdom of God was lost!* The Kingdom of God started in Eden. Adam was given a dominion, a sovereignty, a rulership. God intended on earth a government as a subdivision of His overall Universal Kingdom. It started in the garden, but was to spread and fill the whole earth.
- c. *The right to life was lost!* Adam did not possess eternal life itself. He had the opportunity to earn for himself eternal life. As it were, he was on trial for life. Adam failed the test and thus a state of perfection was lost, but more important the right to live eternally was lost. There is the need for a process to qualify humans to earn eternal life.
- d. *Access to the tree of life was lost!* In the middle of the garden was the tree of life. We’re not sure exactly what kind of fruit this tree possessed, but it must have been a life sustaining fruit. Perhaps a life vitamin. Expulsion from the garden of the pair was to prevent access to this fruit which would have perpetuated the aging and dying process for a continued period of time. There is the need to reopen the access to the vital and sustaining nutriment of that tree.
- e. *A paradise was lost!* It’s difficult to define exactly what a paradise means in spite of the fact everyone wants to live in it. Perhaps the following may help to give insight as to paradise living. Paradise is where there is abundant resources - no scarcities. Everything you need is everywhere available. Paradise is easy living and working. Adam was expected to till the ground, but work was not a hardship. It was fulfilling and easy. Paradise is where the climate is under control. This means the seasons without extremities.

Paradise is confronted with problems of creative change that are solvable. Innovation, although challenging is a workable and implementable process. Paradise needs to be restored.

- f. *Equality was lost!* Before the test in the garden, Adam and Eve were of equal status. There was no discrimination of genders. As a result of the failure with the test, inequality resulted. This inequality started with genders, drifted into many other relationships such as family over family, cities over cities, nations over nations and races over races. There is the need to restore among humans this equality.
- g. *A relationship with God was lost!* Prior to the failure of the test, the record states God walked in the garden, was among the trees and spoke frequently and directly to Adam and Eve. The failure of the test gave the pair a non-conforming status with God's laws. This is defined as sin. There cannot be a relationship with God under conditions of non-conformity or sin. Additionally, whatever disunites humans from God disunites humans from other humans. There is the need for a reconciliation process to reinstate this relationship.
- h. *Heavenly control over earth's affairs was lost!* Lucifer's role in the garden was one of a take-over of the newly instituted dominion of man. He was known to be one who wanted "to be like the most high". (Isaiah 14:12-14) This constitutes adversarial spiritual forces which wrestled away heavenly control over earth's affairs. This allowed for a more intensive and meaningful purpose. The need to repossess earth's control is a must.

These lost scenarios were originally prospective global seeds for a Biblical Civilization. The garden was merely a vehicle for their introduction. The predicted restoration was and still is the message of the prophets throughout the centuries of the human experience. The Biblical Civilization has as its goal the restoration of these lost values. Somehow, humans know these goals intuitively. Sometimes they can be articulated even if crudely.

Disappointingly, many have raised the question, is life worth living? Is life with its many difficulties and sorrows worth the trouble? Humans have experienced so many disasters that it's no wonder they raise these questions. Those who have a reason for living can survive almost any kind of personal disaster. Provided they had an explanation as to "why". It's like saying, those who have the "why" to live can almost reach any goal set before them. A careful reflection on the expectation of the specific goals of the kingdom of heaven on earth now referred to as the Biblical Civilization generates a convincing and compelling positive response to humankind as to "why" life is

worth living. In spite of the brief number of years one lives, one still looks forward to the time in which life will not come to an end. Eternity is vast and it awaits for those whose expectations are visionary. The profoundest meaning of human life lies within the kingdom of heaven on earth and the goals it expects to accomplish.

Paradise is an exciting prospect. It means unrestricted resources. Lots of love, laughter and joyful work. Problems are easily solvable and managed. The environment is not in the extremes. It operates for human welfare. There is life and perfect health. Wars and violence are not allowed. Prosperity and happiness are everyone's legacy. Death no longer prevails. Biblical history is a description of the expelling from paradise into an alien land. Restoration is a map out of an alien land back to paradise. History is paradise lost. Restoration is paradise found. The Biblical Civilization is the process between lost and found. See Figure 5.14

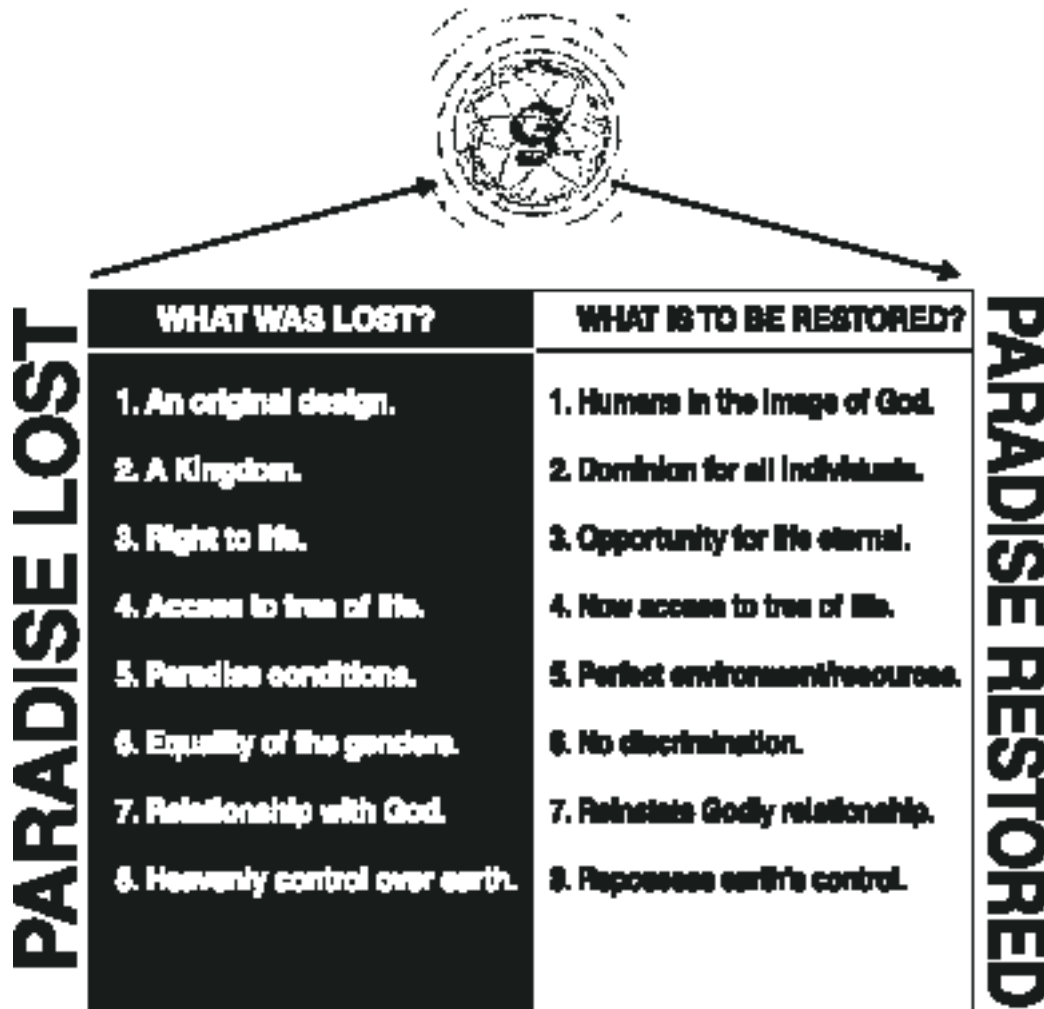


Figure 5.14 Paradise Lost with Paradise Restored

## THE FIRST CHILDREN

“And Adam knew Eve his wife and she conceived and bore Cain...and she again bore his brother Abel.” Genesis 4:1-2

Adam and Eve did not have children when they lived in the Garden of Eden. As they left the garden, Eve became pregnant. Since this was the first pregnancy of the first woman and the first even seen, the pair did not know what to expect. When the delivery occurred, their wonderment and excitement of the event increased many times. The excitement and delightment was beyond anything they ever experienced. Cain was the first son born and Abel the second. Cain was a tiller of the soil which raised vegetables and fruit while Abel was a shepherd of sheep. The record describes what each of these two sons offered as a sacrifice to God. Cain brought vegetables and fruit as his sacrifice. Abel brought the first born lamb of his flock. God then received Abel’s offering and rejected Cain’s offering. The rejection of Cain’s was not due to it’s inferior or lessor value since Cain gave the best that he had. Rather, Cain’s rejection was due to his poor attitude and condition of heart. Abel apparently understood when he brought a lamb for sacrifice that it was to substitute for the guilt of sin that Abel recognized as his own. Abel is praised in Hebrews 11:4 which states, “by faith Abel offered God a better sacrifice than Cain did”. By faith, Abel was commended as a righteous man. Abel was accepted and Cain was not. It is fair to speculate that Cain was born under less favorable conditions than Abel. Cain had to endure the first effects of living outside the garden. Because he was the first born, he had to endure the disappointments of his parents living outside until they were adjusted and more reconciled to their fate. Both sons raised large families where at the time, there was interfamily marriages.

The question is often asked, “Where did Cain get his wife if they were the first children?” The answer is seen with time. Adam lived 930 years. (Genesis 5:5) He had many sons and daughters during this time. Intermarrying of the sons and daughters was a common practice. In this period of time, population grew in leaps and bounds. Obviously, Cain married a woman in his family. The record does not give specifics of the relationship. Possibilities are sister, niece or cousin. Is this the modern concept of incest? Yes. A practice often found in ancient civilizations. Intermarriage within Adam’s family was a necessary practice. But the family grew by leaps and bounds.

When Adam and Eve entered the world outside of Eden, they entered an unfinished or uncultured earth. Everything was there, but it was uncontrolled. The wide foliage, trees and overgrown plants were a hardship to the original parents. It was also a new experience since they left a garden of paradise. The record shows the ground was

cursed meaning that tilling the ground would not be easy for human effort. This created a huge disadvantage. Adam had to work hard which resulted in the sweat of his brow.

The Bible connects the beginning of human and secular civilization with Cain and Abel, two of the many offspring of Adam and Eve. At this time two parallel activities were developing and growing: cultivation of the soil and domestication of animals. Of the two, cultivation of the soil is oldest. Abel was a keeper of sheep and Cain was a farmer. Merrill Unger<sup>18</sup> cites modern excavations of the “Great Mount” northwest of Nineveh in Iraq revealed stove tools, pottery, weapons, arts, crafts and ruin structures and buildings dating 5,000 BC or earlier. These discoveries discourages the idea that the early men of Genesis were uncivilized. They were civilized and with a God. The Bible relates Cain as a builder of a city for his son Enoch. (Genesis 4:17)

#### THE START OF POPULATION GROWTH

“And God blessed them and said, be fruitful and multiply.” Genesis 1:28

God made one male and one female that all the nations of men ought to know themselves to be made of one blood, descendants from one common stock that encourages and earthly family. God made the pair capable of transmitting their nature to their offspring. This is accomplished with genetic transmissions. The commission to replenish the earth means to fill the earth with a numerous and lasting collection of humans. This means the commission to fill the earth was a moral responsibility. God gave the commission to Adam and his descendants. We do not know the design figure of population for filling the earth. The capacity of the earth can be enhanced by adding the capacity of the moon and other planets of the solar system. The population design figure becomes nebulous if the Creator decides to add this capacity for human habitation. Interesting to note the creation of angels were quite different from humans in one important and distinctive way. Humans have the power for self-decisions to propagate and reproduce their kind. Angels cannot do this.

If the evolution model were correct for man being on earth at least a million years or more, the number of people who have ever lived would be enormous. There is little, if anything, in history recorded that population growth was a serious problem. Records from Babylon, Greece and Rome would have cited the social and economic problems these empires would have had if the population growth continued over a million years. Today the population growth is a problem and the records are filled with descriptions of this problem.

Today the average family size, worldwide is about 3-4 children with an annual growth rate between 2-10 percent. Environmentalists would like to see the worldwide family size to be 1-2 children with a zero-growth rate. The Biblical creation model postulates human growth corresponds to the population figure from 6-7000 years of recorded history.

In recent times, population growth has become of critical concern. Statements of gloom and doom have been made over the exponential growth of the human population. Projections by the United Nations have revealed extraordinary growth levels. Presently the earth's population is roughly 6 billion. Experts project by 2,005 AD, the growth will be to 10 billion. By 2,050 AD it will reach greater than 20 billion. There will be as many people living on planet earth than all the people added together living throughout human history. Billions of human beings, as numerics, should not disturb the analysts since in every other department of creation, the aggregates are in the trillions. There are trillions of stars, trillions of trees, trillions of snowflakes, trillions of insects, birds and fish. The productivity of nature has been enormous. Human population has got to go some to catch up with the living and non-living colleagues in the environment. See Figure 5.15.

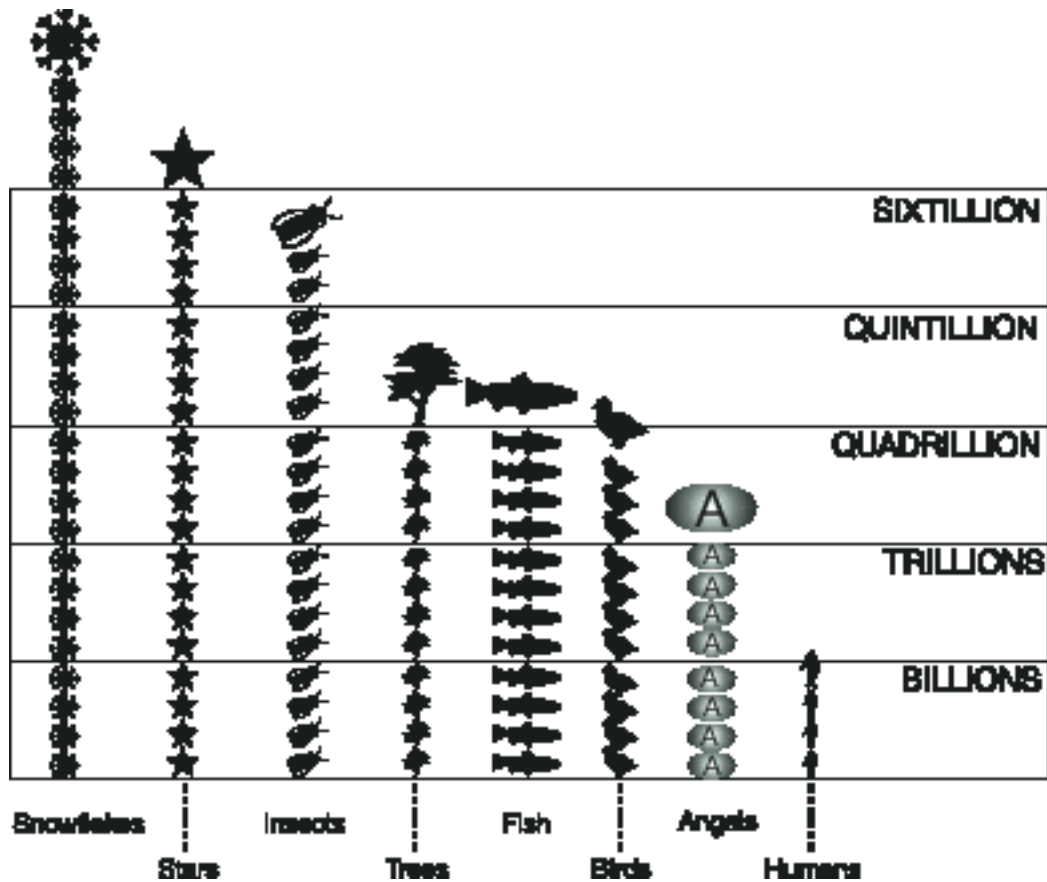


Figure 5.15 Number of Humans compared to other Aggregates



The doom-sayers who see no room on earth should be reminded the earth both laterally and vertically can accommodate an enormous number of human beings. It's interesting to note that half the population in the United States resides within a 50 mile drive of the Atlantic or the Pacific. This means 97 percent of the American population lives on 3 percent of the land mass. We tend to live where everyone else does. Moving out to unsettled land areas is a viable alternative. If you consider the alternative of colonizing the other planets in the solar system which is becoming more and more feasible, one might theorize billions of humans are not enough. Mankind in the trillions would be more in line with other creative works.

Many countries have made zero population growth a social movement with specific growth rates as an objective. They have made this a priority equal to the problems of world peace and human rights. Zero population growth means the births are equal to the number of deaths. The movement originated with Paul Ehrlich in his book, "The Population Bomb" who claimed the overpopulation was depleting both food supplies and space. Paul Lee Tan in his book, "Signs of the Times" stated if the population were allowed to grow at the present rate for the next 900 years there will be 60 quadrillion people. Far more than the trillions found in the lower creative works. Isaac Asimov in his "Book of Facts" stated, if the population of the earth were to continue to increase at the present rate indefinitely to 3530 AD, the total mass of human flesh and blood would equal the mass of the earth. By 6,826 AD, if the growth continued unabated, the total mass of human flesh and blood would equal the mass of the known universe. This is phenomenal! This, of course, would assume food and nourishment would be available to continue this growth.

Julian Simon of the University of Maryland, an opposer to Paul Ehrlich has a different view of the population growth. He says since people produce most of the good things on this planet, more people than ever before can be expected to produce more good things than ever before. He criticizes doomsaying predictions of Ehrlich. Simon and Ehrlich represent the two poles of disagreement with many positions in between. The argument is summarized that a world of scarcity will bring about the demise of the human family versus that a new level of abundance will be produced when more people are available.

Jesus addresses this problem of population growth by stating, "In the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like the angels of God in heaven." This would indicate in the resurrection, the function of propagation would cease. This would solve many of the problems that are exacerbated by the population explosion such as ethnic conflicts, land disputes, food production and national wars.

## GENEALOGY IS THE FIRST INFORMATION SYSTEM

“Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth are named.” Ephesians 3:15

Genealogy is the study and recording of a family lineage from ancestors according to generations. Lines of descent are traced generation by generation. These records authenticate hereditary succession, inheritance rights, biological descent and geographical or ethnological relationships. Because of the patriarchal nature of the Semitic Society, lineage was normally traced through the males of a family. Only occasionally were females mentioned. God himself is the great keeper of beginnings, birth and descent. For this reason, the Bible contains an accurate record of genealogies from Adam to Jesus. No other book on record has this accurate genealogical record that covers approximately 4,000 years.

There are several ways to define a generation. Some have considered a popular view of 33 years as the length of time for a father to be succeeded by his son. The Psalmist (90:10) gives inference that it's three score and ten years (70). But the strongest evidence would be found in Job 42:16, “After this lived Job a hundred and forty years and saw son's sons even four generations”. This would result in one generation approximately being 33 years. The span of time in a generation is of critical importance in prophetic declaration. This is exemplified in the second advent of Jesus where a generation would know the signs of his return.

The purpose of genealogical records of births, relationships and deaths are several. First, it was important for chronology. This provided a time line to identify events, prophetic expectations, committed promises and historic milestones. Second, the expected “seed” that would bruise the serpents head was a high expectation. This expectation was traced through many generations. The seed was the line of extraordinary importance. The seed was later identified as the Messiah. Is for this reason the registry of people through Edenism, Noahism and Judaism was accurately traced and tabulated. Thirdly, the genealogical records were used to establish groupings of people such as Levis, Cohens, priesthood, etc. The right of royal succession depends on these groupings. This controls extraneous claims. The Bible makes great stress on the need for special groups to be pure and uncontaminated. This prevents possible intrusions of foreign or pagan elements in Israel. Finally, the allocation and allotment of the land by tribal division, in spite of foreign invasions and occupations. When the invaders left, the land was returned to the descendants whose registry was kept in tack.

Tracing descent has been a modern day preoccupation. People want to know to what extent their forefathers have been members in patriotic societies and the involvement in revolutions and wars. Sons of the American Revolution and Daughters of the American Revolution are examples of interest in the identification and involvement of ancestry. Modern day tracing is more than the mere identification of names. Tracing health conditions of forefathers has been a pursuit. Medical science has established the importance of genetic inheritance from generation to generation. Health diseases such as diabetes, asthma and many others are examples of transmissions from one generation to another. This health tracing can alert a successor generation of what can be done if a previous generation had this propensity. This information and knowledge of descent has contributed greatly to the confidence and expectation of today's conditions as well as the future. This genealogical practice had its origin in the Edenic period and continues with us even unto today.

#### THE FIRST MURDER

“They were in the field when Cain rose up against Abel, his brother and slew him.” Genesis 4:8

The crime of murder still remains after 6,000 years, the most serious, repugnant and offensive crime that one can inflict on another human being. The sanctity of life has been and forever will be the most insistent of God's laws. Many will rank murder as the number one of all crimes. To remove someone's life is to assume the role of God. God gives life and thus is the only one with the right to remove it. For someone else to remove it is to play God! There is one murder every hour of the week in the United States. In recent years, the murder rate has been increasing, 20 percent per decade. In all the wars in U.S. history 530,000 combatants have been killed. Since 1900, deaths from guns alone in civilian life have exceeded 800,000. The United States has the highest guns per capita than any country in the world. Two thirds of all murders are committed with guns. The number of deaths in the world by guns is astonishing. The annual deaths is roughly 60 million or about 2 for every second. This is broken down as follows: 65 percent in Asia, 14 percent in Europe, 10 percent in the Western Hemisphere and 11 percent in Africa.

The first recorded crime in human history was Adam's transgression in the garden. Breackage of law constitutes a crime. The first recorded murder is Cain's removal of Abel's life. The struggle between the first two brothers has mystified many people. Why would God accept Abel's offering, but reject Cain's offering. Some have been misled to see Cain's offering was of low value compared to Abel's. This is not correct. God saw Cain's attitudes of pride, chagrin and envy as a state of mind unacceptable. Service and works for God must be attended with appropriate

attitudes and motives. The rejection caused Cain to be sullen for a time, brooding over his experience. It was in this period that anger, malice, hatred and strife burned in his emotions. This led to premeditated murder. Here is a summary of what one can say about emotion. First, he was angry with God. This was an uncontrolled emotion. Second, his heart condition was not right with his sacrifice for atoning his sins. After all it's not the sacrifice that's important, but the attitude associated with it. Third, he murders his brother. The first murder in history. His parents were devastated. Fourth, he lies to God. This was the second lie. The first was the garden serpent when it said, "ye shall not die". The second was when Cain said, "I know not". Fifth, Cain becomes a vagabond. Partly because of his rejection by others and partly by his guilt for murdering his brother.

The moral struggle of humanity in any civilization often results in a life and death struggle with the inner nature of the individual. The motivation to commit murder lies deep within the person. These motives can be feelings of rejection, frustration to reach goals, disappointments over expectations, revenge for an injustice, jealousies over differences and the struggles for survival. It seems to me, these motives are inner propensities within all of us which could make us all potential murders. What prevents us? What stops us? What controls the propensities? Moral behavior is undoubtedly guided and directed by moral standards and emotional control. This allow one to know what is right and what is wrong and how to control these natural propensities. The great lesson of the permission of evil in human affairs is the development of the moral sense. Much as been learned about moral behavior in civilized life. Much more needs to be learned. The focus and development of the moral sense is a major goal of the Biblical Civilization.

#### THE VISION OF THE MESSIAH CONCEIVED

“And I will put enmity between you and the woman and between your offspring and hers. He will crush your head and you will strike his heel (NIV). Genesis 3:15

The first pair should not be censured severely for their conduct in the garden test. They were created perfect as well as in the image of God. What they lacked was knowledge, understanding and experience. It is probably true, any pair throughout history of living in the garden under similar circumstances, they too would fall as Adam and Eve. The effects of ignorance and lack of experience would prevail with any couple. God foreknew what they would do

and preferred the original couple to continue without stopping them. In this way, a greater lesson can be acquired for the pair as well as their progeny.

The first Messianic prophecy occurs in the garden when God spoke to the serpent and said the seed of the woman shall bruise the head of the serpent even though the serpent would in turn inflict an injury. This is a vague intimidation and obscure figurative language of the ultimate recovery of humankind from what Satan did in the garden to the original pair. It was a forecast of the reversal of the powers of evil. The seed of the woman, a virgin, would be the Messiah. It would not be the seed of the man. This is a long range prophecy that a deliverer would be born of a woman without the participation of a man. The scriptural text probably refers to the Godly descendants of Adam and Eve and the ungodly descendants of Adam and Eve that would be influenced and controlled by Satan. This suggests two civilizations which would be hostile to each other. The first civilization would be ruled and influenced by Satan and the other would be ruled and influenced by the Messiah. The concept of irreconcilable enmity between the two seeds or two civilizations would indicate a state of perpetual quarrel and even war between the two. The enmity has even imbedded itself within individuals as a continual conflict between people as well as within people. The two civilizations are the secular and the Biblical.

The scriptural text was a favored promise to the garden pair who saw this as a door of hope to the great disappointment of rejection from the garden and the death condemnation. They did not see nor experience how nor when this would happen. They surmised it involved their immediate sons. It was a great disappointment when trouble entered the lives of their sons. History now shows that it was the first advent of the Messiah which would bring to light this prophecy. The first advent Messiah would have his heel bruised when he was nailed to the cross. He would be regarded as the suffering servant. But, eventually, the second advent messiah who would come as king will give the final blow to Satan's Civilization.

#### THE FIRST TWO CIVILIZATIONS

“And Cain built a city and named it after his son Enoch.” Genesis 4:16-22

As soon as Seth, third son of Adam and Eve was born, two cultures began. The culture of the ungodly (Cain) and the culture of the godly (Seth). Cain and his descendants started the ungodly lineage which occupied a city. This was the beginning of a secular civilization. It was also the beginnings of the many ungodly civilizations throughout history. This is the source of Toynbees' 34 identified civilizations throughout history. Seth and his descendants

started the godly culture. This culture was to perpetuate the hope of a promised deliverer who would bring them salvation and lead the return to the Garden of Eden. Through Seth's lineage "men called upon the name of the Lord". (Genesis 4:26)

In this early period of time, two civilization tracks were formed - the Biblical and the secular. The secular underwent many permutations and combinations. Perhaps explaining the wide diversity of civilizations found throughout history. The two tracks divided the growth of the human race into two groups of people having destructive attitudes, behaviors, development and character. One was for the love of self and materialistic gain where God was of no consequence. The other was for the love of God and spiritual gain. This is where God is of immense consequences. These two civilizations started with two individuals: Cain and Seth. As the population grew in families, tribes and communities, cities were started. Communal living draws people together. One individual was an example of the new secular ungodly civilization. His name was Lamech, a descendent of Cain. Lamech, fifth generation from Cain, married two related women because of their physical attractiveness rather than their moral stature and character. Lamech was also the second recorded murderer as he boasted to his two wives killing a man who merely wounded him.

With Lamech, two beautiful wives, the beauty pursuit became important. It's importance was enough to lay aside moral precepts carried on by previous generations. The pursuit of beauty was a notable movement in the early Cainite Civilization. This early cultural practice also encouraged the use of music.

The Biblical account describes several elements which falls into our basic conceptual understanding of civilizations such as crafts, metalsmiths, tools, manufacturers, harps and musical instruments. Clearly city life with a pastoral flavor took hold with this early population. Cain lived there in the land of Nod just east of Eden. The record also shows Cain was a wanderer and vagabond. Wanderers and vagabonds do not establish cities. Either Cain lived in the city part-time or a second Cain lived there. Cain's wandering was a life time form of punishment. A lesson to be learned from history that you cannot do evil to others without doing it to yourself. In any event, it was Enoch, son of Cain that took the leadership to develop the first city. The behaviors and practices in this city included vengeance, bigamy, polygamy and killing.

From an archaeological point of view, tablets unearth in Nippor dating from the first half of the second millennium, BC, contains a Summerian poem which parallels the story of the rivalry of Cain and Abel.

Archaeological excavations of such sites as Nippor, Ur, Urik, Kish and Lagash yield other evidences<sup>19</sup> of a city named “Eridu”. This has such a strong resemblance to “Enoch”, son of Cain, the first city in the fourth millennium BC. Eridu was evidently the ancient seat of the Summerian Culture. These evidences described how religion was a unifying factor in the Summerian cultural urban centers of the time.

The most visible sign of any civilization both past and present is the existence of city life. The word “civilization” is derived from the term “civili” which indicates a form of life found in urban centers. This move toward cities and the growth of cities has been the march of civilization from the earliest of times. Till today, estimates vary, but in 1996, it appears up to half of the world’s population lives in cities and the other half on farms or suburban settings.

## BROTHERHOOD

“I know not! Am I my brothers keeper?” Genesis 4:9

God already knew what happened to Abel when He asked Cain “where is Abel thy brother?” Perhaps God was listening for a confession of his crime. After all, for those who would be justified before God must confess their sins and be remorseful over them and vow never to commit the sins again. When these are done, God will forgive. Cain’s response was not only a lie, but a lie to God. Cain not knowing the powers of God thought he could get away with the murder. Abel’s body was no doubt hidden or buried. Cain thought the incident would be covered and concealed. Cain thought sins against humans can be covered and concealed and never discovered. But those who sin against God is sure to be discovered. This is a great lesson for humankind. It is not so much what you do that people see as it is what you do that people do not see. Cain pleaded not guilty. He covered a deliberate murder with a deliberate lie. His response was “I know not”.

Adam and Eve when confronted with God tried to shift the blame of their mistake, but they did not lie. The serpent in the garden lied when he said “ye shall not surely die”. Cain’s lie would make him the second liar on record after the serpent. An anti-brotherhood attitude emerged at this time. If something happened to Abel, it is his own fault. This is the attitude of modern humans. It’s a cruel dog-eat-dog world. Everyman is for himself. It’s too bad if something evil happens to others. In our modern times, those who are unconcerned with the moral and difficult problems of others in the same culture and take no care when there is opportunity to prevent a disaster or a hurt, do in effect speak Cain’s response - “am I my brothers keeper?”

The sins of murder leads to the sins of lying, deception and cover-up. One sin begets another. Shrugging off responsibility when life and death relationships are involved in a community is civilized degeneracy. This degeneracy can be seen when a train motorman drinks in excess on the job, or when an air tower controller goes to work with a few hours of sleep, or when a pregnant mother takes drugs to minimize her pain or when a company's solvents are drained into the backwood streams, or when fathers disappear and leave their families to survive for themselves, or when parents are too busy to punish children for misbehavior or when parents fail to teach children values when needed. Responsibility denotes a condition of moral and sometimes legal accountability. No one is excused from personal actions that remove life or limb from others.

Old as well as new civilizations keep perpetuating a narrow view of responsibilities. You will often hear the expression, "I'll protect and support my own family, but he is responsible for his". This attitude has prevailed for such a long time that it's become a tradition. This attitude does have worth, but it needs to be extended. The family view must be seen in a larger context. See Figure 5.16, where God is the Father of all. When this occurs with greater participants, parochial communities can be integrated more easily toward a global community. Responsibilities for protection and support needs to be enlarged to a brotherhood. Brotherhood means a larger family beyond ones own family. Jesus has made "neighbor" equivalent to "brother" giving it a sense of fraternal affection and obligation to the entire human family. We have learned the answer to Cain's question - we are our brother's keeper. The world is our neighbor and we are members of the brotherhood. This is because we look out for the interest of others as well as our own.





**Figure 5.16 Brotherhood is Neighborhood**

#### THE FIRST PRAYERS ARE INSTITUTIONALIZED

“There began men to call upon the name of the Lord.” Genesis 4:26

The origin of prayer was identified in an earlier section on the origin of religion. Prayer was one of the first meditations of Adam while in the garden and later, when expelled from the garden. The prayerful mentality continued with Adam’s family and throughout a growing generation. When the practice became widespread, institutionalizing prayer settled in. The Godly Civilization had as it’s important characteristic - dependence on God. The civilization recognized God as the source of both moral standards and guiding salvation for life. The promise to send a deliverer through Eve was still a high expectation. It was their hope. All of this was easily contrasted with the ungodly civilization which was not far distant. The Godly civilization kept worshipping God in both private, family and personal activities as well as public and solemn assemblies. This included prayers, retelling of the Edenic experiences and the acknowledgment of God in everyday matters. These worshippers of God were so public that their identity, unknown to us today, was well known to members of the other civilization. They may have been identified in the same manner as the terms identifies Christian, Jew, etc. They were the ones who called upon the name of the Lord.

The history of prayer reflects various stages in relationships and experiences with God. When men began to call upon the name of the Lord, prayer was simple and direct. It was always associated with sacrifice since sacrifice was a practice of both Adam and his sons, Cain and Abel, in their requests for benefits as well as their offering of atonement for sins. As time went on, the nature of prayer enlarged to include direction and guidance in specific experiences. In Israel, both the exodus from Egypt and the exiles of the conquering Gentile countries prompted prayer requests to remove unwanted experiences and restoring their condition to an original wanted state. Today, prayer has even enlarged further to include praise and thanksgiving for many gifts, forgiveness of sins, special help for others, early arrival of the kingdom and unity among the brotherhood. Today's prayer addresses God in a way never before - "Our Father". Interesting to note, 88 percent of the world's population that believe in God also pray to God. If we assume the believers pray to God once a week, a minimal time, and that there have been approximately 20 billion people since Adam and Eve, then an estimated 73 trillion prayers have been offered and continue to be offered.

The early beginning of the prayer process was simple like a talk with God. It was a conversation with God. Over the years prayer as a formalized form of worship took on a variety of forms such as adoration, confession, petition, intercession, thanksgiving, praise, entreaty and meditation. The praying person seeks to acknowledge God and is concerned to doing the will of God. Unfortunately, the petitioner tends to arrange his prayer toward God for what he wants as opposed to giving God what He wants. If prayer is from the heart, it cannot be read from a book nor can it be repetitive recitations. It must be spontaneous, unrehearsed and from each individual in terms of their relationship with God. The needs of life is a constant want and this ought to urge constant prayer. If a person wants God to hear him when he prays, that same person should hear God for what He wants.

#### THE FIRST PREACHER

"And Enoch walked with God and he was not, for God took him." Genesis 5:22

Present day use of the function of preaching is to inculcate moral truths or advice on righteous behavior and conduct. It is to remind people of what they are constantly forgetting. Historically, preaching had a broader scope of activity. Preaching and educating were both in a single function. Both intended to develop individualistic attitudes, faculties and skills. Both preaching and educating were interested in changing individuals to live and conform in a society. Both instructed and taught individuals to survive, make a living, know what's right from wrong and to

control problems which prevented life's enjoyment. Both reached for cultural compatibility or even cultural change. Educational institutions of today bring into the classroom the issues of the culture and its attending problems. World enrollment educational levels in the 1990's have been the highest in history<sup>20</sup>. Primary education is almost 100 percent throughout the world. Secondary education, high school has reached slightly less than 50 percent. College education in the global village is roughly 15 percent. The amount spent per student varies from fifteen dollars in Africa to 1,257 dollars in North America. The effort to reach these levels have been difficult, but the progression continues. Educators are most gratified with students who perceive clearly these issues of civilization and innovate with proposals or change and improvements. Present day philosophy of education is "How can we develop wiser and better individuals?" Educators must develop a clear perspective of what constitutes the "good and the wise person". They must ask how can we educate for "democracy" or "freedom" or "economic betterment". These and other values should be expressed as goals. Thus, today educational processes have been separated from educational philosophy. In the ancient world they have been incorporated into one making it a unique beginning.

Enoch was both a preacher and an educator. He walked with God at a time when practically no one else did. Walking with God meant there was agreement between Enoch and God as to the direction society should go and the moral standards it must conform to. This agreement was the critical path for the Biblical Civilization. The Genesis account makes it clear Enoch was the seventh from Adam. This is to distinguish between Enoch in the same periods of time and even living at the same time. Enoch who walked with God was the seventh descendent from Adam through the line of Seth. The other Enoch was the third descendent from Adam through Cain. The one whose name was given to the first city. The first Enoch was ungodly. The second was godly. The first preaches a non-biblical secular civilizing behavior. The second preached a righteous behavior as an element of a Biblical Civilization. The differentiation between these two civilizations suggests how two civilizations parallel each other and no doubt were often in conflict.

The godly Enoch reported in the Old Testament has been cited in the New Testament, Hebrews 11:5 and Jude 14-16. It seems Enoch was attempting to preach and educate to non-Biblical citizens the need to change their ungodly ways. His preaching was a severe denunciation of their behavior of what was becoming a degenerate culture. He even threatened with a proclamation of the Lord's coming with a scourging and convicting judgment. The account is not altogether clear, but we may surmise, the harsh words of Enoch were not taken too lightly by the ungodly ones.

Enoch uses the word ungodly four times. There must have been a mob action against Enoch. The mob was violent and Enoch's life was probably threatened. The account says God translated Enoch. The interpretation was two fold: first, he was translated from a mob violent scene which threatened his life to another distant land and eventually died or, second, he was translated not to see death and continued to live in another form of existence. We tend to favor the first interpretation because the writer of Hebrews lists all the men of faith and concludes "these all died in faith not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off". (Hebrews 11:13) One point is clear, the non-Biblical Civilization of the ungodly was progressively getting worse and a wicked age was accelerating. God's translating Enoch was a message to adherents of the Biblical Civilization. Those who walk with God in his life will also walk with Him in a future and better life.

#### LONGEVITY OF THE ANTEDILUVIANS

"And all the days of Methuselah were nine hundred sixty and nine years and he died." Genesis 5:27

The Biblical record describes the ages of individuals in the Edenic period far longer than what is now observed to be limits in our population. Adam was known to live 930 years, Seth 912 years, Enoch 905 years, Jared 962 years and Methuselah 969 years. These are amazing life spans. Others are also mentioned in the record between Adam and the flood of Noah. While they were not as high as 900 years, they still were high in present day terms. Mahalalel was known to live 803 years, Enoch 365 years and Lamech 777 years. Even after the flood, the life spans were still amazing. Arphaxad was known to live 438 years, Salah 433 years, Peleg 239 years and Terah 205 years.

Critics of the Biblical records have indicated that the numbers are incorrect. Some have indicated that the supposed years that have been associated with the early patriarchs are more lunar than solar. This would make the lunar year consist of thirty days. The criticism is an attempt to reduce the lines of the antediluvians to present day standards. If we apply this approach it would reduce the 1656 years from Adam to the flood to 138 years. Adam would be 78 years, Seth 76 years, Enoch 75 years, Jarad 80 years and Methuselah 81 years. After the flood, Arphaxad would be 37 years, Salah 36 years, Peleg 19 years and Tereh 17 years. Even though the ages fall more to present day standards, it's not reasonable that the life spans would fall to such a short period. Besides if we incorporate the lunar life span with their progeny, it would suggest the antediluvians had children at an unbelievably young age. The lunar theory would make Adam 11 years old when Seth was born. Seth would be 9 years old when

he begot Enoch. Enoch would be 8 years old when he begot Kenan. Kenan would be 6 years old when he begot Mahalalel. Mahalalel would be 5 years old when he begot Jared. The list goes on. It's not reasonable nor likely that these individuals were that precocious at such an early age. This would mean they had children when mere infants. The lunar theory cannot be reasonably considered. Josephus comments supports the solar year calculations. Further, he declares anyone false who would make the antediluvians lives short.

Since the solar year appears reasonable and that antediluvians lived long lives, an explanation is in order on how could this be possible? Why did these ancients live that long? Were there factors in existence then which are no longer with us today? The answer is yes. Several were in existence which are no longer with us. For one, there was a water vapor canopy which encircled the earth before Noah's flood. It was this canopy which broke to bring about the flood. The water vapor canopy provided a tropical climate. The canopy caused a greenhouse effect. This in turn produced a maximum environments compatibility. Plants and trees were enormous. Fruit bearing and vegetable raising yielded crops far more nutritional and larger than we have today. This is saying the environment was far more healthy than it is today.

Another reason for the longevity was the filtering effect of the water canopy against cosmic radiation and ultraviolet light. Science has established without a doubt these radiations accelerates the aging process. Even today the ozone layers and holes are causing more exposures to the cosmic radiations. These exposures are of great concern.

Still another reason is the quality of the pre-flood atmosphere. There has been several estimates of the oxygen content diminishing over the years. Estimates of 30 percent oxygen in the past compared to today's 21 percent oxygen gave greater protective features encouraging long life spans. It is known that higher oxygen content facilitates healing from wounds and sickness and to many other unknown benefits.

Still another factor for promoting longer life spans was the diet and quality of food before the flood. Most, if not all, were vegetarians. This meant people ate fruit, vegetables and nuts. Animal meats and fish were added after the flood. It is now established that vegetarian diets support the longer life spans by restricting the aging process.

Finally, the flood had an enormous impact on plant and animal life so that protein and fat components of diet were not the same as pre-flood conditions. If the change in the atmosphere were added to this, the human glands must have been effected. The functioning of glands such as the pineal, thymus and the parathyroid did not function

as well for humans in the post-diluvian times. All of these factors were significant acting in total in reducing longevity.

In the greenhouse environment before the flood, things grew so well. Everything was bigger, healthier and people lived so much longer. Adam lived 930 years, Methuselah lived 969 years. The period between Adam and the flood was 1656 years. It was an environmentally conducive period for humans, animals, trees and plants. After the flood when the water canopy fell and the greenhouse effect disappeared, the environment was not as conducive for human habitat as before. Humans today, have the legacy of living without the greenhouse effect caused by the water canopy.

#### FROM A TINY SPARK COMES A GREAT CONFLAGRATION

Genesis starts out as a book of seeds which when planted reaps a great harvest. Some of the harvest has been noted, but it's greatest yield is still future. Too often we underestimate the power of seeds and of tiny sparks. This power can move or remove mountains. Power is in purpose. The purpose starts as goals, but then it pulls and tugs over obstacles and difficulties. Purpose converts obstacles into stepping stones. This is the utilization of circumstances to advantages for purpose. Purpose becomes the compass for the pathway that the Biblical Civilization must take. Purpose is like a guiding star above for reaching the unreachable.

## CHAPTER 6

### NOAHISM: THE EMERGENCE OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION

A Civilization of escalating evil. A civilization of Nephilms. Boatbuilding and animal husbandry. Earth's water canopy and the greenhouse effect. The cataclysmic flood. Probable area of the flood. Archaeological evidence to confirm the flood. Post-flood changes. Comparing life span before and after flood. Noah's covenant and living style. Ancient codes compared: Noahic, Assyria, Hammurabi and Hittite. Bloodlines and genealogies set in motion. Origin of races, nations and languages. Classifications of the origin of nations. Nimrod, Tower of Babel and languages. Semites and anti-Semitism.

#### A CIVILIZATION OF ESCALATING EVIL

“God saw the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil and continually. And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth. Both man and beast and the creeping things and the fowls of the air for it repented me that I have made them.” Genesis 6:5-7

The emerging evils of the Noahic period were not only antagonistic with the entire creation, but in the course of time they would eventually infect and destroy the entire creation. There were two civilizations that existed prior to the great flood. One was a secular culture called the Cainite Civilization. This was the lineage and heritage from Cain and the city he built. The other was a religious culture, unnamed, but identified as the Biblical Civilization. This was the lineage and culture from Seth, son of Adam. These two civilizations lived side by side, often overlapped and frequently interinvolved. The Cainite Civilization as it grew in population, also grew in immorality. The Biblical Civilization did not grow and in fact declined both in population and morality. Near the end of the period only eight people were moral enough to be given the privilege to carry the mission of the Biblical Civilization through the flood. Morality does not make a godly person yet no person can be godly without it. The true grandeur

of humanity is in the moral elevation of its society. If there is enough godly people in a society, the society will result in a godly civilization. If not it becomes an evil civilization.

The episode of the cataclysmic flood and its destructive inundation is one of the Bible's most important events. But it is more. The flood makes a division between the Adamic antiquity and the new emergence period to follow. It is the transition link between the Edenic period of Stage II with the Noahic period of Stage III. Humanity, the animals and the Cainite Civilization in the time of the Edenic period went berserk. Conditions were so depraved that God announced his intention to erase every terrestrial creature from the face of the earth. It is because of this degeneracy that the flood came. The exception to the destruction was to be one human family and representatives of each animal species. God was to start anew with this one family and the saved representative species. It was this family who was privileged to continue the values and the mission of the Biblical Civilization to the next period which is term Judaism, Stage IV.

Noah and his family were selected by God to "restart" the human experience toward the goals of the Biblical Civilization. God saw Noah as a righteous man, having the righteousness that comes from faith. The record indicates "he walked with God". (Genesis 6:9) Interesting to note that Noah and Enoch are the only two antediluvians of whom it is said, "they walked with God". Noah and his family did not sink to a very low moral level as his contemporaries did. He was described as without fault. Noah was the tenth in descent from Adam, son of Lemech.

The issues during the pre-flood period were significant, life threatening and seriously deviant from an original design. The corruption and violence caused great sorrow and grief for God. The free will endowment given to humans was resulting in an escalating evil. It was out of control. How bad was it? Some details will be presented in further sections of this chapter. But generally, it fits the description found in Psalm 14:2-5 and Romans 3:10-18. "There is none righteous, no not one. There is none that understandeth. There is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way. They are together becoming unprofitable. There is none that doeth good, no not one. Their throat is an open sepulcher with their tongues they have used in deceit. The poison of asps is under their lips whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness. Their feet are swift to shed blood. Destruction and misery are their ways and the way of peace have they not known. There is no fear of God before their eyes." This meant society no longer recognized God. There was no restraint to the freedom endowment. There was no conformance to the



original Edenic Covenant. They lied, hated and slandered. Murders, fornication, adultery, stealing, wars, lawlessness and killing were rampant. It had gone out of control. Even the animals were affected. A new breed of humans had emerged on earth. This new society was deviant from a godly society in a major way.

God's regret of creating humans was at a point in which He was close to admitting failure for making humans into his image and likeness. But He saw the solution was through Noah and his family to save the human experience and perpetuate the hope of a Biblical Civilization. Thus, Noah was to be the one to bring the knowledge and experience from the Edenic period into a new phase for humanity. The Biblical Civilization was to survive with God's adjustment to reach the original goals. Hope is the vision of those who see answers to impossible dilemmas. Hope is one of the few good things common to humanity when there is despair and discouragement.

#### A CIVILIZATION OF NEPHILMS

“There were giants in the earth in those days and also after that when the sons of God (angels) came in unto the daughters of men and they bore children to them, the same mighty men who were old, men of renown.” Genesis 6:4

Eric Von Daniken<sup>1</sup> raised important questions about the ruins, excavations and objects of the past which cannot by any stretch of the imagination be explained by conventional archaeology, anthropology and history. How could gigantic statues 33 and 66 feet high weighing as much as 50 tons locate themselves on Easter Island some 2400 miles off the coast of Chile. Primitive tools of the past are not able to carve these colossal figures from steel-hard volcanic stone. Who did this work which required strength and thought not common to the civilization of the time? In the quarry of these stones, it appeared the work of these images suddenly stopped as if some great catastrophe had occurred. What about the ruins in the jungles of Guatemala and Yucatan and the pyramid of Cholula, 60 miles south of the Mexican capital. They had a calendar whose accuracy was advanced for its time. These edifices bear resemblance with the colossal pyramids of Egypt. The Mexican pyramids are not true pyramids as they lack the proper pyramidal angles. What about the monumental stones of Stonehenge in England which appear to be carefully arranged into a circular astronomical observatory. These huge boulders weighing up to 50 tons were transported to this site on the Salisbury Plain. Stonehenge was built about 2,000 BC. Archaeologists do not see how prehistoric Britains could have moved these huge and heavy 50 ton megaliths. If they could not, how did these stones arrive at

this site? What compelling force spent many years virtually moving mountains, then, why suddenly did they abandon their project? Thousands of these circular stones have been found throughout Europe.

What about the civilization that sank beneath the sea. Plato, the ancient Greek Philosopher left a description of Atlantis as a vast ridge that ran the entire length of the North and South Atlantic from Iceland to Tristanda, Canada. See Figure 6.1.



**Figure 6.1 Possible Location and Size of Atlantis**

Plato put the tragic fate of Atlantis somewhere in the Atlantic Ocean. The description of Atlantis included a rich land, lush vegetation, a palace, a temple, a vast city and even canals. What happened to Atlantis which appeared to end abruptly? Many researchers both marine archaeologists and historic anthropologists have accumulated sufficient evidenced to at least wonder if Atlantis did exist and then suddenly disappear.

Many questions have been raised about the huge animals of the past such as dinosaurs, mastodons, mammoths and other huge creatures. Skeletons, bones, shells and even fossilized footprints have shown these animals to have enormous proportions in size, volume and weight compared to other animals. How did they come about? These animals have long disappeared. They were not perpetuated as a species as if they were hybrids. What happened to these animals? Was it a matter of food availability for survival? They did consume large amounts of foliage food. Did they disappear because of conflicts and fights with other animals? There were many large animals at the time. Did their demise occur because of a major change in the planet's environment? Were these animals part of the original creation or did they come into existence at a later time? These and other ancient enigmas cannot be treated

lightly. Von Daniken raised questions that centered on the possibility that extraterrestrial beings did visit the earth, settled into a form of earthly lifestyle and raised extraordinary children. These extraterrestrial beings may have even experimented with the animals. But then, suddenly these extraterrestrial beings disappeared. Could Von Daniken's theory be an explanation of these ancient mysteries? We must keep in mind that earth's conditions were warmer in those days especially at the polar regions. Alaska, for example, had one of the richest dinosaur finds on planet earth. It cooled toward the end of the dinosaur era.

The Bible offers an explanation to these ancient mysteries. This explanation appears to be uniquely plausible. It, however, uses a different language and description than Von Daniken. According to Genesis, there was a time when population was expanding considerably. Sons of God that could be considered extraterrestrial, came to earth. Julian Huxley in his famous essay entitled "World Population" appearing in the *Scientific American*, March 1956, estimated the world population at this time in the vicinity of 20 million. At that time, the sons of God which were probably angels, who did not have the capability of reproducing themselves, saw the opportunity to come to earth, materialize, marry human women and reproduce after their kind - half human and half angel. With this process, it was a plan and process to create a better civilization. It was to be the civilization of the Nephilims. It was to be better than any prior civilization. This was not approved by God. They were renegade angels. The first book of Enoch estimates the number to be 200. This figure cannot be confirmed. It was not uncommon for angels to materialize into human form in those days. God often used angels as messengers between Himself and humans. They appeared as men. (Genesis 18 and Job 38:7) They married any woman they chose since they were intellectually and physically superior to man. There was little resistance to their choice. These sons of God proceeded for over a period of 700 years to raise a hybrid or mutant race that intended to be better than any other race prior to that time. The Bible calls them "giants". They were half-human and half-angelic. The Septuagint renders the word giants as "Nephilm" which means giganto or gigantic. The record does not indicate how tall these giants were, but Goliath, of David's period was six cubits and a span - 9 1/2 feet. (I Samuel 17:4) Og, King of Babylon had an iron bed nine cubits (13 feet). The American archaeologist, Ron Wyatt was excavating in Nevada, USA. He found a stratum which contained all kinds of bones and skeletons of both humans and animals including dinosaurs. One specific finding was a human thumb bone. As he compared it with his own thumb bone, he estimated the person who owned the thumb proportions stood 12 to 14 feet high. See Figure 6.2.

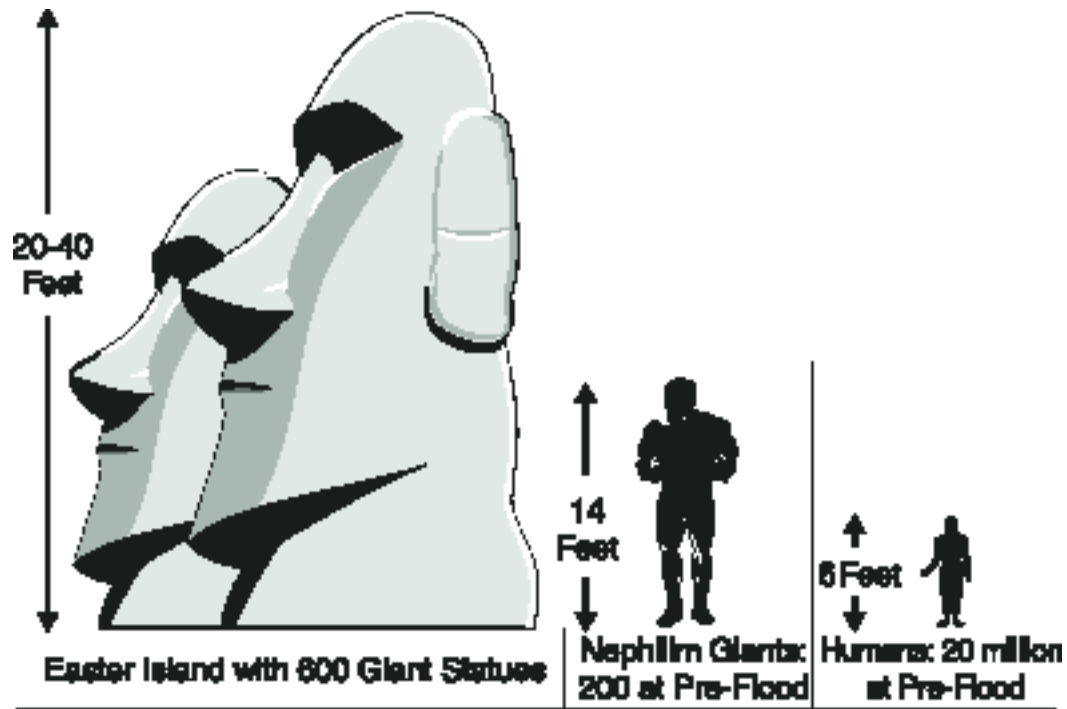


Figure 6.2 Comparative Heights - Pre-Flood Era

This confirms the world before the flood not only produced big dinosaurs, but also big people. Additionally, it confirms human giants were in existence at the same time as dinosaurs. It was a civilization of Nephilms where everything grew big under the greenhouse effect. It's probable, Noah's son's wives may have carried the genes of this extraordinary physical trait through the flood beyond the Noahic period. This accounts for giants beyond the flood.

The hybrid nephilms were brutish, sensual, immoral and violent. They were all males. An interesting question is why didn't the sons of God materialize as females. One possible explanation is they were not able to because of the hierarchy in God's arrangement. Man is one level below angels. Women are two levels below. (Psalm 8:4-9) Their materialization capability was limited to one level only. Since they left their heavenly home, they are now termed as fallen angels. They were also limited to materialize as animals. When Satan appeared in the Garden of Eden, it was possession and not materialization with the serpent.

The Nephilimites were physically and intellectually superior to the Adamic offspring. This superiority in a negative and immoral way intensified the degraded condition of the fallen human race. The Nephilimites, consequently proceeded to take control over earth's affairs and even suppressed the direction of God's sponsored Biblical Civilization. The story of the Nephilimites is, at best, bizarre. It's no wonder people, in general, would

refute it. But the Bible does give this inference when heavenly beings, angelic in nature, came to earth, assumed human form, had offspring called Nephilms which conducted a reign of terror and universal corruption. Instead of improving the human condition, it did the opposite.

If the extraterrestrial beings tampered with the human genes, they surely must have tampered with animal genes. The fallen angels succeeded in developing animal cultures quite different than the original creative design. This could be an explanation of the large dinosaurs and other giant animals that once roamed the earth. Isaac Asimov in his book of facts<sup>2</sup> cites some dinosaurs in early times were as small as hens. Bones and artifacts have been found to support this. This would sustain the theory that the huge dinosaurs and other large creatures were made large by the experimentation of the extraterrestrial creatures from outer space. This outer space intelligence would not have any difficulty tampering with the genetics of a hen's egg of small dinosaurs to make them abnormally large. As this intelligence succeeded in making humans into giants, they also succeeded in making animals huge, hybrid as they may have been. Tyrannosaurus Rex was not the largest carnivorous reptile of the dinosaur period. The largest was the Brachiosaurus weighing as much as 50 tons. These huge animals were mostly vegetarians despite their carnivorous appearance. The Tyrannosaurus Rex was the exception. The most intelligent of all the dinosaurs was probably no more intelligent than an ordinary chicken. Since these huge animals required enormous foliage for food and an equivalent amount of oxygen for their large lungs, any changes in the environment which reduces the foliage or oxygen would radically threaten the existence of their lives. The breakage of the water ring around the earth and the release of gases in the environment during the subsequent flood seriously affected these huge animals and brought about their demise.

Thus evil and immorality were the practice of the Nephilms. The civilization before the flood could literally be called "the civilization of the extraterrestrial beings". These beings literally oppressed an inferior race. Von Daniken was not too far off when he described this ancient period and activity as "the Chariots of the Gods". As evil waxed worse and worse and the new emerging Nephilimic Civilization became wholly corrupt, God made a decision to destroy this civilization through a huge deluge and a flood. It was to be the destruction of all flesh under the sky which had the breath of life. Noah and his family was singled out along with selected animals from the Adamic stock to continue the Biblical Civilization. The account of the extraterrestrial beings gone wayward with the human family helps us understand why God decreed the deluge. It was to wipe and erase an immoral and corrupt civilization. The

unexpected arrival of the flood explains why the ruins, statues and construction projects were in a state of progression when suddenly they were abruptly left as they were.

#### BOATBUILDING AND ANIMAL HUSBANDRY

“And God said unto Noah...make an ark of gopher wood with rooms...you shall pitch it within and without...and take every living thing two of every sort...and of the clean take by sevens.” Genesis 6:13-14; 7:1-4

Many civilizations around the globe have preserved in their records the ancient story about a cataclysmic flood that destroyed everything except one chosen man and his family. It has become folklore among many cultures and countries. Many people, today, believe that the very universality of such an episode confirms it must be based on fact. More than two billion people, Jews, Christians and Muslims, know the story and believe it to be true. Half the earth's population is still talking about an incident that happened 5,000 years ago. The search for artifacts and archaeological evidence continues since Noah and the flood is among the Bible's most cherished episodes.

Some sightings of Noah's Ark at about the 6,300 feet and the 14,000 feet level of Mount Ararat has been reported. In 1833, a Turkish expedition confirmed an early report of a mountain shepherd's sighting, one day of a wooden ship. The Turkish expedition described a wooden bow of a ship which in the summer season stuck out of the southern glacier. In World War I, a Russian pilot reported seeing from his plane the wreckage of a large boat on the southern side of Mount Ararat. Czar Nicholas II sent a search party to gather more evidence. Photographs were reported taken. All these records are lost. In World War II, sightings from American and Russian pilots have been reported stimulating a great deal of expedition interest. One documented expedition in 1955 by a Fernand Navaura claims to recover a piece of wood from the ark. Dating tests reveal the age range of 1,500 BC to 3,000 BC. In a recent research report<sup>3</sup> containing a comprehensive summary from 1856 to now over 200 people in 23 separate sightings have been observed and reported of parts of Noah's Ark on Mount Ararat. From this growing evidence, the Ark appears to remain on the mountain. Another report from an American archaeologist, Ron Wyatt, discloses in an unpublished report that he has seen the ark. This is after 25 expeditions to the site in Eastern Turkey. He managed to bring back a black petrified piece of wood from the ark. It was wood without growth rings. This is due to the lack of moisture and rain in the antediluvian timber. Seasonal variations did not exist in that period.

Noah and his family were chosen by God to survive the flood because they were not a part of the corruption and violence that existed in the secular Cainite Civilization. God decided to sustain the movement of the Biblical Civilization through Noah. Little is known about this family except their faith in God and their resistance to the corruption of the day. Corruption of the day is intended to mean a complete and total breakdown of human society which no longer can perpetuate itself free of disease, disorder, depravity and distress. God's decision to restart the human race was based on the continuation and even escalation of evil practices that in itself would have stifled its own existence with pain and misery. Thus, God's decision was a blessing in disguise to remove those conditions that eventually would have come about with uncontrollable affliction. It's hard to think and picture this type of depravity in existence at that time. Details are lacking. To surmise a few: hybrid human beings, half-human half-angelic incapable of reproduction; homosexuality to accommodate the intense sex drive; uncontrollable violence and killing as there was no government nor police to restrain criminals; human slavery as Nephilms were physically and intellectually superior to humans (this may have been the first introduction of slavery in the ancient past); and idol and polytheistic worship as substitutes in place of the Biblical God. Noah was commissioned to preach to the people to stop their sinful practices and reform their ways. His preaching was in vain. The Nephilms continued their sinful ways. Noah preached one hundred and twenty years before the flood would come. (Genesis 6:3) This infers it took 120 years to build the ark.

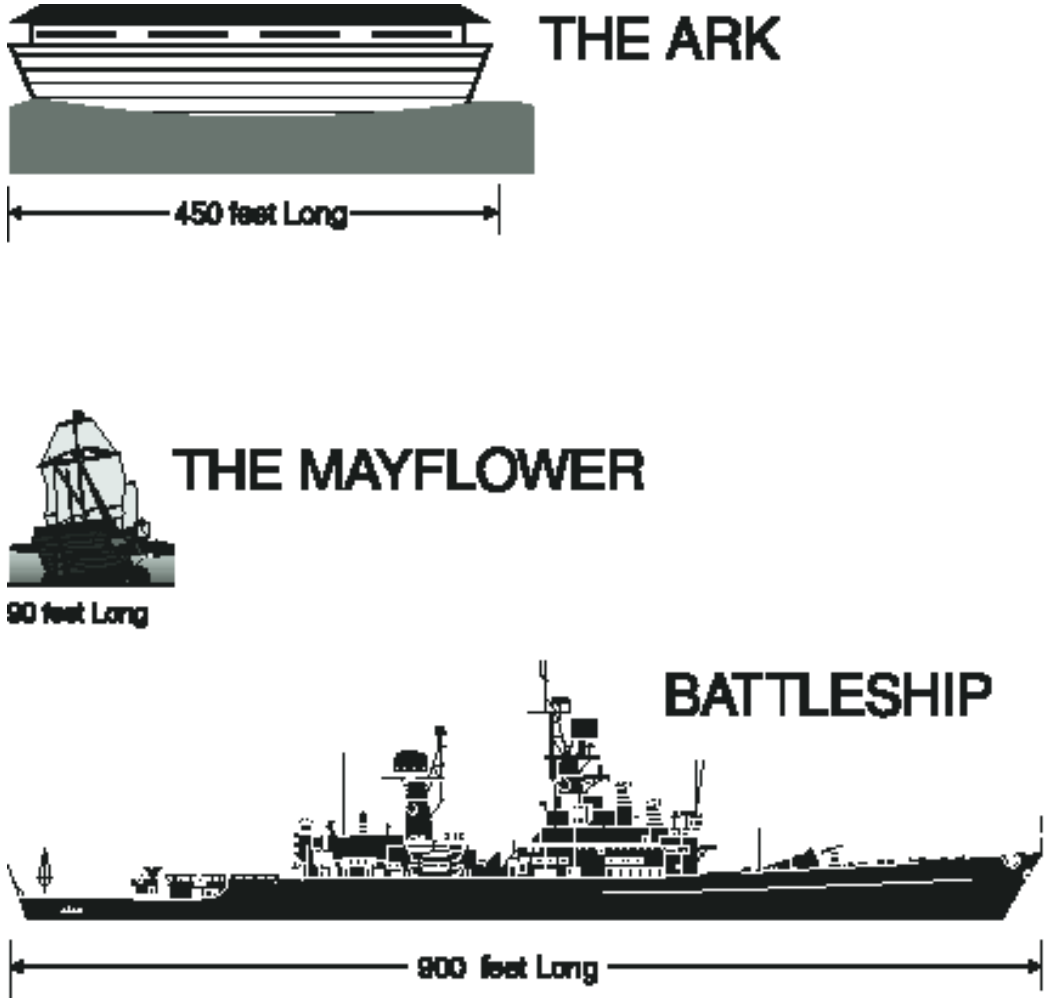
The construction of the ark was greater than any marine vessel of the ancient world. It was the first of its kind, with decks and compartment, a door, a window and waterproof sealing. The Seventeenth Century Jesuit Kircher<sup>4</sup> sketched a possible floor plan of the ark. This is seen in Figure 6.3.





The ark itself was a box-like structure in the shape of a parallelogram making it exceedingly stable and unable to capsize. The design and construction of the ark must have been supervised by a heavenly guide since such a huge vessel had never been constructed. Perhaps 90 percent of the ark’s capacity was utilized for carrying it’s animal passengers. The remaining was used for people, food, water and miscellaneous tools. If we assume one cubic is equal to eighteen inches, the ark was 450 feet long, 75 feet wide and 45 feet high. (Genesis 6:15) This capacity of 1,518,750 cubic feet would be able to carry 15,255 tonnage for floatation. The tonnage falls within the tonnage range of the small modern ocean going vessels of today. See Figure 6.4

**Figure 6.4 Comparing Proportionate Sizes of Vessels with the Ark**



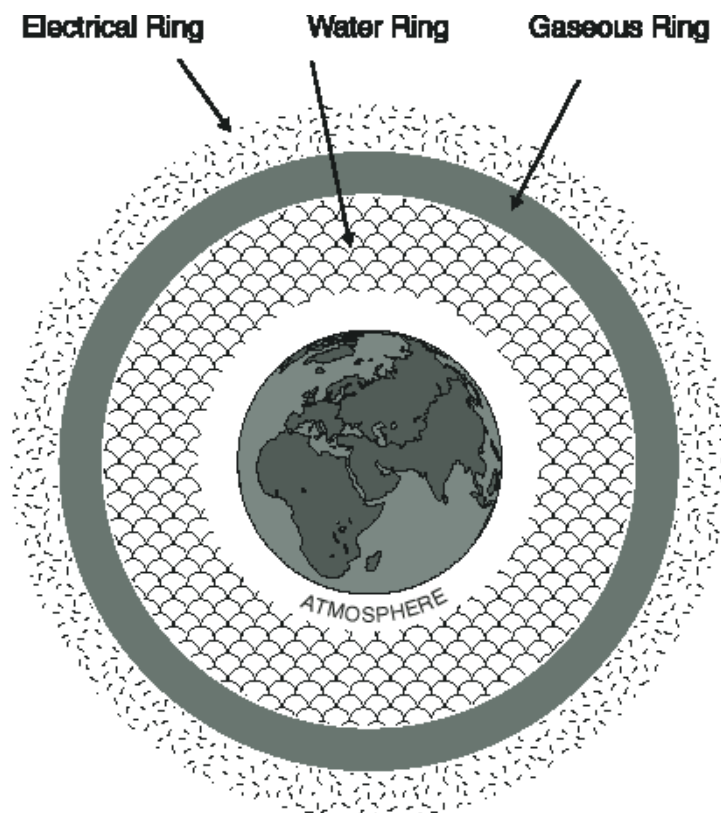
Noah and his family of eight developed farming as a way of life. Farm work for the new family was hard. But opportunity emerged to revolutionize practices from the pre-flood society. Since the seasons of spring, summer, fall and winter were now operating in the environment, sowing and harvesting changed to a formal annual cycle. Raising

of animal herds and domestication of eatable animals was accelerated. Property boundaries to herd animals and property rights to define land ownership were formalized. Feasts and festivals developed around the cultivation and harvesting of crops. Farm practices enhanced the farmers and their workers with a personal sense of worth. “He who tills his land will have plenty.” Agriculture was the economic force behind daily life. The ancient Biblical farmer introduced many labor saving devices such as agricultural terraces and harnessing runoff and rain water. They also accelerated animal breeding, field crop rotation and the growing of trees. The value of farming and it’s needed skills for humankind’s existence was paramount.

#### EARTH’S WATER CANOPY AND THE GREENHOUSE EFFECT

“And the waters prevailed exceedingly upon the earth.” Genesis 7:19 “The fountains of the deep and the windows of heaven were stopped and the rain was restrained.” Genesis 8:2

The water ring that existed suspended in the atmosphere, was one of the sources of water that caused the cataclysmic flood. See Figure 6.5.



**Figure 6.5 Water Canopy Surrounded Earth**

This water canopy is inferred in Genesis 1:6-8. "And God said, let there be a firmament (atmosphere) in the midst of waters and let it divide the waters from the waters." This upper atmosphere reservoir surrounded the entire earth. As a ring around the earth, it created a greenhouse effect resulting in a tropical temperature accelerating the growth of plants and trees. Geologists have confirmed this tropical forest growth layer. This tropical climate might explain the enormously sized trees, vegetation and animals which have been the basis of oil reserves held deep in the earth. The watery canopy shielded out some of the harmful radiation coming from the cosmos. When the water canopy fell in the form of rain, the incoming radiation caused the life span of people to experience a rapid drop. The cosmic radiation could also explain its harmful effects on genes. This resulted in a variation of bird and animal life quite different from before the flood. It's conceivable that the incoming radiation from the cosmos may have altered the emission rate of radioactive carbon-14 to such an extent as to seriously affect the time measurement of radiocarbon materials prior to the flood.

The planned collapse of the water canopy released tons of water in the form of rain. The oceans, the seas and the lakes were filled and overflowing in capacity. This brought about the cataclysmic flood. When the water ring was removed from the upper atmosphere, the changing seasons of spring, summer, fall and winter appeared. It also opened up weather conditions of thunderstorms, snow and heat waves.

In recent times the "greenhouse effect" of the Twentieth Century has been top science news. Adequate temperature records go back to the 1800's that the earth is getting warmer and warmer especially in the polar regions. Researchers at the United Nations predict the average global temperature will increase 3 to 6 degrees fahrenheit within the next 100 to 200 years. It may even speed up! The average temperature in 1880 was 58 degrees fahrenheit. In 1990 it was 59.5 degrees. By 2000 AD the average global temperature can rise to as much as 61 to 64 degrees fahrenheit. The cause of temperature rise is not clear. Many researchers suspect that a buildup in the atmosphere of carbon dioxide particles forms a dense particle canopy or carbon dioxide ring. This canopy acts like a blanket to trap heat close to the earth's surface. This is creating the greenhouse effect. The trend has produced increasingly higher temperatures with the lowest recorded annual snow fall in the Northern Hemisphere. Scientists have indicated planting trees would absorb much of the carbon dioxide. This would result in the growth of larger trees and plants since carbon dioxide is food for plant life. Trees are storage "sinks" that consume large quantities of carbon dioxide.

The parallel between the water canopy before the flood and the carbon dioxide canopy of today is noteworthy. Both result in a greenhouse effect producing a tropical climate throughout the earth. Both result in huge trees, vegetation and plants. With the water canopy, animals were huge and man's life span was in the hundreds of years. With the carbon dioxide canopy, is it possible that animals will be huge and man's life span be extended into the hundreds of years as it was before the flood? We see today, amazing as it seems, most of the total people who have ever lived since the beginning of time beyond the age of 65 are alive today. What's more, the average person who lives to be 65 today, can expect to live beyond 85 if they have no serious illness. Life expectancy originally was high. It dropped during the intervening years. Today, it is on the rise. If there is a prediction that will hold true, it will be the reforestation of trees throughout the planet to bring the carbon dioxide ring to a state of equilibrium. This reforestation will be conducted by the people of the world. Perhaps, tax abatement incentives will be given through government policies for the reforestation of planet earth. The amount of carbon dioxide in the atmosphere in the 19th Century was .027 percent. Since that time, it has been increasing steadily. By 1958, carbon dioxide made up .030 percent of the atmosphere. In 1988, it was .035 percent and still going up. The increase does not seem like much, but it's enough to keep the earth growing distinctly warmer. This is a good thing. If there were no carbon dioxide in the atmosphere, the earth would be in a perpetual ice age. The fear that the rise will continue without limit is unfounded, since an equilibrium will take place between the ability of water to absorb carbon dioxide and the release of this into the atmosphere. Encouraging the growth of forests, the cutting down of the use of oil and coal along with other pollutants and the greater use of solar energy are activities that can help bring about the equilibrium.

#### THE CATAclysmic FLOOD

“Noah was six hundred years old when the flood waters was upon the earth.” Genesis 7:6

The incessant torrential downpour of 40 days and 40 nights from the water canopy, came upon the earth in the approximate time of 4,000 BC. It was an earth-changing and world-restructuring event. The Biblical record describes it as the “fountains of the great deep broke and the windows of heaven opened up.” This would infer a large volume of water came from earth's aquifers as well as from the canopy above. This would also suggest the associated earthquakes split opened the earth where continents and islands submerged and other continents and islands emerged. It was an upheaval as well as a flood. There are indications today where the current land mass and

areas were joined together in one huge continent. Lakes and seas may have been the result of waters from the flood than from any other cause.

This earth-changing and world-restructuring event occurred as a result of God's interference. It was a deluge never before experienced nor since. It was a flood of immense proportions. The water prevailed upon the earth for 150 days (5 months). The flood began in the 600th year of Noah's life reaching the highest point on the 40th day. The ark floated. It was the repository of life for eight humans and the represented species of animals. After 150 days the ark came to rest on solid ground - on Mount Ararat - now known as eastern Turkey. The commencement of the rain is dated the 17th day of the 2nd month of the 600th year of Noah's life. (Genesis 7:11) The rain stopped 40 days later which would be the 26th day of the 3rd month. The ark rested on the Mount Ararat on the 17th day of the 7th month, 150 days from the time Noah entered the ark and the rain started. The flood waters receded continually until the first day of the 10th month. Four birds were released shortly after to see total land appeared. Noah left the ark on the 27th day of the 2nd month in his 601st year. Noah was in the ark 371 days or 12.3 months.

When the water subsided, vegetation continued without permanent injury. The olive trees remained from which the dove brought its token. The great flood was an epoch in the life of humanity, but also it was a significant stage of the life of the earth itself. Great changes occurred in the earth's surface as well as the atmosphere. Atlantis, for example, may be connected in some special way with the catastrophe of the flood. It was a continent mantle that went down as other mantles rose up.

The flood was indeed a sin flood or a flood of judgment. God judged the first Cainite Civilization as unworthy of its continuance. It was also a flood of deliverance for the Biblical Civilization. God judged Noah and his family as worthy to continue the mission and objectives of the Biblical Civilization which was conceived and initiated in the Garden of Eden. The "end of all flesh" was not to be an eternal condemnation, but rather a temporary control to keep the course of human experience within certain bounds. Noah's life deliverance includes in it that of the whole human race.

A question is often raised, was Noah's flood a world-wide disaster, covering all the mountains, five miles deep or a regional one that covered all of the then known civilized world in the fertile crescent? The debate over this issue has been as universal as the scope of the flood itself. Bernard Ramm<sup>5</sup> provides persuasive reasoning for keeping the flood regional in spite of a world-wide rain deluge of forty days and forty nights. In other words, the water canopy

surrounding the earth which fell produced a rain deluge throughout the earth, but the flood was confined to the region where humans live. See Figure 6.6.



**Figure 6.6 Probable Area of the Flood**

Ramm's reasons for this view are many. If the flood were world-wide with mountain height depth, where would five miles of water drain off or go? Ramm says, eight times more water than we now have would be needed to cover the mountains. The record states the mountains were covered, but that meant they were covered with the deluge, but not submerged. Besides if all the mountains were submerged, the weight of the water would have altered the weight of the earth. This conceivably would dislocate and disturb the earth's orbit around the sun. There was a good deal of water in the water ring, but not enough to submerge everything to the height of mountains. Although it is a fact that if the water vapor in the earth's atmosphere condensed to liquid water at the same time, there would be enough water to cover the United States to about 25 feet deep. But this would be regional and limited in its depth. Further, it is not mountain height depth. Also, the mixing of fresh and salt water would mean the destruction of many marine

species. Saltwater fish would die from the large influx of fresh water and freshwater fish would die from the contaminating saltwater. The huge pressure of five miles of water on top of existing water would certainly crush most marine life as well as vegetation life on land. If the flood was universal, earth's ecology would be seriously crushed to a point that God would need to recreate the original creative days to restore the habitat for man's living needs. This would require stupendous miracles greater than the flood itself. As for the ark landing on Mount Ararat, the Biblical account does describe heavy torrential rain as if the water canopy opened a gate in the atmosphere. The underneath water aquifers moved violently producing cataclysmic geologic transformations. These transformations caused large sections of land masses to depress into cavities and in other places to rise forming new mantle land slabs. This shifting and uplifting of the earth's crust generated huge tidal waves and water surges. It's these waves and surges that lifted and moved the ark to a high elevation that eventually landed the ark on Mount Ararat. The region suggested of the spread of the flood coincides with the desert sands of the region affected. Although the desert has been and continues to be for lack of rainfall over the years, yet the desert sands had their start when the flood subsided as it destroyed much of the vegetation. The barren desert sands of the Middle East and North Africa as seen in Figure 6.6 is located approximately on latitude 30°. There are little or no sand deserts at this latitude in the United States, China and India confirming the sand remnant of the Middle East had its start by a regional flood in the same area.

Another question has often been raised of how was Noah able to assemble animals in pairs in some cases by sevens from the existing animal kingdom. The Bible does not state how this was done. Two points can be suggested in response to this question. First, the number of species before the flood was much less than the recorded species we now have on record. This would mean the scope of assembling the number of animals was not as great as it may appear. The enlargement of the species after the flood came about with variations and intermixing. Second, animals came to the ark mainly prompted by divine instinct. The animals sensed that a disaster was to occur. This sense gave them direction for an escape. As for dinosaurs and other huge animals, they were destroyed by the flood.

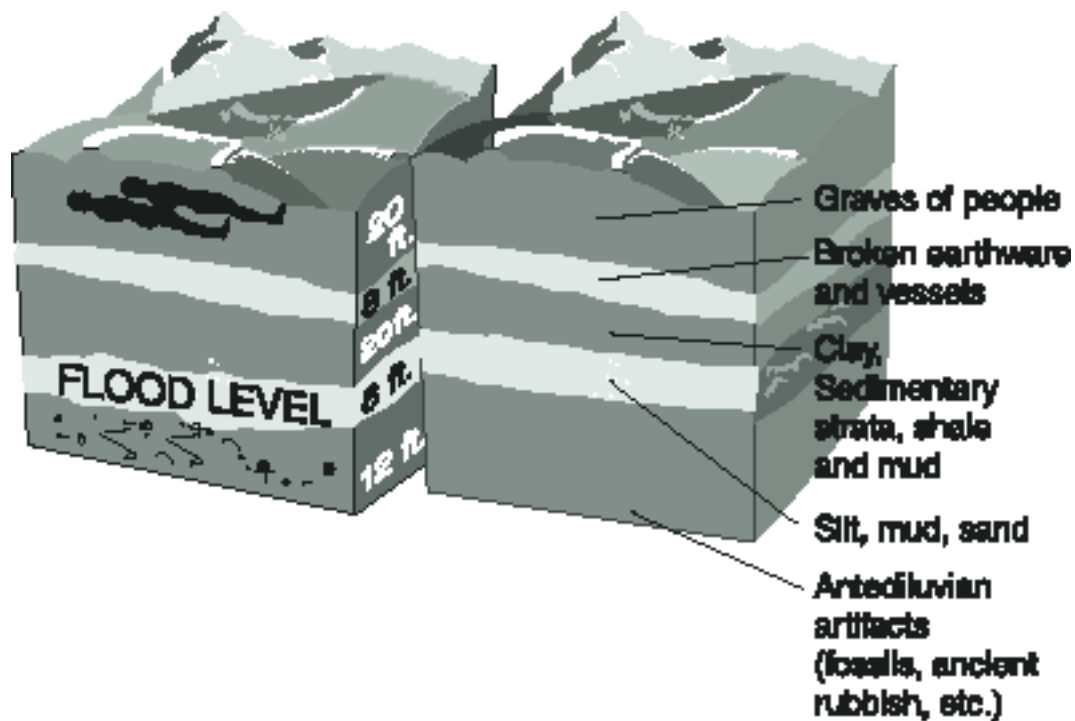
#### ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCES TO CONFIRM THE FLOOD

“The waters flooded the earth for a hundred and fifty days.” Genesis 7:24

The story of the flood has become traditional among many widely scattered cultures in many lands. Descendants of Noah as they spread out over the earth after the flood brought the memory of the flood with them. Scattered

caches of animal bones, large inland bodies of fresh waters, coal beds and oil fields and mammoth animals with grass in their stomachs found frozen in places such as Siberia adds to the testimonial evidence of the flood. These traditions do not prove the flood nor do they disprove the flood. But the testimonies are too many to ignore. There have been other confirmations: large caches of animal bones in ossiferous fissures or rents in the earth that may have been forced there during earthquakes or disruptions of the earth's surfaces; large inland bodies of water called fossil lakes are remnants of the deluge; stone implements found 53 feet below black earth deposits indicating man existed before the arrival of the water.

Archaeologists have found provoking and luring evidence of flooding in the general region of Mesopotamia or what is described as the Fertile Crescent. In 1929, the English scientist Leonard Woolley<sup>6</sup> tunneling and excavating near Ur on the Euphrates struck a layer of water deposited silt over eight feet thick. Below this layer were relics of an earlier and more primitive culture. Above it, were relics of a more advanced culture. Woolley declared a great flood swept through the region in the fourth millennium BC. Woolley found quite a clay deposit which was a settlement of two epochs. See Figure 6.7



**Figure 6.7 Woolley's Excavation Finds Flood Level**

Gonzalo Baez-Camargo<sup>7</sup> describes how the weld-blundell clay prison in 2070 BC gives eight columns a list of the kings of Summer during the third dynasty of Ur. At one place in the first column it gives a chronological reference of



the flood that swept over the earth. Langdon, MacKay and Watelin<sup>8</sup> supports the idea of the early records of Genesis and the flood that was recorded on clay tablets. These tablets were passed on through families until they came into the possession of the family of Moses. This suggests that Moses in addition to being the author of Genesis was also a compiler, coordinator and editor of the tablets that were written earlier.

Excavations at Kish, suburb of the city of Babylon and possibly part of Babylon which is one of the oldest cities of which we have a record of antiquity, uncovered a sequence of life and culture in ten or more stratifications. These excavations were made by Oxford University and the Field Museum of Chicago. Six stratifications were estimated to be more than 5,000 years old. The stratum correlated to the period 3,000-2,900 BC. It was composed entirely of fine sand and clay, one and one-half feet thick with no trace of sea shells or of stratum levels both above or below. This alluvial deposit contains various signs of life and occupation.

Cornfield and Freedman<sup>9</sup> give evidence of the Fourteenth Century BC with twelve large clay tablets of the epic of King Gilgamesh found in a Canaanite stratum of a Megiddo community. This is a support of the flood in geological times. These tablets give the Babylonian account of the flood and is in close agreement with the Bible. The Gilgamesh record cites the flood disaster was in Mesopotamia approximately the fourth millennium BC. The tablets record the story of a chief god who sent a flood to destroy humanity. This god gave instructions for building an ark. This god saved a family. The flood came and the ark rested on the mountain top. The Gilgamesh narrative resembles the Biblical account. Unger<sup>10</sup> describes and compares the agreements and the disagreements between the Biblical and Babylonian Gilgamesh accounts. Here are the close agreements. Both accounts say the flood was initiated by a deity. Both accounts say the deity revealed the flood to one person who became the hero of the saga. Both accounts connect the flood with moral decay in the civilization of the time. Both accounts cite deliverance of a hero in a large boat. Both accounts describe the cause of the flood as torrential rains and underneath water movements. There are disagreements in the accounts. Both disagree in the nature and definition of the deity behind the flood. The Babylonian conception of the deity is quite a grotesque comparison. The Biblical conception is one of a holy and wise God. The Babylonian account describes quarreling, self-accusing deities, polytheistic in nature with childish disclaim over the responsibility for causing the flood. Both disagree on the moral causes of the flood. The Biblical account cites a moral judgment on the people. The Babylonian account cites the flood as a capricious game of the

Gods. In any event, the Gilgamesh record, a secular non-Biblical source confirms the flood episode lending credence to archaeological evidence of this ancient Biblical phenomena.

A more recent view offered by Robert Schoch, British Archaeologist involves the Great Sphinx of Giza. Tradition has it the Sphinx was built at the same time as the Great Pyramid approximately 2,500 BC. But Schoch after two decades of research is convinced the Sphinx was not built during the age of the Pharaohs, but in fact many years earlier. Several observations of his leads him to believe this. For one, the deep vertical fissures and shallow caves have been eroded by heavy rains. Rains that are not common in the desert style of environment. These rains have never been experienced before. Heavy moisture has seeped into the bedrock and subsurfaces of the Sphinx causing mineralogical and structural changes. Seismic monitors have even picked up cavities in the bedrock. This is not normal in the construction of a huge and heavy edifice. This would suggest a great deal of water reached the Sphinx, possibly the flood, to do this kind of damage. Thereby, the head of the Sphinx is disproportionately small for it's massive body suggesting it may have been recarved and thus trimmed from an original construction. These observations may add to the evidence of the existence of the flood and the damage the flood made to the Sphinx built before the flood. Schoch even raises the question of where was the rest of the culture and society which built the Sphinx in the first place. Schoch, in his theory, may have uncovered a significant find confirming two civilizations, one before which built the Sphinx and one after which built the Pyramid with a significant rain and flood period between.

Another British Archaeologist George Smith<sup>11</sup> who in 1845 excavated in the ancient city of Ninevah and brought to England 20,000 clay tablets and fragments of tablets with cuneiform inscriptions. He became quite an expert on cuneiform script translations. In one clay tablet, he translated the following expression, "the Mountain of Nisir stopped the ship. I sent forth a dove and it left. The dove went and turned, but a resting place it did not find so it returned." Smith recognized that these words resembled the Biblical text strikingly similar to Genesis. Smith's discovery created a major stir among the scholars. Before this time, it was assumed the Babylonian traditions of the flood came from the Genesis account during their captivity. The tablet was dated before the Babylonian captivity providing independent verification of the Biblical saga.

The flood traditions and it's historical evidences can only have come from a common source. The great deluge appears to have impressed the minds of the many survivors who handed down to their children the concepts and the

historical details. Modern humans either have forgotten the story or have relegated it to myth. The lesson seems forgotten that God's past destruction of the world by water because of the degrading conditions of civilization could be a warning that in the future, fire may bring about the destruction of the present civilization. It happened in the past, it could happen in the short range future.

#### POST FLOOD CHANGES

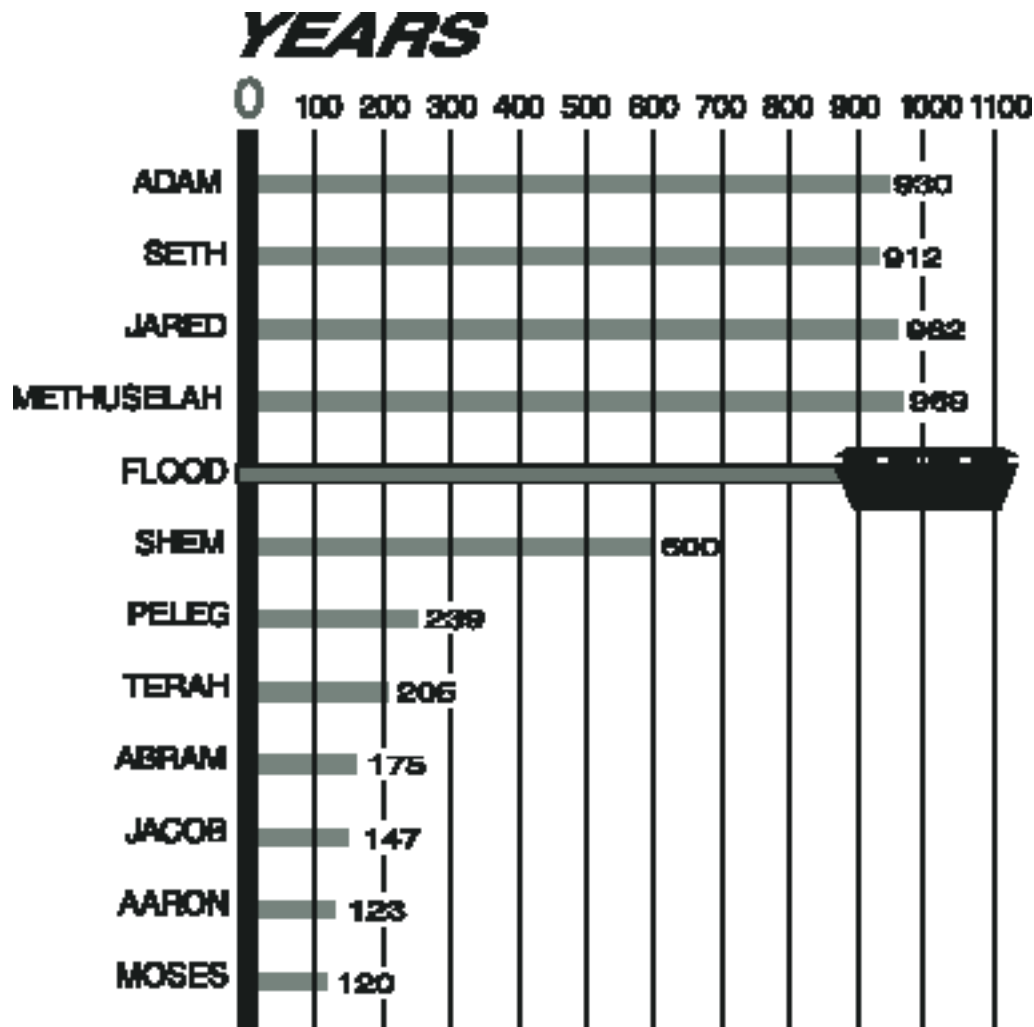
“I do set my bow in the cloud and it shall be a token of a covenant between me and the earth.” Genesis 9:13

Prior to the flood, the water cycle did not exist. Everything was watered by the greenhouse effect where dew and precipitation fell from the water ring. Streams and rivers were fed by the underneath water aquifers of earth. Once the water canopy fell, the water cycle began as a replacement for watering the earth. The sun evaporated the water from the oceans which formed the clouds. These clouds were moved by the prevailing westelies. As some point in terms of temperature and pressure, water precipitated as rain. The rain ran off into streams and rivers back to the oceans. The sun again evaporated the water and the cycle continued. The rainbow was in existence prior to the flood. But it was a beautiful phenomena shining straight down from the heavens when the sun's rays fell on the precipitation dew. This was changed. God gave to Noah and his progeny a sign and covenant that he would never destroy the world again by water. To seal this promise, the vertical rainbow became a bow. The colors of the bowed rainbow are the result of the decomposition of the sun's light as it passes through the globular drops of water. The miraculous sign was the bow introduced in the rainbow.

Another major change resulting from the flood was the longevity or life span of people. The Antediluvians lived significantly long lives. Methuselah lived the longest, almost a thousand years. Several factors were described in an earlier section which promoted a longer life span. But these factors changed. For one, the water canopy no longer gave a filtering effect against cosmic radiation. For another, ozone layers developed. For still another, the tropical climate caused by the greenhouse effect was gone. For still another, the vegetarian diet practiced in pre-flood conditions was changed drastically to now include meat. Finally, vegetables and plants were seriously affected so that nutriments that existed in pre-flood conditions were severely reduced in the post-flood period. Also higher atmospheric pressure could be added to these factors of change. If the atmosphere were twice that of today it is possible for very heavy objects to lift off or become airborne. The lighter the atmosphere, the more difficult for

heavy objects to become airborne. Hence, the change in atmospheric pressure most likely affected in a direct way all of the factors described above in the life span of people. Comparing life spans before and after the flood is seen in Figure 6.8. There have been claims of those in modern times of exceeding the 120 year life span limit after the flood.

(Genesis 6:3)



**Figure 6.8 Comparing Life Span Before and After the Flood (partial)**

Some reports claim people have reached 120 to 150 years of age or even longer. Not one of these reports hold up when closely examined. Many people do live to 100 and slightly beyond. The oldest human on record with reliable documentary support was a woman from New York City. She lived 113 years and 214 days.

Fermentation of fruit juices such as grape juice into wine was still another change in the post-flood period. Following the tradition of his family, Noah spent the rest of his life with agricultural pursuits. In particular, he planted a vineyard. Noah always drank large quantities of grape juice. However, the atmospheric change both

pressure and temperature reduces the amount of oxygen in the juices. In the pre-flood period, the water canopy created a higher pressure which results in a higher oxygen content in the juices. The reduced oxygen content caused carbohydrates to decompose to become fermented. Grape juice turns to wine. Noah with his heavy drinking did not understand nor foresee the fermentation process. With this heavy drinking of grape juice which became wine, he became intoxicated. (Genesis 9:21) The record describes Ham laughing and mocking his naked father in the intoxicated condition. It was an incident of disrespect. Ham's two brothers, on the other hand covered his father's nakedness. This illustrates that anyone, including Noah, even though a righteous man, blameless and one that walked with God can fall into sin. But Noah fell into this because he did not know the changes that occurred to cause fermentation of fruit juices.

Still another change in the post-flood period was the introduction of the seasons - winter, spring, summer, fall. Prior to the flood, two factors prevented the seasons even though the earth spun on its axis while rotating around the sun. The first is the tilting of the earth from 0° declination to 23 1/3 degrees. The second, was the removal of the greenhouse effect caused by the water canopy. These changes affect the angle of the sun's rays and thus the heat received from the sun at a given time of the year. The heat differences are evident in the temperate regions of the earth, but least evident near the equator or the polar regions. The seasons exist because the earth's axis of rotation which was level to the plane of the earth's path around the sun was now inclined. What caused the tilting of the earth is not clear. It could have been the catastrophic effect of the weight of the flood waters or it could have been an intervention by God. Most likely it was both. This change is to be a permanent change. "While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, cold and heat, summer and winter and day and night shall not cease." (Genesis 8:22)

#### NOAH'S COVENANT AND LIVING STYLE

"And God said unto Noah, this is the token of the covenant which I have established between me and all flesh upon the earth for perpetual generations."

Genesis 9:1-16

A covenant is a promise, a compact an alliance or a contract that depends upon conditions or terms agreed-upon by two parties. If the first party meets the terms of the second party, the second party is obligated to meet the terms of the first party. Throughout scriptures, several covenants were made between God and man. These covenants were termed sacred covenants. The doctrine of covenants underlines the whole theocratic system contained in the Bible

between God and man. The covenants were intended to sustain and keep the Biblical Civilization moving forward. From Adam to Noah, three were formalized: the Edenic Covenant, (Genesis 2:15-17); the Adamic Covenant, (Genesis 1:28-30, 3:15-24); and the Noahic Covenant, (Genesis 8:22, 9:1-17). Covenants after Noah were the Abrahamic Covenant, Law Covenant, Promised Land Covenant, Davidic Covenant, Grace Covenant, and the New Covenant. More will be said of these covenants later in this book. We have seen in Chapter 3 how covenants establish a religious relationship with God. Covenants are forerunners of laws as well! The difference between a covenant and a law is a covenant is between two parties with one party enforcing whereas laws are between two parties with a third party enforcing (government). Many ancient documents show how wide the concept of covenants or contracts had permeated civilizations. They were made between tribes, states and nations. Summeria, Egypt, Babylon, Assyria and subsequent nations and cultures perpetuated covenants and treaties. Treaties have become international law where two or more nations agree to regulate relations among themselves. The United States has formed treaty pledges to defend 42 countries throughout the world with 300 major military bases to ensure this defense. Russia between 1917 and 1957 entered into 1,800 bilateral and 300 multilateral treaties with 80 countries. No question, the concept of treaties or covenants was a pre-mosaic idea originating with Adam and perpetuated through Noah. Today's practices of covenants range from real estate deeds for land purchase to marriage covenants with terms for dissolution.

Noah's Covenant reaffirmed the movement of the Biblical Civilization. It revealed that God wills that all people live, but can only live on His terms. God makes covenants with His creatures to keep the universe in harmony. Breaking covenants are transgressing laws. Justice emerges and is in balance when two parties agree to the terms. This is how justice is created. When two parties agree on terms, a parity is established. Default on either party creates an inequality which destroys the justice. There is a difference between possession of life and the right to life. Compliance with Noah's covenants upheld the right to life. The Noahic Covenant delineated the conditions of life of the Biblical Civilization and instituted the principles of human government to curb the outbreak of transgressing laws. The elements of Noah's Covenant were as follows:

1. *Capital Punishment.* Man is responsible for the sanctity of human life - life for a life. "Whoever sheddeth man's blood by man shall his blood be shed." (Genesis 9:5-6)

2. *Meat Diet.* Man a vegetarian before the flood can now eat meat without restrictions. “Everything shall be food for living.” (Genesis 9:3)
3. *Environmental Seasons.* Cycles of winter and summer will continue perpetually. “While the earth remaineth summer and winter shall not cease.” (Genesis 8:22)
4. *Flood Catastrophe.* Man need not fear future destruction by flood. “The waters shall no more become a flood to destroy all flesh.” (Genesis 9:15)
5. *Semites Favored.* Shem’s descendants will be chosen to perpetuate the Biblical Civilization. “Blessed be the Lord God of Shem and Canaan will be his servant.” (Genesis 9:26)
6. *Population Growth.* Man to engage in sexuality and reproduction. “Be fruitful and multiply and fill the earth.” (Genesis 9:1)
7. *Man’s Dominance.* Man to have dominion over all creatures. “The fear of you and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the earth.” (Genesis 9:2)
8. *Eating Blood.* Man prohibited in eating blood. “But the flesh with the life thereof which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat.” (Genesis 9:4)
9. *Japhethites Privilege.* Descendants of Japheth will prosper. “God shall enlarge Japheth.” (Genesis 9:27)

Why was Noah favored to perpetuate the Biblical Civilization? The account reveals “Noah was a righteous man, blameless, among the people of his time, and he walked with God.” We note the expression “He walked with God” was said of Enoch. To walk with God meant his lifestyle was in conformity with the values and standards of the movement of the Biblical Civilization. God saw in this man the prospect of continuing His plan for an eventual Biblical Civilization on planet earth.

#### ANCIENT CODES COMPARED: NOAHIC, ASSYRIA, HAMMURABI, HITTITE

“These are the families of the sons of Noah, after their generations, in their nations and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood.”

Genesis 10:32

Ancient cuneiform tablets and stones recorded and preserved codes, statutes and laws of ancient civilizations. These codes have been the legacy from the past. Four codes<sup>12</sup> are of special interest - the Noahic Code, the Assyrian Laws, the Hammurabi Code, and the Hittite Codes. The Mosaic Code is not included since that was introduced much

later in time. This will be taken up in the Judaic stage of the Biblical Civilization. These codes were maintained in tablets. The Noahic Code was preserved in the Biblical, Talmudic, and Halalea as well. A question that is often posed concerns the comparison of the codes and their interactive influence. Of special interest is the influence of the Noahic code on subsequent civilizations after the flood. All the codes of the ancient world have a similarity in style and point of view suggesting there was an influence of Noahic Laws on subsequent laws and even the Mosaic Laws. The chronological sequence putting Noahic Laws first would confirm this influence. William F. Aright<sup>13</sup> established without a doubt the existence and the antiquity of these laws. J. Powis Smith in his analysis considered the Mosaic Laws far surpassing all the previous and contemporary laws.

Our inquiry here is to outline the basic elements of the code and to see the influence Noahic Law had on the others. The overall view of all the codes will reveal the development and progress that occurred over time to reach the Mosaic Laws. The Noahic Laws had an enduring legal and moral influence on subsequent cultures. W. H. Boulton, famous archaeologist, noted the absence of idols and statues among the relics found in the earth's strata belonging to the post-flood era. This is seen as the influence of Noahism to the development of religions of the time. His was a forbidding of idolatry. This influence stayed for a while. Here is a summary of each of the codes.

#### 1. *Noahic Laws (4344 BC)*

These are also known as the Seven Laws of Noah. a) *Justice*. This prohibits any violation of the laws and enacts penalties. The conduct of government is established which protects social order and dispenses punishment. b) *Blasphemy*. This prohibits cursing and swearing to and about God. It also prohibits taking oaths or vows on behalf of God. c) *Idolatry*. This prohibits the worship of idols, materials, relics, planets and stars. Humankind must worship one God. d) *Illicit intercourse*. This prohibits adultery, incest, sodomy, bestiality and fornication. These break up the family in which children need a mother and father. e) *Homicide*. This prohibits murder and suicide. The life of every person is to be protected. f) *Theft*. This prohibits taking another's goods. Everyone has to right to property, hence no stealing. g) *Eating*. This prohibits eating animal parts severed from a living animal. Animals too have rights. Cruelty to animals is forbidden. These laws were minimal requirements that God required to set up and conduct a civilization. Historically, these demands were religious obligations of all people to satisfy their conduct toward God.



Later, as these influences reached other nations and people, they were legal obligations to satisfy Government and the laws of the land.

## 2. *Assyrian Code (18th Century BC)*

Ashur was the name of the capital of the country located in the western branch of the Tigris River. Ninevah was founded long before Ashur. Assyrian Laws were much more drastic than any other laws preserved from the ancient east. They were an attempt to stamp out crime and raise the moral standards. The Assyrians were more interested in military achievements than in the arts and codes of peace. The Eshnunna Code of the early 18th Century BC gives insight into their codified legal concepts. a) *Theft*. Prohibits the wrongful taking of another's good. b) *Illicit Sex*. Prohibits sexual perversions of any kind. c) *Homicide*. Prohibits murder and suicide. d) *Justice*. Prohibits any violation of the laws and enacts punishments. The Assyrian Laws preceded the Hammurabi Code which no doubt influenced its style, content and enforcements. The Assyrian Code had far more drastic penalties for minor offenses as compared to other codes.

## 3. *Hammurabi Code (17th Century BC)*

Babylonian King Hammurabi listed 282 rulings on a wide range of criminal and civil issues that regulated everyday life. Five of the 282 rulings were direct prohibitions and the remaining 277 were conditional regulations. The following are broad categories of the code. a) *Justice*. 1-5, offenses against the administration of justice and false accusations. b) *Theft*. 6-25, offenses against property such as stealing and robbery. c) *Regulations*. 26-K, offenses governing rent, lease and damages. d) *Trade Commerce*. L-126, offenses of loans, debts and deposits. e) *Illicit Sex*. 127-194, offenses of marriage, family, sexual perversions. f) *Homicides*. 195-214, offenses of assaults, rape, violence, killing, mugging, ambush. g) *Regulations*. 215-240, offenses regulating physicians, barbers and builders. h) *Agriculture*. 241-267, offenses of agricultural workers and misuse of equipment. i) *Wage Regulations*. 268-277, offenses of wages and fee rates. j) *Slave Sales*. 278-282, offenses of the sales of slaves. These codified laws gave insight into the social, religious and economic structure in united Babylon. Women were by no means without rights. Though a man could divorce his wife at will, he was obligated to return her dowry and provide for her children. The punishment for many of these items was "an eye for an eye".

## 4. *Hittite Code (15th Century BC)*

The Hittites were one of several Indo-European speaking groups who lived and controlled Anatolia. This is now known as Turkey. Anittas were the first of the Hittite rulers to adopt the title of the “Great King” indicating his imperialistic ambition. The constitution and laws were codified by King Telepinus early in the 15th Century. The following are 200 broad categories of the code: a) *Homicide*. 1-18, prohibitions against murders and suicides. b) *Justice and Theft*. 19-186, prohibitions against miscarriage of justice and wrongful taking of another’s goods. c) *Illicit Sexuality*. 187-200, prohibitions of adultery. d) *Commerce*. part II, regulations of prices for trade activity. The Hittite nation was a well organized kingdom. Its code of laws were formal and the constituency were very informed. The code had 200 paragraphs highly influenced by the Hammurabi Code. Punishment with the Hittites was milder than that of Hammurabi, Assyria or the Mosaic Law. The death penalty was seldom imposed in the Hittite Kingdom. The code was very indulgent to sexual crimes which gave them a low morality for sexual crimes.

In comparing the various codes, the Noachic Code was the first in its conception. This no doubt set up a style of both structure and content which influenced others. In fact, others emulated the precepts and the regulations. This is seen by points of resemblance in basic principles rather than details. Enforcement and punishment varied among the codes. In principle, all of them applied retaliation, but some were severe and other not so severe. Social status of women varied among the codes. It seems the Hittites handled the women more humane than their neighboring codes. In any event, the Noachic Laws did have a leadership effect on subsequent civilizations after the flood.

#### BLOODLINES AND GENEALOGIES SET IN MOTION

“Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah.” Genesis 10:1 “My spirit shall not always strive with man, his days shall be a hundred and twenty years.” Genesis 6:3

The practice of tracing genealogies continues to be a cultural interest of our day. Historically, tracing ancestry was to obtain or keep power, titles and lands among the ruling families, aristocrats and nobility. In recent times, tracing ancestry is used for legal and social advantage. This is acknowledging an offspring as a member of a patriotic or colonial society. This adds prestige. Immigrants have also fostered an interest in genealogies to establish family identities in their new lands. Legally, tracing ancestry can mean significant inheritance as property and antiques have become valuable economic commodities. Medically, tracing ancestry can help in predicting the occurrence of a

medical defect or condition. Physicians are always asking the question does your grandfather or any of your family have a common malady. Religiously, tracing ancestry was to determine the priestly lineage from a founder. The Hebrews trace lineage to Aaron. The Shiite Muslims trace lineage to Mohammed. The Mormons trace lineage to non-Mormons and with this procedure can assume salvation from the lineage. In the United States recently, 60 million Americans were absorbed with the genealogical saga of “Roots”. The story of a slave forced out of Africa to the United States. The saga involved several generations. What was fascinating about “Roots” was the tracing of varied and unexpected cultural turn of events that we often miss in understanding who we are and how we got here.

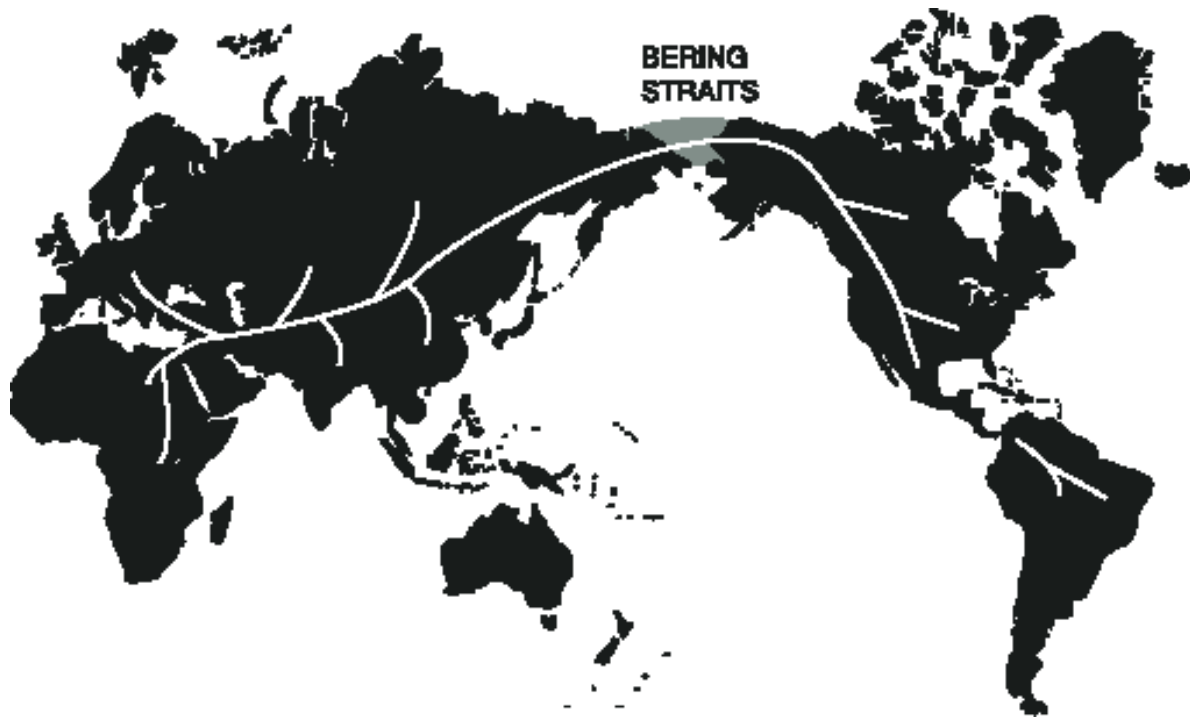
One of the themes of the Bible is the recording of names, tribes and national origins. These are elaborate lists of bizarre lineages from the first book to the last. No other book can claim this genealogy from beginning to end. Most translators identify this lineage as “begats”. Several reasons exist for this important Biblical practice. First, from these scriptures many who are connected directly with the lineage can gain an understanding of their cultural heritage. This gives insight and even explanations of their genetic and cultural propensities that otherwise would be unknown. Second, by this method, the Bible emphasizes that culture and civilization did not develop in a vacuum. Everyone’s cultural history can be seen directly or indirectly linked with that of the Biblical culture. It was a progressively changing process. Thirdly, by examining the lives of these in the genealogies, one sees they were similar individuals. They reveal the struggles and weaknesses, talents and non-latents, the poor and the prosperous. With a view of the genealogy one can see that life in Biblical times was as hard as well as easy as it is today. Fourth, and finally, by tracing genealogies one can identify the chronological linkages from generation to generation. It becomes a time line. The Biblical Civilization can be traced in this fashion. The chronology is not over! It continues!

Even though genealogies imply differences in the genetic lives, all humankind came from one common stock. This means in spite of all the observable differences, every nation of man and woman have the same potential inheritance. This is to say all humans clearly belong to one species. All humans are alike in all the fundamental characteristics that form the human nature. Members of all human groups, nationalities and races may intermarry and interproduce. Many actually do.

## ORIGINS OF RACES, NATIONS AND LANGUAGES

“The families of the sons of Noah, after their generations in their nations and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood.” Genesis 10:32

Evidence is accumulating that the first Americans probably migrated across the Bering land bridge between Alaska and Russia and then spread southward to North America as well as South America. Archaeologists have excavated many artifacts such as tools, bones, extinct animals and even human hairs that have a striking connection with those from the Asiatic community. Anthropologist Professor Laughlin<sup>14</sup>, from the University of Connecticut has spent more than three decades to support the thesis that the continents of Asia and North America were once linked. He has accumulated evidence that the Aleutians were once a 1,000 mile wide land corridor connecting North America with Asia. This would permit early man to travel from one continent to another by land. See Figure 6.9. this would make possible the scattering of culture and language which originated from the Noahic progeny. North and South American Indians had immigrants for ancestors from Northeastern Asians who crossed from Siberia to Alaska in prehistoric times and moved south in a wide distribution through the Americas. It was earlier thought that about 500 years was needed for this distribution. Now, it is felt that several thousands of years may have been necessary. An even longer period would be needed to explain the widely different languages that exist with the Indians which evolved from several original languages. The high cheek bones, slanted eyes and yellowish-brown skin of the Indians in North, Central and South America are evidences they are descendants of an Asiatic stock.



**Figure 6.9 Asiatic Migration through the Bering Straits to North and South America**

Carleton Coon<sup>15</sup>, Research Curator of General Anthropology of the University of Pennsylvania, a leading authority on race, discerns five lines of descent that can be traced back to at least 3,000 BC. These are: *Caucasoids*, which includes white Europeans to West Pakistan and much of India; *Mongoloids*, which includes Asiatics, Polynesians, American Indians and Eskimos; *Australoids*, which includes Aborigines and various Negritos of South Asia; *Negroids*, which includes Negros, Congoids and Pygmies of Africa; and *Capoids*, which includes Bushmen and Hotentots. Professor Coon cites Egyptian records, particularly artistic representations which divide humankind into a number of clearly differentiated races. How these races came into being is explained through adaptations and natural selections influenced by both environment and heredity. When a group of people stayed together long enough in one location, they tend to develop the same physical characteristics. This is more than a single feature, but a combination of features such as tall and lean, black hair and dark eyes, light complexion and blond hair, etc. Intermarriage and inbreeding among the same group would replicate these common features through succeeding generations. Thus, there are the Asian types, African types, European types, etc. Four conditions are all that is needed to develop such types: a) living in the same location over a long period of time; b) genetic inbreeding; c) eating the same foods and following the same diets; and d) separation and isolation from other groups. Customs and cultural characteristics can vary as it emerges within a racial group. When migration and travel brought racial types into contact with each



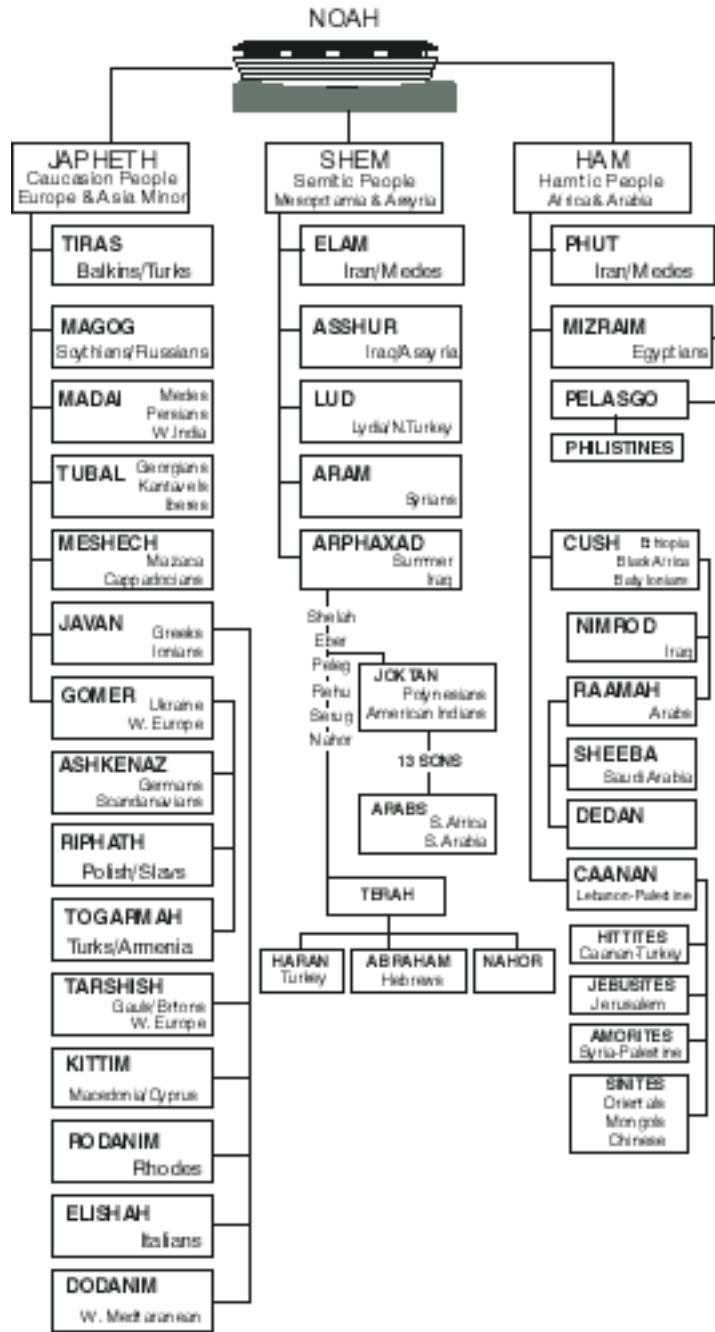


Figure 6.11 Table of Nations with Modern Day Equivalent (partial)



**Figure 6.12 Geographical Locations of the Table of Nations**

#### CLASSIFICATIONS OF THE ORIGIN OF NATIONS

“Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah: Shem, Ham and Japheth.

And unto them were sons born after the flood.” Genesis 10:1-32

A number of factors is considered in defining a nation. Language is one. When people speak the same language it creates a sense of belonging. Common language permits development of a national literature and heritage. Geography is another. When people live in the same locality, it creates a sense of community and culture. Tribe and family is still another. When people have blood-ties with similar values and genealogy, it creates a common heritage and mission. Nations, therefore, are collections of large numbers of people who generally place loyalty to the group



above any conflicting loyalties. They share language, culture, religion, politics, economics, institutions and a destiny. Nationalism emerges when this grouping is strong and share a political framework that protects people.

The three sons of Noah started the emergence of nations, the direction of languages and the distribution of migration of people throughout the world. Shem was the oldest son of Noah since the record always puts his name before the others. With this arrangement, Japheth is the youngest. Shem was the lineage from which Israel and the Jews emerged. Shem had five sons: Elam, Asshur, Arphaxad, Lud and Aram. Descendants of these five sons have started nations that continue even into today. These descendants tend to settle in the Middle East and are known as Semites. Present day rough equivalents can be seen in Figure 6.11. Interesting to note that the record shows in the days of Peleg, grandson of Shem, was a time in which the earth was divided. This could refer to the splitting up of the world's population into geographical and linguistic groups. It's also possible this implied a division of land territories by borders and tribes.

Ham is the second oldest son of Noah. Descendants tended to settle to the South and the Far East. Ham had four sons: Cush, Mizraim, Pat and Canaan. Cush was the father of Nimrod who grew to be a mighty warrior. This suggested he was an ambitious conquer of people and may have started the first empire in history. The first centers of his empire were Babylon, Erich, Akkad and Calneh in Shinar. From these possessions, Nimrod went to Assyria where he built Ninevah.

Japheth was the youngest son of Noah. The record lists seven sons to Japheth. They are Tiras, Magog, Madai, Tubal, Meshech, Javan and Gomer. Details of these various sons are left out of the record. Some details are included. The writer of Genesis included no more than the facts were available. Japheth is the father of what are called the Indo-European people. This means the people of India and the people of Europe are genealogically related. This seems to be confirmed by noting the relevance of the languages of the East with the languages of the West. Thus, we see in ancient times nations were created from groups or tribes. When these tribes settled and grew, they became city-states. The city-state which were aggressive and warrior-like, invaded other city-states, annexed them and eventually became nations. This seems to be the origin of nations. Of recent times, when nations conquered other nations, empires emerged.

The Tenth Chapter of Genesis is often overlooked as a mere list of names in the ancient world. But it is incredibly more. William Albright<sup>16</sup>, the famous Biblical Archaeologist cites the Table of Nations as the origin and

distribution of people in a genealogical framework. Albright said, “the Tenth Chapter of Genesis stands alone in ancient literature without even a remote parallel even among the Greeks”. We find in this table, major groupings of the world’s races, cultures, and languages. The names of numerous places and people are known from ancient documentary sources such as the Greeks and the Romans. Many have been verified by modern archaeology. The listing in the Tenth Chapter may be termed the oldest tabulation of nations, seventy in number. Fourteen nations were Japhetic, thirty were Hamitic and twenty-six were Shemitic. In other words, the 70 major groupings can be thought of as the origin of nations. These nations and their subsequent expansion throughout the world emerged from Noah’s three sons after the flood. Figure 6.12 locates approximately the location of people for the time of Genesis Chapter 10. Today these people have migrated, scattered and distributed throughout the world as present day nations. The original 70 nations eventually produced the 233 countries of the world today. 193 of these nations are sovereign and constitute members of the United Nations. 40 are non-sovereign countries. 21 of the total have populations under 1,000 whereas 212 nations have populations over 1,000.

The Table of Nations is a bridge between pre-history before the flood where few ancient documents are found and the after flood times of Abraham and his descendants. The groupings of people gives definition on the origins of nations before the scattering and distribution throughout the world. To be sure the table is somewhat simplistic, but nonetheless provides insight into the emergency of cultural divisions at the time.

There are several other important observations about the Table of Nations. For one, the names relate to predictions and prophecies of the rise of the Biblical Civilization that is taken up in this book. The predictions and prophecies involve the same people who exist even into today. For another, the expansion of the races can be seen migrating north to Europe, south to Africa, east through India, the Bering Strait into Alaska and down to North and South America. For still another important observation, the table provides an overview of the unity of humankind in spite of the scattering and distribution since Noah’s three sons. Thus a perspective is seen: Adam and Eve, the original progenitors; then Noah’s three sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth with their wives, the original families; then the seventy offspring with their wives creating tribes and clans. These tribes and clans as they remained in one locality near rivers, cities emerged with their unique cultural patterns. As the city-states combined either through choice or conquering non-choice, nations were formulated.

## NIMROD, TOWER OF BABEL AND LANGUAGES

“And the whole earth was on one language and of one speech,...and they said let us make brick...let us build us a city and a tower...to make us a name...lest we be scattered...and the Lord said come let us go down and confound their language...so the Lord scattered them and they ceased building the city...therefore is the name of it called Babel.” Genesis 11:1-9

Language, the spoken or written utterance to represent objects, events or dynamic phenomena as forms of communications has undergone vast changes from its early forms. According to the Biblical record, Genesis 2:19-20, Adam used speech and phonetic sounds to communicate. This is the first of associating thoughts, concepts or images in the mind. The sounds were produced by the vocal cords, the throat and the mouth. This mechanism connected the sounds with the auditory mechanism of a hearer. The Rosetta Stone<sup>17</sup>, an ancient Egyptian engraved stone with three inscriptions was discovered in 1799 by a French engineer during the Napoleon occupation of Egypt. The stone was inscribed in 196 BC and contained three separate languages. The first language was a hieroglyphic script. The second was a spoken demonic Egyptian script. The third was a written Greek script. Since scholars could read the classical Greek, it served to interpret the other two languages. The great discovery of the Rosetta finding was the translation of the picture language as a forerunner of alphabetic or syllabic sounds. Thus, the development of language had a three phase historic process: phonetic sounds, picture hieroglyphics and alphabetic symbols. All through the intervening years, language has undergone many permutations and combinations. Elements of one language is often adopted by another. Since the start of these early civilizing processes, humankind has adopted approximately 3,500 languages inclusive of a wide number of dialects. Today, there are over 900 languages in Asia, 600 in Europe, 300 in Africa and 1,600 in the Americas. Chinese is the language spoken by the most people on earth, 31 percent. However, the most wide-spread language used is English, 20 percent in 34 sovereign countries. English has the world's largest vocabulary of 800,000 words, 500,000 everyday terms and 300,000 technical terms. But, English can be a most difficult language where words can have as much as 20 different definitions. The need for a common language has been highlighted in recent years with competent proposals in the running.

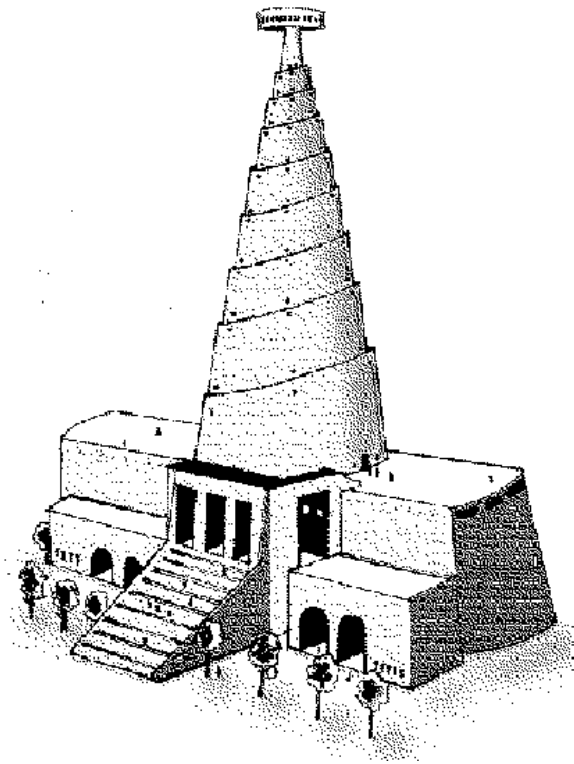
The land of Shinar according to Genesis 10 was the location of the Mesopotamian cities of Babel, Erich (Uruk) and Accad. Draw a circle on a map with a radius of one hundred miles with the cities in the center and you will

encompass almost all of the Middle East. Cairo, Mecca, Jerusalem, Istanbul, Damascus and Baghdad are included. The genesis of western civilization emerged from this unique circle. Interesting to note how languages formed the basis which various civilizations grew with their values, trades, institutions, social activities and government. The Shinar cities formed the original kingdom of Nimrod who was a mighty man and hunter before the Lord. Nimrod was the founder of the Babylonian monarchy. He is the grandson of Ham and the son of Cush. This makes a strong connection between the ancient Babylonians and the Egyptian stock at the time. Both were Hamitic. Nimrod's exploit was the formation of the first world empire as he controlled the Shinar cities. He succeeded in defeating the armies of the Shinar cities. This may very well make him the first conqueror in history. He ruled over varying cultures and thus, set the pattern for future empires. It may well be that Nimrod was behind the concept of a city-tower to reach the heavens which is called the Tower of Babel. Noah's sons were commissioned to scatter and fill the earth. Nimrod controlled and discouraged the scattering with his city-tower project.

An alternate name for the people who lived in the Tigris-Euphrates valley was called the Summerians. These are identified in secular history as distinct from Semites because their language was different. This is understandable as the Bible speaks of languages being changed from the Tower of Babel experience. The Summerians were offspring of Shem as were the Semites. The Summerians were an inventive and clever people. They introduced advances which gave civilizations a progressive leap. They invented the wheel which at first was used for pottery development. Later, it was placed on the front end of a cart used to transport heavy burdens. Naturally, the wheeled carts needed to roll over smooth surfaces. Hence roads were invented. This made travel and commerce easy since rivers did not always go where you wanted them to go. Writing was another invention of the Summerians. They made marks of their writing by punching a stylus into soft clay. Baking this clay made the writing permanent. The stylus made wedge-shaped marks which later were called "cuneiform". This simple start brought about by clay records made an enormous difference in conveying thoughts and records. It was a better means of making permanent the written records over the spoken ones. It was in the business and commerce system this first writing received much of its impetus and use. Special wedge marks gave a written account of "fruit", "fish", "wheat" and "man".

In Mesopotamia there are many ruins of imposing structures in the form of stepped towers or pyramids identified as ziggurats. Even if the identification of a particular structure with the Biblical "Tower of Babel" should not prove to be historically accurate, they can at least give an idea of what the Biblical one must have been like. There is no

agreement among archaeologists as to the precise location of the Tower of Babel. It is, however, generally thought to have been in or near Babylon. The ziggurat of Babylon, now entirely in ruins, has been plundered for its bricks for many years. Its estimated dimensions are 1,500 feet by 1,360 feet. According to a tablet found in the ruins, it might have risen to a height of 500 feet. In those days, this structure might very well be thought of as a skyscraper compared to other buildings. Ziggurat means “hill of heaven” which is in line with the Bible’s thought of a tower whose top may reach to heaven. Quite a number of archaeologists believe that the ruins of Marduk’s temple found inside the city of Babylon is the real site of the original Tower of Babel. The record shows Marduk gave orders that the temple’s foundation be firm in order for the top to reach to heaven. The presumed ziggurat at Ur gives a good idea what the Tower of Babel may have looked like. See Figure 6.13.



**Figure 6.13 Possible Ziggurat Configuration of the Tower of Babel**

The people of Shinar with Nimrod’s leadership spoke a common language. They agreed to build a city and a tower with its top reaching “the heavens”. Their motives were three-fold: first, the city-tower was intended to give the people a recognition that could be perpetuated through succeeding generations. Their pride with their culture generated a human ambition to memorialize the advancement they had made at Shinar. Second, the city-tower was

developing into a metropolis gathering nomadic people from all over the then known world. After all, cities located in river valleys such as the Euphrates and the Tigris fostered trade, farming, food distribution and population growth. Dispersion, scattering and migration were resisted by the Emperor Nimrod. He saw economic prosperity in city life concentration. Third, a motive had developed to allow the city-tower to reach the heavens as an exalted altar by which the Babylonians could serve their deity. This building may have been symbolic of their rebellion to the God who brought the flood upon the earth. Perhaps, they may have wanted to build a tower high enough to escape any future floods that may come again. In any event, the tower was an altar for the religious rite and practice of the new Babylonian Deity and worship of the stars. Later the Babylonians became known as the Chaldeans.

God was displeased with the people's pride, arrogance, rebellion and the newly developing deity worship of the stars. Additionally, He was displeased over their resistance to scatter and disperse throughout the earth. He gave a mandate to Noah's sons. The Biblical account states that "God confused their language". This meant He changed their common form of language to a multiplicity of languages. This had the natural effect to bring to a halt the building of the city-tower since they were no longer able to communicate with each other. It also galvanized those similar languages to take up their belongings and migrate to other parts of the world. The location of the city-tower was referred to as "Babel" because, it was there that God confused the languages of the people of earth. Most important effect of the confusion of languages was to stop the many and varied religious practices and rites particularly astrology as the Babylonians were heavy worshipers of the stars. This star worshipping was in open defiance with God. In the last book of the Bible, false religions are referred to as the "Mysterious Babylon". No doubt this referred to the developing false religions in the Land of Shinar.

The origin of languages is beyond any clear comprehension since relics and ruins are not available for their confirmation. The complexities of phonetic variations and distributions among scattered people in the context of primitive forms of communications makes it's historic analysis formidable. For the present at least, the whole question of the beginning of language must be ruled out of the sphere of scientific consideration since there is but scanty evidence available. Thus the Biblical account of Nimrod's city-project, the Tower of Babel and it's scattering sequence provides a rational explanation of the phenomena that science is quite unable to explain. There are many events and phenomena between the cradle and the grave that are unexplainable. The day shall come when unknowns will be made known and uncertainties will be come certain.

## SEMITES AND ANTI-SEMITISM

“These are the families of the sons of Noah after their generations in their nations and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood.”

Genesis 10:21-32

The name Semite (also called shemite, “h” not pronounced in Semitic languages) is derived from the offspring of Shem, eldest son of Noah. His sons were Elam, Asshur, Arphaxas, Lud and Aram. The word Semite is a recent term as it was not known in ancient times. Semitic classifications have been used to identify languages, races and genealogies. The Table of Nations, described in a previous section, was built on a geographical and cultural basis. Today, Semitic languages are being classified exclusively on linguistic data quite different from the genealogical scheme of the Table of Nations. The origins and relationships of Semitic people can be seen in the simplified figures of 6.11 and 6.12 relevant to contemporary locations in the Middle East. The purity of each ethnic group has been lost since cross-culturalization has been the theme over the centuries. These figures show Semites, with offspring of Shem that includes both Jews and Arabs.

In our brief examination of Semites, we must acknowledge the phenomena of anti-Semitism. The term anti-Semitism was coined in Europe to describe anti-Jewish feelings or Jew-hatred. The Jews form but a small part of Semitic people since Arabs and Middle-East people are also Semitic. Jew-hatred is more a distinctive feature of the Semitics and accurately describes the focus of the hostility. In the Middle East, and in isolated pockets of the world, anti-Semitic or Jew-hatred attitudes confronts the Jews with a conflict of gravest proportions. Anti-Semitic incidents throughout history are a part of the record of human legacy. The incidents, sometimes with discontinuity, but most times with continuity has been like a mental disease with which many non-Jews are afflicted. Incidents of anti-Semitism throughout the world today are reported by the International Conference on Anti-Semitism which is sponsored by the Judaic Congress. The reports clearly indicate anti-Semitism is increasing both on an individual basis as well as the national level. More will be said on the origin, development and cure of Jew-hatred and it's effects on other cultures in Stage IV, the growth of Christianity.

One additional point should be made in connection with the Semites. An astonishing statement is made by Noah to his sons. This was soon after his personal incident of intoxication with wine. Noah said, “curse be on Canaan (Hamitic), bless be the tents of Shem and may God enlarge Japheth.” (Genesis 9:24-29) Shem was the oldest son

and therefore, an implied leadership. Noah's statement inferred the leadership would be transferred to Japheth with Ham's offspring in the role of servants. Eventually, that role changed to Japhetic nations such as Greece, Rome, Europe and the Americas. Japheth's dwelling in the tents of Shem, who was the custodian of the legacy of the Biblical Civilization, would infer the Bible would be shared by Gentile people as well as Semitics. Humans are not the creatures of circumstances, but rather circumstances are the creatures of humans. More than often, circumstances seem good to us until they are taken away and we wonder why.



## CHAPTER 7

### JUDAISM: THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION

The tenacious Jews. Abraham starting the Judaic link. Archaeological support of the Patriarch Abraham. God develops a covenant with Abraham. Abraham's experience with Melchizedek and taxes. Sodom: a rejected civilization. Job and his extremities of happiness and misery. Job's archaeological confirmation. Evil and sources of sufferings. Why does God permit evil in civilizations. The scientific references in the Bible. Archaeological confirmation of Israeli's in Egypt. Israel's experience in the Egyptian Civilization. Joseph's practice of brotherhood. Why Jews were indentured into slavery. Why a prominent Egyptian civilization declined. Slavery - a destructive policy of a civilization. Archaeological confirmation of Moses. Eight stages in the life of Moses. The wilderness journey. Modern management and organization in 1500 BC. Who owns Palestine. Tabernacle sacrifices and human development. Archaeological confirmation of the Judges. The challenge of holding the promise land. Contribution of the Judges to the Judaic Civilization. The kings in the united and divided monarchy. Emergence of the divine rights of kings. Synopsis of the kings of Judah and Israel. Temples - the sacred enclosures. Conquering empires and the effects on the Judaic Civilization. Prophets sent to change a declining Biblical Civilization. Judaism as a stage in the rise of the Biblical Civilization.

#### THE TENACIOUS JEWS

The time from Noah to Abraham was approximately 425 years. It was a period in which people scattered and spread themselves throughout the world. All the classical signs of civilizations developed during this period - cities, food production, transportation, trading, boating, families, education, government, law, calendars, armies and taxes. The scattering of people became a global distribution. Families became tribes, tribes became city states and city

states became nations. As the nations affiliated and intermixed, civilizations developed. During this period circumstances gave birth to two important secular civilizations at the same time, one Semitic and the other Hamitic, but both in the Fertile Crescent. One was to the northeast of Canaan known as Mesopotamia and the other to the southwest of it, known as Egyptian. Canaan and the Jews were between these two civilizations acting like a buffer zone. The buffer people carried on the Biblical Civilization. They were not known as Jews. The word Jew never appeared in the five books of Moses. It was used for the first time later in the canon of Jewish books, in the book of Esther, which involved the persecution of the Persians. The word “Jew” evolved from the name of Jacob’s son Judah. But the buffer people living between the Mesopotamia and Egyptian civilizations such as Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and later Moses, were never referred to as Jews. They were considered Hebrews from the land of Hebron in Canaan. Josephus tells us in the “Antiquities of the Jews”, Heber was the son of Sala which is thought to be the origin of the name Hebrews in Hebron.

The experiences of the buffer Hebrews and later the Jews have been unparalleled. These experiences are a showcase to the world. Rarely have a people started a national polity, rise to a high level of grandeur, lose their nationalism, regress into a meaningless existence, return to resume their polity and rise to a new level of pre-eminence. Rarely have a people managed to survive and create a culture in exile which has preserved the very people who created the culture. Rarely have a people been the target of annihilation, experienced great suffering and bounced back with unique resilience and strength. The Egyptians had them in demeaning slavery for 430 years where children were thrown into the waters of the Nile, but they eventually became free. They wandered as if lost in the Sinai for 40 years with hostile experiences with the Amalekites, but they did reach the promised land. They experienced a monarchical disunity which destroyed their infra-structure, “but the lineage continued”. Empires ramrod them and subjugated them. The Canaanites and Philistines were constantly warring with Israel. The Assyrian’s invaded them, 200,000 taken captive. Ten tribes were assimilated, but two tribes survived. The Babylonians exiled them to a foreign land, destroyed their temple, but the Jews returned. The Greeks with their mixed culture imposed paganism on them, but hellenization failed. The Romans scattered them throughout the world and a 2,000 year diaspora was the results. Titus in his final destruction of Jerusalem, killed 1.1 million Jews and 97,000 were taken captive. But in the diaspora the Jews developed communities and survived. The church of the Medieval Age closed their sanctuaries to them which only forced the Jews into ghettos , but they survived. The

Spanish with their inquisition brought great persecution into their communities, but the persecution resulted in a reversed condemnation. Nazi Germany and the Holocaust of six million Jews almost succeeded in exterminating the race, but the survivors regathered to Israel. The Russians organized Pogroms which resulted in the massacre of thousands, but the Jews became stronger. The Arabs with their poisonous hate have united the world against them with anti-Semitism, but their nationalism only increases. The Jews have been indentured, discriminated, insulted, harassed, persecuted, beaten, banished, slaughtered, raped, pillaged, expelled, burned, tortured, inquisited, whipped, shot, knifed, machine-gunned, drowned, stoned, robbed, mutilated, axed, hanged and exterminated. How is it possible for these people to continue to exist? What keeps them going? They seem to be indestructible. How is it possible for them to return with a thriving nationalism? Jerusalem whose name means “City of Peace” has been war filled, dominated and ruled by fifteen different nations: the Canaanites, Israelites, Egyptians, Assyrians, Babylonians, Persians, Greeks, Romans, Byzantines, Saraceus, Arabs, the Crusaders, Ottoman Turks, the British and today again the Israelis. It’s remarkable in spite of these conquests by foreign nations over the city, Jerusalem has never lost it’s Jewish relationships and associations since the Jews entered the promised land. In spite of it’s name, Jerusalem, as a city of peace, has been conquered 37 times and destroyed 18 times. Surprisingly, Jerusalem managed to rise with uncanny vitality. No other city went through cycles of life and death. Truly, Jerusalem is an eternal city. To walk the streets of Jerusalem is literally to walk on the world’s largest battlefield considering the millions of people who left their lives there attacking or defending it. Jerusalem is one of the few remaining cities that has survived into the twenty-first century from the ancient world.

One explanation to the turbulent Jewish saga is their tenacious adherence to Biblical ideas. This unyielding hold on Biblical ideas has delivered them through continuing crisis but, paradoxically, has given them their preservation. This seems to be the experience of other people in other lands when they seize and hold on to Biblical ideas. It brings both persecution and preservation. The Jewish destiny involves their commitment to Biblical ideas regardless of their resultant clashes and conflicts with other civilizations. Interesting to note the persecuting civilizations have had their day as most have disappeared from the scene. The Jewish chronicle continues.

Another explanation is Judaism is an important link between Edenism and Christianity. The movement of the Bible as a rising civilization has an unrelentless continuity from beginning to maturity. The Jewish history and experiences are only a segment if this continuity. Indeed, the history and experiences are a specially chosen

continuity that persists progressively toward an ultimate end. The Biblical Civilization started in Eden, emerging in Noah's time, was fostered, protected and developed through the Jews. This may very well be the ultimate reason for their preservation. New ideas were introduced in the Judaic period, but more significantly, the Judaic segment gave development and impetus to the relentless and providential movement of the Bible as a rising civilization.

#### ABRAHAM STARTING THE JUDAIC LINK

“The Lord said unto Abram, get thee out of thy country and from thy kindred and from thy father's house unto a land that I will show thee.” Genesis 12:1

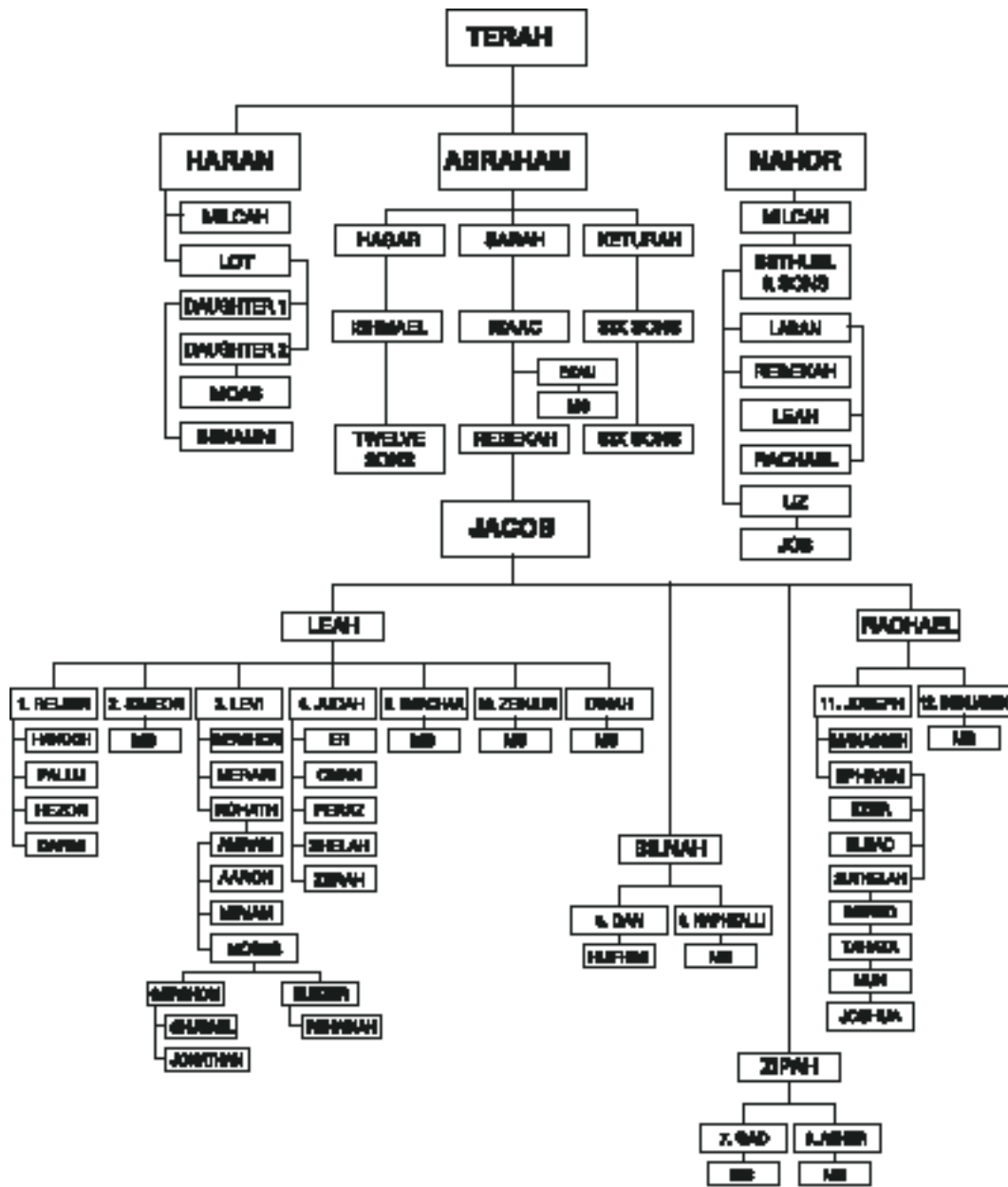
Abraham appears as the entail link between Edenism and Judaism to perpetuate the Biblical Civilization. As a person, a receiver of promises, and a man of faith, he assumed a role of such importance in the history of the Biblical Civilization. That is comparable to even Moses. Throughout both the Old and the New Testaments, Abraham is cited 228 times. Thus making him a link also between Judaism and Christianity.

Abram, which later became Abraham was an outstanding example of faith to Jew, Christian and Muslim alike. His faith was exemplary because he was willing to follow God's direction without question or without knowing the reasons. He became the father of the Jewish people through Isaac. He was also the father of Arab tribes through other sons such as Ishmael and the sons of Keturah. He married his half-sister Sarah, same father, but different mother. This close marriage in the family may be the reason why Sarah was barren. See Figure 7.1 for the genealogy of Terah. He was first called “Abram the Hebrew”. The word Hebrew, “ibri” means one who crossed over referring to Abram's immigration over the Euphrates River to Canaan. The term has also been interpreted as referring to the patriarchal ancestor Eber, grandson of Shem. The origin of the Hebrew language is vague in spite of the fact the Old Testament was written in Hebrew. Modern linguistic experts establish Hebrew as one of the Northwestern groups of the Semitic family of languages, spoken in Canaan. It was adopted by the Hebrews when they settled in that land. A genealogical chart showing Abraham's family from his father Terah is seen in Figure 7.1. There are three basic reasons why Abraham was both unique and special.

1. *Willingness to defend his belief in a one invisible God.* Abraham was raised in the polytheistic practices of the metropolitan city of Ur. Even his father, Terah, was an idol maker which suggests conflict in the family. (Joshua 24:2) The book of Jubillies, a second-century BC Jewish text describes the youthful Abraham with convictions of the futility of idol gods. This convictions led him to destroy all the idols his father made by burning the building which

stored the idols. His crusade against idolatry in the time of paganism was something unique. The Jewish text further describes Abraham urging his father to renounce idol practices. The Biblical injunction against idolatry comprises several more or less separate matters: the speaking and worship to idols; the worship of God with pagan rites; and the construction of idols itself. Others may include the bowing down to idols and/or sacrifice to idols.

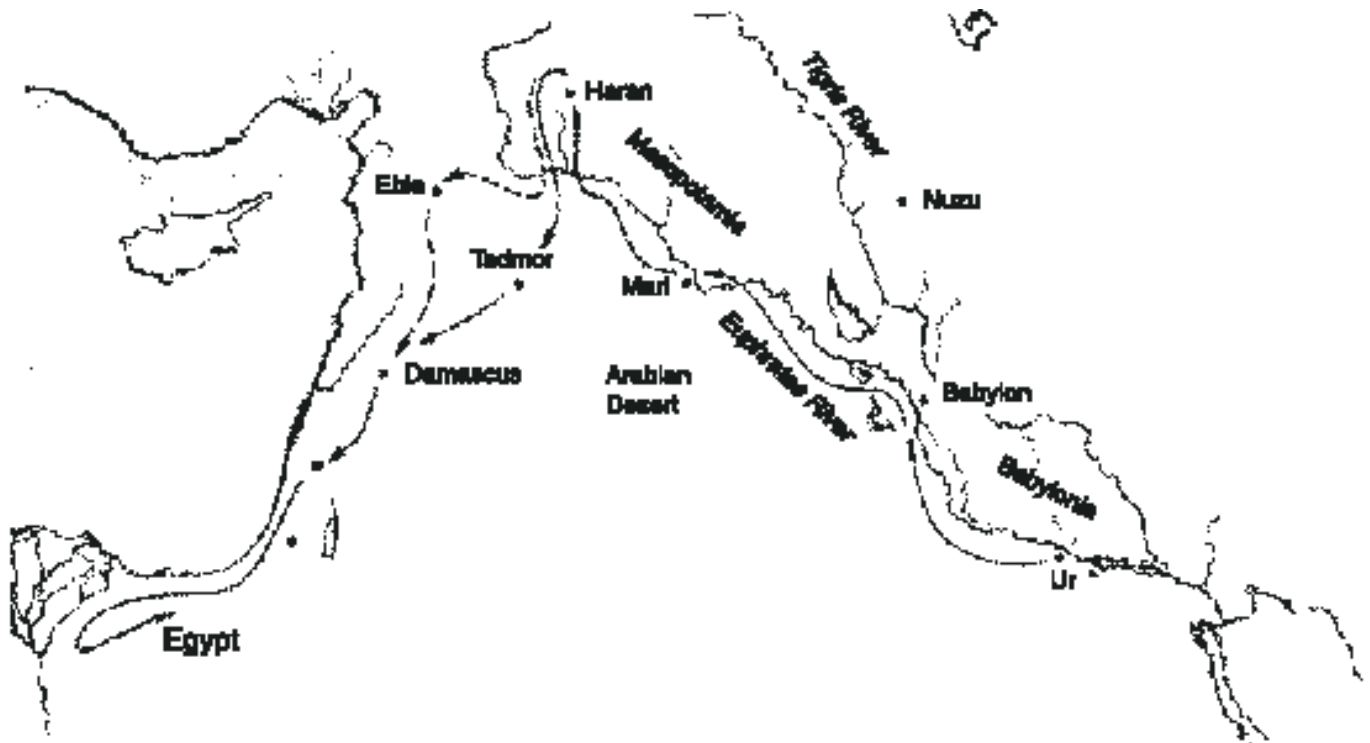
How did Abraham come to a conviction of a one God when all around him were convictions of the multiplicity of many gods? Was it a innovative stroke of imagination in which all idols were done away with? Not likely! One suggestion is seen by the overlapping longevity of other patriarchs. Abram was contemporary with God-fearing Shem, first born of Noah. Eber, Peleg, Ren, Seing and Nahor, all of these seem to have lived in the lifetime of Abram. Many may have communicated the knowledge of the flood, of the garden, of Enoch and of the one, invisible God to Abram. This monotheistic belief was conveyed through several generations. It was formalized and documented in the law. (Deuteronomy 6:4-5) "Hear O Israel, Jehovah our God is one." This passage is known as the Shema. Every Jew no matter how ignorant they may be of the rest of the law and the prophets knows the Shema. The pious Jew repeats the Shema three times daily. These words are ingrained in the conscience of the Jew as no other words in any other religion. It took Abram, his separation from Ur, his journey to Canaan and his focus on the one God to reactivate the spiritual decline of the times. This reactivation surely elicited God's attention on this unusual person.



**Figure 7.1 Genealogical Chart Terah’s Family (Partial) and the Start of Israel**  
 MS = Many Sons

2. *Willingness to travel to an unknown and uncharted land.* Abraham’s migration from Ur with his wife Sarah, his nephew Lot and other members of the family was a significant undertaking. This was uprooting himself from a home and leaving a comfortable culture in a developing city surely suggests an unusual person. He left Ur in the Kingdom of Summer which later became Babylon, is now Southern Iraq about 120 miles north of the present city of Basra in Iraq. Abraham migrated because God asked him. He went from Ur, at the age of 75, to Haran then to Canaan which included Shechem, Bethel, Hebron, Damascus and Egypt. This is a journey of approximately 840 miles. In today’s context, it is like saying Abraham traveled from Iraq to Turkey to Syria, to Jordan, to Palestine, to Egypt and back to Palestine. The journey on foot even unto today’s circumstances is quite a challenge. Everywhere

Abraham went, he was respected as a leader of a unique group. He was regarded as a resident-alien since he moved from one section to another. His eventual settlement near Hebron was due to an agreement with Lot on the division of the land. A decision made by Lot, but accepted by Abraham. See Figure 7.2.



**Figure 7.2 Journeys of Abraham**

3. *Willingness to sacrifice his son as a test of obedience.* God who miraculously granted a son to Abraham and Sarah insisted he sacrifice this prized possession to Him. This was a painful trial. Most fathers would be outraged over this demand. Most would even refuse God even at the cost of their own personal lives. Abraham, obediently and silently, took his son and the wood for the sacrificial fire, traveled to Mount Moriah with every intention of carrying out this act. The act was a test of supreme obedience to God. He was stopped. His test was victorious. This powerful story has fascinated readers through countless ages as a model for the test of obedience of faith in God. Many have raised questions about God who would demand the sacrifice of a human life even though it was not consummated. The answer lies in God prefiguring himself as a future act of giving up a member of his family in sacrifice. Although few understood, God was conveying a message of an event to transpire in another stage of the rising Biblical Civilization.

## ARCHAEOLOGICAL SUPPORT OF THE PATRIARCH ABRAHAM

“And Abram passed through the land unto the place of Shechem, unto the oak of

Moreh. And the Canaanite was then in the land.” Genesis 12:6

Leading scholars<sup>1</sup> such as W. F. Albright, Nelson Gleuck and G. Ernest Wright in their excavation reports and their writing publications support the patriarchal narratives. They set the date for Abraham in the first part of the second millennium BC (approximately 2000 BC). Professor Andre Parrot in his excavations of the Palace of Mari uncovered more than 20,000 tablets. This was at the ancient city of Tell Harari in the middle of Euphrates. 5,000 of these tablets were letters to the king from district officers of the state of Mari. In these letters frequent reference was made to the cities of Haran, Nahor, Seing, Peleg and the “Mount of Terah”. Personal names were included such as Ren, Terah, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. Excavations<sup>2</sup> by H. R. Hall in 1918 and C. L. Woolley in 1922 - 1934, have verified Ur as one of the largest, if not the largest and wealthiest cities of it’s kind at that time. The ziggurat, a brickwork stepped pyramid representing a temple for “the moon god” continues to give evidence of this geographic area and birth place of Abraham if not in the city close by. Also Ur may very well be “Ur of the Chaldeans”.

Additionally, two Italian archaeologists<sup>3</sup> unearthed about 17,000 clay tablets at Tell Mardikh at the site of Ebla which have a mixture of logograms and words used by people of this area. Some of the words spelled “abramu” (Abraham), “esaum” (Esau), “dandum” (David), “saulum” (Saul), “mikailu” (Michael) and “israilu” (Israel). These are not the Biblical characters themselves, but the use of such names by people at those times associated with the ancestry of Abraham is an indication that such Biblical names were in use.

Woolley’s excavations<sup>4</sup> of Ur’s royal cemetery uncovered artistic mosaic panels which gave evidence of the civilization of the times. Inscriptions on these panels record a populous city inhabited by farmers, artisans and merchants. Ur was frequented by strangers traveling through the trade routes in search of economic activity. One panel portrayed war with soldiers wearing helmets driving chariots with wooden wheels. The second panel pictured a man playing an instrument singing as to a woman in love. Many animals appeared in the panel such as a bull, oryx, asses and goats.

Albright says<sup>5</sup> the Mari Tablets contain sufficient evidence to substantiate the narratives of Genesis dealing with Abraham. The Mari Cuneiform Tablets cite “Ur in Haran”. The information and description confirms the Biblical



narrative which leaves little doubt about Abraham's historicity. These tablets contain descriptions of the customs and characteristics of the patriarchs of Genesis.

Mazar<sup>6</sup>, a leading archaeologist of Israel, describes the land of Canaan as a prosperous urban culture with pastoral clans living in between cities. This cultural environment supports the background of nomadic Abraham and other patriarchal sages as described in the book of Genesis. In another reference, Mazar locates the encounter between Abraham and Melchizedek, king and priest of Salem at En-rogel. This is a lower spring southeast of Salem at the intersection of valleys leading to Jerusalem from the south. This was Jerusalem before Israel's occupation.

Baez-Camargo reports<sup>7</sup> on an Egyptian bis-relief found in the tomb of Beni-Hasan shows a caravan of Semites presenting themselves before the governor in Middle Egypt with their wives, children and cattle asking to be received as immigrants. From their appearance, they are not the case of starving people as evidenced with live stock. This is in contrast with other groups, such as Jacob and his sons, who came to Egypt to escape a threatening famine. These Semites might very well be the Abram who went down to Egypt.

The calamity that fell upon Sodom and Gomorrah and three other cities of the valley has been a subject of considerable discussions even into today. The five cities are mentioned in Genesis 14:1-2. They were joined together in the Valley of Siddim which is the Salt Sea. Five archaeological sites<sup>8</sup> have been located and uncovered: Babedh-Dhra, Numeira, Safi, Feifa and Hanazir. The first was discovered by Albright in 1924, Rast and Sehaub found Humeira in 1973 and the other three sites in 1975 to 1980. Rast and Sehaub have suggested these five cities were the ruins of the famous five cities of the Valley of Siddim.

Keller<sup>9</sup> gives considerable detail of a view where the fire and brimstone catastrophe occurred. It was at the southern end of the sea of salt or what is known today as the Dead Sea. This southern end shows trunks and roots that reveal a forest long past that is now inundated with water. Keller concludes the corrupt cities of the plain lay in the area which is now submerged beneath the lowly rising waters of the southern end of the Dead Sea. Josephus<sup>10</sup> confirms that the Dead Sea extends as far south as the city of Zoar, but did not extend that far during the period of the two cities of Sodom and Gomorrah. Professors Albright and Kyle<sup>11</sup> found the ruins of Zoar of the Byzantine period, but believed that the site of the earlier Zoar along with the famous two cities had been submerged by the continual rising of the Dead Sea. Even the mountains along the southwestern shore of the Dead Sea is named Mount Sodom (Jebel Usdum). It was named from the belief that Sodom stood near it. The archaeological excavations carried out

by Albright, and later by Gleak, seems to settle beyond a doubt that the cities were at the south end of the Dead Sea. The catastrophe experienced by the cities were later covered by the rising water level due to the Jordan River.

Jerusalem is first mentioned in the Bible in connection with Melchizedek, king of ancient Salem and priest of the most high God. He is the first priest mentioned in the Bible. The Tell el Amarna Tablets in Egypt<sup>12</sup> gives evidence of letters between the kings of Egypt and the various kings in Palestine. They relate to Melchizedek and describe conditions in Palestine. These letters corroborate the general picture given in Genesis. Mazar, an Israeli archaeologist at Hebrew University cited early in this chapter confirms the meeting between Abraham and Melchizedek. He even locates the geographical spot of the encounter based on the war Abram had with the kings of Canaan. This location is the intersection of the valleys leading to Jerusalem from the south. Probably the Kidron Valley of today which separates Mount Zion from the Mount of Olives.

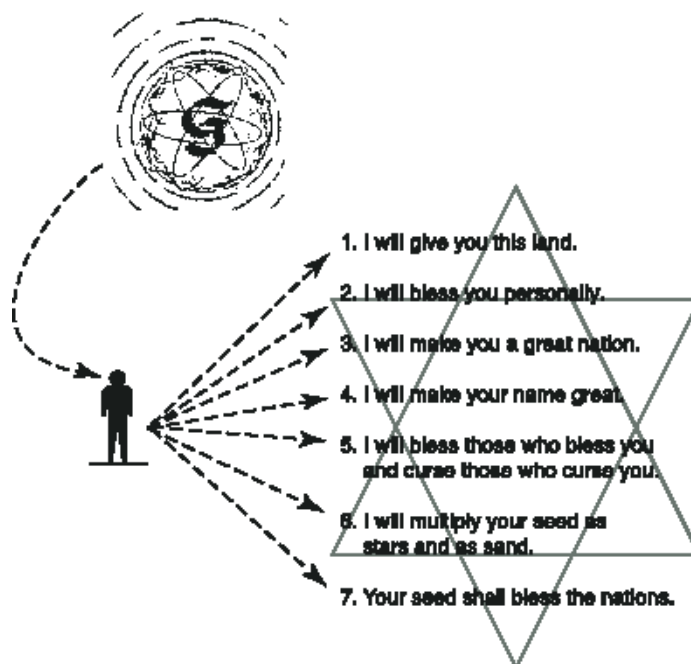
#### GOD DEVELOPS A COVENANT WITH ABRAHAM

“God said, go unto a land I will show you; I will make you a great nation; I will bless you; I will make thy name great and you will be a blessing; I will bless those who bless you; I will curse them that curse you; I will give this land to your offspring.” Genesis 12:2-3

“I will bless thee, and in multiplying, I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven and as the sand which is upon the seashore and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies. And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed.” Genesis 22:17-18

The life of Abraham is critically important because he received promises from God that were far reaching. Few, if any, received these kinds of future expectations. The promises became a covenant between God and the Hebrew people. The idea of a covenant has become one of the most decisive steps in the development of Judaism and subsequently the Biblical Civilization. A step which prepares the ways to the concept of free will and freedom from God, Himself. With a covenant, God ceases to be an absolute ruler. He and man become partners with a constitutional set of agreements. God is bound as man is bound to the terms of the covenant. In a sense, God has lost his freedom to be arbitrary and man, equally has lost his freedom to be erratic. The book of Job is an example of how man has the freedom to say anything you want to God. Throw at Him your grief, your anger, your complaints, your

doubts, your bitterness, your betrayal and your disappointments. He can absorb them all. But in the process, God sees the development, the understanding and the need for correction. God sees the relationship between Him and the complainer. If there is something we've learned about Abraham was his relationship with God. Because of this relationship, there are seven hallmarks to God's covenant promises to Abraham. These seven hallmarks are seven predictions within the Biblical Civilization given to mankind through Abraham. Over the centuries, these hallmarks have had partial and only "set-in-motion" fulfillment. Much of it's complete realization is still ahead. This is the mission and goal of the Biblical Civilization. God was defining this mission with Abraham as the channel. The mission emerged with Abraham and given impetus with the Jewish progeny. Too often when God utters a promise, we expect an immediate consummation. In fact, God had in mind a longer period with progressive stages along the way. Abraham lived in a time before Rabbinic Law, before regulation and ceremony and, before official ritual and sanction. An era of time when freedom of choice was a quality in the lifestyles of people. Abraham's conversations with God were not in the third person, but in the first person. He had a personal, intimate human dialog with God. Interesting to note, Martin Buber's theology<sup>13</sup> stresses a personal, intimate relationship with the Universal Spirit Being. Abraham had that experience. Here are the seven highlights of God's promise to Abraham. See Figure 7.3



**Figure 7.3 God Makes 7 Commitments to Abraham at Ur**

*First Highlight: "Go unto the land I will show you; I will give you this land."* This was quite a statement given to Abraham who was nomadic and pastoral. These type of wanderers have no notion or expectation of land ownership. For most of Abraham's wanderings, he paid rent, tithes, or fees for water drinking, land crossing, or grass eating for his entourage. The prospect of Abraham to possess this land for himself and his offspring was indeed an exciting prospect. Interesting to note, Abraham never realized the attainment of this promise since he never owned land in his life time with the exception of the purchased tomb he and Sarah were buried in. The realization of this promise was to be in a future stage of the Biblical Civilization.

The promise to possess land was significant since Abraham's journey from Iraq to Assyria, to Turkey, to Syria, to Jordan, to Palestine, to Egypt and back to Palestine was a personally guided survey of the land. In retrospect we see it as a vision given by God to Abraham in his actual wanderings. There were people already in the land such as Philistines, migrates from Egypt and Canaanites, migrates from Aram and Asshur, Semite sons of Shem. His wanderings did not have an exact destination. The seemingly random wanderings were to show Abraham and his progeny the land to be given. We must remember Abraham was the father of Ishmael and Isaac which makes him the progenitor of both Jew and Arab. The twelve tribes of Israel were from Isaac and would divide the land later by tribe assignments in different locations. The sons of Ishmael and Keturah would be given other assignments in other locations as part of the promised inheritance.

Today, two groups of people are fighting over the parcel of land given by God to Abraham's seed. Both groups are the seed. It is a dispute between Semitic brothers. The seed is divided. There is fighting over their inheritance. One group on the basis of residency for more than 1,000 years. These are the Palestinians. The other group on the basis of occupation in the ancient world are the Israeli's. Over the years, the land has changed names - Canaan, Judah, Israel, Judea, Palestine and Israel/Jordan. Why should the dispute be so crucial since Arab lands cover over 5 million square miles and Israeli land covers only 9,000 square miles. The answer - the status of Jerusalem. It is the single most central issue in the Jewish-Arab dispute since neither side will compromise on this issue. Neither Arab or Jew will relinquish it's claim over Jerusalem. More will be said later on who owns the land.

*Second Highlight: "I will bless you!"* This promise was to Abraham personally. In spite of Abraham's wanderings, he had become wealthy in livestock, silver and gold. (Genesis 13:2) His business of domestication of animals and raising livestock was prosperous. His livestock was huge since he needed over 318 servants to care for

them. (Genesis 14:9-16) Abraham was a rich nomadic chieftain. As he moved from oasis to oasis to feed and water his vast flocks and herds, he often found himself opposed and prevented from getting water and food. Nonetheless, local chieftains respected him and permitted his wanderings.

The promise he would have a child was extraordinary since Sarah was barren without children. This, most likely, was due to the closeness of family relationships. Sarah was a half-sister. Their first child, Isaac was born when Abraham was 100 and Sarah was 90. This was another extraordinary feature in this saga. For a childless couple married for many years to be told they would receive a child and for it to happen in an old age is to receive a great blessing.

As great these personal blessings would be to Abraham, they were secondary to the more superlative blessing of Abraham's role in the rise of the Biblical Civilization. He reactivated the Biblical Civilization and gave it a movement away from paganistic Ur to a new start in a fertile location of Canaan. Abraham's encounter with God provided him with a calling and a mission which was two-fold: the start of a new Judaic nation and the channel for perpetuating the Biblical Civilization

*Third Highlight:* "I will make you a great nation." Greatness should not be interpreted as numerous descendants. Other nations have been and continue to be far more numerous than the Jews. They are far from great. Great as a nation is understood to mean spiritual greatness. The Jews were to be a channel for perpetuating the continuity of the Biblical Civilization. God saw the continuity passing from Noah through Shem through Abraham and into the future. The critical path continues without discontinuities. Neither did it mean the Jews as a nation would be a superpower of the world with vast resources. Israel, today, must import much of its resources and export critical products to bring in sorely needed revenues. Greatness is intended to be more in character, intellect and contributions to the quality of life with people and society. Jews have an extraordinary capacity for creating ideas and values. Van Den Haag investigated<sup>14</sup> the mystique surrounding the Jews and has found the Jewish influence and contributions to the world disproportionate to their numbers. He cites the four men whose ideas have dominated the thinking of the modern world - Freud, Einstein, Marx and Darwin. Of these four, only Darwin was not Jewish. Of the sixty-seven American scientists that received Nobel Prizes between 1901 and 1965, 27 percent were Jewish. Thus Jews constitute about 3 percent of the U.S. population, but produced about nine times as many Nobel Laureates in science as statistically would be expected. Patai's studies<sup>15</sup> of the Jewish mind in which IQ tests were made

between Jews and non-Jews showed the Jewish groups scored higher on tests measuring general intelligence, especially verbal intelligence. Other tests cited by Patai's studies showed Jews have always had a higher average IQ compared to Christians. Several reasons have been suggested why this higher performance on IQ tests. High attention to Jewish child raising and home environment as a value for one. Encouragement for intellectual activities is another. Separation and selective breeding is still a third. There are many others, some central - some peripheral. These reasons acting in combination over the centuries results in an unusual breed of human being. Again Van Den Haag reports in the professions, the Jews are over represented by 231 percent in medicine, 478 percent in psychiatry, 299 percent in dentistry, 283 percent in mathematics and 265 percent in law. It seems no matter where one turns, they encounter a Jew. If you take an aspirin, Bayer, a Jew provided it for you. If you go to a dentist, Trabo, a Jew, gave you Novocain. If you have had heart trouble, Striker, a Jew gave you digitalis. If you get married, Wassaman, a Jew provided it for you. If your a communist, Karl Marx, a Jew paved the way. If your Catholic, the first 18 popes of the early church were Jews. If your a Christian, Jesus, a Jew, opened up the way for you. Judaism and Christianity are interwoven. God's promise to Abraham to be a great nation is in contributions and values to uplift the quality of human life and to open the way to a spiritual existence.

*Fourth Highlight: "I will make your name great."* The name of Abraham is mentioned over 149 times in the Old Testament and 79 times in the New Testament. He is revered by Jews, Christians and Muslims alike. His tomb in Hebron, Israel is visited today by thousands of pilgrims and tourists to the Holy Land. Few people in the world have not heard of Abraham and his great faith in God. The name of Abraham has been given to new born babies with Jews, Christians and Muslims. This has been going on for thousands of years. It's conceivable the name of Abraham may be numerically in the top ten popular names in history.

However, "name great" does not consist in the numbers who hold it, but for what it represents. Abraham is known for his great faith example. God have his the title "Friend of God". His greatness is the role model he has been for thousands of people who have come to know God. One day, his greatness will be further enhanced when he has been recognized for linking Edenism with Judaism and Judaism with Christianity.

*Fifth Highlight: "I will bless those who bless you and curse those who curse you."* Every country that has had negative dealings with the Jews have experienced a serious negative reaction. To cite briefly a few:

- a. Egyptians, a major nation and culture, experienced a decline after subjecting the Jews to slavery. Egypt never recovered from it's original grandeur.
- b. Assyria, another major country with an extending empire, assimilated the 10 tribes of Israel and took 200,000 Jews captive. These tribes are now regarded as the lost tribes of Israel. Today Assyria is gone.
- c. Babylon, another empire containing one of the seven wonders of the ancient world - the hanging gardens of Babylon, invaded Israel four times. They destroyed the temple and attempted to liquidate their religion. This only created Isaiah, Jeremiah and Ezekial. Babylon no longer exists with the exception of some ruins. Iraq is a poor substitute.
- d. Greece tried to hellenize the Jews by forcing Greek culture into the temple as well as their lifestyle. Greece failed. It fell from a major culture and civilization to a struggling Mediterranean country.
- e. Rome attempted to pulverize Jewish unity with the Diaspora. They broke up families and scattered members all over parts of the world. This only polarized Jews into communities which protected their values and their traditions. Rome, like Greece, a leading civilization is now a struggling Mediterranean country.
- f. Roman Church through the Middle Ages with it's inquisition and anti-Semitic views rendered a persecution paralleling the non-religious governments of the world. The Roman Church which had both religions, political and military power has undergone a decline. Today, it serves only in religious matters and by it's behavior sparked the Protestant reformation.
- g. Spain in the 14th Century forced 800,000 Jews into exilement with a sea transference. All 800,000 were drowned at sea. Spain has never recovered from it's leading position in the world.
- h. England once owned one-third of the world's countries through colonization, wars and acquisitions. The Balfour Declaration giving Jews the opportunity to enter and settle in Palestine was a positive move. However, England yielded to the pressure and threats of Arab retaliation. It reneged with this commitment. Today England is a struggling island.
- i. Russia, with it's vast communistic empire making it a superpower with vast resources, is now broken up into 14 republics and struggling to survive. It's pogroms, persecutions and anti-Semitism has finally caught up with it.

The glory of many nations of antiquity and modernity has vanished who have had a negative experience with Israel. The Jewish people and now, the Jewish Nation was subjected to fierce persecution. Many items they were brought near the brink of extinction. They have survived to this day. The Jews can rightly be called the miracle race of history. The blessing and the cursing has not ended.

*Sixth Highlight:* “I will multiply your seed as the stars of heaven and the sands of the seashore.” God’s promise to Abraham falls into two categories: stars and sands. This means a spiritual and heavenly group, as well as natural and earthly group. Since Abraham is the Biblical link from Edenism to Judaism, the promise implies the Biblical Civilization will one day divide into two phases: a heavenly phase and an earthly phase. It’s not likely Abraham understood this promise, vague as it was. We see it better because of a historic perspective as well as a future orientation.

The main concept of the promise was the two-fold organization of the Biblical Civilization. We should not try to extract numerics from this promise as it would not make sense. Stars are in the trillions. Sand pebbles are in the supertrillions. In another text seeds are liken to the dust of the earth. This dust numeric would aggregate into phenomenal number. We do see the seed of Abraham growing exponentially, but not to the numerics implied with stars, sand and dust. The promise refers to the two-part organization of the Biblical Civilization.

*Seventh Highlight:* “Your seed shall bless all the nations of earth.” All the nations are intended to mean all families and human organizations will benefit and gain through Israel. The implication is Israel will occupy a role in the family of nations in which advantages and blessings will come from the Jews to the rest of the world. Many conjectures can be made as to what these benefits might be - food, peace, security, prosperity, happiness and harmony. The biggest would be the channel for the return of mankind back into harmony with God. How Israel will do this is not specifically known. Generally, it will be through knowledge and understanding, opportunity and service, help with problems and frustrations and innovative ideas and values. It will be under the guidance of a spiritual government.

Many will argue this promise has never been fulfilled. The history of mankind has been a history of deprivation, insecurity, destitution, violence, poverty and sadness. This promise has not happened. It is still future. But Abraham in his lifetime did not experience many of his promises. The land promise was never realized. Abraham only owned his tomb. The great nation promise was not seen. Abraham only saw one son. The great name promise



was not experienced. Abraham was the only name. The great stars and sand has not happened. Abraham did not understand. The promises to Abraham are yet future. Some are unfolding today. Most will be in later stages.

#### ABRAHAM'S EXPERIENCE WITH MELCHIZEDEK AND TAXES

“And Melchizedek, King of Salem, brought forth bread and wine. He was the priest of the most high God and be blessed Abram...Abram gave him tithes of all.” Genesis 14:18-24

Salem, which later is called Jerusalem was a city state in Canaan. Interesting to note Melchizedek was the high priest of the one God in this city. How is it possible that a city state in Canaan adopted monotheism when all around in other city states was a widespread paganistic polytheism. This belief in the one God existed even before Abram arrived as a colleague of this belief. The suggestion is that Melchizedek was a descendent of Shem in the same way Abram was a descendent from the same source. The monotheistic belief was transferred from Shem through five sons to later generations. When Abraham met Melchizedek who possessed this one-God belief, he was awed and impressed.

Melchizedek means king of righteousness. Salem means peace. The early Amarna letters of Abdu-Heba to the King of Egypt revealed the name “hrusalem”. This was the forerunner of Jerusalem. Psalm 110:4 refers to Melchizedek as a priest forever. Melchizedek was great in what he stood for - righteousness and peace. But he represented something even more. He represented the combination of religion and government. This is unique and innovative. We see God has always favored separation between religion and government as in the case of Aaron and Moses. Aaron was the priest. Moses was the government. It seems few if any, can carry out the double function responsibly and effectively. Melchizedek apparently was one of the very few. This is what made Melchizedek greater than Abraham. None of the secular kings would make this acknowledgment. Abraham did. Throughout history, it would be difficult to find a single case of a king that functioned with justice and love as a priest of God. The separation of the two functions is a separation between the natural and the spiritual. The meeting between Melchizedek and Abraham was a lasting impression for Abraham as we see later when God commanded Abraham to sacrifice his son. Abraham traveled all the way from Hebron to Mount Moriah for this purpose. Mount Moriah is the acknowledged site in which this sacrifice was to take place. Surely, Abraham selected this site in and near Salem (Jerusalem) next to the priest-king Melchizedek in whom Abraham had the highest respect. Today Mount Moriah is

the site of the Temple Mount. Both Jews and Muslims venerate this site as where Abraham had his supreme test of faith.

The meeting between Melchizedek and Abram occurred after Abraham's return from doing battle with the kings of Canaan. Melchizedek came out to meet him. He said, "blessed be Abram by God the most high... who hath delivered thine enemies into thine hand". (Genesis 14:19-20) Apparently, Melchizedek knew Abraham would not stand a chance with his 318 warriors against the kings of Canaan. The only way Abraham could have won was with the special aid that God gave to Abraham's victory. Melchizedek knew it. Thus the special recognition that Melchizedek gave to Abraham. Abraham's reaction was one of gratitude to the priest and king of the one God. Abraham gave him one-tenth of everything he acquired from the victory. Melchizedek is said to give Abraham bread and wine. Isn't this strange to give this to a conquering hero? Surely a victor would have deserved more. The answer lies in the special meaning bread and wine have with the priest of the one God. More can be seen of this in the Christian belief of bread and wine.

The one-tenth tithe was a gesture of appreciation, but later it represented a practice of contribution to those who serve God. Abraham knew revenues are needed by any kind to operate a government. It's not clear whether Abraham's volunteered tithing became the origin of taxation to the king. Certainly it was one of the early practices. Later this practice was refined by Judaic law commanding everyone to pay the same amount with absolutely no discrimination. The law is given in Exodus 30:11-15. "Everyone from 20 years old shall give an offering. The rich shall not give more and the poor shall not give less." This early compulsive contribution formed a tax practice with a principle of tax equity. Rich or poor paid ten percent. Obviously, ten percent from the rich will be considerably more than ten percent from the poor. Tax equity is a serious problem of our present society. With this Biblical connection, taxes involves morality. It is only right and good to pay taxes in support of government and to support individuals to serve God on a full time basis. Unfairness in taxes is the practice of discrimination such as fleecing the consumer, exempting corporations, exploiting small businesses, and soaking the rich. The early practice of the Hebrews followed the principle of tax equity and non-discrimination. When this principle is broken serious problems emerge.

## SODOM: A REJECTED CIVILIZATION

“Then the Lord rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire out of heaven.” Genesis 19:24

Sodom has become well known in history and even today as a degrading and corrupt city. Its destruction by fire and brimstones seemed as an example of God’s visitation upon an evil civilization. Sodom was the most notorious of the five cities of the valley. Sodom’s notoriety stems from a manifold list:

- a. Sodomites were in prosperous living while ignoring the poor and the needy. (Ezekial 16:49)
- b. Sodomites were eager to commit violence and destructiveness. (Genesis 19:5-8)
- c. Sodomites disregarded the prevailing practice of hospitality to strangers. (Genesis 19:1-11)
- d. Sodomites exhibited a haughty and proudful attitude. (Ezekial 16:50)
- e. Sodomites practiced idleness and laziness. (Ezekial 16:49)
- f. Sodomites practice homosexuality and rape. (Genesis 19:5-8) Later in the law, this practice was punishable with death for both parties. (Leviticus 18:22-30)
- g. Sodomites acted immorally, indulged in unnatural lust and committed fornication. (Jude 7)
- h. Sodomites committed abominable acts such as idolatry, adultery and harlotry. (Ezekial 16:15)

Sodomy has become a term used today to describe any sexual intercourse held to be abnormal or unnatural such as homosexuality, lesbianism and bestiality. Trustees of the American Psychiatric Association has ruled that homosexuality is no longer a mental disorder. This is a landmark turn about since it allows this behavior with or without psychiatric help. Today, there are active movements to accept homosexuality in political, religions and social life. Homosexual marriages are starting. It’s conceivable that the “Aids” virus was emerging in Sodom similar to the start of Aids today. Perhaps God brought the judgment to remove Sodom’s Aids problem before it affected the rest of the world. The destruction of Sodom was deliberately a spectacle and an example of a civilization that went astray. Interesting to note, the reputation of two cities in Canaan: Salem which represents peace and righteousness and Sodom which represents uncontrolled lust and wickedness.

The story of Sodom started with strangers who visited Abraham. They were on their way to the cities to execute judgment and punishment. When Abraham heard of their mission, he negotiated if some good people would be found in these cities, could the cities be spared. The negotiation started with 50 and finally ended up with 10. Lot and his

family were the only ones deemed worthy of escape. Interesting to note a parallel and a contrast between Abraham and Lot. Both have left the city of Ur. Both had a faith in God and a practice of righteousness. Both have wandered together in the famous Crescent of the ancient world. Both have entertained visiting angels, Abraham at the entrance of his tent, Lot at the gateway of the city. Abraham, however, accepted the judgment of the visitors. Lot, on the other hand, argued with his rescuers. The visitors had to drag him and his family out of the city. Both left the city of Ur with a hope with Abraham becoming a giant in faith, since the Biblical Civilization was channeled through him. Lot, on the other hand wanted his own way, selected to live near cities where conveniences and pleasures were located and later died in the mountains after incest with his daughters. Both issued hospitality invitations to the visitors, but the visitors reacted differently as if they knew both of them. With Abraham, the visitors accepted without question his hospitality. With Lot, the visitors insisted on spending the night in the square. Both received angelic visitors, but circumstances with Abraham were peaceful and restful. With Lot, it was violent and immoral. Both prayed to God, but Abraham saw himself as dust and ashes. Lot saw himself as a servant of God.

Interesting to note the significant role the practice of hospitality has in the Bible. Abraham hastens to welcome strangers and travelers, but the men of Sodom display notable contempt for the hospitality code. Job 31:32 declares that no stranger whom he encountered had to lodge in the streets. Later in the Biblical law the right of hospitality is sharpened. Even the assistance to the poor and the underprivileged was developed to the highest level found in the existing civilizations at the time. The comparisons between Abraham and Lot may seem trivial, but they reveal two lines typical of the lines of the faithful. One like Abraham grows in faith, pleasing God. The other, like Lot, falters in faith, moving toward waywardness which eventually is rejected by God.

There has been a debate whether Sodom and Gomorrah were actual cities in existence. Archaeologists are now providing evidence to confirm their existence. Paolo Mattine and Giovanni Pettinato, Italian archaeologists uncovered 20,000 cuneiform clay tablets in Northern Syria. These tablets described the activity of daily life in the ancient city of Ebla, a city of 260,000 people. The major find was the names inscribed on these tablets that confirmed the names given in the Biblical record. Sodom, south of the Dead Sea, number 211 was unmistakable clear to be the Sodom of the Bible. These clay tablets also contained a geographical atlas. This atlas listed the principle cities which traded with Ebla's merchants. In this list, the names of Sodom and Gomorrah were listed and

described. The period of time was between 2451 BC and 1987 BC. This coincides with Abraham's birth about 2166 BC who lived 175 years dying in about 1991 BC.

#### JOB AND HIS EXTREMITIES OF HAPPINESS AND MISERY

“Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and upright man, one who feareth God and shunneth evil?” Job 1:8

The classic epic of Job takes place in the land of Uz which was located approximately in Edom (Jordan). The land itself was near the Chaldeans and Sabeans. They were the two groups which attacked and raided the farmers in the general region. (Job 1:15-17) Job, a Semite is a descendent of Nahor who was the brother of Abraham and the son of Terah. See Figure 7.1. The book of Job was probably written by himself since he said, “Oh that my works were now written. Oh, that they were printed in a book, that they are engraved with an iron, pen and lead in rock forever.” (Job 19:23-24) Job is not a victim of time and chance, but part of God's orchestrated purpose of lessons to humankind.

Job is but a shadow of a shadow since we know so little of him. The little we know is impressive. Job married, was a chieftain with high social rank. A man of integrity and blameless in all relations of life. He feared God and turned away from evil. He was blessed with seven sons and three daughters and an immense wealthy live stock - 7,000 sheep, 3,000 camels, 500 yoke of oxen and 500 donkeys. He was about 70 years old when he was gripped with his unusual experience.

The record describes Satan entering a heavenly council and saying to God, sarcastically, that it was easy for a rich and successful man to be God-fearing. Satan's thesis was a man's righteousness is not for itself, but in exchange for prosperity. Satan's insinuation against Job's piety is, all judgments are a matter of self-interest. He was saying Job's devout religion was depended on circumstances. Obviously, Satan was saying if Job lost his prosperity and cursed God, it would affirm that respect for God was dependent on circumstances. A test was agreed upon by God and Satan to see what would happen when wealth is removed. Would a devout man curse with the loss of his wealth? Obviously, God was not punishing Job for sin. God himself said, “Job is blameless and upright.” Job suffers because he is the best of men and not because he is the worst. Tests come to the best and the worst. See Figure 7.4

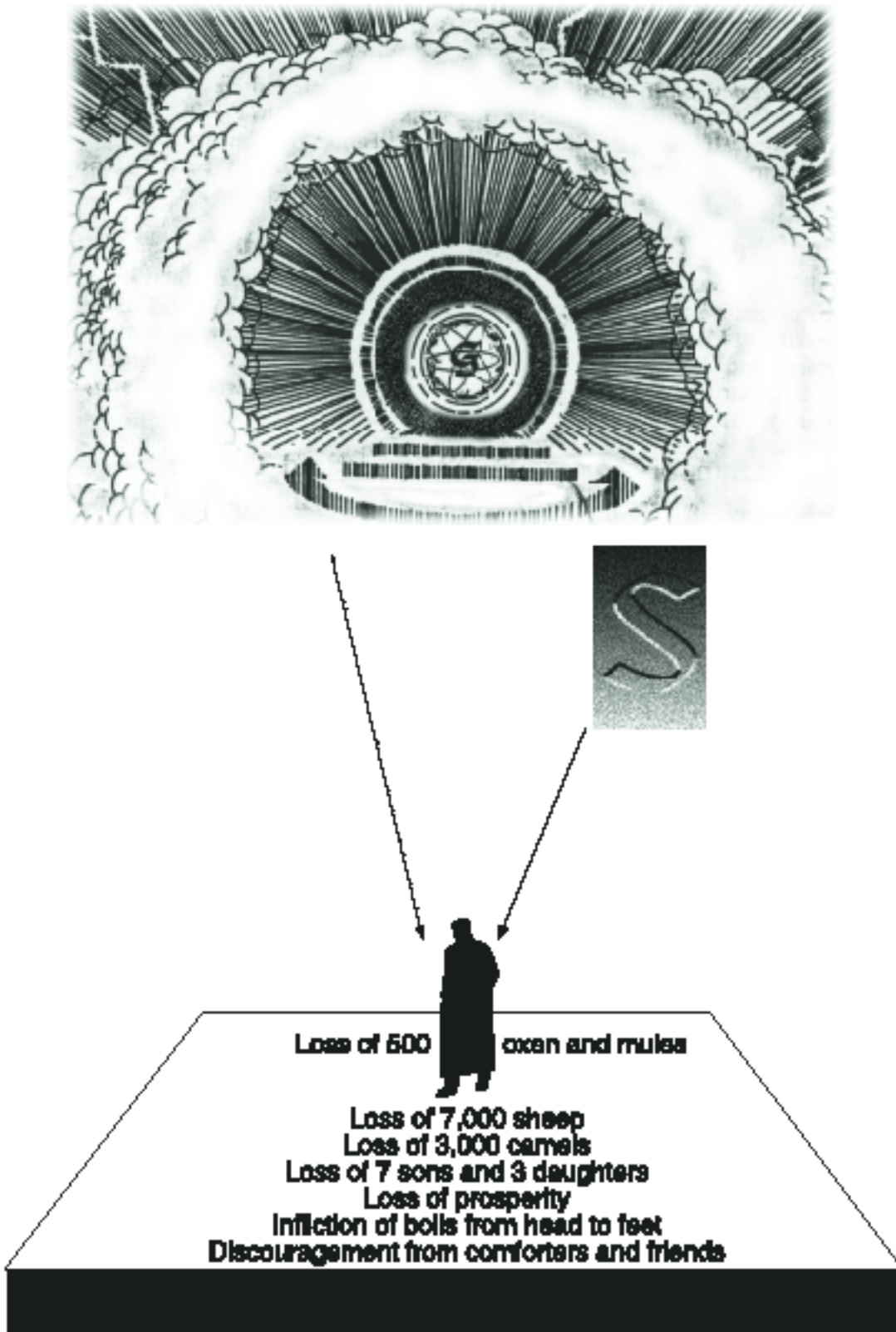


Figure 7.4 God and Satan agree on a great test of faith for Job

The next day following the agreed-upon test, Job's donkeys and camels were carried away by the Sabeans and the Chaldeans. His sheep were destroyed in a fire. All his children were killed during a storm by a collapsing roof. None were left alive. Job went into mourning, but uttered no protest. All Job said was, "naked came I of my mother's womb; naked shall I return. The Lord gave and the Lord hath taken away. Blessed be the name of the Lord." (Job 1:21) Job had proven himself faithful and God-fearing.

This should have ended the test, but Satan persisted! Satan's reaction to God generated a second test with a new thesis. A man will do anything to save his life - even curse God. Job experienced a great affliction on his own body and life. Dreadfully painful were sores in addition to a repulsive leprosy, from head to foot. Job's wife helped Satan's thesis by encouraging Job to curse God and die. All Job would say to his wife, "foolish woman shall we not receive both good and evil from God." (Job 2:9-10)

Visitors came and gave Job no comfort nor consolation. His esteem in the community disappeared along with his prosperity. Three named visitors were Elephaz, Bildad and Zopher from towns in the same land of Uz. They sat with Job seven days and nights. They accused Job of committing a great sin. They said and even argued, Job's sickness and adversity was God's punishment. It seemed the visitors were believers and adherents of Satan's thesis. Job's adversity must be connected in some way as a recipient of God's disfavor. The thesis that Satan expounded was a man's righteousness is not for itself, but in exchange for prosperity. As a result of these visitors, Job cursed his own existence and the day he was born. Job said, "let the day perish in which I was born". (Job 3:1-2) Yet, Job cursed not God. Job defeated Satan's thesis - a man will not do anything to save his life. He will even give his life for a righteous cause itself.

God also visited Job in a whirlwind of power and mystery. God raised many questions about Job's role in the immense activities of the universe. God's questions remind Job that his immense wealth and high social position is insignificant in the universe's cosmos. The mighty voice of God thundering out of the whirlwind put everything in perspective for Job by saying - God is alive; God is here; God cares; God is capable. The voice also said - God is big; God reprimands; God is just; God knows what he is doing. Job was overwhelmed and humbled at the visit and voice of God. God not only raised questions, but made statements about control of the seas, coming of the dawn, the fall of snow and hail, the power of thunder, lightening and rain, the movements of the stars and the survival of animals and birds. Job was abased. He said, "now my eye sees thee; therefore, I despise myself and repent in dust

and ashes”. God does not give an encompassing explanation to the puzzle of injustice and human suffering in the world. Nor does He explain how everything is just and right. He challenges Job to recognize the mystery that bounds human existence. This mystery ranges from the origin of the universe to the far reaching expectation of the future.

The ending of Job’s experiences is a happy one. Elephaz, Bilbad and Zopher are admonished and reprimanded. Job is restored to his original position. He is given double the wealth he lost before. This is 14,000 sheep, 6,000 camels, 1,000 yoke of oxen and 1,000 donkeys. He raises a new family with seven sons and three most beautiful daughters. All his kinsmen and friends pay great respect to him. They bring him gifts. Job lives to see his descendants to the fourth generation. Job finally dies at a ripe old age of one hundred forty. Job experiences were a test of a faithfulness and loyalty to God. The greatest value of the experience is when it pictures humankind in their experience of misery and the future expectation of immense happiness.

#### JOB’S ARCHAEOLOGICAL CONFIRMATION

“There was a man in the land of Uz whose name was Job.” Job 1:1

Confirmation of the history of Job comes from the Uzaritic texts discovered<sup>16</sup> since 1929 and then deciphered and interpreted. Modern archaeological research<sup>17</sup> supports the probability that Job lived no later than the time of Moses and even much earlier. The name Job has been frequently found in a number of tablets dated 2000 BC which is approximately at the time of Abraham. This would suggest Job lived between the time of Abraham and Moses. Akkadian tablets from Tel-el-Arnarna, Mari, Alalakh and the excavation texts from Egypt. The name “Bildad” one of Job’s visitors has been identified in a cuneiform text of this same period. In addition, several Sumerian documents incorporate the theme of the great example of patience. Albright suggests the name Job means “where is my Father?” The derivation of the word fits in well with Job’s longing for God who seemed to be hiding his face from his servant.

#### EVIL AND SOURCES OF SUFFERING

“And unto man He said, behold the fear of the Lord that is wisdom; and to depart from evil that is understanding.” Job 28:28

Evil is discord or disturbance in the order of the universe. It is that which produces unhappiness and suffering. Many times, evil is the elimination of a good or another evil. That is, a stronger evil may be needed to eliminate another lesser evil. A man who runs over a child which requires hospitalization produced an evil. He may have to go



to jail or forfeit his life as a result which is another evil. To eliminate a good is to be wicked, wrong and harmful. The process itself produces suffering and pain with those who are experiencing the evil. Evil inflicts pain on people. Pain, then is the measure or evidence an evil is being experienced. Pain and suffering can be a useful reminder that something is wrong or a wrong has been produced. This may indicate an action should be taken to correct it. Pain is the teacher that tells us that something is wrong. Pain tells us we are in non-conformity with the laws of the universe as well as the internal biological laws of our nature. Evils, such as death, disease, tempests, enemies and fires are not necessarily the work of God, nor of Satan, but can be from other sources. The human and environmental phenomena of uncontrolled activities, bad judgments of those in decision making, inherited weaknesses of our natures and the changes we see all around us, may bring about more pain and suffering than from God or Satan. Here is a list with a brief explanation of sources of evil which can produce it's unique forms of sufferings. See Figure 7.5.

1. *Natural Evils.* This results from physical conditions or circumstances generated by changes in the operations of natural laws. The world's water supply has been estimated at 9.0 million cubic miles of water. Rivers and streams account for 300 cubic miles. Inland seas and lakes account for 55,000 cubic miles and underground aquifers some 200,000 cubic miles. Most of the water is in the oceans. The water cycle processes water through evaporation and condensation. When quantities of evaporation and condensation are in excess or the cycle process is disrupted, floods result. One of the world's worst calamities of the 20th Century was a cyclone which hit East Pakistan in November 1970. It killed over 200,000 people. Most from flooding waters. Effects of the water cycle disruptions cause disasters and sufferings. But the same natural laws cause water flow to be useful, harmless and needed for life's processes. So in one instance natural laws can be useful, but in another it causes pain and suffering. To ask God to change natural laws for the convenience of one group or one section of planet earth would be to ask to equally inconvenience other people in another situation at the same time. When God overrules a law of nature, a miracle results. However, when the number of miracles increase, the free will of man is diminished or even destroyed and natural laws have no meaning. Besides God gave Adam a commission. That commission has been forgotten by many people. Genesis 1:28 states "subdue the earth". Subdue means to control it, conquer it, and finish the unfinished earth. Man has not done this hence we have tornadoes, hurricanes, floods and earthquakes. For the sake of man's free will and the unfinished earth, this type of evil has been man's legacy.

2. *Genetic Evils.* This results from inherited weaknesses and propensities for diseases and bodily and mental deficiencies. Everyone gets sick, suffers and dies. Man’s more fundamental problem is that his life must terminate and he can’t stop it. We call this the inheritance of Adamic sin. Diabetes, arthritis, heart attacks, cancer and vitality loss



Figure 7.5 Eight Sources of Evil

from the aging process results from the Adamic inheritance. Five percent of all fetuses in human conception inherit deviant chromosome numbers. Thirty-four percent of all fetuses have chromosomal abnormalities. “The fathers have

eaten the sour grapes and the children's teeth are set on edge." (Ezekial 18:2) Adam, because he was a free moral sentiment being lost for himself and his posterity an original paradise for continued life. The theme of this book, the Biblical Civilization, is a movement which one day will eliminate the genetic evils inherited in the human legacy.

3. *Social and Cultural Evils.* This results from the inept cultural and national policies, inferior family practices, low-quality lifestyles and poor living values. Unemployment results from an economy that functions inefficiently. Political upheavals with government dislocations affect family values and stability. Mismatched spouses produce broken homes, poor parenting and uncontrolled behaviors. The divorce rate has increased over the centuries. In 1940, one divorce occurred for every 6 marriages. In 1990, one divorce occurred for every 2 marriages. The projection by 2000 AD will produce more divorces than marriages. Drugs, alcoholism and crime can be traced to poor socio-economic conditions with shoddy parenting leading the charge. Ann Landers, famous columnist reported in a survey conducted with mothers, concluded that seventy-five percent would not have had their children if they knew the misery they would bring into their lives. What was not reported was these same mothers could have been the causes of poor upbringing. Family burdens and cultural disorders have been non-choice sources of sufferings. Wars, strife, conflicts, battles and attacks are also examples of social and cultural evils. These have been major sources of inflicting sufferings on other people. Paul Lee Tan's estimate of the number of people killed in wars since 3600 BC is 3.64 billion. Those injured and wounded must be a figure at least double from those killed. It was cited early in this book the many civilizations that have emerged and disappeared have been due largely to their inability to serve constituent needs. Evils are generated from their practices and lifestyles.

4. *Moral Evils.* This results from transgressing conscience and God's laws. This is commonly known as sin. Sin is the antagonism of the natural laws of human nature and the divine will. Homosexuality is against the natural nature endowed by the creator. The practice of it surely will lead to serious consequences in which a person will suffer bitterly. Slander and destructive gossiping will eventually have a negative effect in a person's life. The research firm of Daniel Yankelovick in a study showed 69 percent considered premarital sex morally right. Add to this statistic, 55 percent considered abortion morally right. Only 52 percent considered living a clean, moral life as an important value in their lifestyle. God does not punish a person for these and other immoralities. Rather natural laws and principles of leading healthy lives are broken and reactions to these transgressions will produce sufferings.

5. *Personal Evils.* This results from an individual not knowing what is right from wrong. These are errors or mistakes that are made from bad judgments in everyday life. People lack the wisdom and guiding principles from experience to avoid the consequences of making mistakes. Like the man who made the obvious mistake while driving a car, turned left with the car in an opposing one-way street. He was relegated to a wheel chair the rest of his life from a head-on collision. Eight percent of all fatalities were due to wrong way driving. Normal people in the course of normal activities will make a minimum of 20 percent errors or mistakes without knowing it. The list is long of the suffering that results in the lives of people who make mistakes. To cite a few others - inaccurate recording of information, eating the wrong foods or eating in excess, in appropriate ambition, ignoring environmental forces such as the hot sun and failure to control the temptations that enter into a person's life.

6. *Psychological Evils.* This results from fears, anxieties and mental deficiencies that emerge in a situation or from a deteriorating relationship with other people. 90 percent of the chronic patients who see today's physicians have one common symptom: fear. A nationwide survey showed two-thirds of children are scared that something bad is skulking in the neighborhood primed for an attack on the home. Psychological problems of people generates pain and suffering as much as defects of the body. There has been unprecedented progress in control and reduction of these sources of sufferings. But much needs to be done. The list of psychological evils is long. To cite a few: inferiority complex; addictive behaviors; anxiety reactions; depressive reactions; paranoid reactions; suicidal behaviors; and psychotic disorders. Many of these conditions are not genetic, but acquired after birth through the inability to cope with society and the environment.

7. *Satanic Evils.* This results from Satanic influences and direct attacks on people, nations and cultures. Job did not receive evil from God. He received evil and suffering from Satan. Interesting to note in the Job Epic that no blame was assigned to Satan. All the visitors as well as Job himself centered all the issues with God while Satan escaped any consideration. Perhaps few knew of Satan's hidden tactics behind the scenes. That may very well be the reason for the written record of Job's life. Job's experience revealed many things, but central was the hidden role of Satan. This is one of Satan's strategies - to himself even to a point where people feel he doesn't exist. We often forget Satan's role in the Garden temptation. This and others not known nor recorded are major sources of evil.

8. *Godly Evils.* This results from God's intervention into the affairs of mankind. Isaiah 45:7 and Amos 3:6 reminded Israel of their covenant commitments made as a nation. If they would obey Him they would be blessed.

However, if they forsook Him he would bring calamities (evils) upon them as chastisements. The Isaiah text states categorically that “God creates evil” in circumstances that are needed to combat or eliminate another evil. To cite two examples, God created a flood to destroy a hybrid species developing in the existing civilization. God also destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah to prevent the increase in homosexuality and possibly the spread of Aids. God created evil does not mean He creates sin. Sin is the transgression of law. God is not a transgressor of law and therefore, sinless.

All of the eight above sources of evil are upon humankind in a continual way. They produce prolonged and cruel sufferings. Bad things happening to good people can come from any one of the above sources. We should not conclude that all sufferings come from God. God abhors wickedness and evil. (Psalms 5:4) The evil mentioned in many scriptures refers to a righteous judgment against unrighteousness or wickedness. The “righteous evil” causes or produces distress and sorrow in the spirit or conscience of a person. It’s interest is correction and change. It underscores an evil and can produce a good. (Exodus 32:12,14; Deuteronomy 7;15; I Chronicles 21:15; II Chronicles 7:22; Isaiah 31:2 and Psalms 34:21)

#### WHY DOES GOD PERMIT EVIL IN CIVILIZATIONS

“To be made perfect through sufferings.” Hebrews 2:10

The book of Job teaches us that suffering may occur for a variety of reasons we may not understand unless or until God reveals them to us. Trials and tests may come to the good as well as bad people. This is because God needs to know something about the person, especially about the person’s relationship to Him. The following nine reasons give, generally, why God permits evil to fall upon the good as well as the bad. See Figure 7.6.

1. *To reveal the imperfect civilizations on planet earth.* “God saw the wickedness of man was great in the earth and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.” (Genesis 6:5) The history of humans is a history of sufferings. This gives evidence that all civilizations have failed to lift humans up to levels of perfection. Too often people suffer without knowing they are imperfect. Without knowing they are in non-conformity with universal laws. Suffering is a sign that something is radically wrong with civilizations. It is a sign that we live in an imperfect and non-conforming civilization.

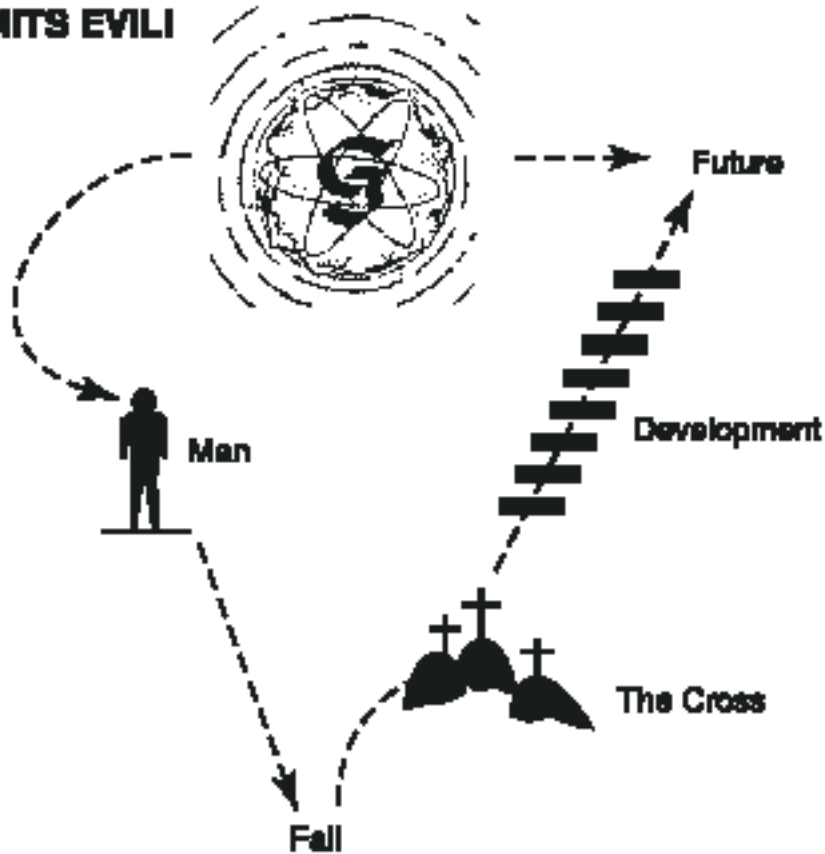
Rome, a long lasting civilization, with exceptional controls and wealth fell because of it's inability to raise it's people consistently to high levels of morality. Edward Gibbon listed many reasons for the decline and fall of Rome. Here are a few:

- a. Rapid increase in divorces and breakdown of the family and the home.
- b. Higher and higher taxes for public spending for free bread and circuses for the populace.
- c. The craze for pleasure and brutality in sports and entertainment.
- d. Religious values discarded and no longer guiding the people.
- e. High military buildup for political enemies when the real enemy was within.

These behaviors revealed an imperfect civilization which eventually collapsed. Sufferings that exist reveal that sin and evil are around us and even in us. In history, no civilization has been pure. In history, no civilization has been perfect. They are all gone. The astute observer of civilizations is most receptive to accept the civilization that is right for the people and harmonious with the laws of the universe.

2. *To reveal the free will nature of humans.* "You may eat of all the trees except the tree of good and evil." (Genesis 2:15-16) Humans are free to express their doubts concerning the way God handles the universe because they are free will sentient beings. They may raise questions about circumstances and even debate with their creator. Humans may even challenge their creator as to why certain things are done in the way they are done. God himself, no only permits this special privilege of humans but, severely censures those who try to stop it. For this reason, God answered Job's visitors. Being permitted to ask questions is tantamount to receiving answers. God in most cases does not involve Himself with arguments for and against His subjects and His dominion. He made an exception in Job's case. God protects this free will endowment of humans since His mission is to reproduce Himself within humans. If God were to shield humans from bad decisions or direct the free will nature of humans, He would be creating robots with mechanical mentality for doing right only. This would not replicate the free will nature of God Himself. This free will nature of humans is important for both God and humankind. Surveys are showing half the world does not have freedom. 66 countries of 42 percent of the world's population are not termed "free". The trend is up in removing freedom.

**TEN REASONS  
WHY GOD  
PERMITS EVIL**



- First:** To reveal imperfect civilizations through standard deviations.
- Second:** To reveal the free will nature of humans.
- Third:** To test human's harmony with universal laws.
- Fourth:** To provide a lasting learning experience on the consequences of breaking God's laws.
- Fifth:** To provide a "bank" of information and knowledge for a future life.
- Sixth:** To give lessons to the spiritual world.
- Seventh:** To develop the moral conscience.
- Eighth:** To reveal divine justice different from human justice.
- Ninth:** To reveal the mysterious and futuristic Biblical Civilization.
- Tenth:** To reveal how God's justice and love work harmoniously with creatures.

Figure 7.1

**Ten Reasons Why God Permits Evil**  
Figure 7.6 Ten Reasons Why God Permits Evil

3. *To test human's harmony with universal laws.* "Fear not for God is come to test you." (Exodus 20:20)

The test of Job was to examine if Job loved God for himself or for the good things he hath received from him. God does not need to test human imperfection for He knows already humans are imperfect. God needs to test their faithfulness. The test may be an ultimatum as God wants to know how much can a human take before they rebel with God. Job was victorious in his test. His life is a testimony and evidence to his contemporaries and to all humankind down through the ages that faithfulness to God is not connected with prosperity. Nor is it a reward by God for good behavior. Rather, a righteous human does righteously for it's own sake. It is a natural outcome of a person's character and development. God's test of Job may be the forerunner of the use of tests today. Appraisals and evaluations permeates most of civilization. Students are tested as to the degree of learning. Workers are tested as to their productivity. Businessmen are tested as to their profitability. Government staff workers are tested as to their performance. Politicians are tested as to their service contributions. Tests, appraisals and evaluations are intended to find out how well people meet expectations. We are doing today what God did to Job 4,000 years ago.

4. *To provide a lasting learning experience on the consequences of breaking God's laws.* "To be made perfect through sufferings." (Hebrews 2:10) Modern humans in reflecting on the human experiences of many millennia have learned a great deal. They have accumulated lessons, insights and understandings that will serve them in the future ages to come. The learning experience is a lasting experience on the consequences of being out of harmony with universal laws. Humans are learning through the best way to learn - experience. There are many ways to learn - school classrooms, books and literature, observations and inspections, computers and programs - but experience is the most permanent way to learn and store into memory the value of the experience. God permits bad things to happen to good people to reveal the consequences of breaking laws. Humans have laws all around and even within. Natural laws, physical laws, functional laws, biological laws and living laws. When humans break these laws, they will suffer. Take the laws of the body - when a person over-eats, over-lifts, over-runs and over-talks, they will experience discomfort and even pain. Breaking laws are painful. God could shield humans from these conditions. He could stop every abuse they intend to follow, but in doing this, free will go out the window and humans would become robots. Robots do not think. Robots are mechanical. Robots don't make decisions. Robots do not have free will.



God foresaw an actual experience with evil would be the surest and the most effective and the most lasting way to serve the human race eternally. This will give the human family in the future Biblical Civilization to return with built in memories, built in education, built in information and built in wisdom for avoiding violations of perfect law and standards. The Job experience has taught humans that there is more in the universe than mere justice. There is learning, sympathy and love. People have undergone a spiritual enrichment as a consequence of their sufferings. They become less rebellious in their attitude toward forces they cannot control. They have become more humble and dependent upon God's arrangements. They have become less frightened of the future since they have experienced a regretful past. Humans depend on God for all things. God depends on humans for only one - their love and faithfulness. Without human love for God, the creator does not exist for humankind. With human love, the creator does exist.

5. *To provide a "bank" of information and knowledge for a future life.* "Where shall wisdom be found? And where is the place of understanding?" (Job 28:12) The one resource that Adam lacked in his original make up was information and knowledge to guide him in decision making. Since there was no history to rely on, he failed in the most decisive experience. By information and knowledge, we mean directional information, control information, learning information, sympathetic information, character building information, lawful information, conflict information, social information, cultural information and even civilization information. Adam was deficient in knowledge experience, governmental experience, disappointment experience and the list is never ending. Adam lacked this information and experiences, but God has been supplying this deficiency for the past 6,000 years. God has allowed the human race to go through the fire, but it's an enriching fire to produce a magnificent collection of information and experiences that will serve as guidance for the human race in the Biblical Civilization. The greatest treasure humankind is now developing is the human experiences documented in books, reports, libraries, computers and information retrieval systems. The libraries have been the key means for information storage and retrieval. Worldwide production of new book titles in one year can be from 500,000 to 1,000,000. With the introduction of personal computers, these figures can increase immensely. If we all up all the information generated and stored over mankind's history, books alone would be estimated at three hundred million titles.

6. *To give lessons to the spiritual world.* "Humans are spectacles to spiritual creatures." (I Corinthians 4:9) God's ways are hidden from humans. They are often mysterious. Humans seem to be a theater for those in the future

who will study the past and for living creatures outside planet earth. This would suggest mysteries have meaning even though people cannot understand them. The human mystery is giving lessons to spiritual beings in a spiritual world. These are the angels, seraphines, cherubins and archangels that dwell in heaven. The number of these spiritual beings are without count. We can only estimate. Daniel 7:10 identifies 100 million. Paul writes you can't count them. (Hebrews 12:22) The Psalmist, Job and Job the revelator infer there may be as many angels as there are stars in the heavens. (Psalm 48:1-3; Job 28:7; Revelation 9:1) If this is so, there could be untold trillions of these spiritual beings. They are learning along with humankind. They have learned the death concept, the consequences of breaking laws, the sufferings and painful experiences and the aging process. The human family has been through an experience to actually see these lessons and learn from them. People are now learning that death is a possibility to spiritual mortals when they break God's laws as well as human mortals.

7. *To develop the moral conscience.* "I exercise myself to have always a conscience void of offense toward God and toward men." (Acts 24:16) God wants humankind to develop the ability to decide between right and wrong. You can't know what's right, unless you know what's wrong. God is really known and appreciated when evil is known and experienced. The moral sense is Adam and Eve failed them since they did not know good and evil. It is this moral sense that tells people "stealing is wrong" and "anger is wrong". It is this same moral sense that tells humans "love is right", "kindness is right", "helpfulness is right", and "peace is right". With built in principles of right and wrong, freedom of choice can be guided in making moral conscience choices. Humans are becoming like god. "Let us make man in our image and after our likeness." (Genesis 1:26)

8. *To reveal divine justice is different from human justice.* "They are of those that rebel against the light; they know not it's ways, nor abide in it's paths." (Job 25:13) "For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts." (Isaiah 55:9) Divine and human justice are not congruent. Often, they cannot be mutually rationalized. If you evaluate divine justice in the short run, you will miss the big picture that God is creating in the long run. A big lesson from Job is to "see" that the universe, the cosmos, the solar system and planet earth cannot be explained in human terms since these are non-human constituents. As human beings we cannot apply short run human concerns and expectations to the long term concerns of the cosmos. There is an enormous picture of which God is governing and we are only an insignificant tiny part. Divine justice which sees the big picture in the long run is not the same as human justice which sees only the individual picture in

the short run. Human justice is momentary - immediately after an act of injustice. Divine justice is long lasting - years and years after the act of injustice. Take for example, the wicked one's seeming prosperity. They may have short lived evil moments of prosperity, admiration, pleasure and even honor. They may even be happy. But these moments defeat and demise the individual. The moments force the individual to be further and further away from the status of a complete person. They are already imperfect. Their evil moments make them less and less imperfect hastening themselves on the road to destruction. The wicked may have prosperity, but the righteous have God. The inequities of life are short lived, but in the ultimate analysis the righteous will overcome. God's permission of evil is to show his conflict with Satan and existing civilizations.

9. *To reveal the mysterious and futuristic Biblical Civilization.* Job's experience reveals the present struggles of life. It also suggests everyone has a "Job" within themselves. Job is a model of a person who practices righteousness and avoids evil. The questions and dialogue of Job with God can be very much people's questions and dialogue with God. This is to suggest the real purpose for the writing of the Book of Job. God allowed Satan to initiate and impose such a terrible suffering upon a godly man as a picture and type for his allowing evil to befall humankind. Job's sufferings are the steepest plunge from fortune to misery. But Job's experience shows his victory and subsequent meteoric rise to greater levels of prosperity. There's a parallel between Job and the human family. Job was cited as a man of great learning, influence and wealth. This is typical of Adam and the human family who feared, talked and had union with God. Adam also had great wealth and his health. This is Adam and his offspring. Adam lost his right to life and the results were sickness and death. Job sought earnestly for an explanation as to why would God permit such evils to befall him. Humankind asks why - if thou be God, why is there evil in the world? Why must we suffer? Job had comforters and analysts who told him to curse God and die. God does not hear you nor does He care. Humankind has comforters in the intellectual leaders, social analysts and great statesmen. They say God is a myth. God is an illusion. There is no God. Enjoy life it's later than you think. Job cries out for answers for he wants an explanation. Humankind asks the same questions. God answers with the Bible. Within the Bible contains mysteries, but these mysteries have answers. The big answer is the movement of the Biblical Civilization. Finally, Job's great disaster comes to an end. Personal suffering ceases. His wealth doubles. His family restored - but more. Job becomes a valuable human being from all his experiences. Humankind's disaster will come to an end. Suffering, evil, sickness and despair will end. Humankind, like Job will become more valuable

as a result of their experiences. Job's record is an important testimony representative of the world of humankind in general.

Harold S. Kushner<sup>18</sup>, a Boston Rabbi, gives Job a modern perspective. His thesis is that God is all loving, but not all powerful. He is all good, but not all sovereign. So when bad things happen to good people, it's simply because events are out of God's control. He can't do anything about it. He is helpless! Kushner advises his readers to learn to love God and forgive Him despite his limitations to help. Since God has these limitations, there is something more powerful than Him.

To react to Kushner's thesis, note the heavenly scene with God and Satan. Note Satan had to have permission before he attacked Job. For Satan to ask permission of God is to recognize his sovereignty. Job's suffering was not because of an injustice nor a justice. Job was blameless. God was allowing the test as a projected picture for humans. Humans too, are not to be blamed. They do not deserve the suffering experience. But like Job, one day their suffering will be eliminated. God does not need forgiveness. God has a plan. God is still in control. His power is seen in the long run moving humankind to a glorious future. To be a part of and in harmony with the cosmos and the angelic host is a major objective in the future arrangements.

10. *To reveal how God's justice and love work harmoniously.* Justice and love as values and behaviors are often in conflict. There are those who favor an act of justice while disregarding the mercy and compassion of love. Similarly, there are those who favor the mercy and compassion of love while ignoring the righteousness and truth of justice. God is often confronted with this dilemma of two values equally desirable, but equally conflicting. To allow both demands of these values to act simultaneously is to compromise them. To act on one while ignoring the other is to neglect or not care for the other. God handles this challenge by permitting in a sequence one followed by the other so that in the bigger and longer range picture both are satisfied. In the case of Adam, justice came first. Adam sinned and death resulted. Love came second in retrieving Adam from death through the redemptive power of the resurrection. The demands of both these two values were met, but it took a long period of time for the resolution. With humankind, truth and justice has brought them to their predicament, but eventually mercy and love will release and allay their predicament.

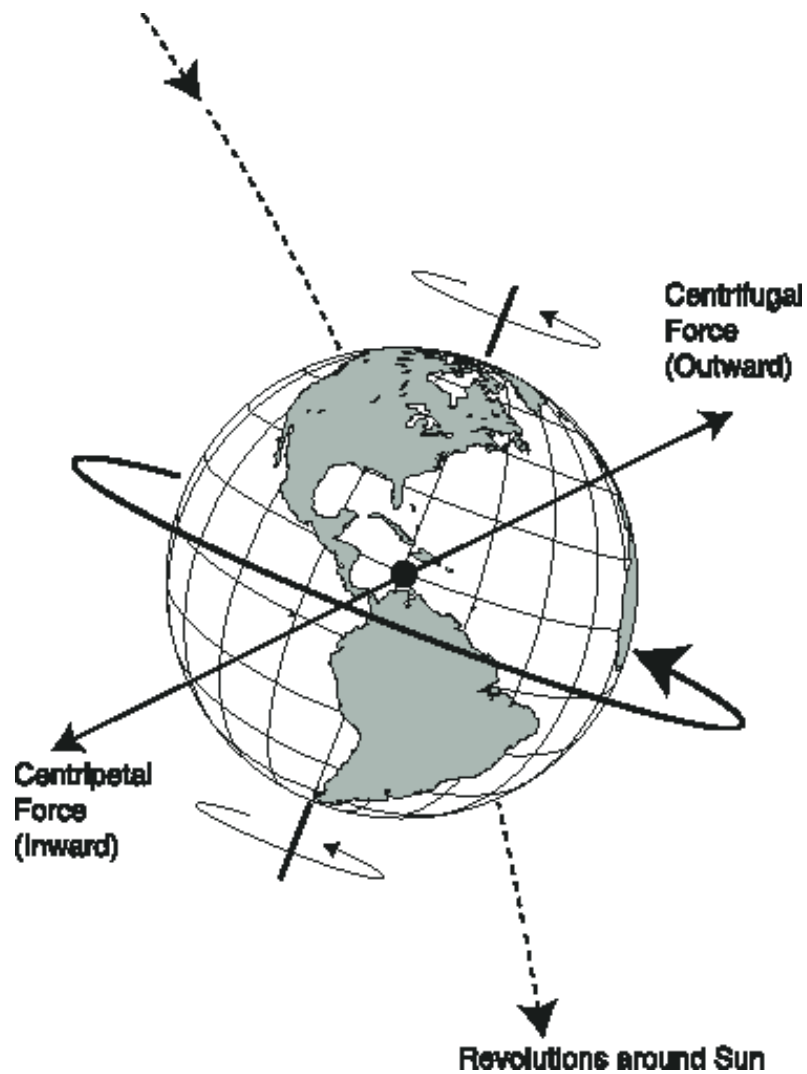
## THE SCIENTIFIC REFERENCES IN THE BIBLE

“Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth.” Job 38:2-4,7

When the patriarch Job cried out for answers to his many perplexities, God sends him scientific explanations in nature. Instead of consolation and vindication, God arrives in a whirlwind of questions and answers about the mysteries and processes of nature. God describes the perpetuation of the earth, the insights into the stars, the movements of the air and the sea and the invisible forces of life that influence all of us. God’s response to Job indicates there are mysteries all around us. An individual problem shrivels almost to insignificance when seen in the background of baffling and overpowering mysteries. When one walks under the billion of huge star collections called galaxies with their incomprehensible distances and numbers, we are overwhelmed how small we truly are. When God visited Job, Job was overwhelmed with the visit. Job admitted there were matters beyond his comprehension.

The visit by God gave scientific insights into the world of nature that was not known at the time. Other parts of the Old Testament also provided scientific discernments not known. The Bible is not to be considered a scientific treatise, yet in it are scientific facts that were unknown to scientists until very recent times. Scientific subjects are touched on in medicine, biology, physics, astronomy and geology. This is not to say the writers were scientists. This is to say where issues of theology and religions were dealt with and scientific notation and facts were included, these facts were accurate and insightful as confirmed in modern times. This also emphasizes there is a relationship between science and religion. Religion is primarily what humankind ought to be. Science and technology is for what humankind ought to do and how to do it. There is no exaggeration to say the future course of history and civilization depends upon decision as to the relationship between them. Every new scientific and technological invention for the well being of mankind is an act of obedience to the commission in Genesis: “Be fruitful, multiply, fill the earth and subdue it.” Science and technology has a role in “subduing”. It’s noteworthy to identify Biblical statements in the Old Testament during the Judaic stage pronounced thousands of years ago only to be verified in recent years. This section identifies scientific pronouncements from Job as well as other books in the Old Testament. Science is not a body of fixed truths which are eternally true. Science is an increasing and progressive attempt to clarify existing truths as well as uncover more truths found in the universe.

1. *The Bible states the earth suspended in space with gravity.* “He hangeth the earth upon nothing.” (Job 26:7) The earth is a planet suspended in space. It was God who hung the earth with nothing that can be seen. This is no simple task as the earth weighs 6,000 million, million, million tons ( $6 \times 10^{21}$ ). More impressive is the fact all celestial bodies are hung or suspended with incalculable weights. These suspensions are held by a carefully designed system of invisible forces of motion termed centrifugal and centripetal. These are component forces of gravity. They define gravity. See Figure 7.7.



**Figure 7.7 Invisible Forces keeps Earth in Balanced Equilibrium Suspension**

The forces are balanced which hold the planet earth in orbit as it turns on its axis. These same forces hold other celestial bodies in a systematic order as the universe expands. The scriptural statement was made as a time contradicting the existing civilizations notions that the earth was held up by a flat table, a huge elephant or a great turtle. Other errors such as the earth is flat, creation was instantaneous and the solar system came to a halt at

Joshua's command came from unreliable theological and scientific sources. A science text book of 100 years ago would be filled with errors as it relates to modern astronomical discoveries. It was Aristotle that initiated and perpetuated the idea that the earth was the center of the universe. This was accepted by both scientific and religious groups for over 1,500 years after his death. Interesting to note the recent public apology by the Papal Church to a demised Galileo for his arrest and imprisonment for his claim the earth was not the center of the universe.

2. *The Bible states the world is round centuries before others confirmed it.* "It is He that sitteth upon the circle of the earth." (Isaiah 40:20) This was expressed in the Eighth Century BC. There was a time among scientists which believed the world was flat. Even today the Flat Earth Society in England continues to hold up the earth as flat. Columbus and the astronauts according to the society are victims of some kind of delusion. When the investigative efforts of later scientists believed the planet circular and revolving around the sun, the Bible had already had that information recorded. Even Columbus received resistive attacks by scientific men of his day who thought him to be a crack-pot. When Magellan sailed his expedition around the world, he proved the roundness and also validated the Biblical text of millennia earlier.

3. *The Bible states our world is one among many planets of a solar system.* "Through faith we understand the worlds were framed by the word of God." (Hebrews 11:3) We now know there are nine planets or worlds in our solar system. There are 100 million galaxies in the universe. In Paul's day, they did not know this. But more, the pinpoints of light are also planets as well as stars. Many of the planets are larger than the earth. As we look into the sky we see many worlds that yet needs to be developed. There are active probes and astronaut orbitings to collect data and information about other planets and the solar system for the possibility of interplanetary journeys as well as interplanetary settlement. Only recently have we learned the discovery of new planets in other galaxies. This leads us to the notion there may be as many planets as there are stars. This would be approximately 10 million, million, million, million, million planets ( $10^{22}$ ). See Figure 7.8 for worlds in our solar system.

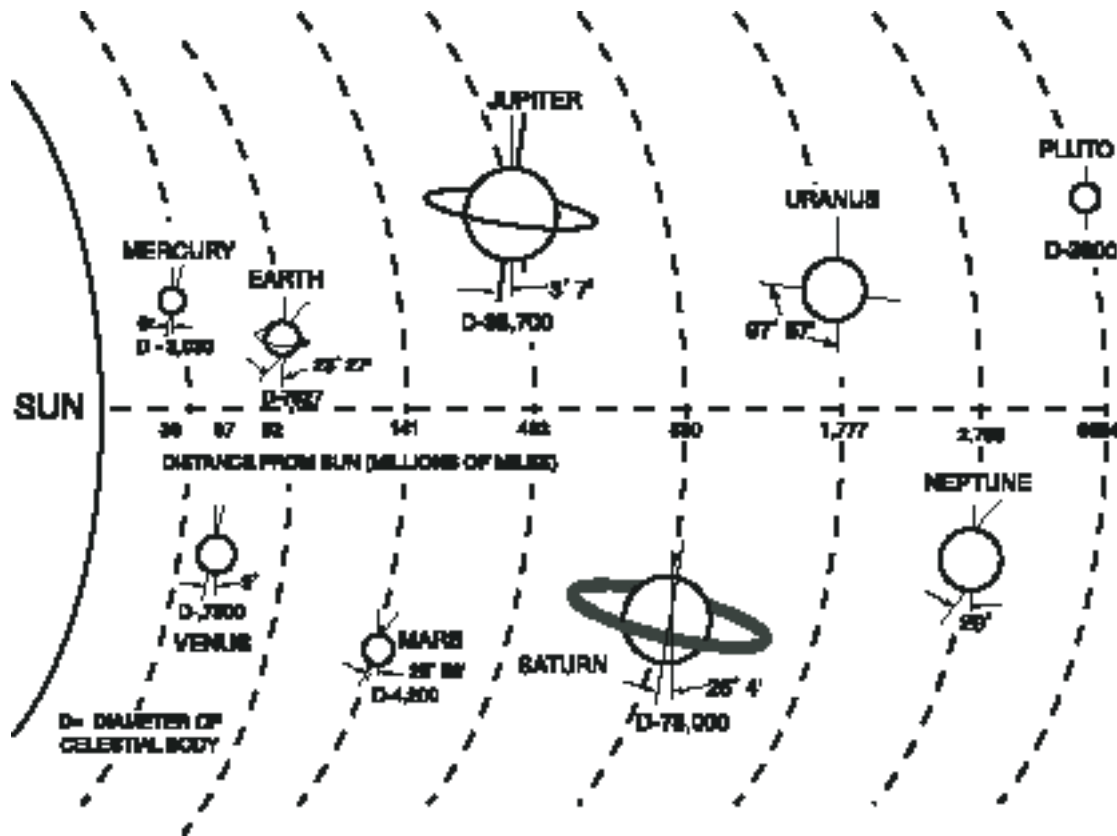


Figure 7.8 Nine Planets to Earth's Solar System

4. *The Bible states our world has fixed species.* “Every living creature that moveth after their kind and every winged fowl after his kind. God saw that it was good.” (Genesis 1:24-25) In the first chapter of Genesis, the Bible indicates the trees, grass, fish, creeping things, cattle, horses and every living thing is to reproduce only after their kind. There may have been an evolution in bringing a species up to the level in which it is good. But after that, the species was fixed. Members of a single species even exchange hereditary material more or less freely with one another, but are barred from furnishing a receiving genetic material belonging to a different species. We have noted over the many centuries, variations occur because of environment and food, but reproduction always yields their own kind.

5. *The Bible states the stars are grouped into constellations.* “Him that maketh the Bear, Orion and Pleiades. Is not God in the height of heaven? Can'st thou bind the sweet influence of the Pleiades or loose the bands of Orion.” (Job 9:9; 22:12-14; 38:31) Constellations are groupings of stars that form a configuration in the sky. The practice of naming groups of stars stem from ancient antiquity as much as 3000 BC. Today there are officially 88 recognized constellations. Of these, 28 are northern, 12 are zodiacal and 48 are southern. It is difficult for us even to



imagine a sky in which there are no stars or constellations. The pleasure of these pinpoints of light would be gone. But more, the guidance and relevance for celestial navigation would also be gone. The ancients were guided by the stars for telling time, predicting seasons and for travel. The starry sky provides a framework for reverence and contemplation of the unknown.

6. *The Bible states the heavenly bodies are under fixed orbits.* “Do you know the laws of the heavens? Can you set up God’s dominion over earth? (NIV Job 38:33) Science has not established heavenly bodies transverse orbits with great accuracy and unchanging variations. Ordinances are rules or laws that regulate and control. The regularity of the sun, the procession of days, seasons and years indicate God governs the heavenly bodies by his ordinances. These ordinances have their effects upon the earth so that we can predict their behavior for thousands of years into the future. The earth traverses its path around the sun in 365 days, 5 hours, 48 minutes and 45.51 seconds while traveling at the rate of 67,000 miles per hour. The earth makes this journey regularly year in and year out.

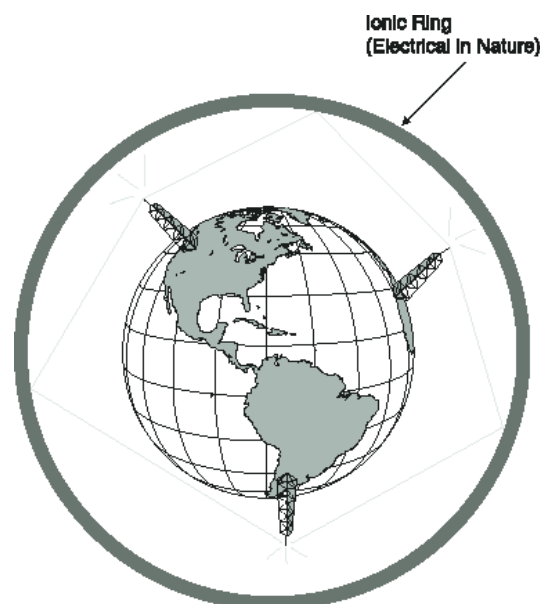
7. *The Bible gives reference to an expanding universe.* “He stretched out the north over the empty place.” (Job 26:7) “He stretched out the heavens like a curtain.” (Isaiah 40:22) An expanding universe has been theorized by Edwin Hubble and Steven Hawking<sup>19</sup>. These scientists have worked out the numbers to 100 billion different galaxies. For all the galaxies, the total number would add to one sextillion stars. That is  $1 \times 10^{22}$  stars. Our own galaxy is one hundred thousand light years across and slowly rotating. All these enormous aggregates are under an expansion either heading for a corner of the universe or undergoing a circuitous rotation around a central pivotal point.

8. *The Bible refers to huge animals now extinct.* “Behold now behemoth which I made with thee...He is the chief of the ways of God.” (Job 40:15,19) “Canst thou draw out leviathan with a hook or his tongue with a cord?” (Job 41st chapter) God refers Job to two great animals, quite possibly the largest animals created - behemoth, an animal on the land and leviathan, the largest fish in the sea. Scholars have labored to classify these animals in today terms without success. Elephants, hippopotamus, rhinoceros, whales, alligators, etc. do not fit the descriptions. No known living animals conforms to the qualities and characteristics of Job’s record. We are prone to suggest the animals are extinct. The descriptions might remotely fit the dinosaurs who were not able to survive the vigorous climate change of the flood. The behemoth could very well be the largest land animal now extinct and the leviathan

could very well be the largest sea serpent on record. These animals were included in the record to remind Job that he is well in control of any situation including the control of behemoth and leviathan.

9. *The Bible infers air has weight and pressure.* “For he looketh to the ends of the earth and seeth under the whole heaven to make weight for the winds.” (Job 28:25) Air is the mixture of gases that define the atmosphere of the earth. The composition of air consists of nitrogen, oxygen, water vapor, and small quantities of neon, helium, hydrogen, methane, ozone and xenon. The chemical composition of dry air is nearly constant up to 50 miles above sea level. Above that level to 100 miles it diminishes to atomic and subatomic particles. The ancients insisted that air had no weight. The force downward exerted by the atmosphere is 14.5 pounds per square inch. This fact indicates air has weight. It is not zero as previously believed by scientists in the ancient world.

10. *The Bible infers early telecommunications.* “Can’st thou send lightnings that they may go and say unto thee, here we are?” (Job 38:35) Wireless telephoning and other forms of technological communications take a message to go from it’s source to a destination through the atmosphere. The message can be in the form of radio frequencies or short and long impulses coded to represent letters as found in the telegraph. These were sent through the air as electrical energy spikes. See Figure 7.9. In modern times, communication satellites permit the beaming of programs to one or more television stations scattered over many countries even intercontinental. At the time of Job, only God could send lightnings and communications.



**Figure 7.9 Wireless Communications Predicted in 11th Century BC**

11. *The Bible infers modern day cloud-seeding for rain making.* “Can’st thou lift up thy voice to the clouds that the abundance of water may cover thee.” (Job 38:34) Clouds are collections of a large number of tiny water droplets or ice crystals in the air. The droplets fall through the air like fine dust particles. Sometimes these fine droplets will coagulate with other droplets to fall as rain, hail or snow. The fallout is replaced as vapor by evaporation by the sun from large bodies of earth’s waters. The science of rainmaking is still in it’s infancy. This is an attempt to cause rain if and when needed. Research projects have verified that ice crystals (dry ice) or silver iodized particles when sprinkled on supercooled clouds could very well cause precipitation in the form of rain or snow. Cloud seeding can be useful to bring in a desired rain fall or prevent harmful incoming weather.

12. *The Bible describes the water cycle.* “All the rivers run into the sea; yet the sea is not full. Unto the place from whence the rivers come, thither they return again.” (Ecclesiastes 1:7) It is only in recent centuries that scientists have determined that the water that falls as rain had previously been evaporated from the oceans by the power of the sun. This is called the water cycle. See Figure 7.10. This amazing, perpetual system which supplies the land areas with clean fresh water was known to writers as Solomon. Even the prophet Amos knew of it. “He that calleth for the waters of the sea and poureth them out upon the face of the earth. The Lord is his name.” (Amos 9:6)

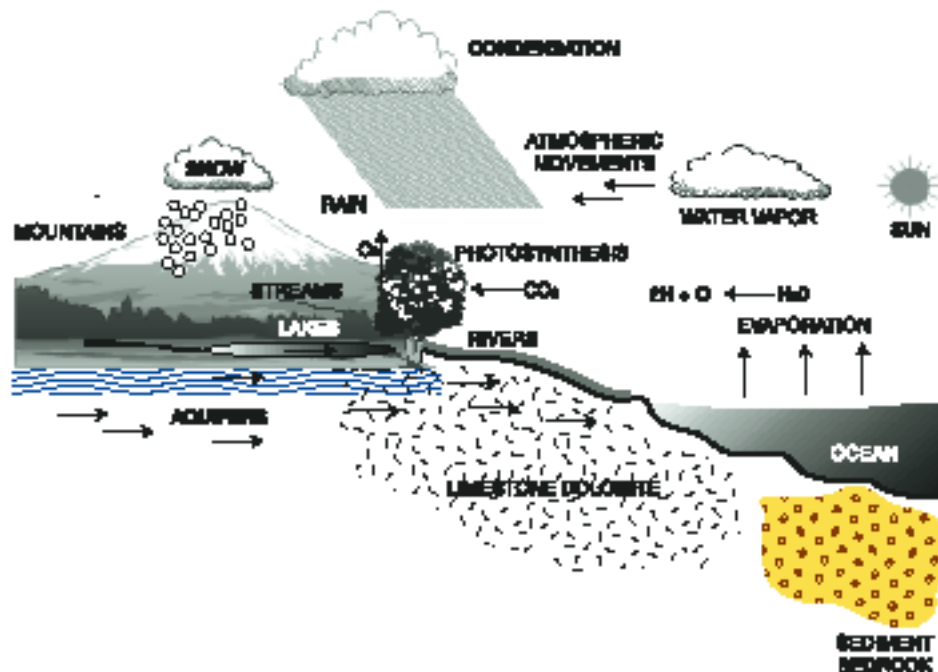


Figure 7.10 The Water Cycle

13. *Bible language has been misunderstood.* “He removeth the speech of the trustworthy and taketh away the understanding of the aged.” (Job 12:20) The Bible is fitted with symbolic, poetical and metaphorical expressions. These expressions have been misunderstood as they were not intended to be literal. For example Revelation 7:14 “speaks of four corners of the earth”. This expression is not scientific, but symbolic. Some have used this to say the earth is flat. Another from Proverbs 23:7, “As a man thinketh in his heart, so is he”. In early times the heart was regarded as the seat of intelligence. It was the brain of the body. We know today the heart is a pump which cannot think. There are many of these examples. The language of the Bible’s language is more vernacular in order to appeal to the masses of people who lack scientific education.

14. *The Bible refers to the circularity of the winds.* “The wind goeth toward the south and turneth about into the north and whirleth continually and returneth again to the circuit.” (Ecclesiastes 1:6) Winds are the natural horizontal movements of air over the earth’s surface and in the upper atmosphere. As water flows downhill, winds flow from high atmospheric pressure toward one of low. The continuous airflow from high to low is modified or influenced by the rotation of the earth, surface friction, temperature and thermal connection, frontal movements and the topography of the ground surface. There are winds which have a regularity in their routes. These are the westerlies, trade winds and polar easterlies. Their routes may vary, but they follow a predicable path. Then there are the winds without regularity in their routes that often cause disasters and destruction such as Nor’easters, cyclones, hurricanes and typhoons.

15. *The Bible states the sun is moving through space.* “The sun...like a champion rejoicing to run his course. It rises at one end of the heavens and makes its circuit to the other; nothing is hidden from it’s heat.” (NIV Psalm 19:5-6) Some have interpreted this text described the sun revolving around the earth. But what it’s saying is the sun is moving through space at over 500 thousand miles an hour and pulling the earth with it. The sun is the central controlling body of the solar system. It is the largest member of the system. It is 750 times more massive than the nine major planets put together. It is because of it’s huge mass that it’s gravitational pull moves it’s entire family with it as it makes it’s circuitous journey.

16. *The Bible states that women are part of the process of forming life.* “I will put enmity between thee and the woman and between thy seed and her seed; he will bruise thy head and thou shalt bruise his heel.” For centuries in the ancient world, it was thought that only the male had the seed of life. The role of the female was to be a receptacle

for receiving the seed and nursing it toward the development of a human life. Some of these ancient thoughts went so far as to state the female was an unnecessary partner. Today, science has shown that both male and female are contributors to the formation of a human with the male contributing 48 chromosomes and the female 49 chromosomes.

#### ARCHAEOLOGICAL CONFIRMATION OF ISRAELIS IN EGYPT

“And all the souls that came out of the loins of Jacob were seventy souls for

Joseph was in Egypt already.” Exodus 1:5

There have been many archaeological confirmations of Israelis in Egypt. Unger<sup>20</sup> cites several. For one, names such as Moses, Assur, Hophori, Merari and others are clearly Egyptian. For another, titles for Egyptian officials such as “Chief of Bakers”, “Chief of Butlers”, “Overseers”, “Chief Treasure” have no Hebrew equivalents. These are often mentioned in Egyptian documents as in the record of Genesis. Still another evidence are Canaanite names found in the Nile Delta such as Succoth, Baal-Zephon, Madol and Zilu. The Nile Delta was very much like Goshen itself as described in the Masoretic text.

Baez-Camargo<sup>21</sup> identified the Chester Beatty-Papyrus now in the British Museum which has hieratic script from the Twelfth Dynasty (2000-1800 BC). In this script over 200 examples of dreams are recorded with interpretive remarks as to their meanings. It was a period of time when dreams and their interpretation was in vogue. One cannot help see the connection of Joseph’s sojourn in Egypt and his meteoric rise in politics and economics for his interpretation of Pharaoh’s dream.

Mummified embalming is still another evidence of this period. Joseph as the Vizier of Egypt commanded the physicians to embalm his father, Jacob with the required forty days and a mourning of 70 days. (Genesis 50:2-3) It was not a practice among Semites nor Hebrews to mummify the bodies of their dead. They simply buried the body. This process was an Egyptian practice clearly identified in the Hebrew scriptures. Joseph commanded this in order to preserve the body of Jacob so that it might be taken back to Canaan and buried there. Baez-Camargo adds another interesting evidence of this period from the recorded Papyrus Puisse written during the Middle Kingdom of Egypt (2050 - 1785 BC). This written document cites a Vizier of Egypt, without naming Joseph, making the following statement; “What I have done on earth is not considerable. I have attained one hundred and ten years of life.” This

coincides with the Biblical Masontic text of Genesis 50:26 which states; “Joseph died being a hundred and ten years old. They embalmed him and he was put in a coffin in Egypt.”

Baez-Camargo also reports the ruins of two cities in the Nile Delta zone called Goshen. This is the region of Wadi-Tumilats of Rameses. The names of the cities are Pithom (Tell er-Retaba) and Rameses (Tell el-Maschutta). The ruins are located at Tell el-San where granite pillars, pedestals of statues, granary ruins and bas-reliefs have been found. The brick buildings, it is believed are buildings built by the Hebrews. This was, for a time Rameses’ capitol and the former capitol of the Hyksos rulers. Historians have identified the change of capitols to be closer to the center of activities of the delta as opposed to Thebes which was further south. From the delta, the rulers could keep a closer “eye” on the turbulent, but fast growing Hebrews. The design and construction of the granary ruins of the period has not changed over the years. The American and Canadian silos are still built on the same principles which Joseph set up in Egypt 4,000 years ago. (Genesis 41:48)

Paul Johnson<sup>22</sup> in a comprehensive work on the history of the Jews identifies a non-Biblical reference connecting Israel and Egypt at this time. He describes in an upright stone slab (stele) with an inscription describing the Egyptian encounter with the Israeli’s in battle. The inscription was dated in 1220 BC. This would seem to locate the Exodus in the Thirteenth Century which was probably completed by 1220 BC.

Keller<sup>23</sup> describes the new king who knew not Joseph was Rameses II. Joseph was not known because he lived centuries before in the days of the Hyksos. It would take several centuries for Israel to grow as a nation. In an old painting found in a rock tomb west of the royal city of Thebes by Percy A. Newberry, shows brick making, mortar making and bricklaying. The most notable feature of this painting is the workmen, both dark-skinned and light-skinned working as forced laborers in Pathom and Ramesis. The light-skinned workmen were not Africans nor Egyptians. One dark-skinned individual had a rod in his hand suggesting an overseer of forced laborers. The light-skinned workmen were no doubt Semites or Hebrews. The Egyptians forced the children of Israel to serve with rigor. They made their lives bitter under hard bondage. (Exodus 1:13-14) Keller also cites the ancient waterway that to this day is called “Bahr Yusirf” (Joseph’s Canal). People still claim today it was the Canal of Joseph of the Bible, the Grand Vizier. This canal is located in a spot by the Nile often referred to as the Venice of Egypt which produces oranges, mandarins, peaches, olives and grapes. The ancient waterway still exists.

Manfred Bietak, an Egyptian archaeologist, in a recent article<sup>24</sup> in the *Biblical Archaeological Review* describes an ancient Israeli house in Egypt dated approximately 1200 BC in the capitol of Thebes. Most scholars believe this city to be the Biblical city of Ramesis where the Israelites were forced to make bricks for the Pharaoh during their captivity in Egypt. The layout of this house was radically different from the usual layout of Egyptian houses at the time. Later this same layout began to appear in Canaan at the approximate time of the Hebrew settlement after their wilderness experience. This does not give conclusive proof of the sojourn of the Israelites in Ramesside Egypt as there may be other reasons. But certainly it adds to the other evidences for confirming Hebrew settlements in Egypt.

Keith W. Stump in his article<sup>25</sup> “Digging up the Bible” cites several archaeological discoveries which give insights into the history recorded in the Bible. For one, the Tomb of Rekh-mi-re has a painting on the wall describing the Valley of the Nobles at Thebes showing slaves making mud bricks which recalls the enslaved Israelites forced into making bricks. For another, an Israel Stele in the Thirteenth Century where the name of Israel is inscribed in hieroglyphics on a stone slab found in 1896 at Thebes. It is one of the few mentions of Israel in all Egyptian records and one of the oldest evidences outside the Bible for Israel’s existence. Israel is listed as one of the peoples in Western Asia during the reign of Ramses’ son, Mereptah (1213-1203 BC) offering evidence that the Israelites were already settled in Canaan by that time.

The editors<sup>26</sup> of the *International Standard Bible Encyclopedia* have summarized archaeological discoveries in Egypt that confirm many historical Biblical sites. For example, the Egyptian practice of mummification in preserving the body of a king, queen or person of great nobility is mentioned in Genesis 50:26. The woman who ruled Egypt, 149-1468 BC is described as Pharaoh’s daughter. She was the one who adopted Moses. (Exodus 2:3-10) The Biblical account of the plagues described in Exodus Chapter 7 through 11 suggests the Israelites were located reasonably near the dwelling of Pharaoh. Rameses II and succeeding kings had moved the capitol from Thebes closer to the Israelites.

The Great Pyramid of Gizeh, also known as Cheops, is another confirming citation by the editors<sup>27</sup>. This pyramid was built about 2530 BC. It rises to a height of 486 feet. The base is 761 feet on each side and covers an area of 13 acres. Someone estimated 2,300,000 blocks of stone was used in it’s construction. Each block weighs approximately two and one-half tons. Historians estimate it took 100,000 men 20 years to construct the pyramid. The stone blocks were shaped, fitted and marked at the quarry according to a construction plan. They transported the

blocks during the Nile flooding in winter and spring. The number of people involved was as follows: 100 military officers, 50 civil officials and ecclesiastics, 130 stone masons, 2 pointers, 4 engravers, 3,000 soldiers, 200 members of the Pharaoh's court, 2,000 temple servants and 8,000 workmen and slaves. The pyramid-building mania peaked with Cheops for at least three reasons: its enormous costs, its long time construction and the diminishing power of the Egyptians. It was at a time when the Egyptian Civilization was in decline. The Pyramid at Gizeh is cited in Isaiah 19:19-20. "In that day shall there be an altar to the Lord in the midst of the land of Egypt and a pillar at the border of it to the Lord." Scientists have found the pyramid site in the exact center of the land masses of the earth. It is at the border of upper and lower Egypt. Many Bible scholars have seen the measurements and construction of the pyramid as an outline of the Bible as well as having a predictive significance. Science concepts and principles have also been identified with the Great Pyramid suggesting a special knowledge was known among the designers. The various stages of the rise of the Biblical Civilization can also be seen in the pyramid. See Figure 7.11. These and still other evidences show the Israeli experience in Egypt was no fairy tale. It was real and many lessons have been learned. Interesting to note the many scientific concepts that are associated with the Giza Pyramid. These concepts did not emerge in the scientific community until hundreds of years after the pyramid construction. Here is a summary list of these scientific concepts:

- a. At noonday, the pinnacle of the pyramid points to the sun.
- b. The four sides are less than  $0^{\circ} 5'$  of arc with the cardinal points of north, east, south and west.
- c. Twice the height of the pyramid divided by the distance around the base equals pi (3.14159). This important constant was not known in the scientific community more than 2,500 years ago after the pyramid's construction.
- d. The extension of the descending passage outward, points to the exact location of the polar star which is true north.
- e. For every 10 feet of horizontal distance, there is 9 feet of progress toward the top. This suggests  $10^9$ . Multiply this by the height of the pyramid that answer is 91,840,000 miles. This is the distance of the earth to the sun.
- f. If the land mass of the earth is laid out, the pyramid site in Egypt is located at the exact location centroid center where the land mass is equally distributed around this center.



- g. The pyramid inch is 1/1000 of an inch longer than the English inch. 500,000,000 pyramid inches would equal the axis of the earth.
- h. The length of the pyramid's base side is 761 feet. In pyramid's measure it is 365.242 cubits. This is precisely the number of days in a solar year.
- i. Measuring the total length around the base of the pyramid in pyramid inches would be the exact number of days in one century.

The Great Pyramid of Giza is the most unusual building in the world. The scientific knowledge of it's builders is startling. It's engineering feat is unmatched. It was built forty-one centuries ago, but contained secrets of the universe and the earth that has only been known recently. See Figure 7.11.

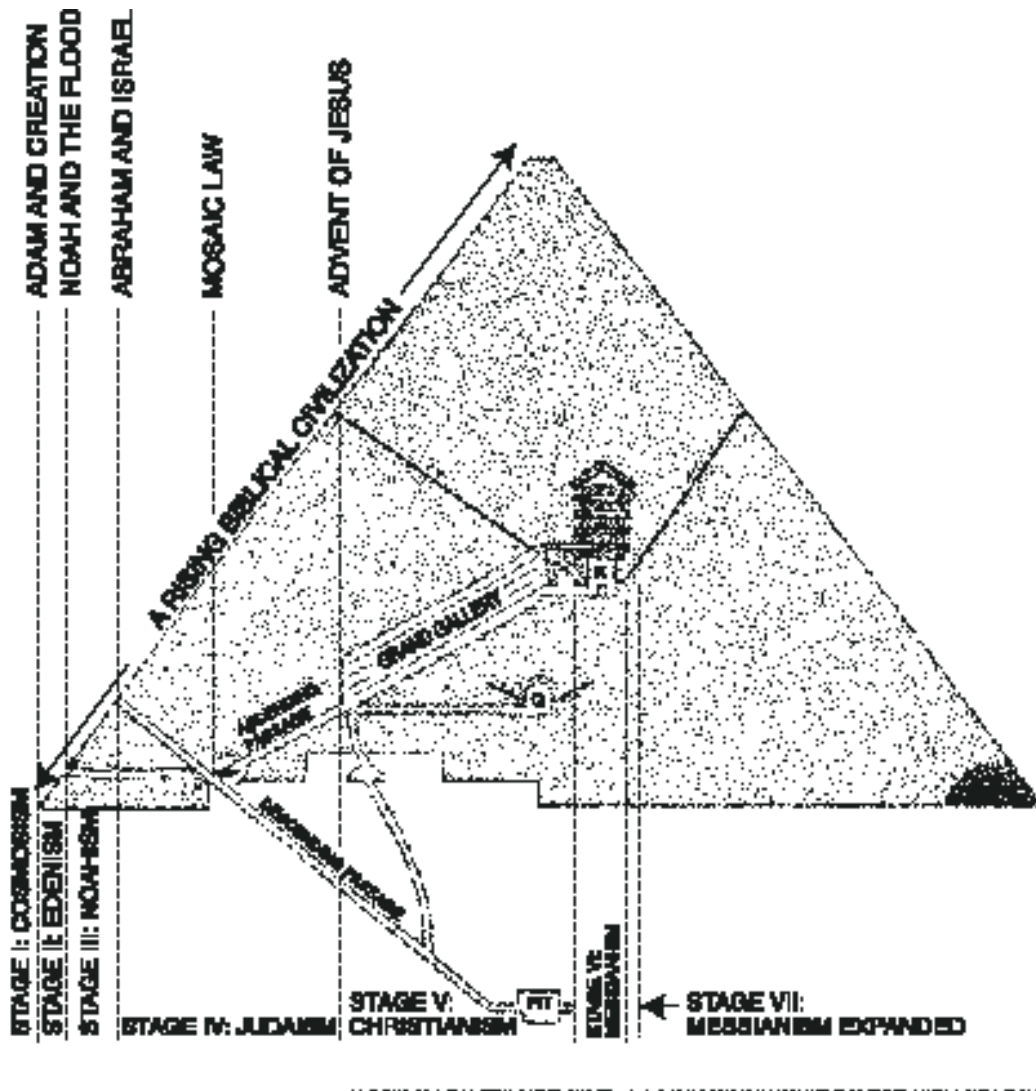


Figure 7.11 Cross Section of the Great Pyramid and the Timeline of the Rise of the Biblical Civilization

## ISRAEL'S EXPERIENCE IN AN EGYPTIAN CIVILIZATION

“And the Egyptians made the children of Israel to serve with rigor.” Exodus 1:13

The records of Joseph are not clearly identified in Egyptian documents. This is due to a period of time when ruling foreigners such as the kings from Canaan, Syria or Crete call Hyksos dominated the Egyptian culture. The Hyksos empire extended from the northern borders of Assyria and the Hititites to the southern border of Egypt. Egyptians made every attempt to purge and erase all references to this Hyksos period since foreign domination was an abomination to them. Historians refer to the Hyksos as Semites, but they were probably a mixed group. Some have traced their origins as sea people from Crete. Recent archaeological discoveries have shown the civilization of Crete was not Greek, but Semitic. That island was first invaded by Semitic people around 4000 BC and sparked the civilization we know today as Minoan. This is to suggest Greek history did not begin with Aryans, but with Semites. It also suggests the Greek civilization did not begin in Greece, but in Crete. The ones who first settled there were Asiatic nomads as far east as India with Semitic origins. This may be the origins of the Hyksos. As a people, the Hyksos were skillful charioteers. It seems they were the first to utilize horses to the technology of war. The early versions of the chariot was a platform with large wheels with one man holding the reins while another would carry a spear or bow and arrow. This new revolutionary weapon was largely the means of defeating the Egyptians.

The Masoretic text of the Hebrew Bible clearly identifies Joseph, Jacob and his family with their experiences in Egypt approximately 1871 BC during the Twelfth Egyptian Dynasty of the Middle Kingdom. Both Abraham and Jacob had gone down into Egypt in times of famine. Can severe and besetting evil be turned to a good occurrence? The experience of Joseph would answer an emphatic yes. Joseph can be considered as the first leader of the Israeli nation since his efforts saved his family from starvation and oblivion and created the conditions for Hebrews to grow as a nation. Moses, a second leader led the Israeli's out of the land of Egypt. Their sojourn in the land of Egypt was 430 years.

Joseph is an amazing person. Few people can compare with him. Very little he has said is ever quoted. Yet, he is one Biblical character where nothing bad is recorded in his life. He lived in a paganistic civilization for all his adult life. There were several reasons which brought about his leaving his family and his indentureness into slavery. *First*, Joseph was hated by his brothers. The hate was so bad they wanted to kill him. The basis of this hate was the practice of partiality and favoritism by Jacob at the age when Joseph was 17. Joseph was the son of Rachel, Joseph's

first love. Since Rachel died giving birth to Benjamin, Jacob loved Joseph as a replacement for Rachel who was gone. Jacob favored him. *Second*, Jacob made a special coat of many colors and gave it to Joseph. It was like a royal garment. This was interpreted by Joseph's half-brothers as an indication of Jacob's purpose to give the chief blessing to him. The eldest son, Reuben of Jacob's first wife had already forfeited the chief blessing with the sin of adultery. Reuben lost the lineage. The coat of many colors signified that many nations would serve the wearer. The brothers wanted this. Joseph got it. Envy was the result. *Third*, the family was well aware of how Jacob took the blessing of Isaac away from Esau. The half-brothers saw a similar experience developing where Joseph would deceptively steal the blessing of Jacob. *Fourth*, Joseph gave an unfavorable report to his father about his brothers conduct and misdemeanors. This enraged his half-brothers. *Fifth*, Jacob's dangerous meeting with Esau with the hope of reconciliation prompted Jacob to put Rachel and her children at the back of the line away from the danger. This favoritism was seen by all to ensure the survivability of Rachel, Joseph and Benjamin. This only enhanced the hate of the half-brothers. Finally, *sixth* reason for the hate was Joseph's dream that he would rule over the eleven brothers and even his father and mother. (Genesis 37:3-11)

The initial plan of Joseph's brothers was to kill him. This was changed to sell him into slavery for 20 shekels (approximately six dollars). In spite of his slave status in Egypt, he rose to be the viceroy of Egypt next in rank to the pharaoh himself. As a humble man, he was jailed. Yet later, he was exalted. Joseph was always thinking of God. The secret of a great person is in their character and their thinking. But the secret of a great character is the infusion of godliness. The jealousy of Joseph's brothers was understandable, but not excusable. Joseph's providential ability to interpret dreams gave him great leverage in solving his problems. Today we call the dreamers, visionaries. They are the futuristic lookouts.

While in the Egyptian prison, Joseph became friendly with the Pharaoh's butler and baker. Their incarceration is not described in the record. Joseph interpreted dreams during his jail tenure with his newly found friends. Joseph's relationship with the butler and baker was to be providential. It would be the means of his escape from prison. Long after, Pharaoh had dreamed that seven well fed cows and the seven lean cows and the seven plump heads of grain on a single stalk which was swallowed by seven blighted heads of grain. Since no one in Pharaoh's court could interpret the dream, it was the friendly butler who recommended Joseph as the interpreter of dreams.

With God given confidence, Joseph interpreted the dreams citing seven years of plentiful harvest followed by seven disasters of famine. We can well imagine the shock that followed Joseph's dream interpretation. The Egyptians were well acquainted when the Nile river rose during the rainy season. The autumn crops would be seriously destroyed during this period. If on the other hand, there was a drought and the river too low to fill the basins and canals so that the fields could be properly watered, the crops would perish under the blazing sun.

Joseph advised the whole Egyptian agricultural economy be marshaled along the lines of the Pharaoh's dream with local and national food controllers. The result of this strategy produced a profound economic gain for Egypt and catapulted Joseph into the Viceroy's job with control of the grain supply. The effects of the famine reached Canaan. Jacob sent ten of his sons to buy grain in Egypt. When the brothers of Joseph arrived in Egypt, without knowing it, bowed before the Viceroy fulfilling the original dream of brothers giving homage to Joseph.

#### JOSEPH'S PRACTICE OF BROTHERHOOD

“I am your brother, Joseph whom you sold into Egypt. Be not distressed for God sent me before you to preserve life.” Genesis 45:5

The hardships Joseph endured because of his brother's jealousy and hatred were oppressive. The brother's original plan was to murder him. They finally sold him as a slave which eventually ended up in an Egyptian prison for several years. With these hardships you would think recrimination was on Joseph's mind. This was not the case. Joseph devised a number of trials to test the character of his brothers. From these tests he was convinced they changed. Even Judah who originally wanted to murder Joseph was willing to give his own life for Benjamin, the youngest. When Joseph saw the superlative characters of his brothers, he could not control himself, he broke down in joyous tears, forgave all of them of the hardships he endured and revealed himself. The reunion, blessings and prosperity of Jacob's family was greater than they ever experienced. The clan, all seventy of them, settled in the land of Goshen in the Nile Delta. This is where Jacob and the twelve sons multiplied exceedingly and became a nation.

No finer example of brotherly forgiveness and love could be identified than with Joseph and his brothers. This is a great lesson of forgiving, forgetting and reconciliation. If we forgive mistakes and errors of others, we must then forget them. When we forget them, we reinstitute the relationship that existed before the moral infraction. When we do this we maintain the brotherhood. Even after Jacob died, the brothers were convinced that revenge would be taken. Joseph's brothers never really believed he had fully forgiven them. Joseph only said, “fear not, I will nourish

you, comfort you and speak kindly to you”. (Genesis 50:21) The dream that Joseph had as a young man in which his father and his brothers would bow down to him was providentially fulfilled. But Joseph did not take advantage of the circumstances to punish them. He did not even remind them of the dream. In his high exalted position, he remained humble, kind and a blessing. The conflict which brings chaos down upon the world is hatred among brothers. The enmity between Cain and Abel, Ishmael and Isaac and Esau and Jacob brought conflict and destruction in their lives. We now see God sending Joseph to Egypt to preserve and multiply life. We see here a clear recognition of the two great facts of the human experience: the eternal conflict and contradiction between good and evil and the victory of good over evil. The Joseph experience reveals they are incompatible principles.

#### WHY JEWS WERE INDENTURED INTO SLAVERY

“Behold the people of the children of Israel are more mightier than we. Come, let us deal wisely with them lest they multiply and a war occurs, they will join with our enemies and fight against us. Let us set over them taskmasters to afflict them.” Exodus 1:8-17

When Pharaoh made this statement, he had disquieting concerns and alarming fears about the Hebrews dwelling in the land of Goshen. He observed the people of Israel would populate faster and become mightier than the Egyptians. The Pharaoh had information that this was true. He proceeded to enslave them to prevent them joining an enemy force. Also he ordered all new born males to be killed in order to bring the Hebrew male population down. But in what way were the Hebrews mightier than the Egyptians that brought about their enslavement? Here are several suggestions:

1. *Hebrews upheld the value of family.* The Old Testament was not written at this time, neither was the mosaic law in operation. However, the value of the family, its coherence, its protection of children and its networking with other families as tribes were transmitted from Noah through Shem and Abraham to Jacob. This family value distinguished the Hebrews more than any other paganistic group. The family cohesion and protection resulted in strong and healthy children. Later, the law formalized this “you shall teach your children”. (Deuteronomy 6:7) In a significant way, Judaism in the past and even until today is essentially a family religion. The Jewish home is a place of worship. The center of Judaism resides in the family and the home.

2. *Hebrews practiced non-alcoholic behavior.* The Egyptians were alcoholics. Needless to explain the effects of alcoholism on pregnancy with the fetus, the effects on family unity and the effects on the will and stamina to live and survive. The personal story of alcoholism with Noah after the flood was oft repeated in Jewish families. Alcoholism is a socially destroying practice. Abstinence sustained values.

3. *Hebrew's sojourn in foreign land resulted in tenacity and strength.* Struggle and survival behavior in a foreign and hostile country produces new strengths and new skills that are needed to cope with threatening challenges. The Hebrews living in Egypt made them tough-minded since they had no government to protect them nor a majority to give them the leverage they needed. Struggle and survival behavior does pull up from the depths of the human soul new energies, new thinking, new vitality's that cause one to overcome the very hostility that produced it. History has proven this concept. The Nazis made an attempt in the Holocaust to exterminate the Jew completely. What it did was to produce a stronger Jew. The revolt and escape of the slave people in Egypt which numbered greater than two million is one of the few, if any in world history that successfully liberated themselves from an oppressor.

#### WHY A PROMINENT EGYPTIAN CIVILIZATION DECLINED

“The Lord God of Israel said, let my people go.” Exodus 5:5

Egypt rose to high pinnacle of culture and prominence for it's people and those around. During the long span of years, human beings made astonishing strides, harnessing plant and animals for needs and growth. They even developed complex social groupings and intellectual achievements never before experienced. What happened to shatter the Egyptian civilization and to this day is in a state of decline. Four reasons are offered:

1. *Disruptive invasions of the Hyksos and African Neighbors.* The shepherd kings also known as the people of the sea disrupted and ignored all prevailing laws and policies of the existing Egyptian civilization. They instituted a different policy which made every man a law to himself. It was political fragmentation which resulted in chaos. Central government ceased. Multi-kingdoms emerged. Any man great or small might kill his neighbor and roam scott free. Men banded together to plunder others. As the new invaders conquered old centers of political and military powers, they also assimilated to the older culture with their own culture which resulted in a new culture hardly recognizable from the cultures which produced it.

2. *The Worship of Many Gods and Pharaoh as God.* Egyptians developed complex and often contradictory ideas about the after life. Their religious views saturated and influenced all aspects of the society. Their beliefs were rooted in the environment itself. Osiris was a fertility God that dies each year. Isis, another God would bring him back. Orisis eventually became king of the Nile. The rise and fall of the river symbolized his annual death and resurrection. Isis helped resurrect him and thus became the God of Life. Anubis, the jackel-headed god helped Isis resurrect Orisis. Also Pharaoh himself was a falcon god in human form. He was the mediator between the gods and the Egyptian people. The construction of the pyramids were “acts of faith”. The great religious obsession of the Egyptian people was to achieve immortality for their souls.

3. *Ruling Pharaohs were both Strong and Weak.* Egyptian culture and society was predicated in the decision making of a one-person God king - the Pharaoh. If the Pharaoh was weak, the way opened up to bring about a declining change to a sustained civilization. If the Pharaoh was strong, the way was closed to bring about the needed changes to adjust the existing civilization to accommodate new needs. In the long history of ruling Pharaoh’s, there were both strong and weak ones. A look back reveals an evaluative summation that the weak ones were unable to stop the decline of the Egyptian Civilization and the strong ones were unable to sustain it.

4. *Slavery Emerged to Disrupt the Social Climb of Common People.* In ancient Egypt there was neither a caste system nor a color bar. Humble and lowly people could rise to the highest position in government if they had the talent. The most notable example was Joseph who came in as a slave and rose to be second only to the Pharaoh. However, when slavery was practiced more formally and widely, peasants and common people especially with talent, were indentured to forced labor including work on the pyramids and the canals. Young men were drafted into the army which served both as a fighting force as well as a labor corps. The vision of thousands of people forced and strained into building and adorning tombs is a distasteful picture of despotism. The Egyptian people were in forced submission to their absolute God-king ruler.

The above reasons for the decline of the Egyptian civilization is not intended to be exhaustive. There are probably others such as refusal to pay taxes by the rich nobility and the attempts of the nobility to rule in their own right. Single or few causes seldom bring about the collapse of a civilization. Many work in concert in long terms, some significant, some trivial, but the total combined effect is uncontrollable - they bring about the collapse of the whole civilized system. See Figure 7.12.



**Figure 7.12 Causes of the Decline of the Egyptian Civilization**

#### SLAVERY: A DESTRUCTIVE POLICY OF A CIVILIZATION

“The Egyptians shall know I am the Lord.” Genesis 7:5

Some civilizations which have been created by men to insulate from raw nature or from another hostile civilizations, have come to an abrupt end by natural disasters. Pompeii, Italy; Cuicuilco, Mexico and Shahr-i-solanta, Iran are such examples. However, most civilizations that have been created undergo a slower demise not for external reasons, but for internal practices and cultural policies. Technology failure, citizen ignorance, diseased crowded cities, insufficient water and food supplies, and social upheavals have also made civilizations vulnerable. The bondage of the human mind under forced servitude must be added to the list. The bondage of the human spirit wipes away the will, the freedom, the creativity and the strength of individuals. Humans have been enslaved for many reasons: a form of punishment, either for transgression of law or inability to pay a debt; punishment for vanquished warriors or prisoners of wars; or to create a force labor market to complete a construction project or meet the demands of an expanding industry. Indentured slaves required forced surveillance and control while at the same time intensive economic exploitation was made of them. Even after slaves are made free, there is continual social segregation and political separation. An early individual who considered slavery to be inhuman was Job. He might be thought of as the first abolitionist. Clearly, he recognized the inherent brotherhood and equality of mankind. By implication, he condemned the inequality that separates master and slave. (Job 31:13-16)



Of the approximate 6 billion people in the world, 4.0 billion which is the vast majority, live on the continents of Asia and Africa. Less than five decades ago, most of Asia and African people were colonial subjects which is a milder form of slavery. Interesting to note, the League of Nation's estimated<sup>28</sup> in 1926 there were two to five million slaves in the world as it has been known historically. Girls were bought and sold like commodities. Boys, too were sold at an early age as machines in a production system. As slavery and colonialism moved out, segregation and discrimination still remains.

Man was made in the image of God to reason, to create, to have free will. Slavery represses and diminishes this endowment. The origin of slavery is difficult to trace. It may have existed before the deluge when violence predominated on the earth. Other historical notes show slavery existed before 2000 BC with the Summerians in Babylon. The Code of Hammurabi gave slaves certain rights, but they were nothing more than defining the buy and sell of the slaves with tenure considerations. All the empires practiced slavery - Egypt, Israel, Assyria, Babylon, Medio-Persia, Greece, Rome, Spain, Portugal, Turkey, Arabia, England, France, Germany and America. Warfare produced the most slaves even though estimated figures are not available. Slavery, for the most part has slowly been removed from the world's civilizations. There still remains segregation and discrimination.

A civilization grows and is perpetuated when it's constituents are allowed the freedom to resolve it's living problems and changing needs. The ancient Egyptian view of life and society is alien to the concept of individual freedom and human rights for the masses of people. Any civilization that ignores the individual may prosper for a short time, but eventually it's growth will be inhibited. It's not surprising to note some historians consider slavery a step forward in the development of civilizations. Great projects were completed with forced labor. But the "bottom line" of evaluations show that civilizations dependent on slavery have disappeared. This may be the reason for the demise of Toynbee's 34 civilizations. Slavery, segregation and discrimination in the human experience has taught us a great lesson. The oppressed, under the condition of bondage, damages the "image and likeness" of God in humans. The oppressor has become an evil force which works against God and His creative expectations. The demise of the Egyptian civilization was due to multiple causes as suggested in the previous section. Slavery is one of them. The practice of slavery is the perennial struggle between good and evil. The fact that slavery is disappearing indicates good is becoming the victor.

## ARCHAEOLOGICAL CONFIRMATION OF MOSES

Probably the most important confirmation of Moses in Egypt is his name. Moses is clearly an Egyptian name. In Hebrew it means “saved” or “drawn from water”. In Egyptian it is the name for “child” or “to be born”. The historicity of the Biblical story is attested by many writers. Most every writer of this period relates to his life and his contributions. Egyptian documents and written records of the time are few and very scarce especially of the Sinai experience. Egyptologists have searched with little success for some notice of the great Hebrew who deliberated at an Egyptian court. Little has been found. Either because it was stricken from the records or the records were removed when the Hebrews left Egypt.

In the Cairo Museum, there exists an impressive collection of ancient artifacts of the Middle Kingdom. In this collection, a tablet exists which describes, in hieroglyphics the sojourn of Israeli’s in Egypt at about the same time as the Biblical narrative. This is an indirect confirmation. Nonetheless, if the record shows the Hebrews stayed in Egypt, the confidence is raised, the rest of the narrative is true.

Since Moses has been enormously accepted by many people in diverse cultures, he has also been a wide target for criticism. Other critics claim, Moses could not have written the first five books of the Bible since the art of writing was then unknown. He could not have given the law since no nation was sufficiently developed to receive such a law. Both these criticisms do not refute the evidence. Archaeological discoveries show writing was in use hundreds of years before the time of Moses. Moses was educated in Egyptian courts. He was skilled in writing the language of the day. As for laws, the Hammurabi Code, Noahic Code, Hittite Code and other codes were in existence long before Moses. This is confirmed with a black igneous rock now in the Louvre in Paris which contains nearly 300 tabulated laws written in cuneiform or wedge-shaped script.

Keller<sup>29</sup> reports cuneiform texts that describe a story very similar to the basket baby Moses, but identifies it as King Sargon, the founder of the Semitic dynasty of Akkade approximately 2360 BC. The recorded story of King Sargon parallels Moses in incredible detail. The basket baby story had become an old Semitic folk tale. It’s conceivable the Moses story has inspired many legends. The birth legend of Sargon oscillates between factual reporting and plagiarism.

Baez-Camargo<sup>30</sup> describes ruins of cities in the Nile Delta that have been Biblically identified as the area of Goshen. The ruins were of brick construction believed to be those the Israelites built. This has been disputed among

the archaeologists. The making of bricks and mortar was the principle occupation of the Hebrews in Goshen. This formed the manufacturing source for Rameses to build the many buildings at the time. Relief paintings have been found that illustrate the Egyptian practice of imposing forced labor, prisoners or slaves in construction tasks. A painting from Rekh-mi-Re's tomb identifies prisoners or slaves doing this type of work in the construction of a temple.

Most of the life of Moses was in the Sinai Peninsula since this was the land between Egypt and Canaan. Even the route that was taken in the great exodus is not clear nor certain. Names along the way are not easily identified today. Even the famous Mount Sinai is difficult to locate. A 7,500 foot peak known as Jabel Musa has become the traditional site of Mount Sinai. Several other proposed sites have been investigated. For one, the Sinai located near Kadish-barnea. For another, the Sinai located in northwest Arabia near Midian. The argument is that Moses' father-in-law, Jethro lived close by. The site at Jabel Musa is especially favored since the reference in Deuteronomy 1:2 indicates the site is eleven days from Kadish to Horab (another name for Mount Sinai). Mount Karkom has been a recent investigation by Professor Anati. His findings are reported in his book, "The Mountain of God". Intense work is being done in this area. The search continues.

Jebel means mountain and Musa means Moses. Constantine in the 4th Century AD along with his mother identified with traditions and records of the time that Jabel Musa was the location of the giving of the laws. A Sixth Century Christian Monastery, St. Catherine was built to commemorate the site. The location of Mount Sinai is critical since the Hebrews traveled from Goshen to Mount Sinai then to Kadesh-barnea. Whatever the route, they ended up at Kadesh-barnea probably the largest oasis in the Sinai wilderness. Most scholars agree on the dating of the Israelite conquest of Canaan is around 1236-1223 BC. Itzhaq Beit-Arieh in an article<sup>31</sup> of the *Best of Biblical Archaeological Review* has reported his 15 year archaeological research of the Sinai. His report showed the Sinai teemed with human activity from early periods until today. The difficult terrain, the inhospitable desert climate and the lack of rainfall have lead many to believe that nothing existed or could exist in this terrain. Beit-Arieh reports simple unimpressive structures and artifacts that leads us to conclude the Sinai was far from being a blank. The impressive peaks of Jebal Musa and Jebal Serbal, leading contenders among the dozen peaks where Moses received the tablets of the law, seem to be the likely spots of God's visit with Moses.

## THE EIGHT ROLES IN THE LIFE OF MOSES

“I am sending you to bring my people out of Egypt.” Exodus 3:10

Moses is one of the most prominent individuals in the Bible. His name appears 771 times in the Old Testament and 95 times in the new for a grand total of 866 times. Few have exceeded these citations. The events in his life have been enormous for Jews, Christians and the world in general. At one point, he was regarded as the meekest man on earth (Numbers 12:3) This was due to his willingness to endure injustices for the common interests of his people and for the glory of God. In his difficult position with the Hebrew people, he was continually being accused by those for whom he was ready to lay down his life. His life can be divided into eight unique stages. See Figure 7.13.

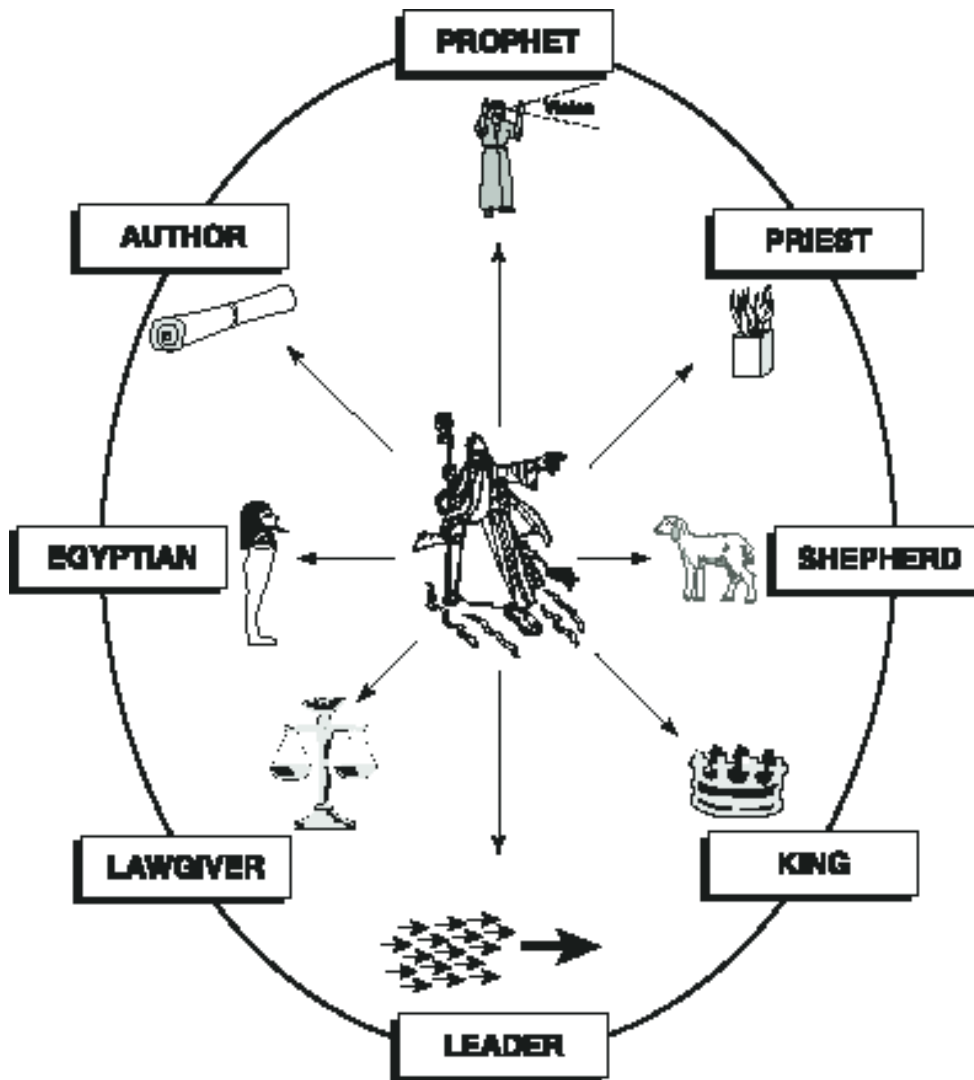


Figure 7.13 The Eight Roles of Moses

1. *Moses, the Egyptian.* The Egyptian Civilization at the time of Moses was the most advanced of all civilizations. Egypt possessed the technology for living, the education for learning, the economics for wealth distribution and the politics for government rule. Moses was born as a Hebrew in Goshen, but saved by his mother to escape the destruction of all male babies by the Egyptian king. This king destroyed the male babies because he saw the increase of the Hebrews as a threat to the security of his kingdom. Moses was saved and raised by the Princess of the royal court. He was given an Egyptian upbringing in the house of a king as well as a formal education in the most advanced city of Memphis which was the capitol of Egypt. Thus he was instructed in all of the knowledge and wisdom in the most advanced civilization of the time. Had he remained in Egypt and been favored by the court, he was in line for the Rameses Dynasty. Moses was so thoroughly an Egyptian in upbringing and education that Sigmund Freud in his book, "Moses and Monotheism" critically presents the theory that Moses was not a Hebrew, but Egyptian. He was either a prince or priest or both. He gave the Jews their monotheistic religion. His theory was Moses tried to give his new religious ideas to the Egyptians. They refused to accept this strange and heretical notion of an invisible God. Moses then deliberately chose the Israeli's promising them freedom of bondage if they would accept his religion. There is absolutely no historical evidence for such a theory. Freud's theory, who is a Jew himself, has not gone far. Nonetheless, much can be said of the strong Egyptian background that Moses possessed. It was an incident in the ill-treatment of a Hebrew slave that brought this Egyptian lifestyle to an end. His impulse to stop the ill-treatment brought about the death of the taskmaster which made him a fugitive. Moses fled Egypt having eluded the vigilance of the court guards and the front line sentinels.

2. *Moses the Shepherd.* God usually prepares His great ones in the desert, on a mountain top or in some quiet place away from the busy streets of existing societies. Moses became a shaped in the quiet land of Mountainous Midian in the Sinai Peninsula away from the hustle and bustle of Egyptian and the Canaanite civilizations. Moses became a Bedouin herdsman. For forty years, as part of Jethro's family married to Zipporah, he communed with God. As he did this with desert life and nature, he turned over Egyptian ideas with ideas of God and nature. The shepherd experience was a training and humbling process for a future work. This experience mellowed and matured a haughty, impetuous prince that was instructed and prepared to lead an emerging civilization. Bedouin life for Moses was a simple, but a hard life. The struggle for food and water was prodigious. His wanderings as a Bedouin

from place to place in the Sinai Peninsula was to prepare and develop him for a future wandering with many people and many animals.

3. *Moses the Leader.* The slavery burdens of the Hebrews in the land of Egypt had become bitterly oppressive. God heard the cry of the Hebrews and remembered His covenant with Abraham. Moses was called to leadership to bring the Israelites out of bondage. This was formulated with a dialogue with God near a burning bush. At first, he refused the leadership. Many excuses and personal shortcomings were cited. God set up three signs to convince him. Each of them a miracle. (Exodus 4:1-10) The first was changing his rod to a snake and back again. The second was changing his hand to a leprous hand and back again. The third was pouring water as blood and back again. Moses eventually accepted the commission to deliver Israel from the most powerful nation on earth. This revealed a great faith with such a challenging task. It took ten plagues to finally convince Pharaoh to give the Hebrews their freedom. It was the tenth and final plague in its severity that finally released the Hebrews. It became the basis of an important festival for Israel called the Passover. This plague was the smiting of all the first born both of man and beast. Moses' leadership was exemplified with his confrontation with the Pharaoh of Egypt. The tenacity and courage to demand of a king the release of a people asset that brought much wealth to Egypt was no easy task. His leadership continued with the march toward Sinai. This movement in the Sinai was up to forty years. Moses continued to lead his people from Sinai to Kadesh-barnea. They conquered transjordanic kingdoms along the way. During this period, Moses was as much a conqueror and general as was his successor Joshua.

4. *Moses the Author.* In Exodus 17:14, God commands Moses to write on the scrolls. Clearly, Moses commenced writing in the wilderness shortly after the exodus started. Scrolls had already been completed when Joshua conducted a convocation in Shechem in the promised land. Joshua commanded to write additional words in the Book of the Law which was known as the Book of Moses. This book was already in existence long after Moses died. (Joshua 24:26) The idea of Moses writing the book is found over 60 times in the Pentateuch. This is important as it establishes Moses as an author. Archaeology does not supply actual literary material from Israel from the pen of Moses. Conversely, there is no archaeological evidence to cast doubt upon the tradition that Moses wrote the first five books of the Bible. The Jews call these books the Torah: Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy. The only exception would be the 34th Chapter of Deuteronomy which gives the account of Moses' death. It's conceivable Moses may have availed himself of existing documents which he may have taken with him

from Egypt. These documents may have been used at least in composing Genesis. But the other books are clearly Mosaic. It's also conceivable that Psalm 90 was written by Moses and was later incorporated into the Psalms. No trace has been found either of the broken tablets at Mount Sinai or any transcription of the written records of Moses to clearly authenticate his authorship. The only strong indication of his authorship is no one was as familiar with the circumstances and as near to the heart of the Israeli nation as was Moses.

5. *Moses the Lawgiver.* It's difficult to separate Moses as an author from Moses the lawgiver as it is difficult to separate it from his life and leadership. They are all interwoven. But clearly his great contribution was in the production of laws that continue with us even unto today. In some sense laws are creatures of society. But alternately, society is a creature of it's laws. They are intricately interwoven. To improve laws would be to improve society. To improve society would be to improve laws. The Mosaic law was to create a society. The Ten Commandments were not ten suggestions. They were Ten Commandments from God. They were and still are the foundations of the western culture. It should be emphasized that laws were "codes" given in the abstraction without any view of a prior adjudicated case or a past court decision. Laws are often developed from specific decisions that settle an issue. The Laws of Moses were not based on this procedure. This supports the claim, the laws were coming from God. They represent objective truths. The Ten Commandments which are regarded as moral laws are different from other laws in that they were broad principles of moral living rather than a prohibition on a specific behavior. The Ten Commandments has three "do's" and seven "don'ts". The three do's are : do recognize God; do observe the Sabbath; do honor your parents. The seven don'ts leave little doubt as to what one is not permitted to do: don't worship idols; don't kill; don't swear; don't commit adultery; don't steal; don't lie and don't be envious. Any law is seen as a rule laid down for guidance of an intelligent being by another intelligent being having power over the individual. Breackage of the law is regarded as a transgression. When it is God's law, it is a sin. Thus we have the sin of murder, the sin of adultery, the sin of stealing, the sin of idol worship, the sin of swearing, the sin of lying and the sin of envy.

The Laws of Moses, known as the Torah, must be seen as a system of laws, interdependent and interrelated. They can be superficially categorized as follows:

a. *Passover Laws*. These were laws in the liberation of Hebrew slaves from Egyptian bondage. It is to be an annual remembrance and celebration to be conducted in perpetuity. This festival was the sparing of the first-born and marked the starting point of the Hebrews as a nation.

b. *Covenant Laws*. These were laws in which the Hebrew people established an agreement with God to be his people and to obey his commandments. God promised to give life and blessings to his people on condition of conformity to his laws.

c. *Moral Laws*. These were laws known as the Decalogue (Ten Commandments) in which behavior was to be guided in it's conduct for acceptance with God, families, neighbors and community. It prohibits false Gods and prevents immoralities.

d. *Harvest Laws*. These were laws concerning the first fruits of the farming harvests. Harvest time was important for an agrarian people. Harvest festivals were to be a reminder that marked special events chronologically in the history of Israel.

e. *Procedure Laws*. These were laws and ordinances for the priests that they may know their duties and how to serve these duties. The book of Leviticus relates principally to Levites and Priests. They were to follow procedures exactly in a process from beginning to end. The atonement procedure is an example.

f. *Civil Laws*. These were laws of relationships between father and son, husband and wife, master and slave, etc. It regulated marriage, punishment for crimes, handling slaves and dealing with the poor. It also incorporated laws of the land, property, debt and taxation.

g. *Judicial Constitutional Laws*. These were the laws that spelled out jurisdictions, appointment of judges and processes of enacting justice. It also defined how power was to be recognized and revenues collected in the procedure of tithing. Interesting to note the Mosaic Code laid down the first principles for a separation of religion and government. This meant the civil authority was independent of the priestly authority. This was enforce by God giving Moses civil authority and Aaron priestly authority. This concept was broken down many times throughout Israel's history.

h. *Sacrificial Laws*. These were laws associated with the tabernacle first and later the temple as a means of worship with God and union with his commandments. People were expected to uphold God's laws. Several types of sacrifices were required such as sin offerings, trespass offerings, meat offerings and burnt offerings.



All these laws were not disconnected with the past, but rather were details and extensions of the Abrahamic Covenant. They gave substance to the temporal and natural portion of the covenant. In no other civilization of the times were laws established as formal and specific as the Laws of Moses. The Mosaic Code, even though it followed the Noahaic Code and the Hammurabi Code, it eclipsed both of them because of its all-encompassing humanism, its passion for family and its need of participation with God. Aaron Lichtenstein made an analysis<sup>32</sup> comparing codes from the ancient world which have become values and legislative areas bequeathed to subsequent secular civilizations. Interesting to note, the similarities and the differences with the Mosaic Code. They are summarized and compared in Figure 7.14. A great deal of legal dicta is found in the original Torah. Since Moses was under the instruction of God, his work was far in advance not only of others in his time, but of the many who have sought to copy and improve on the laws which he laid down. See Figure 7.14.

	<b>NOHIDE CODE</b>	<b>ASSYRIAN CODE</b>	<b>HAMMURABI CODE</b>	<b>HITTITE CODE</b>	<b>MOSAIC CODE</b>
<b>1.</b>	<b>ONE GOD</b>				<b>ONE GOD</b>
<b>2.</b>	<b>IDOLATRY</b>				<b>IDOLATRY</b>
<b>3.</b>	<b>BLASPHEMY</b>				<b>BLASPHEMY</b>
<b>4.</b>					<b>SABBATH</b>
<b>5.</b>					<b>FAMILY</b>
<b>6.</b>	<b>HOMICIDE</b>	<b>HOMICIDE</b>	<b>HOMICIDE</b>	<b>HOMICIDE</b>	<b>HOMICIDE</b>
<b>7.</b>	<b>ILLCIT INTERCOURSE</b>	<b>ILLCIT INTERCOURSE</b>	<b>ILLCIT INTERCOURSE</b>	<b>ILLCIT INTERCOURSE</b>	<b>ILLCIT INTERCOURSE</b>
<b>8.</b>	<b>THEFT</b>	<b>THEFT</b>	<b>THEFT</b>	<b>THEFT</b>	<b>THEFT</b>
<b>9.</b>	<b>JUSTICE</b>	<b>JUSTICE</b>	<b>JUSTICE</b>	<b>JUSTICE</b>	<b>JUSTICE</b>
<b>10.</b>					<b>ENVY</b>
<b>11.</b>	<b>DIET</b>				<b>DIET</b>
<b>12.</b>					<b>LYING</b>
<b>13.</b>					<b>ENVY</b>

**Figure 7.14 Comparing Ancient Codes**

6. *Moses the Prophet.* A prophet is one who speaks for God. That is, God sends the prophet to a people to speak on his behalf and interpret his will to the people. In a more modern sense, a prophet is one who predicts the

future. Prophecy are those predications that will come to pass in a coming period of time. God spoke to Moses often. God also gave Moses revelations. These revelations were clearly visions of the conception of God, God's expectations of the Hebrew people and their role in establishing the Biblical Civilization on earth for the blessings and happiness of all humankind. This role as prophet adds to the previous prophets used by God in different periods to perpetuate the Biblical Civilization through the ages. However, with Moses the movement of the civilization took on a formal and significant emergence not found in previous years.

7. *Moses as a Priest.* A priest is an intermediary between a deity and its worshippers. His function is to perform whatever activities is necessary to reconcile the worshipper's with the deity. The priest often will make sacrificial offerings to bring about reconciliation or maintain one already established. The priesthood is the career commitment often termed consecration for continuing the reconciliation process with the deity. Moses was a priest. Although Aaron was the high priest proper, yet in still large sense, he performed the priestly service as a representative of Moses. Moses had the equal privilege of going into the Holy and the Most Holy and joined with Aaron at the close of the Atonement Day in giving the Atonement blessing to the people.

8. *Moses as King.* A king is a chief ruler with vested supreme authority over a nation. There are many functions to a king, but two stand out. First, he protects the people from an enemy even to a point of conducting war and second, he executes judgment and justice both in war and in peace. Moses was the kingly representative of God over the nation of Israel. He was both the protectorate and the judge of the Hebrew people. At the time, he would be classified as an autocrat also he did institute with Jethro, his father-in-law representative type of government. Throughout the wanderings of the Sinai, Moses conducted government with court like adjudication outside the camp, but near the famous Tabernacle of God.

#### WILDERNESS JOURNEY: LOCATION POINTS, MIRACLES AND POPULATION NUMBERS

Moses answered the people, "Do not be afraid. Stand firm and you will see the deliverance of the Lord will bring you today." Exodus 14:13

God did not send the Israelites over the shortest route into the promised land of Canaan. The route selected was difficult, arduous, unaccommodating and confusing. There were several reasons for this. For one, He wanted to avoid wars with hostile warring tribes along the way. This would discourage the new born Hebrew nation. It would generate a desire to return to Egypt and all the efforts for their release from bondage would be a failure. For another,

God wanted the entire rebellious and complaining older generation not to see nor enjoy the promised land. Even after the spies came back from Canaan and reported an insurmountable foe, the Hebrews wanted to return to Egypt. Their lack of faith angered God. It took forty years for this generation to die off. Only the new generation, 20 years and under, was to be privileged to develop the potential of the new land. Joshua and Caleb were the only exceptions. For still another reason, God wanted to hide the journey path from a recovering Pharaoh who wanted to pursue the Hebrews and bring them back as slaves. Pharaoh changed his mind nine times in the release of slaves. There was no guarantee he wouldn't change his mind the tenth time. Finally, God had a plan to initiate the Hebrews with "laws" that would give cohesion, unity and direction for the new nation. Many lessons would be generated during the obscure journey. The lessons would be for both the Hebrews and readers of the Hebrew experience.

The exact route traveled by the Hebrews to Canaan is not accurately known. Here we identify only the major points in the journey and a key associated activity. It took forty years and approximately 1000 circuitous miles with over two million Hebrews and livestock to make the wilderness journey. Itzhaq Beit-Arich<sup>33</sup> confirms most of the route points as follows:

<u>Location Points</u>	<u>Texts</u>	<u>Associated Activity</u>
1. Goshen	Ex 12:22	Sprinkling blood on door posts
2. Succoth	Ex 13:19	Bones of Joseph carried from Egypt
3. Pi Hahiroth	Ex 14:22	Probable crossing of Red Sea
4. Marah	Ex 15:23-25	Bitter water purified
5. Elim	Ex 15:27	Wells of water and palm trees
6. Desert of Zin	Ex 16:13-18	Manna and Quails given
7. Mt. Horeb	Ex 17:6	Water from the smitten rock
8. Rephidim	Ex 17:11-13	Moses holds arms up with battle with Amalekites
9. Mt. Sinai construction (Jebal Musa)	Ex 19:1-2 Ex 32:2 Ex 40:17	Tablets of stone given; golden calf incident; of tabernacle.
10. Taberah Nu	Nu 10:33 Nu 11:31	More quails provided
11. Hazeroth	Nu 11:35	Punishment for Miriam and Aaron for rebellion

12. Kadesh Barnea	Nu 12:16	Twelve spies sent to Canaan
13. Hormah	Nu 14:45	Defeat of presumptuous Israelites
14. Wilderness Wandering	Nu 16:31-33	Earth swallows Korah, Dathan and Abiram
15. Kadesh	Nu 20:1	Water from smitten rock
16. Mt. Hor	Nu 20:22 Nu 20:27	Death of Aaron on Mt. Hor
17. Mt. Hor Wanderings to Edom	Nu 21:4	Snake bites healed with erected bronze snake
18. Mt. Nebo	Dt 34:1 Dt 34:1-6	Moses views promised land
19. Crossing Jordan River at Jericho	Jos 3:1 Jos 3:12-17	Hebrews cross into promised land
20. Jericho	Jos 5:10 Jos 6:20	Jericho captured

The exodus to the promised land by the Hebrews is one of the great epics of Biblical history. A highlight of that epic is the crossing of the Red Sea. The Biblical record is clear that it was a crossing of the Red Sea and in no other location. The problem exists that the configuration of the Red Sea has changed radically over the years. Several possibilities exist where this crossing has taken place. Figure 7.15 pictures the possible routes of this crossing by the Hebrews.



1. *The A route.* This is called the Horus route which is the regular route to Canaan parallel to the shore line of the Mediterranean. Obviously this was not a possibility for reasons cited earlier.

2. *The B route.* This is crossing the Sirbonian Bog Shallow Lake that runs parallel to the Mediterranean Sea. This has been proposed because artifacts were found in the area. This possible route does not in any way meet the scriptural texts.

3. *The C route.* This is crossing at the Bitter Lakes. Sea shells have been found in this area suggesting at the time the Red Sea was further north than where it is now. But the brackish water and shells suggest it may be more connected with the Mediterranean than the Red Sea. Besides it's shallowness removes the miraculous feature of the crossing. Additionally, the Biblical text describes how the Hebrews shut themselves into a trap with the Red Sea in front, mountain on the left and right with Egyptians at the rear.

4. *The D route.* This is crossing at a sand bar which does not exist now. It appears the waters here are not deep enough to meet the scriptural description of a water wall on each side caused by an east wind. Also the trap description would not be found on this site.

5. *The E route.* This is crossing at Suez. Some Biblical names have been found here. It's only a three day march from Etham. It's very narrow and low to cross the Isthmus of Suez in a few hours. Nonetheless, the miraculous feature is removed in this route. This favors a natural crossing without the parting of the waters as "walls". Some Biblical names do not fit. The trap feature of the exodus is removed. Besides Suez was a small village with Egyptians. This encounter was to be avoided like the military fortresses in the north.

6. *The F route.* This is the crossing at Ph-hahiroth. This seems to fit more closely to the Biblical texts than any other possibility. It's five miles across and at least seventy feet deep. This easily creates the water walls from the strong east wind. It also fits the trap for the Hebrews with water in front, mountains on each side and the Egyptians in the rear. Many scholars agree to Pi-hahiroth although it's exact location is debatable.

In an unpublished report by Ron Wyatt, an American archaeologist who visited the Pi-hahiroth site where the sea bed was examined, chariot wheels were found. It wasn't an isolated chariot wheel, but rather chariot wheels strewn across the sea bed. Even skeleton remains of men and horses were found and returned to the Egyptian Institute of Antiquities. Underwater video footage was taken in the expedition. It was also noted that a stone column stood there on both sides of the shore. Like a silent sentinel to mark the spot of the crossing. The artifacts recovered in this

expedition were turned over to the Egyptian Institute of Antiquities. Most important results from this expeditions were not the artifacts, but rather the verification that the exodus did take place in roughly the area of Pi-hahiroth.

The number of interventions by God which are often termed miracles from the release of slavery and for moving the Hebrews toward the promised land were at least twenty one. Here are some brief descriptions: Moses saved from baby killing edit of Pharaoh with concealment in the reeds; Moses escapes the Midian after killing an Egyptian; Moses called to leadership with the voice from the burning bush; personal shortcomings and fears of Moses given divine help; ten plagues sent to release Hebrew slaves; saving of the first born of Hebrew families; crossing the Red Sea safely while the pursuing Egyptians drowned; guidance to the promise land by a pillar of cloud by day and a pillar of fire by night; the purification of the waters of Morah and Elim; feeding the Israelites with manna and quail; water from the rock at Mossah and Meribah; defeat of the Amalekites when Moses on a hill held his staff with his arms in the form of a cross; divine appearance on Mount Sinai; Decalogue given to the Hebrews on stone tablets; seventy elders see a vision of God on Mount Sinai unharmed; construction of a Tabernacle with a divine pattern; three ascents to the top of Sinai for intimate fellowship with God; Moses sees the back part of God; leprous punishment of Miriam for opposing Moses; water from the rock at Kadesh; healing of snake bites with the bronze snake; and finally, Moses' view of the promise land on top of Mount Nebo.

The scriptural record indicates 603,550 men on foot besides women and children participated in the journey to Canaan. (Exodus 12:37; 38:26; Numbers 1:46) Several census were taken for counting the Israelite nation. Like other nations, the count was necessary for taxation. This was needed to support the Levites and the recruitment of males needed for the military security of the nation. Many other people went with them besides droves of livestock, flocks, herds, furniture and personal belongings. Women or children were not counted in the total man count. If we assume each man had a wife and two children, a minimum estimate of over two million would be plausible that left Egypt for the promised land. There are two ways to confirm this approximation. First using the law of population growth which follows a geometric progression -  $Y = ar^x$  where Y is the population at the end of a period, a is the population at the beginning of the period, x is the number of years and r is the annual rate of increase. From Exodus 1:5, 70 people went into Egypt and sojourned 430 years. If we assume a conservative annual rate of increase between 0.5 and 2.0 percent, the estimated population would exceed two million. Second way to confirm the total population is to assume a conservative 2 to 3 persons to a family and 25 years to a generation. An arithmetic progression of 430

years sojourning for 18 generations increasing at the rate of .5 percent would yield the Hebrew population of the Exodus in excess of two million.

#### MODERN MANAGEMENT AND ORGANIZATION IN 1500 BC

“Select capable men from all the people and have them serve as judges” Exodus 18:13-27

As the Hebrews were journeying near Mt. Sinai, Jethro, the priest of Midian and father of Zipporah, Mose’s wife, went out to greet, meet and visit with Moses and the entire Hebrew nation. During his stay, Jethro made many observations. He saw Moses laboriously occupied from morning to night in resolving and deciding the conflicts and disputes that had arisen among the Hebrew people. Problems and difficulties of all kinds would normally arise with over two million people with their herds and livestock living together. This enormous group of people would be equivalent to a large city in our modern civilization. Jethro said, “What is this you are doing for the people. Why do you alone sit as judge while all these people stand around you from morning till evening. You and these people who come to you will only wear yourselves out. The work is too heavy for you. You cannot handle it alone. I will give you some advice”. The advice Jethro gave was far reaching for he set down concepts of organization and management being practiced today. Here is a breakdown of his advice to Moses and the modern day management equivalents.



Jethro's Statements

1. "I will give you some advice."

2. "Why do you alone sit as judge?"

3. "All these people stand around waiting from morning till evening."

4. "Teach them the decrees and laws."

Modern Day Management Equivalents

1. Management Consultant

Consultants are professionals who lend their skills, expertise, experience and objectivity to CEO's or organizations to help solve problems and recommend solutions where needed. Their method involve observing, questioning, analyzing, discerning and making proposals. Jethro is a probable first on record to advise the CEO of an organization. he was the first management consultant.

2. Delegation

Delegation is an organizational activity of breaking down a large task into smaller tasks and assigning them to others for them to complete. This reveals the management principle of getting big work tasks done through other people. Delegation occurs when work is entrusted to another and expected results are mutually understood. Jethro saw the work was too much for one person. Others must help. Moses cannot handle it alone.

3. Efficiency

An organization is termed efficient when it produces a desired effect with little or no waste of money or idle people. There are many reasons for people to be idle. Mediocrity, lack of resources, plan failures, broken equipment to cite a few. But the most central are people with problems they cannot solve. Jethro saw people waiting from morning till evening as a waste of time and labor.

4. Standards and Training

Standards specify from an authoritarian source expected behavior and conduct in an organization. An organization is a culture where living and working together needs unity, conflict resolution and harmony. People need to know these standards and must be trained. Moses needed to transfer the skills and abilities he had to others so they may assist as leaders to elicit conformity to standards.

5. “Show them the way to live and the duties they are to perform.”

5. Job Design and Descriptions

A newly formed organization needs to define the work content and the decisions needed to accomplish the work. The design and it’s subsequent descriptions are structured and arranged to include procedures, standards, methods and processes. Jethro advised how responsibilities and expectations must be coordinated for living and traveling together.

6. “Select capable men from all people.”

6. Recruitment, Selection and Placement

Recruiting and selection is the process of narrowing down a large number of possible applicants to the one person who can do the job ably and effectively. The principle is to place into a leadership role the best qualified person. Moses needed to find those with leadership qualities since the organization traveling to Canaan was newly developed.

7. “Appoint them as officials over others. Problems they cannot solve send to the top.”

7. Supervision, Managers and Authority

A supervisor is a key person in any organization for they act, decide and direct on behalf of the management and policies of the organization. But they are not absolute. They decide within their responsibilities. Those decisions and challenges beyond that are sent to managers and executives. Authority is

within prescribed limits. Moses was to give them the authority to solve problems on their own level.

8. “Appoint over 1000’s, 100’s, 50’s and 10’s.”

8. Pyramidal Organization Format

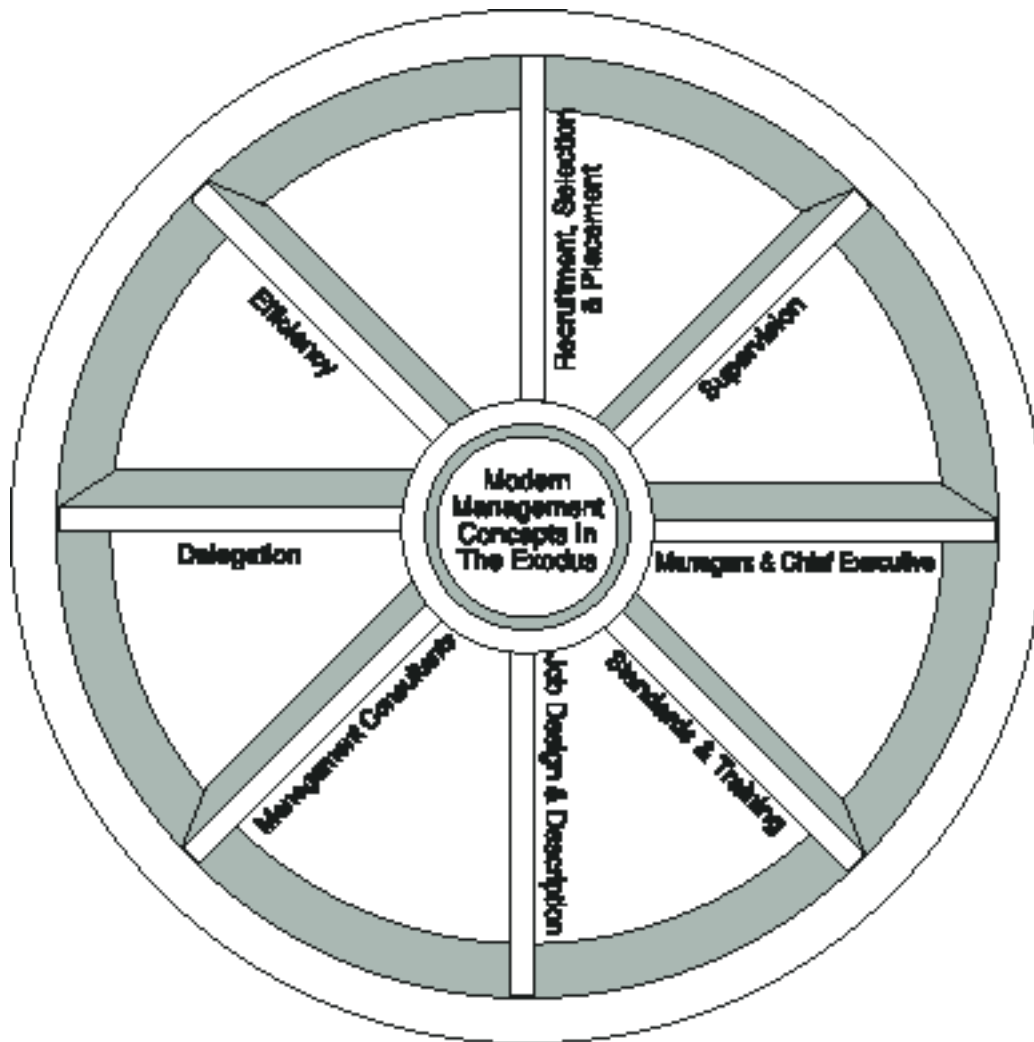
An organization format can affect the success and survival of the organization. When groups of people are aggregated because of a similar relationship or work it becomes functional. The division of these groups into smaller units from top to bottom is called span of control. This is the assignment of people under each manager and supervisor. Moses set up levels of authority with each level having a span of control down to supervisors who would have 10. This was the chain of command from first-line supervisors to the top CEO - Moses.

9. “And they judged the people... as they traveled to the promised land.

9. Government

In the heart of any government are the laws which regulate it’s constituency. Added to this are the provisions of security, protection and defense as well as economic enterprises for the trade of services and goods. Moses created a government which had laws, enforcement, military, judges, markets, supervisors, taxes and money. What was needed was land.

Moses listened and accepted his father-in-law’s advice and did everything he said. In this manner a management organization to make use of the talents of others was created in the desert. The ancient priest of Midian conceptualized management concepts to implement legislative and judicial requirements set down by Moses. These concepts inaugurated in 1500 BC are still with us today. See Figure 7.16



**Figure 7.16 The Management Wheel that moved the Hebrews from Egypt to the Promised Land**

#### WHO OWNS PALESTINE?

“The whole earth is mine.” Exodus 19:5

The quarrels and disputes in the Middle East is often termed “the Israeli-Arab conflict”. There are many reasons for these quarrels and disputes. For one, Palestinian Arabs have strong attitudes from surviving many empires over their land. The Israeli’s also have strong attitudes from surviving the diaspora wanderings from country to country. The attitudes are formed in different ways, but clash openly and irritably. Palestinian Arabs have strong adherence to Islamic values and beliefs as found in the Koran. The Israeli’s have tenacious allegiance to Judaic values and beliefs as found in the Torah. These cultural, religions and attitudinal values create serious incompatible aspirations as to their national movements. Very seldom, if any is compromise seen as a factor of negotiation to settle a dispute between these two strong and unyielding groups. For another reason, the Jews refuse to accept Mohammed as the Messiah sent by God. Mohammed used the Jewish Bible to forecast his own coming. Hate developed when Semitic

Jews refused to acknowledge a Semitic Mohammed. The hate is so intense that Arab leaders embrace anti-Semitism of which they are of Semitic stock.

The occupation of Jerusalem is still another reason for the Israeli-Arab conflict. Islam is violently opposed to Israel's hold on Jerusalem since the Dome of the Rock, a highly venerated religious artifact is there. Mohammeds want control of the temple mount and has called for holy war to place an Islamic flag over Jerusalem. Dispute over the land is co-mingled with disputes over the control of Jerusalem

By far at the heart of the age old and even current conflicts lies the dual claim for the same parcel of land commonly called Palestine. Each side will use the ancient origin argument. The Jews will claim the start of Palestine with Abraham's journeying from the Ur of the Chalders into Canaan establishing a recorded tithe to Mechizadek, King of Salem. Salem later was renamed Jerusalem. Abraham was a native born Summerian, but a Semite from Arphaxed, son of Shem. The Palistinian Arabs, particularly the PLO will claim the start of Palestine not through their father Abraham, but through Ishmael having a similar Semitic origin. The Jews will argue a pure and separate Semitic genealogy. They point their finger to the PLO's mixed origin with the Philistines. The Philistines were derivatives from the sea people of the Aegean Islands, particularly the island of Crete. (Amos 9:7) The sea people were the ones who battled Egyptians during the reign of Marniptah and Rameses III. Singer in his article <sup>34</sup> "How did the Philistines enter Canaan" argues from a papyrus manuscript written immediately following the death of Rameses III in 1153 BC. The Egyptians deported the sea people along the coast of Palestine in their successful war against them approximately a half-century after the arrival of the Israelites. According to Herodotus<sup>35</sup> they Greek father of history, the name Philistines is derived from the sea people from Crete. The Palestinian settlements along the coast eventually developed strong, but mixed races in five cities: Gaza; Ashdod; Ashkelon; Gath; and Ekron.

The reader should be reminded that historically there never was an independent Arab state called Palestine. The Palestinians never had formally, the possession of an Arab Palestine. Just before World War I, there were 500,000 Arabs and about 100,000 Jews living in Palestine west of the Jordan River. In 1947, just before the outbreak of the War of Independence there were 1.3 million Arabs and 650,000 Jews. The growth of both Arab and Jewish populations were not due to natural increase by birth alone, but mainly immigration. Jews came mostly from pre and post war Europe and Russia. The Arabs moved down from Syria and Jordan, entering Palestine illegally. A very substantial part of the Arab population, perhaps greater than fifty percent were not born Palestinians, but immigrants.

The same can be said of the Jews. Today, the estimates for Palestinians in Palestine number 3.6 million with Jews numbering close to 6 million.

The Jews will produce documents especially the Bible which historically trace their inheritance to the land. The PLO have no similar document, but will appeal to their religious heritage for direction and legitimacy. The Koran does not parallel the Bible in giving the Arabs a definition of the land. The Jews will point out their history of an amazing dispersion, diaspora and exilement by conquering nations. The Jews argue, in the course of time, a restoration guided providentially, brought them back to the land. The Jews will quickly point out the PLO does not have this history. The Arabs rely heavily on squatters rights. The Jews remind the Arabs that squatter's claim resulted from a war. If this is the case, the Jews possess the land as a result of the victory in the 1967 war. Besides the squatter's rights of land acquired through hostility and war have an enormous list in other parts of the world. To cite a few - the Americans displaced the American Indians, the Russians displaced the Ukrainians and the Georgians, the Portuguese displaced the Brazilian Indians, the Greeks displaced the Macedonians. The list goes on and on. Do squatters have the right to the land that was acquired through war? Look at the list of squatters in Palestinian history: Salemites, Canaanites, Hebrews, Assyrians, Babylonians, Medes, Persians, Greeks, Romans, Mohammeds, Crusades, Ottomans, British, Palestinians, Zionists and Israeli's.

How can these disputes be resolved? The Israeli-Arab conflict is caught in the middle of history in the making. Certainly, all will agree if God truly wants Palestine to be possessed by Israel, there is nothing or nobody who will stop this possession. If God does not want Palestine for the Jews, the Jews will lose all and a new diaspora will begin. Divine providence will be the answer to the possession of the land. It might be useful here to point out to the reader Biblical texts that give definition and implication for the possession of the land.

1. *God is owner and landlord of the land.*

Exodus 19:5 "The whole earth is mine."

Leviticus 25:23 "The land is mine and you are but aliens and my tenants."

Psalm 24:1 "The earth is the Lord's and everything in it, the world and all who live in it."

Psalm 50:10 "Every animal of the forest is mine and the cattle on a thousand hills."

Haggai 2:8 "The silver is mine and the gold is mine declares the Lord almighty."

2. *God gives the rights and use of the land generally.*

Psalm 37:11 “The meek shall inherit the earth and shall delight in the abundance of peace.”

Matthew 5:5 “The meek shall inherit the earth.”

Isaiah 57:13 “He that putteth his trust in me shall possess the land.”

3. *God promises the land to Abraham and his seed.*

Genesis 12:7 “Appeared unto Abram - unto thy seed will I give this land.”

Genesis 17:8 “I will give this and thy seed the land which you are a sojourner, all the land of Canaan for an everlasting possession.”

Exodus 20:12 “Honor thy father and mother that the days may be long upon the land the Lord God gives thee.”

Genesis 50:24 “Joseph said God will bring you out of this land and the land which he swore to give to Abraham to Isaac and to Jacob.”

Exodus 6:1-8 “And God said to Moses...I will bring you into a land I did give to Abraham, to Isaac and to Jacob.”

Zech 2:11-12 “Many nations shall be joined to the Lord in that day and the Lord shall inherit Judah as his portion in the Holy Land and shall choose Jerusalem.”

Acts 10:39 “We are witness both in the land of the Jews and in Jerusalem.”

4. *God gives definition and boundaries of the Promised Land.*

Exodus 23:31 “I will set thy bounds from the Red Sea even into the sea of the Philistines and from the desert into the river.” (Euphrates)

Deuteronomy 1:7-8 “Take your journey to the Mount of the Ammorites and into Arabah in the hills and in Shephelah and in the Negeu and by the seaside to the land of the Canaanites and into Lebanon into the Great River Euphrates.”

Genesis 15:18-21 “Lord made a covenant with Abram, I will give the land from the river of Egypt into the great river Euphrates.”

Deuteronomy 3:26-28 “God speaks to Moses, Get thee up to Pisgah (Mt. Nebo) and look westward, northward, southward and eastward and behold it with thine eyes...for thy people shall inherit the land which thou shalt see.”

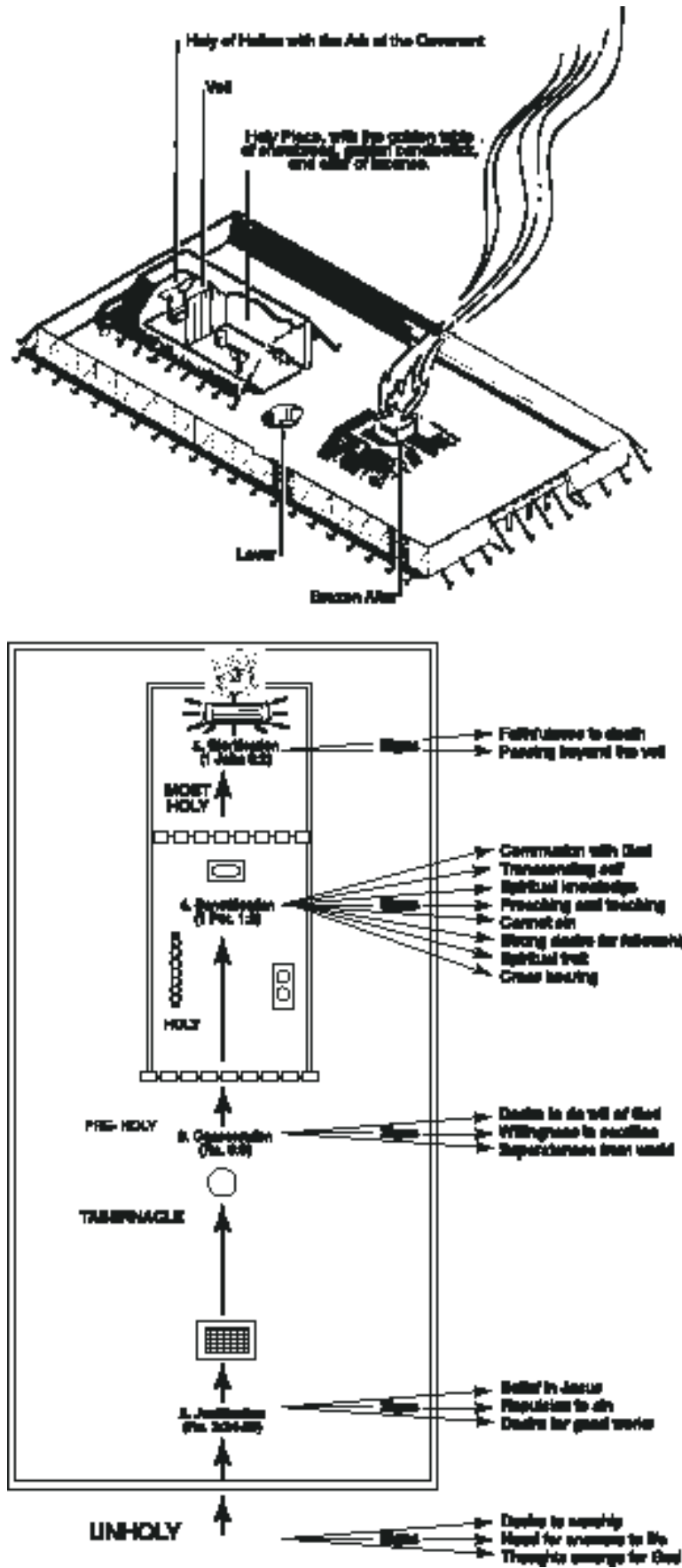


Figure 7.17 Five Stages in the Journey Toward God



In the second compartment was the holy of holies where only the Chief Priest may enter on the holiest day of the year - the Day of Atonement. In this most holy compartment was the Ark of the Covenant which contained within it, the tablets of the Ten Commandments, Moses' rod and Manna that represented food consumed in the desert. Two cherubims, golden-winged like creatures, were positioned on top of the golden covered ark. Between the two golden cherubims was a glow of light called "shekinah" representing the presence of God. The ark was 45 by 27 inches of acacia wood covered with gold. To the Hebrews, the ark was God's throne and thus represented his presence among them. Thus, the ark was treated with the greatest respect and care as it was God's representation of himself. Today, there is considerable interest in the whereabouts of the ark. Several theories now exist about its location. One has it sealed in a cave by Jeremiah on the mount where Moses died. Another has it under the Temple mount where Jeremiah hid it during the Babylonian invasions. Still another has it in Ethiopia which was carried there by Queen Sheeba. The location is unknown. Many believe it awaits the day when God will regather his people again and the temple is rebuilt. Thus, the tabernacle was like a passage-way between two worlds - the physical world and the spiritual world. Those desiring to communicate with God must go through the passageway from the physical to the spiritual in several steps: outside the tabernacle was the unholy; the court was the preholly; the first compartment was the holy and the inner compartment was the most holy. The steps suggest the tabernacle was like a door between two worlds; the human world and God's world. In order to enter God's world, a high degree of cleansing of sin toward holiness was required. This also suggests those who wanted to journey toward God must journey toward holiness. Even the progression of Israelites from Egypt to the Promised Land followed this theme. As the Hebrews journeyed toward the Promised Land, they must also journey toward holiness. The tabernacle was set up after the second year departing from Egypt. (Exodus 40:7) Numbers 33 lists 30 encampments or stops between Sinai and the crossing of Jordan. God through 30 encampments and 40 years of wanderings purified the nation as they finally reached the Promised Land.

Sacrifices was the chief activity of the tabernacle. The law required many types of sacrifices: bullocks, goats, rams, pigeons, grain, cakes, loaves and fruit. The blood of the bullock was to be sprinkled on the Ark of the Covenant on the Day of Atonement to atone for the sins of the people. The offering of sacrifices was a central part of their worship of God. It was a means of maintaining and repairing one relationship with God. Through sacrifice, one could remove the pollution of uncleanness and sin. Thus, there was several categories of sacrifices: sacrifices for

thanksgiving as an appreciation of his favor; sacrifices of peace offerings as gratitude for surviving some great ordeal of illness; and sacrifices of sin offerings as a way to atone for sins.

Sacrifices of animals in the tabernacle represent strange and unnatural activities as required by the law. When the Hebrews offered sacrifices, they were really communicating with God in a process in which the offerer admits to weaknesses, faults and imperfection. A sacrifice by an offerer was a recognition of a non-conformance to law. Sin is defined as the breakage of law. Sin is the refusal to do God's will. The offerer was communicating with God repenting over the transgression and declaring a desire to change. Therefore, the meaning of sacrifices in the tabernacle was two-fold. First, it was a recognition of breaking a law, or making a mistake or committing a sin. This is important as it was teaching the requirement of the law. Second, it was an opportunity for the offerer to ask forgiveness and a willingness to change and to improve. The whole process was an expression of appreciation and gratitude toward God of reestablishing an original relationship.

There are no laws nor commandments given by God which required human sacrifices. When God asked Abraham to sacrifice his son Isaac as a burnt offering, this was more a test of the patriarch's faithfulness to God. The sacrifice was stopped. There are a few instances where kings of Israel did offer and execute human sacrifices such as King Ahaz and Manasseh. But this was condemned by God through the prophets of Jeremiah and Ezekiel. These kings introduced pagan rites into their kingdoms which were subsequently condemned by God. These kings would make human sacrifices outside the city wall in the Valley of Hinnom. This horrible death by fire gave the valley the name of Gehenna which in the Greek translation is rendered "hell". This valley was then used as a symbol of the burning of humans as victims of paganistic sacrifices.

An interesting feature of the tabernacle activities was the Urim and Thummim. In the Hebrew, the words were associated with "light" and "completeness". (Exodus 28:30; Leviticus 8:8; Deuteronomy 33:8) The Urim and the Thummim were God's way of communicating with the high priest through the breastplate he wore over the ephod. According to the principle of the Urim and the Thummim, the high priest could inquire or raise questions of God and an answer would be given. This opportunity indicated all matters for which anyone who wished to speak to God could get a "yes" or "no" answer through the mediating high priest. Three theories exist on how it actually worked. For one, yes, no and wait lots were found in the pouch of the breastplate. When a question was asked by the high priest in the most holy, he would put his hand in the pouch and retrieve God's answer to the question. A second

theory, centers on the breastplate itself. When a question was asked by the high priest, the precious stones of the breastplate would light up brilliantly for a yes or darkened if no. No change in light would indicate wait for the answer. A third possibility involves the letters inscribed on the 12 jewels of the breastplate. The jewels were in three columns of 4 rows. A question asked by God would receive an answer by an individual jewel lighting up by letters. A succession of these letters would spell out God's answer to the question. All answers received of the Urim and Thummim were regarded as God speaking to the priest. Thus, the tabernacle was a way in which God's presence communicated with the Hebrews as they journeyed to the Promise Land.

#### ARCHAEOLOGICAL CONFIRMATION OF THE JUDGES

“Nevertheless, the Lord raised up Judges who delivered them out of the hand of those who spoiled them.” Judges 2:16

Most scholars place the period of the judges from the death of Joshua to the time of the establishment of the Monarchy with Saul. It may even start at an earlier period when Jethro recommended that “judges” or “representatives” be selected among the people to judge the problems and recommend solutions. (See section on modern management in the wilderness) Moses accepted and instituted these recommendations. During this long period, the twelve tribes settled in their allotted portions of the land. The time period is often termed the Iron Age I. The conquest of Canaan by the Israeli's has been dated in the 14th and 13th Century BC based on Albright's study of the geography of Canaan. As Israel conquered the 19 Canaan cities, they put the Canaanites to forced labor. Baez-Camargo reports<sup>36</sup> in one of the Tell-Amarna dated 14th Century BC of how Biridiya, governor of Megiddo sent a letter to the Pharaoh concerning the levy which was being constructed by indentured labor. Forced labor was generally imposed on conquered enemies. This same report describes the Philistine temple excavations at Tell Qasileh on the Yonkon River. The ruins of the temple was discovered in 1974. In the center of the floor which appeared to be the main hall, one can see clearly the stone basis for two huge pillars that support the roof. These were the pillars that Samson grasped to destroy the temple. Professors Sellin, Watzinger and Garstang and their dramatic excavations<sup>37</sup> at Jericho made remarkable finds and unexpected discoveries concerning the Canaanite fortress walls of Jericho. The Bible calls Jericho the city of Palms with its lush patches of vegetation. In the Tell es-Sultan through layer after layer of ruins reveal two walls, an inner wall and an outer wall. These were the famous walls of Jericho. The space between the walls was filled with fragments and rubble. What brought down the walls

was an earthquake which caused the outer walls to fall outward and downward and the inner walls to fall the opposite way inward. As it were, enemies within were destroyed and invaders from without had an easy access to conquer the city. The remains of Tell es-Sultan is one of the most extraordinary archaeological confirmation of an ancient Biblical story.

Israel's settlement in the promised land was filled with troubles, plundering, burning, massacring and even wars. The Israelites had to deal with two methods of warfare. First, the hordes of Midianite nomads mounted on camels, without numbers and would attack and raid unprotected villages. The taming and training of camels in a swift, surprise and terrorizing attack was a form of warfare quite new in the ancient world. Camels were normally used for transporting heavy burdens. The settlers had a difficult time battling these swift and terrorizing raids. Dowley<sup>38</sup> reports offensive weapons made from iron was an additional reason for settlers to fear the attacks. Daggers, swords, spears, javelins, bow and arrows and chariots made with iron features had a technological advantage in the ancient world of warfare. The Canaanites and the Philistines had this advantage over the Israelites. From Judges we read, "not a shield or spear was seen among forth thousand in Israel." Dowley reports how archaeologists discovered a variety of metal weapons dating from the time of the Iron Age. It was clearly established in Palestine. Smelting furnaces have been excavated on the borders of Philistine territories at Tell-Quasile, Tell Jemmah and Beth Shemesh. Israelites were only able to arm themselves with primitive weapons such as farm implements and household articles. They had very little if any iron weapons. It was probably for this reason God raised heroes to combat the overwhelming odds against Israel. These heroes termed Judges were charismatic leaders who were to deliver Israel militarily from her enemies. The judges of Israel were seldom involved in activities connected in the administration of the law. Deborah was certainly an exception.

Thompson reports<sup>39</sup> inscriptions in the Ebla tablets from the city of Taamech concerning Deborah as Judge and Barak as General. Judges 5:19 refers to Taamech and Megiddo in connection with Deborah as a prophet and judge with Barak as general and king. Prophets usually give kings messages from God. This Deborah did to Barak.

Cornfeld and Freedman<sup>40</sup> describe tomb excavations of the remains of a temple fort called Beth-Millo. This was uncovered on the acropolis of Shechem. The huge temple, 108 by 92 feet had 18 feet of massive walls and contained a large heathen-earth altar. Shechem was destroyed around 1300 BC. Tomb excavations confirm both the period of time of the judges and the background Biblical story of Abimelech who was made king. It was at a time when

Shechemites took revenge against Israel in a war by razing the walls of Jerusalem. The pits beneath the temple laden with pottery supplies additional evidence of the devastation that occurred in Shechem by the Israelites.

THE CHALLENGE OF HOLDING THE PROMISED LAND

“I will not drive them out from before you, but they shall be thorns in your sides.” Judges 2:3 See Figure 7.18.

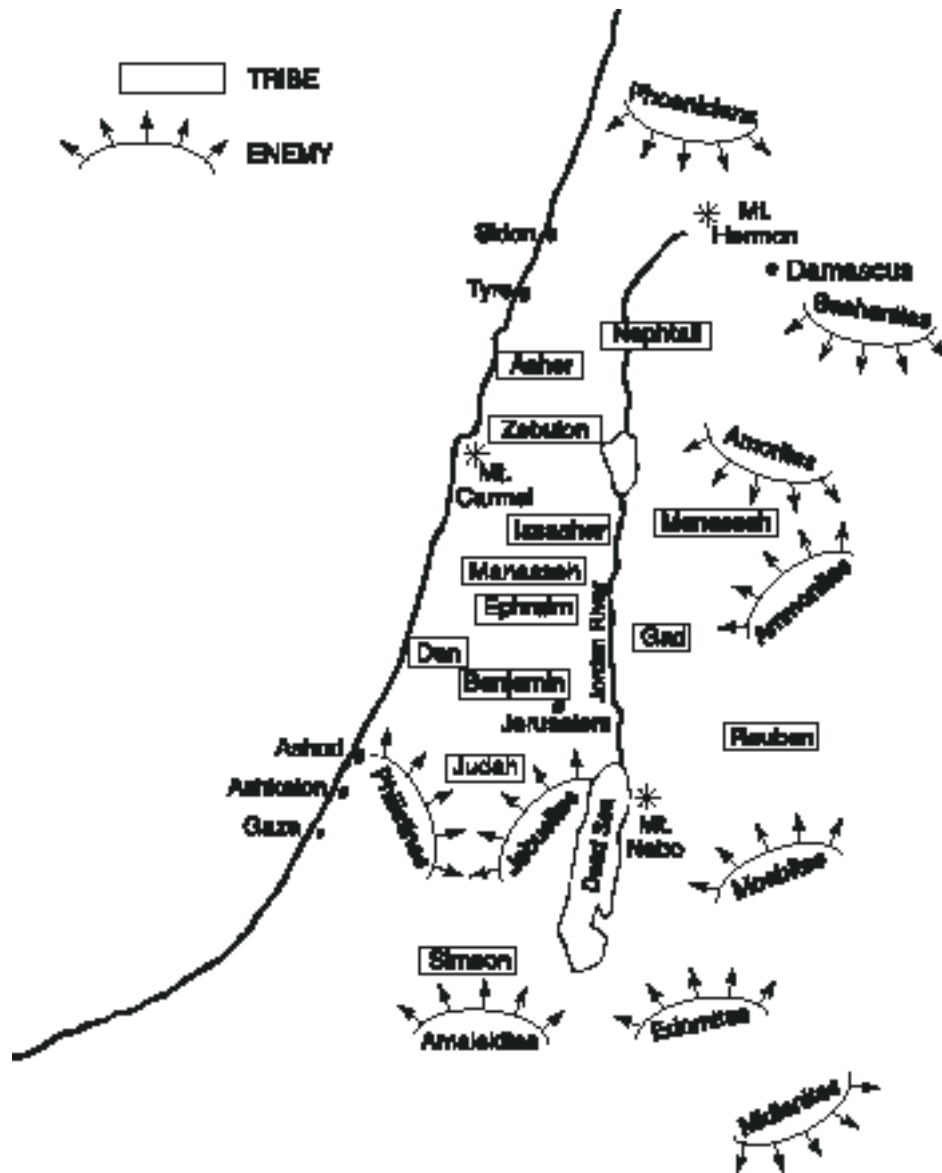


Figure 7.18 Location of 12 Tribes of Israel and Their Enemies

After the defeat of thirty one kings in Canaan by Joshua, the problem of holding the land emerged. The death of Joshua left no one to take his place. Without a strong leader, the tribes soon lost their feeling of being a united Israel. Each tribe dwelling on it's own piece of land had to struggle alone against it's many hostile neighbors including Amalekites, Edomites, Moabites, Ammonites, Jebusites, Midianites, Amorites and the Philistines. The tribes had little or no interest in the existence or the welfare of the other tribes. The Israeli culture at the time was more segregated than aggregated. Everyone did that which was right in their own eyes. Only when they faced a common enemy did they unite. But this was short lived and only for the time which was necessary to ward-off a common danger. Even in this early period, the lack of unity among the tribes underscored the need for a unified leader.

The roster of judges numbered twelve if you exclude Samuel from the list who was a pre-monarchy prophet and Abimelech, Gideon's son who regarded himself more as a king. The judges were not an unbroken line of rulers, but appeared sporadically as events with special problems arose. They were, in essence, tribal heroes who governed locally between the eras of Joshua and Samuel. Their purpose in a decentralized way, was to strengthen Israel's hold of Canaan against a variety of enemies. Several reasons can be cited why God allowed the local resident enemies to harass and make war on Israel. First, they failed to rid the land of idolatry and the practices on the altars to alien gods. The worship of Baal, Astarte and Dagon were as strong as when they entered the land. Israel even sacrificed to Baal and Astarte. This angered God. If there is a reoccurring theme throughout the Bible it is this: Faith is rewarded, idolatry is punished. Israel forsook the God of their fathers who had brought them from the land of Egypt. They ran after alien gods and worshipped them. Second, they made peace with local hostile enemies even after God said, "go and possess the land". As each new generation arose, they forgot this mandate to possess the land that God gave them. They frequently negotiated and compromised possession of the land for the sake of peace. As a result, they lived close by with neighboring kings who were a continued source of irritation to the lifestyle of those who were conforming to the law. Finally, the Israelites intermarried with non-Jews which broke the separation rank. This infused values from other civilizations infected individuals, family, the community and even the entire tribe. This intermixing also infused pagan practices. They were losing their chooseness. The names of the judges reported in the book of Judges are: Othniel, Ehud, Shamgar, Deborah, Gideon, Tola, Jair, Jephthah, Ibzan, Elon, Abdon, and Samson. The succession of judges followed a pattern. Israelities would lapse into idolatry for which God would allow foreign oppressors to punish them. When the people repented, he would send a judge to deliver them. Thus,

the cycle would repeat itself again. Here are summaries of four judges including King Abimilech with their exploits and contributions.

1. *Deborah, the Prophet* Her conflict was with Jabin the Canaanite king and Sisera, his general. The Canaanites had over nine hundred iron chariots and oppressed the Israeli's cruelly for over twenty years. She summoned Barak and said to him, "the God of Israel commands you take ten thousand men and battle Sisera". Barak agreed only if she would go along with the troops. She agreed and marched with them and had a complete victory. there was no doubt that Deborah was the charismatic leader that brought victory to Israel. She composed a prose narrative song of triumph giving God the credit for the victory. In the song, she cites how Jael another female warrior, disposed of Sisera, the general. His disposition brought an end to the enemy of the Israelites. Thus, two women with God's help vanquished a Canaanite army. Deborah also functioned as a judge. In fact, she held court regularly under a palm-tree in the hill country of Ephraim. Israelites came to her for advice, guidelines and decisions.

2. *Gideon, A warrior who refused to be king.* He was a strange and remarkable person. In his case, it was the Midianites with their fast-moving camels that raided unprotected villages. This went on for seven years. These raids destroyed crops, sheep and oxen. The situation was so bad that the Israelites had to live in caves in the mountains. There was an ancient blood feud between the Midianites and the Israelites. Add to this, the Israelites had drifted back to the worship of the pagan god, Baal. Gideon's first act was to put to an end pagan worship among the people. It was not until this was done that he could hope to defeat his enemies.

When the Midianites assembled in the valley of Jezreel to do battle, Gideon was called to be "general" and lead the Israelites to war. Gideon was doubtful. He insisted on two tests with dew and a wool fleece to assure that God was with him. After the convincing tests, Gideon called for an army - thirty-two thousand responded. But Gideon's test of fear rejected twenty-two thousand which were sent home. The final test was lapping water from a brook which rejected all but 300. The victory that God gave Gideon and his band of 300 was during the darkness of the night with blowing of trumpets, breaking of empty pitchers and holdup up of torches which confused and routed the Medianites. They began killing themselves thinking it was the Israelites. The victory was complete. The Israelites were so appreciative that they wanted to make Gideon a king. To this he refused, and instead said, "The Lord alone shall rule over you".

3. *Abimelech - the man who wanted to be king.* When Gideon died, Abimelech his illegitimate son by a Canaanite concubine woman persuaded men of Shechem to make him their king. It was a time when Israeli's reverted to the paganistic gods of Baal. Abimelech persuaded the men of Shechem by saying, "is it better to be ruled by seventy men or by one man?" This statement was convincing since there was a growing need for unity among the tribes, a unity that expressed itself in wanting a king. Abimelech started his 3 year reign by murdering all his brothers except Jotham, the youngest, who escaped. Jotham began circulating a story of the trees which has become the famous parable of the trees. The story goes like this - once upon a time trees set out to anoint a king over them. The olive tree was asked to rule, but refused since this tree did not want to leave the rich olive oil it was supplying to others. The fig tree was asked to rule, but refused. This tree did not want to leave the abundant figs it was supplying to others. The vine tree was asked to rule, but refused like it's two predecessors. This tree did not want to leave the sweet and satisfying juice it was supplying to others. Finally, the bramble tree, a shade tree was asked to rule and in this case accepted. Jotham likened Abimelech to the bramble tree which was fruitless and supplied nothing. Abimelech was eventually destroyed by a woman who cast a stone and broke Abimelech's skull.

4. *Samson - the man who used his strength foolishly.* God instructed the mother of Samson during pregnancy that she was not to drink wine, stay drunk or to eat anything unclean. Neither were they to use a razor on his hair for he was to be a Nazarite and belonged to God. He would save Israel from the Philistines. Samson's relationship with the Philistines was varied and hostile. At first, he fell in love with a Philistine from Timnah who he wanted for his wife. During his travels on the road to Timnah with his parents to make arrangements for the wedding one day, he encountered a lion which he killed. Leaving the carcass, apparently some bees made their home in the carcass which was the basis of a riddle he gave to the Philistines. His new wife, disloyal to Samson gave the riddle solution to the Philistines. From this incident, he killed 30 Philistines in Ashkelon. When his new wife was taken from him and given to another man, Samson's fury retaliated with the burning of Philistine crops. He did this by tying 300 foxes in pairs with a torch between each pair of tails. When the torch was lit, the foxes would run circuitously burning the standing grain. This and other incidents engendered a counter hate for Samson for which they sought to kill him. The Philistines convinced men of Judah to bring Samson in bound hand and foot or they would destroy the Judah camp. This they did. They delivered Samson bound completely. At the time of delivery, Samson broke the bonds, found the jawbone of an ass and using it as a weapon killed a thousand Philistines. As Samson lives, he judged many



problems and difficulties for over 20 years, but the Philistines never forgot his destruction of a thousand of their soldiers.

Again Samson fell in love with a Philistine woman named Delilah. The Lords of the Philistines persuaded her to find how he got his strength. After three deceptions, Samson tells Delilah. She and others cut his hair, plucked his eyes out and imprisoned him grinding corn. Soon after, his hair grew again which renewed his strength. During a festival to the Dagon god, Samson was brought out from the prison to be mocked. This was Samson's last opportunity for revenge. A small boy took him to the two pillars of the temple. With renewed strength, he toppled the pillars and brought the roof down destroying the Philistines as well as himself.

Most of the judges in the book of Judges were military or religious leaders. Samson was neither. Nor did he sit in judgment over his people. The record is silent. However, we can assume he must have adjudicated and counceled in cases requiring decisions. He helped solidify Israel's hold on Canaan. This laid the groundwork for a united monarchy.

#### CONTRIBUTIONS OF THE JUDGES TO THE JUDAIC CIVILIZATION

“God raised up judges to deliver Israel out of the hand of the enemies.” Judges 2:18

The time of the judges was mainly a period of adjustment and adaptation to a new land. Nomadic people arrived in a country and were settling into an agrarian culture. They settled in a small strip of real estate which has alternately been called Canaan, Palestine, Israel, Judah, Jordan and now again, Israel. The Canaanite civilization fell primarily because of their religious practice of human sacrifices to the god Moloch. Additionally, it fell because of lewd rites demanded by the priests of Baal, unrestrained orgies by these priests and prostitution in the name of the female goddess Asherah.

The conquest of the land of Canaan involved all 12 tribes. Each tribe was expected to defend and hold their portion of the land. The period of the judges revealed a people with many internal difficult problems - tribal non-cooperation, religious fragmentation, family instabilities, territorial and border disputes and economic disappointments. The judges made every attempt to solve these problems. These judges should not be confused with the traditional patriarchs or heads of each tribe. The new judges represents a new leadership based on a new need that emerged in an agrarian society. As time went on, some form of centralized government became obvious. It emerged pointedly when Abimelech was easily, but regrettably appointed king. The Philistine threat as a cohesive

unified power of five cities posed a continued crisis for Israel. These cities were: Gaza, Ashkelon, Ashdod, Ekron and Gath.

In spite of these difficulties and the continued hostility found in Canaan, several outstanding contributions were made to the Judaic civilization in the period of the judges.

1. *Women into leadership.* Deborah was a leader. She not only had a vision of what had to be done, but she was accepted by her male counterparts. In fact, Barak, her general would not engage in a military campaign unless she was leading the army. But most important, God saw the qualities of leadership in her and decided to use her in the most important mission. God saw that gender was not deterministic, but qualities and talents in giving directions, coordinating people and inspiring the despondents. Deborah was not in a priestly lineage suggesting God will raise up from other sources different from sources traditionally known. In this very early period, women in leadership revealed a high level of effectiveness needed at a given time. This role of women into leadership was innovative since in ancient Hebrew society, men dominated and women were hardly noticed nor mentioned.

2. *Common people appointed as judges.* Gideon had no royal pedigree. Nor did he have an impressive educational background. Nor was he of priestly lineage. He was a wheat farmer. One might say the lowliest of occupations. When God said to Gideon, “thou mighty man of valor”, God saw the quality and the aptitudes for appointing Gideon as a judge and a military commander. The office of a judge was held during a life, but was not to be hereditary. Neither could they appoint their successors. Abimelech became king not from heredity, but from deceit and corruption. Thus the charismatic heroes of the judges were low born, obtaining advancement through their own energy and abilities which was brought out by opportunities of divine nomination. This is a great observation about God. he will select people without labels, pedigrees, education or lineage. Gideon was an outstanding example of how God selects people for his work.

3. *Judgeship different from kingship.* Judging and ruling are closely connected, but they are different. A king must judge, but a judge does not have to be a king. A king does not follow law, but with whatever is right in his own eyes, but a judge uses law to see and evaluate what is right. A king was not a sacred or holy person, in fact quite secular, but a judge has a relationship with God and speaks for God. A king administered political, societal and natural matters of the kingdom, but a judge was expected to perform all kinds of spiritual as well as societal functions. They were even prophets such as Deborah and Gideon who predicted future outcomes. Kings throughout

history have not been outstanding judges. The hardships, the poverty, the wars and the chaos experience by their subjects was largely due to poor judging by the kings. God allowed a period of judges to reveal the importance of the decision making process which can be executed with or without a king.

4. *Judges were selected for their moral fitness.* To judge a criminal case, the judge himself or herself could not be a criminal or have even the slightest criminal inclinations. The duty of executing the law both its moral and civil standards required the judge have a high degree of conformity to law. Additionally, the judge had to remove the condemnation God had made before a blessing could be given. This was seen with Gideon. Gideon had to rid the worship of idols in Israel before God would give him a victory.

5. *Jehovah was himself the king of the chosen people.* The period of the judges was not a period without a king. God was to be their king. He had already dwelt among them in his tabernacle - sanctuary during nomadic life. In cultured and city life, he also would dwell with them, ready always through his priest to council them in general as well as in specific terms. Here was to be the central government to unite all the people. What happened that this concept failed? Basically God was spiritual and not to be seen whereas natural and physical Israelites wanted to see their king. Israel lacked that spiritual ability to communicate and acknowledge their spiritual king.

6. *Democratic concepts extended from Jethro's day.* Each judge was selected by his own tribe. Representatives were selected under the judges to "hear" and "act" on problems and cases brought before them. With the settlement of Canaan, the Hebrews ceased being nomadic and commenced into city life to develop more fully the unique political institution conceptualized in the desert. The process was a phase of constitutional democratic development. It differs with the American democratic concept since God was involved more deeply in setting up the character and the laws as requirements for the Jews. It can be thought of as a democratic theocracy. This democratic theocracy occurred four hundred years before the Greeks. There was one strong difference. It did not provide the basis of centralized leadership except of course, in the spiritual realm. The tribes, nonetheless, were looking ahead for a "leader" who like Moses and Joshua would unite and deliver them from their enemies. This period of the judges may very well be the period which formalized the Jewish concept of the Messiah. One who would unite and deliver them from their enemies. In some ways, constitutional monarchy of the kings may have met the Messianic expectations, but with the destruction of the temple and the polity of Israel by Babylon the Messianic concept was temporarily abandoned, but later reactivated and kept alive even to this day.

There are some parallels, however, between the era of the judges with the Jeffersonian period in American history where democracy was born in the United States. It's not an accident that the American democracy closely resembles the first government by the Jews since the American founding fathers were instructed on the Bible both Old and New Testaments. The era of the judges may have been more influential as a blueprint of democracy for the American Constitution than the Grecian blueprint which arrived 400 years later than the judges. Here are the parallels.

### **PARALLELS OF TWO DEMOCRACIES**

#### **JEWISH ERA OF THE JUDGES**

1. Wandering nomadic people settling in a foreign land.
2. Conceptualizing a new government not found with neighbors.
3. Mosaic law, the central constitution. land.
4. Weak central government with tribe rights.
5. Elders in each of 12 tribes dispense justice within each tribe.
6. Mosaic law has authority over the judges.
7. Judge, chief executive can delegate to others. others.
8. Mosaic law limits the power of the judge.
9. Judge can summon senate for new proposals. proposals.
10. Popular assembly elected by people.
11. All Israeli's may participate in government.

#### **AMERICAN ERA OF COLONIAL TIMES**

1. Wandering religious persecuted people setting in foreign colonial territories.
2. Conceptualizing a new government not found with mother country.
3. Federal constitution, the central law of the land.
4. Weak central government with "state rights".
5. Judges in 13 state courts and municipalities dispense justice within each state.
6. Federal constitution has authority over the judges.
7. President, chief executive can delegate to others.
8. Constitution limits the power of the president.
9. President can summon senate for new proposals.
10. House of representatives elected by the people.
11. All Americans can participate in government.

#### **ARCHAEOLOGY CONFIRMATION OF THE KINGS**

When the Jews settled in Canaan, they ceased being a nomadic people. At first, the houses they built were poorly constructed. There was little evidence of communal planning since urbanity was a new experience. Pottery was poorly fired, structures were thinly crude even as compared to the massive structures of the Canaanites whose land they had taken. There are many excavations and artifacts that have been and continue to be uncovered to confirm this

early period of settlement and the subsequent emergency of Israel as a monarchy. Space prohibits a comprehensive reporting of these evidences. Only a few will be cited in this section.

Wilson<sup>41</sup> describes the cultural excavations of the lifestyles of the Philistines and the Israeli's of that period. For example, smelting furnaces for fashioning swords and spears are described. Jugs with strainer spouts to hold back the barley husks have been reported. Also included are pottery shaped altars to remind the settlers of God's presence in a foreign land. At Tel-Afula, houses have been excavated with central roofed buildings with rows of pillars to support the roof. This pillar-like structure designed for holding roofs confirms the Samson episode which destroyed the central pillars to bring down the roof of Dagon's Temple.

Paul and Dever<sup>42</sup> described additional artifacts of this period of urbanization emerging in Israel especially relating to the period of the monarchy. These urban settlements reflect the economic, administrative and military activities of the Israelite kings. These urban areas were actually sprung-up cities located near water sources and close to major roads. Jericho was an old city both on a river and next to a major road. Some cities were located, surprisingly, in remote areas away from roads, water sources and even fertile land. These were on top of high hills and mountains probably for security and protection. Many urban settlements had walls around them as fortifications. Those without walls were the unwallled villages and unprotected by the monarchy. As time went on, an Israeli city was developed as a circle with central houses encircled by a street and a wall. A typical city would cover 20 acres and include 3000 people. Many of the excavated Tells were small cities planned and protected by city walls. Towering above the city at the highest point was the inner fortified area where the central government was housed. As cities grew, more houses would be built around the inner acropolis. This required a second wall to be built to protect the newly constructed houses. Jerusalem, as it grew, had three walls built to fortify it's settlements. Solomon built the fortified cities of Megiddo, Hazor, Lachish, and Gezer. Ruins of these cities are still in existence and are visited frequently by tourists. The extensive excavations of these cities still continue. The city of David known as Jebusite Jerusalem was located in the ridge of Mount Moriah with the Kidron Valley on the east and the Hinnon Valley on the west. It had access to the vital water of the Kidron Brook. Archaeological evidence for the remains of David's city is scant although location and wall are accurate. When Solomon built the new Jerusalem on the top of Moriah with the iron, bronze and cedar logs as well as the gold and silver David left for him, David's Jerusalem basically, vanished. Solomon built the new Jerusalem and was commissioned to build the first temple. (I Kings 5:1-

5) Solid and verifiable tradition identifies the temple location near or at the site of the rock Abraham was to use in sacrificing Isaac as a test of his faith. Josephus (Ant. V, 330) describes Solomon's platform for the temple was only half the size of that built by Herod the Great. The final product of Solomon's effort was a magnificent temple, the centerpiece of the new Jerusalem.

Unger<sup>43</sup> describes Saul's fortress at Gibeah which interestingly enough was Saul's home town. It was excavated by Albright in 1922. It is four miles north of Jerusalem and two miles south of Ramah. The structure measures 170 by 155 feet. Excavations show second and third constructions over time, but clearly connected with the monarchy. An iron plowshare found is one of the earliest known Israeli objects of that specific period. Excavations at Beth-Shan uncovered a small stele with Egyptian hieroglyphics describing Necromancy - the cult of the dead. This was the practice widespread in Canaan of communicating with the dead. Necromancy was banned by Saul. But before the battle at Beth-Shan, Saul was desperate enough to consult with the witch of Endor, a necromancer, who gave the same forecast that Samuel gave that Saul was going to die.

Many archaeological reports from the time of Samuel, the last judge down to the time of Jesus, have added greatly to our knowledge of this period in such areas as building materials and construction methods, architectural elements, waterworks, agriculture, trade and commerce, monetary system, taxation procedures, tools and crafts and the system of weights and measurements. The Biblical record is far more confirming in this period than in previous periods. If there is doubt or suspicion, it is more in the details. Albright wrote<sup>44</sup> "The Age of Solomon was certainly one of the most flourishing periods in the history of Palestine. Archaeology after a long silence, has finally corroborated Biblical tradition in no uncertain way."

#### THE MONARCHY - FIRST UNITED THEN DIVIDED

"And the elders of Israel said, Give us a king to judge us." I Samuel 8:1-6 And  
the Lord said unto Samuel, "they have not rejected you but they have rejected  
me." I Samuel 8:7

There are several reasons why the Israelites turned to kingship after the period of the judges:

1. *Philistines were harshly oppressive.* The neighboring Philistine power with their military edge of iron in weapons was an annihilation threat to Israel's survival. After the judges, Israel was a loose confederation of tribes highly disunited. The need to act in unity against a common enemy was critical. A strong leader, as king, could

provide the protection and safety that was sorely needed. Israel could have asked God for a more active and personal role than to seek a human replacement.

2. *Israel's tribes were divisive.* Each of the tribes fiercely loved its independence. There were disputes emerging over land boundaries, trading, water rights, etc. The need for a centralized government to coordinate a loosely bound infrastructure was critically needed. The tribes' love of independence prevented them from becoming one united nation. A centralized government with guidelines and laws was thought to be the answer.

3. *Israel wanted a king like other nations.* Regal authority was altogether alien to the institutions set up by Moses. The fundamental idea Moses promulgated was that God was the king of the Israeli people. However, it was not enough for them to be a theocratic nation under a spiritual God - a nation in which God was king. They could not see or speak to God. They needed an intermediary. One they can see and speak to. Besides other countries had kings along with their own Gods. Their natural and physical minds rebelled over the invisible and spiritual God.

Samuel took the demand for a king as a rejection of his role as a prophet intermediary. God reminded Samuel, it was not a rejection of him, but a rejection of God. Nonetheless, God accepted their kingly request, but reminded the people through Samuel that hardships would come. A king will conscript sons into the military. A king would set up a military hierarchy of authority. A king would use the military to plow his land. A king would use his subjects to make instruments of war. A king would take daughters to be cooks and bakers. A king would take lands, vineyards and give them to his favorites. A king would take a tenth of their possessions including money. God's message to the people through Samuel was prophetic as all of these kingly moves did in fact happen with the Israeli kings.

4. *Israeli elders would not trust successors.* Samuel was an old man when succession was to be formalized and adopted. Samuel wanted to make his sons successors - Joel and Abijah. These sons were already judges in Beer-Sheba. It was common knowledge these sons were not like Samuel. As judges, they took bribes and perverted justice. The elders did not accept the sons as Samuel's successors. They were disliked and corrupt. Appointment of a king was their proposal. Samuel gave them Saul, a Benjamite. He also warned them of what would happen having a king.

Subsequent to the appointment of Saul as the first king, Israel developed a continuing monarchy intent on overcoming the problems facing the start up of a new country. The three kings, Saul, David and Solomon contributed a great deal toward the nationalization of a Bedouin people. These three kings are often referred to as the three great

kings since the subsequent kings did not in their reign tenure measure up to their contributions. In fact, before Solomon, Israel was in an incline. After Solomon, the fortunes of Israel went downhill. The monarchies as well as the people rebelled against God and His laws. God might have destroyed Israel or allowed captivity and complete assimilation into another country. If God did this, He would have ended His plan to develop a Biblical Civilization with the Israeli's parallel to the secular civilizations. This plan had a global take-over potential of any and all civilizations. God did not withdraw His plan. Instead He selected the House of David to introduce and bring about the Messiah.

It was when Solomon died that Israel erupted into a bloody civil war. Solomon's sons and his military generals fought for the lucrative throne. Rehoboam, son of Solomon, had his father's blessing to be the new king. Jeroboam, who wielded more influence among the military chiefs, opposed Rehoboam. Jeroboam was once an official under Solomon's administration. He was in charge of conscripted forced labor. At the time, he opposed this activity with Solomon himself. The opposition was strained enough for him to flee to Egypt. With Solomon's death, he returned with an appeal to Rehoboam to relax the harsh conscription of forced labor and the taxation policies of his father. Rehoboam did just the opposite! He made the policies more oppressive. This brought about the civil war in Israel. In the end, Rehoboam took the southern half of the country including Jerusalem and called it the Kingdom of Judah. Jeroboam set up his own government in the northern half and retained the name Israel. He chose Shechem as the capital. Each claimed to be the king God had chosen. However, since the northern kingdom came to an end after nineteen monarchs, one can conclude the Kingdom of Judah was favored by God. Several reasons can be given why the northern kingdom came to an end. The Kingdom of Israel was in a constant state of internal political turmoil and disputes. This lack of stability fell short of the ability to stand up to the increasing encroachments of its powerful neighbors. This was decisive in the face of a reassertive Assyrian empire under Pul. Pul was bringing the entire Middle East under Assyrian control. But, it wasn't until later under the Assyrian Saigon in 741 BC that ten tribes and their constituents were brought into captivity. The independent Kingdom of Israel ceased to exist with the Assyrian invasion.

Another reason for the demise of the northern kingdom was due to its adoption and worship of prohibitive alien gods. This would explain why God preserved and protected the southern kingdom in spite of their cruel administrative practices. The southern kingdom of Judah kept God's laws and His temple worship. This may explain



why the Assyrian juggernaut never made an attempt to assimilate the Kingdom of Judah. The fate of the northern kingdom is seen by Biblical scholars as God's decisive judgment of the people's practice of idolatry. More than a century later, much of the same judgment fell on the southern kingdom of Judah with their practices of idolatry. This was under the destructive onslaught of the rising Babylonian empire.

#### THE EMERGENCE OF THE DIVINE RIGHTS OF KINGS

“The kings of the earth set themselves.” Psalms 2:2

The word king designates a male sovereign who would conduct a form of government, make and enforce laws and protect and defend the people and the land. In Egypt the pharaoh-king was thought of as divine. In many cases, they revered the Pharaoh as “God”. In the Mesopotamia area, the king was seen as God's representative on earth and his authority was derived from a high God. In either area, the king was seen as ruling by appointment of a or the God quite independent of the people's will. People were required to accept this divine ruler's judgments and decisions as coming from God himself. This introduced into history the concept of the “divine rights of kings”.

In Israel, the office of the king emerged for the first time during the Eleventh Century BC when Saul became the first monarch. Prior to that time, people were led by prophetic types or judges. But the Hebrews always believed since the Exodus that God was their king. Saul's monarchy continued through David and Solomon even beyond the division of the kingdom into two separate states: the northern Kingdom of Israel under King Jeroboam and the southern Kingdom of Judah under Rehoboam. The subsequent kings were established from heredity. The monarchy of both kingdoms continued until the Gentile empire destroyed them and absorbed them into their culture.

The issue of the divine rights of kings was important since kings portrayed to the people, they were “Gods anointed”. Saul, David and Solomon made this claim. They were God's representatives here on earth. Many of the secular kings before Israel did not regard themselves as representatives of God since they believed themselves as gods. The concept of the divine rights of kings meant the king can do no wrong nor can he be deceived since God was with him. A judgeships passed from father to son, such as Gideon, the idea of kingship should also pass from father to the son. Eventually, the hereditary lineage was adopted by other countries throughout history. This concept has been practiced by kings over 3500 years of human history. Only recently has the concept of the divine rights of kings been rejected by the ruling masses. Also rejected is the idea that the people have no right in the participation in the selection of their ruler nor in the participation in government. Three major historic events led to the demise of the

divine rights of kings. First, the American Revolution in 1776 which rejected King George of England and instituted democracy. There was a point in time where the American colonists were pressing their victorious military hero to become King George Washington. But, he himself rejected the idea further affirming the democracy process where the masses of people participate in their government. The second event was the French Revolution of 1789. This bloody political revolution had major social and cultural consequences for not only governments, but also classes of people. It profoundly affected all of Europe, the Middle East, India, North and South America. When Napoleon displaced King Louis XVI it was more a despot replacing a king rather than an interchange of kings.

The third major event was World War I (1914-1918). This war involved all the continents of the world. The political consequence of the war was far reaching. Geographical boundaries changed. Before the war there were 19 monarchies and 14 republics. Today, we see 3 monarchies and 21 republics. The decline of monarchies continues and the emergence of republics with democratic processes escalating. In Africa alone, there exists as much as 54 republics. People want to participate in government.

Originally, God was opposed to the concept of kingship right from the beginning when Saul was to be considered. He did anoint David, but even this act required David to follow the law. God wanted anyone who was a king either in Judah or Israel to rule under the law. The law was the deciding ruler. As the concept of the divine rights of kings was adopted by secular neighbors, it was changed to permit the king to be anointed by God through a religious cleric or religious organization. But these kings ignored the law since they were the law unto themselves. These kings did what they saw was right in their own eyes. The kings of both Israel and Judah with the quality of their monarchical rule gave convincing evidence that they were neither anointed nor accepted by God. Nor were they true representatives of His expectations on earth. The immoralities, the debaucheries, the corruption, the breakage of law and the depravities produced by these kings brought rejection of them and the hereditary succession they instituted.

#### SYNOPSIS OF THE KINGS OF JUDAH AND ISRAEL

“Many kings shall be raised up from the borders of the earth.” Jeremiah 50:41

Data on the monarchy and the divided kingdom is found in the books of Samuel and the Kings. At first glance, it would seem easy to collect time periods, years of reign and the contributions or criticisms of each king. The reign of each king in each lineage is clearly given, but serious problems develop because of the following:

1. *Co-regencies.* Some reigns overlap between an outgoing king and an incoming king such as David and Solomon, Jotham and Uzziah, Asa and Jehoshaphat, etc. In many cases it's unclear if events were dated by the incoming co-regent or by the outgoing co-regent.

2. *Methods of reckoning the reigns.* Two different methods were used. One was the non-accession year which meant the death of a king. This could mean a year was counted twice since there was a sharing with the incoming king. The other was the accession year which counted the time of a full calendar year of the incoming king. The Kingdom of Israel was the first method and the Kingdom of Judah the second method.

3. *Rival kings were ruling simultaneously.* There were many near-anarchy periods in which rival kings were "ruling" over different parts of the kingdom at the same time. These rival kings who may have taken over the complete monarchy will count the period from his partial reign.

A brief study of the Judaic kings intend to reveal why the Judaic Civilization as a link in the Biblical Civilization experienced a decline since the death of Solomon. The following summarized three categories of kings: the united kings, the kings of Judah and the kings of Israel. A brief statement is made about the kings identification, years of reign, father of the king, approximate ascendancy date, their contributions, the criticisms and the name of the deity followed by the king. Time features are only approximate. See Figure 7.19.

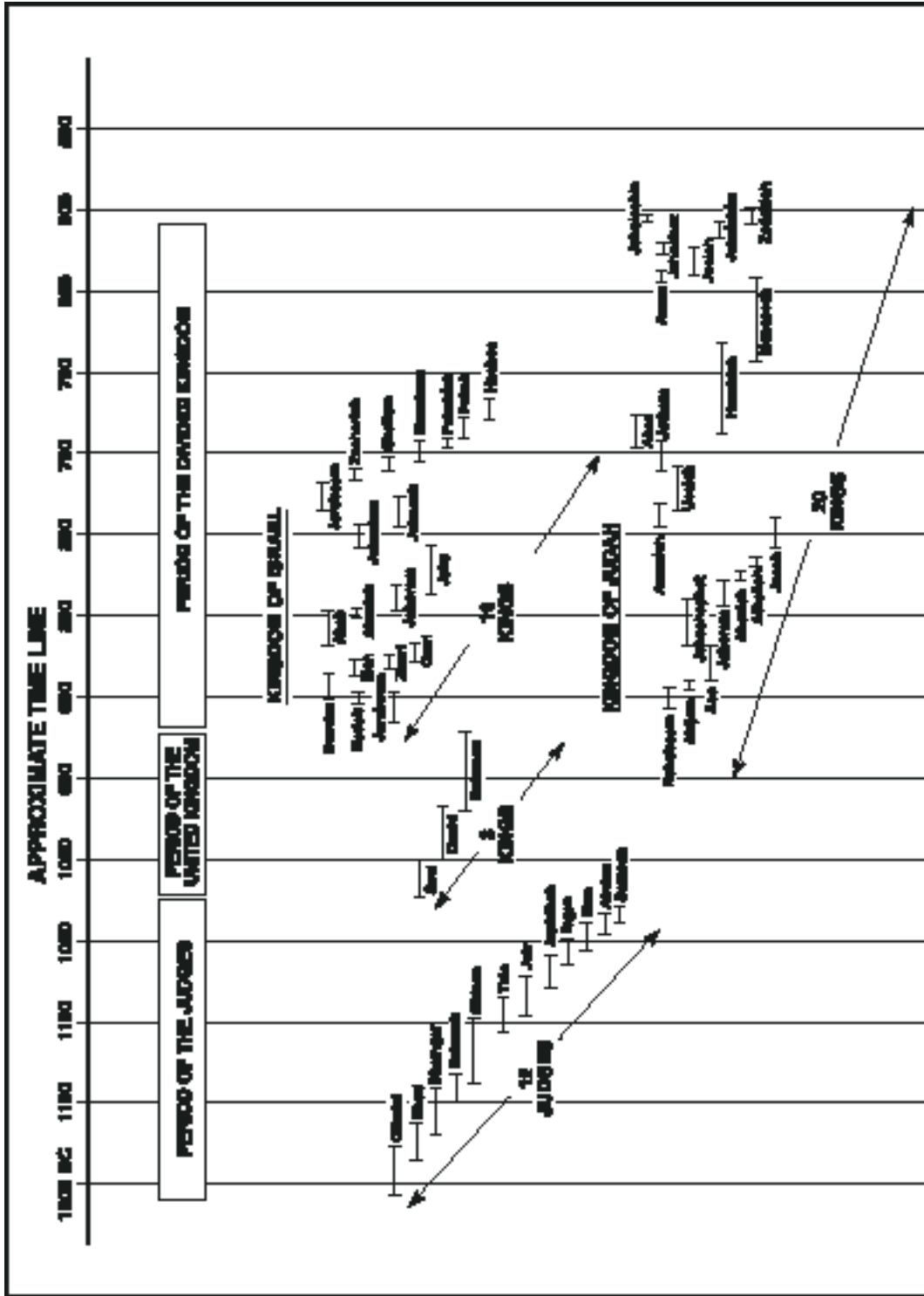
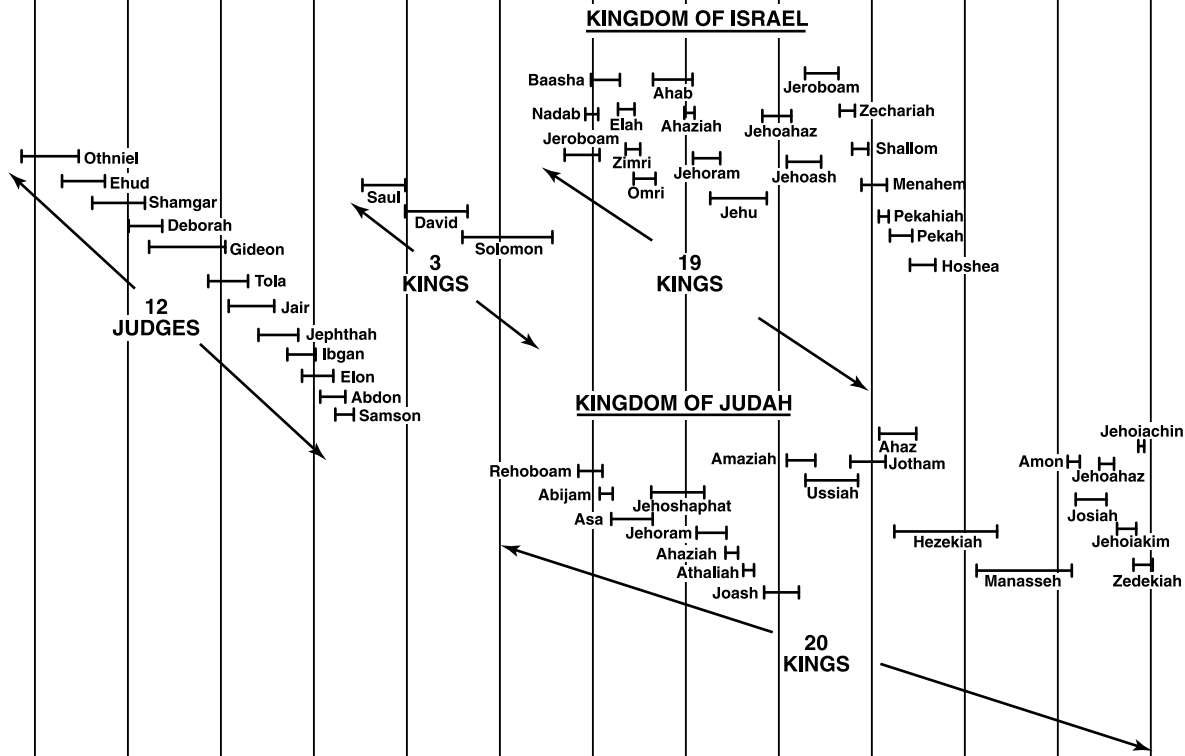


Figure 7.19 Timeline of Judges and Kings

# APPROXIMATE TIME LINE

1200 BC    1150    1100    1050    1000    950    900    850    800    750    700    650    600    550

PERIOD OF THE JUDGES	PERIOD OF THE UNITED KINGDOM	PERIOD OF THE DIVIDED KINGDOM
----------------------	------------------------------	-------------------------------



## A. THE UNITED KINGS

1. *Saul*. Reign - 32 years; Father - Kish; Approximate - 1032 BC; Contributions - Administered transition from judges to monarchy; Battled the Philistines; Organized the first government; Renounced court luxuries; Criticisms - Destructive jealousy with rival David; Broke relationship with Samuel; Unfaithful to God and his laws; Became a psychic melancholia; Practiced witchcraft; Murdered a priest.

2. *David*. Reign - 40 years; Father - Jesse; Approximate - 1000 BC; Contributions - Unified quarreling tribes; Built protective army unassailable; Provided resources to build temple; Supported worship of God and His laws; Established Jerusalem as capitol; Prolific Administrator, poet and musician; Wrote most of the Psalms; Criticisms - Levied heavy taxes and economic burdens; Committed adultery with Bath Sheba; Arranged for the murder of one of his generals named Uriah; Practiced polygamy; Took the census of the people unlawfully.

3. *Solomon*. Reign - 37 years; Father - David; Approximate - 960 BC; Contributions - Built the temple in Jerusalem; An effective merchant and trader; Fortified many cities for protection; Wrote Proverbs and Ecclesiastes; Decisions and judgments as king became world renown; Criticisms - Practiced unpaid forced labor with oppression; Practiced polygamy with 700 wives and 300 concubines; Lowered standards of religious purity; Allowed expenditures to exceed income; Worshipped God, but tolerated idols of wives; Allowed excessive luxuries in court and in his home.

## B. THE KINGS OF JUDAH

1. *Rehoboam*. Reign - 17 years; Father - Solomon; Approximate - 931 BC; Contributions - Fortified a number of cities against the Philistines; Maintained worship and temple practices in Jerusalem; Criticisms - Enacted heavier taxes than Solomon; Permitted heathen worship and immoral practices; acquired considerable harem like his father; Lost to Egypt the treasure accumulated by Solomon; Administered harsh rulership which brought about a civil war that split a unified country into two kingdoms - Judah and Israel.

2. *Abijam*. Reign - 3 years; Father - Rehoboam; Approximate 913 BC; Contributions - Supported the religious orthodoxy and worship in Jerusalem; Experienced a great military victory over Jeroboam, king of Israel; Criticisms - Continued hostilities against separated Kingdom of Israel; Tolerated pagan idols and practices; Acquired plurality of wives like his father.

3. *Asa*. Reign - 41 years; Father - Abijam; Approximate - 911 BC; Contributions - Abolished idols and heathen practices; Brought economic prosperity to the nation; Defeated the Ethiopian king; Removed male cult prostitutes; Reaffirmed destiny God wanted for Israel; Criticisms - Rebuked for foreign alliances; Administration was a declining allegiance toward God.

4. *Jehoshaphat*. Reign - 25 years; Father - Asa; Approximate - 870 BC; Contributions - Supported God and His laws; Introduced system-wide public instruction for the people; Set up judges as a Supreme Court; Restored commerce in Red Sea; Made friendly alliance with Israel; Good relations with his prophet; Criticisms - Forced his son's marriage to Ahab's daughter; Rebuked by prophet Jehu for his alliance with Ahab.

5. *Jehoram*. Reign - 8 years; Father - Jehoshaphat; Approximate - 848 BC; Contributions - struggled and formalized the continued dynasty of David; Suppressed the revolt of the Edomites; Criticisms - Immoral practices both in reign and personal; Followed the kings of Israel as well as King Ahab.

6. *Ahaziah*. Reign - 1 year; Father - Jehoram; Approximate - 841 BC; Contributions - Struggled to continue the dynasty of David; Criticisms - The same as his father with immoral practices both in his reign and personal; Emulated the kings of Israel and Ahab.

7. *Athaliah (Woman)*. Reign - 6 years; Father - Ahab; Approximate - 842 BC; Contributions - First and only woman in monarchy; Criticisms - Fanatical devotion to Baal; Temple artifacts used for the Temple of Baal; Massacred all royal prophets to the throne.

8. *Joash*. Reign - 40 years; Father - Ahaziah; Approximate - 835 BC; Contributions - Good character and devout spirit; Repaired a neglected temple; Revived half-shekel tax of Moses; Criticisms - Permitted idols to be set-up in Jerusalem.

9. *Amaziah*. Reign 29 years; Father - Joash; Approximate - 795 BC; Contributions - Victory in war with Edom which opened up access to Elath; Criticisms - Lost an unwanted war with Israel; Worshipped Edomite Gods; First to hire mercenaries in army.

10. *Ussiah*. Reign - 52 years; Father - Amaziah; Approximate 767 BC; Contributions - Reorganized government; Brought prosperity with long range commerce and economic policies; Established Elath as foreign port of commerce; Dug many water wells for wine dressers; Welcomed instruction by prophet Zechariah; Recaptured many original cities of David; Criticisms - Assumed priestly functions; Was smitten with leprosy by God.

11. *Jotham*. Reign - 18 years; Father - Uzziah; Approximate - 740 BC; Contributions - Promoted same policies of his father; Promoted religious interest among the people; Ruled in the fear of God; Welcomed the ministry of Isaiah, Hosea and Micah.

12. *Ahaz*. Reign - 19 years; Father - Jotham; Approximate 732 BC; Contributions - Pacified Assyria yielding short-term peace; Criticisms - Erected idols to Baal worship; Conformed to heathen practices; Defied Isaiah's advice.

13. *Hezekiah*. Reign - 29 years; Father - Ahaz; Approximate - 716 BC; Contributions - most significant religious era in the Kingdom of Judah's history; Restored worship according to Mosaic Law; Renewed covenant of Jews with God; Temple reopened as place of worship; Invited all Jews to worship in Jerusalem during passover; Destroyed bronze serpent of Moses since it became an object of worship; Developed extensive defense program; Constructed fresh water tunnel for city of Jerusalem; Defeated Assyria through divine intervention.

14. *Manasseh*. Reign 55 years; Father - Hezekiah; Approximate - 687 BC; Contributions - Largest reign in Davidic line; Criticisms - Plunged nation into gross idolatry; Worship of stars and planets instituted; Sacrificed children to Moloch Deity; Formalized divination, occultism and astrology; Arranged for Isaiah's martyrdom; Ark removed from sanctuary; Sacred books were systematically destroyed.

15. *Amon*. Reign - 2 years; Father - Manasseh; Approximate - 641 BC; Criticisms - Followed idolatrous practices of father; Did not learn from sinful practices of father; Opposed the prophet Zephaniah; Assassinated by his servants.

16. *Josiah*. Reign - 2 years; Father - Amon; Approximate - 637 BC; Contributions - Provided pious political leadership; Led a religious reformation; Reinstated Passover observance; Abolished child sacrifices; Removed priests from government positions; Restored temple in Jerusalem; Supported principle - ignorance of the law was no excuse for its transgression; Worked harmoniously with prophet Jeremiah; Absolute hatred for idolatry; Found original books of Moses in cornerstone of the temple; Criticisms - Interfered in the Egyptian - Assyrian War.

17. *Jehoahaz*. Reign - 1/4 year; Father - Josiah; Approximate 606 BC; Contributions - Attempted to follow his father; Criticisms - Permitted the re-introduction of idolatry; Practiced evil; Oppressor of those who practiced the law.



18. *Jehoiakim*. Reign - 11 years; Father - Josiah; Approximate 606 BC; Criticisms - Precipitated Babylonian aggression; Was subservient to Egypt; Widespread practice of idolatry; Executed prophet Uriah for predicting the destruction of the temple; Poor attitude toward God's prophets; Unable to stop first Babylonian invasion; Burned Jeremiah's scroll.

19. *Jehoiacin*. Reign - 1/4 year; Father - Jehoiakim; Approximate - 598 BC; Criticism; surrendered to Babylonian invasions; Babylonians stripped temple, took treasures and exiled palace officials to Babylon including Ezekial; Could not stop massive exilement to Babylon; Kept on throne by Nebuchadnezzar.

20. *Zedekiah*. Reign - 11 years; Father - Josiah; Approximate - 597 BC; Criticisms - Placed on throne by Nebuchadnezzar; Reigned while Jehoiacin in exile; Deceitful and inept king; Promised to release Hebrew slaves, but later refused; Mistreated and later imprisoned Jeremiah; Refusal to listen to Jeremiah brought about destruction of temple and Jerusalem in 586 BC; His eyes were plucked out and exiled in Babylon.

### C. THE KINGS OF ISRAEL

1. *Jeroboam*. Reign - 22 years; Father - Nebat; Approximate - 931 BC; Contributions - Rebelled over unpaid forced labor; Criticisms - Revolted against Solomon's building projects; Formed plots and conspiracies against Solomon; Spokesperson for succession of ten tribes; Involved in the worship of Baal; Set-up Bethel and Dan as worship places in place of Jerusalem; Enrolled into priesthood other than Levites; Set up two golden calves as Baal worship.

2. *Nadab*. Reign - 2 years; Father - Jeroboam; Approximate - 909 BC; Criticisms - Followed criminal and dangerous policies of father; Set up model for succession of kings to follow; Led an army to lay siege to a frontier town; Was killed by an internal conspiracy.

3. *Baasha*. Reign - 24 years; Father - Ahijah; Approximate - 909 BC; Contributions - Established to second dynasty; Criticisms - Murdered King Nadab and his relatives thus exterminating the dynasty of Jerobaum; Practice idolatry; Perpetuated long war with King Asa of Judah; Persisted hostility toward the Kingdom of Judah.

4. *Elah*. Reign - 2 years; Father - Baasha; Approximate - 886 BC; Criticisms - A debaucher from continual drinking.

5. *Zimri*. Reign - 7 days; Military commander; Approximate - 885 BC; Criticisms - Murdered King Elah after intoxicating him. Ended Baasha dynasty; Committed suicide.

6. *Omri*. Reign - 12 years; Military Commander; Approximate - 881 BC; Contributions - Established third dynasty; Cooperated and collaborated with King Asa of Judah; Conducted successful campaigns against Moabites; Criticisms - Fostered marriage of his son to daughter of Sidonia which opened the door to Baal worship; Replaced Sinaitic covenant religion with gross idolatry of Canaanites; Perpetuated calf-worship of Jerobaum.

7. *Ahab*. Reign - 21 years; Father - Omri; Approximate - 874 BC; Contributions - Promoted commercial growth; Developed and held alliances against enemies; Arranged marriage in royal family with Kingdom of Judah; Joint maritime trade venture with Judah. Criticisms - Influenced enormously by his fanatical pagan queen, Jezebel to Baal worship; Considered Baal as God's peer; Introduced human sacrifices; Persecuted for the acquisition of land; Practiced tyranny; Had intense clashes with Elijah; Massacred God's prophets at Jezebel's orders.

8. *Ahaziah*. Reign - 1 year; Father - Ahab; Approximate - 853 BC; Criticisms - Continued evil practices of father; Unable to stop huge tribute of 100,000 lambs to Moabites; Continued Baal worship of his parents.

9. *Jehoram*. Reign - 11 years; Father - Ahab; Approximate - 852 BC; Contributions - Put away Baal worship and images from Elisha's rebuke; Criticisms - Did not trust the God of Moses; Avenged by Jehu for killing the prophets with his death.

10. *Jehu*. Reign - 28 years; Father - Jehashaphat; Approximate - 841 BC; Contributions - Founded the fourth dynasty; Anointed King by Elisha; Executed death judgment of Jezebel; Removed obelisk of Baal in Samaria; Removed worshipping of Baal and its adherents from Israel.

11. *Jehoahaz*. Reign - 16 years; Father - Jehu; Approximate - 814 BC; Contributions - Continued favorable policies of his father; Acknowledged and worshipped Jehovah God; Criticisms - Patronized the fertility cults for political reasons.

12. *Jehoash*. Reign - 16 years; Father - Jehoahaz; Approximate - 798 BC; Contributions; Devoted to Jehovah God; Held Elisha in high honor; Kept the Assyrians at bay; Criticisms - Allowed worship of golden calves.

13. *Jerobaum*. Reign - 40 years; Father - Jehoash; Approximate - 782 BC; Contributions - Regained lost territories; Criticisms - Conflicted with prophet Amos over the spiritual and moral decay of the people; Amos predicted end of dynasty.

14. *Zechariah*. Reign - 1/2 year; Father - Jeroboam; Approximate - 753 BC; Criticisms - Continued father's poor policies; Assassinated by Shallum's son; Last of the Jehu dynasty.

15. *Shallum*. Reign 1 month; Father - unknown; Approximate - 752 BC; Criticisms - Assassinated Zechariah for the throne; Accelerated downhill degradation of Israeli society.

16. *Menahem*. Reign - 10 years; Father - Gadi; Approximate - 752 BC; Criticisms - Assassinated Shallum; Failed to see the awakening expansionist policies of Assyria; Practiced evil from a religious perspective.

17. *Pekahiah*. Reign - 2 years; Father - Menahem; Approximate - 742 BC; Criticisms - Reigned with immense political instability; Continued father's pro-Assyrian policies; Clinged to the perversions of Jerobaum.

18. *Pekah*. Reign - 20 years; Father - Remaliah; Approximate - 751 BC; Contributions - Resisted tribute to Assyrians; Criticisms - Murdered Pekahiah for the throne; Allied with the Philistinean state; Attacked Judah and annexed cities; Defeated by the Assyrians.

19. *Hoshea*. Reign - 9 years; Father - Elah; Approximate - 731 BC; Criticisms - Assassinated Pekah; Puppet and pro-Assyrian conspirator; Paid heavy tributes to Assyria; He was defeated by Assyrians and marked the end of the Northern Kingdom of Israel (721 BC); Ten tribes of Israel assimilated by Assyria.

#### TEMPLES AND SACRED ENCLOSURES

“Let them make me a sanctuary; that I may dwell among them.” Exodus 25:8

There is, perhaps, no buildings of the ancient world, nor in the modern world which excites so much attention as the temples and their claim of God's dwelling within them. Many of these sacred structures are mentioned in the Bible both literal and symbolic. Many of these structures that exists outside the Bible have emulated or copied, if not in total, at least in part those described in the scriptures. For our purposes here, several enclosures will be described to show how they preserved the values, the meaning and the continuity movement of the Biblical Civilization. Several reasons can be cited for building these enclosures.

1. *Symbolic acknowledgment of God*. The concept of the temples was a monumental recognition of the adoration and worship of God as a people. It was the human response for their desire to have God's presence among the people in spite of God's spiritual and invisible nature. A glance at the structure would be a reminder that God's presence was there.

2. *Communicating and fellowshiping with God*. The temple opened up the possibility for communicating and fellowshiping with God by the “righteous ones”. Answers and solutions to problems and dilemmas were brought before God for help. The high priest in the tabernacle used the Urim and the Thummin to get God's answers.

3. *Temple Sacrifices.* There were two basic motives for offering sacrifices in sacred enclosures. First, they were gift offerings. This was an important gesture of appreciation to God for life, food, health and peace. Second, there were gestures to atone or cover sins, faults and mistakes. God would accept the sacrifice as their repentance for transgressing his laws.

4. *Temples separated religious from the secular.* The word sanctuary means a separately identified area to protect the values and internal special activities from being mixed with the external worldly and the secular. The mixture of the spiritual with the secular has and continues to be a rejection phenomena of the scriptures. Places become holy or sacred when people are convinced that God's presence is there in some form or another.

5. *Temples are central enclosures for a priestly class.* They are the base of operations for priestly activities. The entire priestly profession centers on temples or sacred enclosures as their official office for transacting their tasks between a deity and humans. In some cases priest and/or their associates live in or near by the temples.

6. *Temples continue the movement of the Biblical Civilization.* What better way could the Jews and others be reminded of their role and responsibility in the movement of the Biblical Civilization toward a global realization. The sacred enclosures help preserve godly values and expectations for the future life.

Biblical temples and enclosures have existed for over 3000 years, some simple and not easily seen to those complicated, but beautifully elevated on the top of Mount Moriah, easily seen by every one in the region. It's no wonder there are so many scriptural expressions recorded about the special constructions of these enclosures. In some cases there are references to the perfectly chiseled stones and unsurpassed fabrication. It seems succeeding religious edifices including churches and synagogues have been attempts to emulate the original temples in Jerusalem. Mount Moriah has been the legendary claim of the scene of Melchizedek's sacrifice and of Abraham's offering of Isaac. The continuity of events on this site over the great number of years confirms it's providential symbolism. The temples in Jerusalem became the religious centers of the Jews in Israel as well as the Jews scattered throughout the world. The location of the Jerusalem temples is definitely known even though there is some dispute within a radius of 100 meters. No tangible vestiges of any of the Jerusalem temples have survived except as 150 meter stretches of a massive lime-stone blocks from the outer retaining wall of Herod's rebuilt temple. This area is known today as the Western Wall or the Wailing Wall.

A temple is made sacred by the presence of a deity or some holy symbol. The temples of Jerusalem were considered dwelling places of God. Churches are not regarded as temples as they do not have a section claimed for the dwelling of the divinity. However, altars are maintained in many churches for sacrifices for the atonement of sins. These are not animal sacrifices as practiced in Judaism. Although, the altars were symbols that God was present in some way. Comments will now be made of the following sacred enclosures: 1) The Hebrew Tabernacle; 2) Solomon's Temple; 3) Zerubbabel's Temple; 4) Ezekeial's Temple; 5) Synagogues; 6) Churches; and 7) The Spiritual Temple.

1. *The Hebrew Tabernacle.* The Hebrew Tabernacle was a portable temple built by the Hebrews as they journeyed in the great exodus from Egypt to the promised land. It was a large tent with a surrounding curtain (150 feet by 75 feet) that could be assembled and disassemble for portability and travel. It was set up at Sinai at an approximate date of 1220 BC. This was the first step of God's habitation to the Jews as a people and a nation. The design layout of the tabernacle consisted of a most holy compartment, a holy compartment and a surrounding court which was fenced in by a linen curtain seven and one half feet high. See Figure 7.17. In the court stood an altar used for the sacrifices of animals and a laver for the washing of those in the tabernacle. There was only one entrance or gate. This was at the east side of the linen curtain that surrounded the sacred enclosure. In the most holy, there was only one piece of furniture - the Ark. This was overlain within and without gold upon which were two cherubs of gold. Within the Ark there were three items - two tablets of the law, Aaron's rod that budded and a golden bowl of manna. Most important was the supernatural light that appeared between the cherubim. This light represents the divine presence of God in the most holy. In the next compartment, called the holy, were three items of furniture, the golden candlestick, an incense altar and a table of shew bread. The entire tabernacle was placed in the center of the Israel camp thus defining in meaning three conditions. The camp represents the unbelieving world of mankind. The court represents justified beliefs. The tabernacle represents consecrated beliefs which is typified by the priesthood.

A detailed study of the tabernacle is beyond the scope of this book. The tabernacle is highly symbolic. Suffice it to say, Moses was instructed to construct the tabernacle under God's supervision to convey the message that there was a lively sense of His presence with them as they journeyed toward the promised land. This early and first temple design has been emulated and perpetuated by subsequent sacred enclosures in both Jewish and non-Jewish religious

movements. A comparison of these design layouts are shown in Figure 7.20. There are variations in these design layouts, but all had the three fundamental compartments: court, holy and most holy.

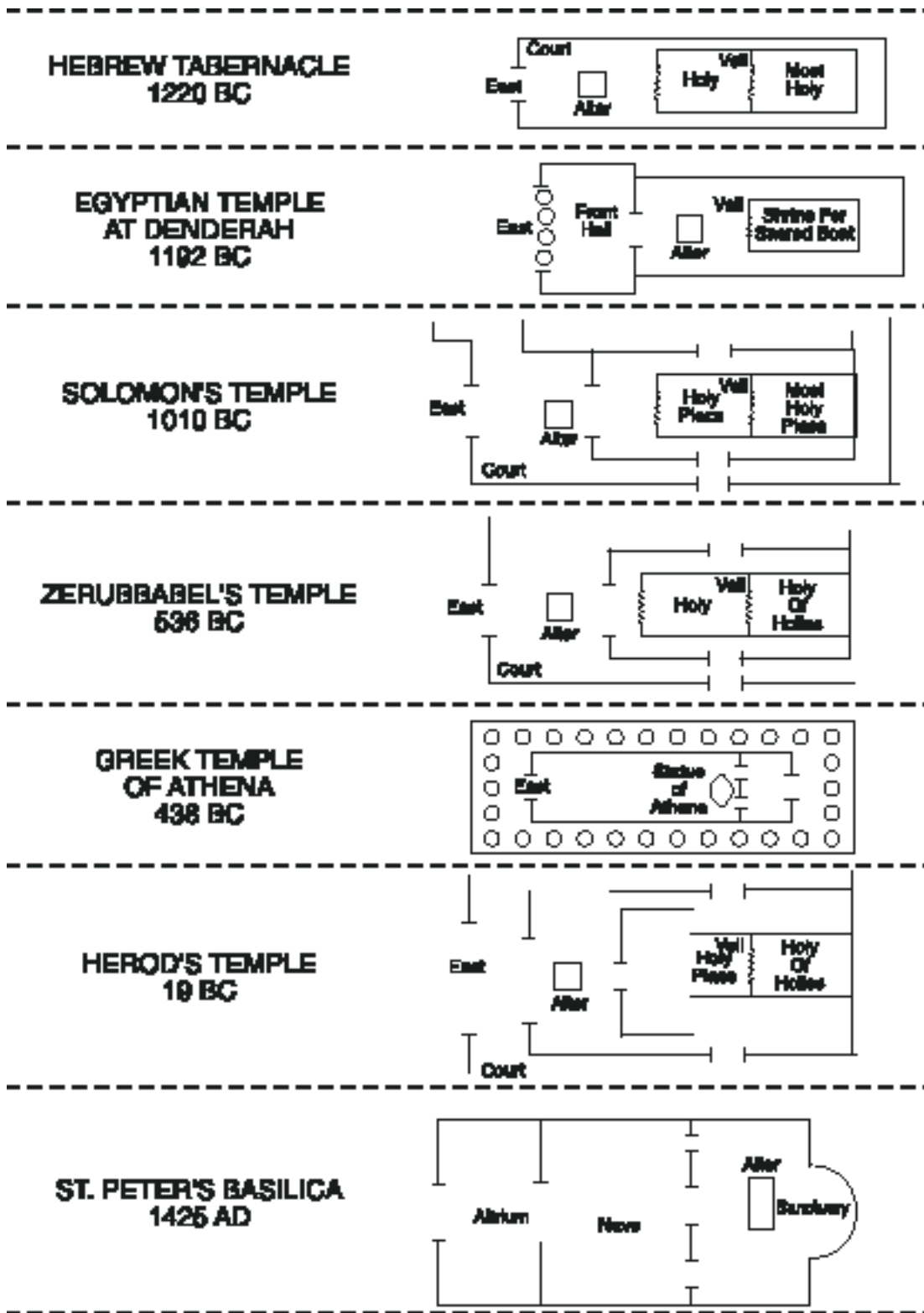


Figure 7.20 Comparative Design Layouts of Temples

(Partial layouts only; full courts omitted)

2. *Solomon's Temple.* It was David who wanted to build the first stationary sacred enclosure unto God. He had brought the Ark of the Covenant to Jerusalem, developed an elaborate organization of priests, levites, singers and musicians. He accumulated an enormous amount of money, materials and resources for it's constructional. He amassed through donations, contributions and his personal fortune a total of 10,000 talents of gold, 1,000,000 pieces of silver, 108,000 brass coins which at current values would be estimated at 35 billion dollars. Jewels used in the temple would be estimated at an equivalent value. The vessels of silver are estimated at 2.5 billion and vessels of gold at 2.7 billion. Vestments, silk, trumpets and other temple instruments are estimated at 4 million dollars. This makes the grand total estimate to construct Solomon's temple between 70-75 billion dollars. David brought the site on Mount Moriah for 600 shekels of gold. The site was chosen by God with a fire sign fallen from heaven to ignite David's burnt offering. (I Chronicles 21:26) However, there was an ironic twist. God instructed Nathan, the prophet against having David build the temple. Solomon was appointed to build it since he was a more peaceful king over David's violent and warlike manner. Solomon commenced the project in his fourth year of reign in 967 BC. It took seven years to build the temple, 967-960 BC. The project involved 30,000 conscripted Israeli's, 70,000 indentured alien residents in the land and over 80,000 hired cutters. The layout of the temple followed the general plan of the layout of the ancient tabernacle. The furnishings in the open courtyard included the great altar for burnt offerings, the laver made of cast copper and a variety of smaller furnishings such as flesh hooks, snuffers, shovels and tongs. Inside the sanctuary were the seven lamp Menorah, the golden table with twelve loaves of shew bread and a portable incense altar which could be carried with staves. Fresh bread was brought in every Sabbath and the old loaves were eaten by the priests. In the most holy was the Ark of the Covenant which housed the sacred tablets of the law, Aaron's rod and manna samples. On the ark were two cherubims facing each other. Solomon dedicated the temple during the Feast of the Tabernacles. This feast commemorated the Exodus experience when the Israeli's lived in tent-like structures called booths. This was to remember the 40 years of nomadic wanderings in the desert.

The furnishings and construction of Solomon's temple over the years was pilfered, changed and replaced from time to time. Shishak raided the temple during Rehoboam's reign (I Kings 14:25) Queen Atheliah introduced Baal worship in the temple (II Kings 11:17-18). King Ahaz remodeled the interior and changed the altar to be patterned after the one in Damascus (II Kings 16:10-18). Hezekiah removed the brazen serpent of Moses (II Kings 18:4).

Manasseh introduced Assyrian pagan innovations which was later abolished by Josiah (Jeremiah 7:30), Solomon's Temple was completely destroyed by Nebucadnezzar's General Nebuzaradan in 586 BC.

3. *Zerubbabel's Temple: The Second Sanctuary.* "And they build and furnished it according to the commandment of the God of Israel and of Cyrus, Darius and Artaxerxes, King of Persia." (Ezra 6:14-15) In 536 BC, Cyrus the Persian issued a decree in which exiled Jews would be allowed to return to their homeland. He also decreed, they could rebuild the temple. Over 5,400 valuable artifacts were arranged for their return that were taken from Solomon's temple. This second temple was built by Zerubbabel, Governor of Judea in 516 BC. This constitutes 70 years of Jewish captivity in Babylon since the destruction of the first temple. The rebuilding project was instigated and pressured by the prophets Haggai and Zechariah.

The new second temple was crudely and cheaply constructed compared to the first. It had no significant furnishings such as the ark which was either destroyed in 587 BC during Nebucadnezzar's invasions or hidden to prevent it from being stolen. The Holy of Holies was empty with the hope that God would reveal the hidden ark or would still be there without the ark. In the Holy, there was one lampstand, a golden altar and other vessels. To make matters worse, Antiochus Epiphanes, a Seleucid King in 169 BC made a viscous attempt to hellenize the Jews. His attempt even included desecrating the Holy of Holies with the Greek statue of Zeus. Later Zerubbabel's temple was plundered, defiled and leveled by the Roman Generals Pompeii in 63 BC and Crassus in 54 BC.

A new phase of Zerubbabel's second temple occurred when Herod replaced the inadequate and shabby like structure in 19 BC. The enlargement and beauty of Herod's replacement surpassed that of Zerubbabel's work. The layout of Herod's replacement followed Zerubbabel's layout which approximated Solomon's temple. The sanctuary itself took eight years to build. It may have taken as much as 46 years to build the complete enlargement since it was in a continual state of development. In some temple areas, Herod doubled the size of the original Solomon design. Since there is no archaeological support as to the location of the original Holy of Holies, the traditional theory supported by William Albright, specified that the rock under the Dome of the Rock is the location of the Holy of Holies. In recent years, Professor Kaufman of Hebrew University, in the *Biblical Archaeological Review*, March/April 1983, Pg. 42, presents evidence and measurements that the Holy of Holies is 100 meters north of this location which is now identified as the Cupala of the Tablets.



The Jews themselves, never regarded Herod's Temple as the Third Temple. They saw his work as a rebuilt Zerubbabel's Temple. The reason was their hatred and distrust of Herod. They wanted to prevent the honor and distinction of his name identified with the Third Temple. Herod's modified Zerubbabel Temple was destroyed by burning in 70 AD by the Roman armies of General Titus and his legions. Any sacred treasure found was carried off to Rome. This destruction brought to an end the symbol of Jerusalem as the religious capitol of the world for the Jews for almost two millennia. In spite of its destruction in 70 AD, Judaism survived, but lost the movement of carrying the Biblical Civilization to the world. Here is where the Christian movement started.

4. *Ezekial's Temple: The Third Sanctuary.* "In a vision of God, he brought me into the land of Israel and set me on a very high mountain to see a city-like structure to the south." (Ezekial 40:20) The Third Temple has not been built. It is often referred to as the ideal temple. It was seen by the priest-prophet Ezekial in a vision while exiled at the river bank of Chebar in Babylon in 573 BC. It was to be a temple of the future. The vision given to Ezekial conveyed the message that God lives again in the midst of his people. Some scholars have interpreted the vision as instructions and specifications for the rebuilding of the second temple. Other scholars give it a futuristic application. Still others regard it only as an idealized model. The incredible details and the regal decorations and elaborate construction parallels and in some areas surpasses Solomon's temple. Some feel it could never be erected in Jerusalem. According to the vision, the land once promised to Israel's fathers would again be the inheritance of their descendants. The temple has elaborate gateways from the outer wall to the inner courts. These are described in specific detail. The temple itself is divided into three compartments from east to west - the court, the holy and the most holy. Interior walls are paneled with wood. On the wood itself, are carvings of cherubim, each with a human and lion face. Palm trees adorn the walls. The only furniture mentioned in the vision is a table located just outside the inner room. This might correspond to the table for the shewbread.

A unique feature of Ezekial's temple is the stream of water flowing from beneath the temple threshold eastward and southward of the altar. As the water flowed down to the Dead Sea, it starts as a trickle and then becomes a torrent of water which healed the Dead Sea where enormous fish came to life. Scholars see this symbolism as a future picture of the third temple operating to give truth and life to remove a "dead world" in order for people to live. This is a picture of the Biblical Civilization for a global application.

Undoubtedly, the major significance of Ezekial's temple vision is its prophetic assurance that despite their exilement in Babylon and the destruction of the temple in Jerusalem, God would return the Jews someday to Jerusalem. Some Bible scholars regard the vision strictly symbolic. This is suggested with the expression "the temple would be on a very high mountain". Mount Moriah and Mount Zion are hardly very high mountains. These same scholars also point out that the complexity of the temple is two challenging for ordinary human builders. God Himself would have to build such a magnificent structure.

When the temples were gone, the Jews tenaciously held in their memories and hopes of a rebuilding. Even as exiles, they would erect no temple because they believed that although God was everywhere, only Jerusalem was right and symbolic enough for this construction. The synagogue was developed as a temporary house until the ultimate temple is built in Jerusalem. As to the exact location, a small number of Jews believe God will choose a place to put his name and make his habitation there. (Deuteronomy 12:5) Paul Lee Tan in his book on Signs of the Times in the section on temples identifies several signs presently known that a new temple is being considered as a viable project for construction in Jerusalem. Here are his signs:

- a. New York Times carries full page ads soliciting funds for the rebuilding of Solomon's Temple in Jerusalem.
- b. Hebrew University in Jerusalem offering courses on the preparations of sacrifices.
- c. High quality stone is being shipped from Bedford, Indiana, pre-cut to specifications to Israel.
- d. Cornerstones for the third temple and two freestanding pillars for the new temple have already been cast in bronze.
- e. Training school for priests has been set up for young men from the tribe of Levi.
- f. Furnishings, vessels, and other temple artifacts are being collected for use in the temple.

#### THE SYNAGOGUE - THE GATHERING PLACE

This gathering place or assembly of learned men came into being during the Babylonian exile of the Jews under Nebuchadnezzar. Since the Jews in exile had not sanctuary, nor altar, nor facility, a place was needed to gather together on the Sabbath and feast days. It became the central place for a community of Jews of the dispersion. The synagogue was a physical structure that expressed the hope of Jews in captivity to return to Jerusalem. At first it was intended only for the exposition and teaching of the law. Later, prayers and preaching was added to its major

function, thereby becoming a place of worship. In heathen lands whenever there was a certain number of Jews, a synagogue was built to pull them in as a community. Almost every town or village had one or more synagogues. Sabbath services held in the synagogues were comparatively simple, consisting largely of reading scriptures, prayer was given and some kind of expository address in the form of religious instruction. Synagogues are of great importance since they are the characteristic institutions that emerged in the later stages of the Judaic movement. There was little or no religious symbols or artifacts in the synagogue since the devout Jews adhered to the religion of their fathers and never again relapsed into idolatry.

The size of a synagogue varied with the population of the Jewish community. It was constructed in such a way that worshippers, as they entered and prayed looked toward the front. The internal arrangement is an obvious analogy to the type of the tabernacle. At the upper end stood a chest, a type of the ark, which contained the book of the law. It gave to the front end the name and character of a sanctuary. This was the place of honor. In front of the chest was an eight-branched lamp, lighted only on the great festivals. One lamp was burned perpetually in commemoration of the successful and miraculous Maccahean revolt against Antiochus Epihanes. In the middle of the building stood a pulpit in which the law was read and the preacher would teach. The congregation is divided with men on one side, women of the other. In modern synagogues, women are in balconies or side galleries. A rabbi and a college of elders were the officers of the synagogue. The laws of Moses were read consecutively from the Torah or the first five books of the Old Testament, once every three years.

## THE CHURCH BUILDING

One can trace the historic worship of God through successive steps in the erection of the early altars, the portable tabernacle, the Jerusalem temples and the widely scattered synagogues. The church building was another stage in the development. The derivation of the word church is from the Greek "Ecclesia" which originally meant an assembly "called out" or a congregation of Christian people. In the book of Acts the ecclesia has come to be the regular designation for the society of Christian believers. It was used in two distinct senses - a local sense of a group of Christians in a specific community and in a wider sense to denote the sum total of all existing local churches. Since the early Christians believers mostly came from a religious life in Israel and the synagogues, the synagogue concept of a meeting place was utilized with the early church. The church building emerged as a meeting place for converted Jews who became Christian believers. The early Christian building was a transformed synagogue. It was simple,

without relics, artifacts or religious symbols. It had a podium for letters to read, the Torah to study and chairs for the congregation to assemble and worship as a group. As Christian churches underwent phenomenal growth, the early meeting places were replaced with larger buildings. In later stages, religious symbols were brought in to affix an affiliation or a local identity. It was during the period of the converted Constantine the Great when the Roman empire merged with the Christian Church that church buildings were amended to include relics, artifacts, statues, banners and even remains or mementos of early Christian heroes or famous martyrs. As time went on, the church concept shifted from an assembly of people to a physical structure or building. Hence, today's reference to a church means a building site in a specific location. The early transformed synagogue concept with a podium and altar is still retained, but added to it are the relics, statues, stained glass, choir benches, crosses with a Jesus figurine, candles and organs. Modern churches are often constructed in the shape of a cross.

#### SPIRITUAL TEMPLE - NEW TESTAMENT

“Know ye not that ye are the temple of God and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?” I Corinthians 3:16

The previously described temples were literal and physical. They represented stages in the development of the worship of God and the facility which housed this worship. However, the highest stage of development in this movement of sacred enclosures is the spiritual temple, described by the Apostles Peter and Paul. Note in each of the early enclosures, God's presence or his spirit resided in the most holy in some way. With the demise of Herod's temple in 70 AD, a serious question has been raised. Has God removed his presence completely from humankind? Has God abandoned the plan for a sacred enclosure on earth? The answer is no! A new process has been introduced in which God's presence will reside within the hearts of those who want to do his will. This residence is through the indwelling of the Holy Spirit rather than a physical enclosure. (Ephesian 1:13, 2:20-22) The Apostles Peter and Paul describe this concept as “living stones” being built up into a spiritual house to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. This is a new concept for Judaism as they continued to offer up sacrifices until the physical temple was destroyed in 70 AD. It's noteworthy that since 70 AD to the present time, the offering of animal, vegetable or fruit sacrifices has ceased for the Jews. This in itself is powerful evidence that God was making an adjustment on how the Biblical Civilization was to move forward to becoming a global civilization. It is evidence the Biblical Civilization with it's adjustments would now be channeled through Christianity.

The literal physical temples frequently suffered defilement and pollution. It was for this reason there was God's disapproval and His abandonment. This danger confronts everyone who has the indwelling of God's spirit in their heart. They too can become defiled and polluted. This is why the Apostle Paul speaks of "the temple of God is holy, which temple you are". (I Corinthians 3:16-17) God will make certain that His spiritual temple will always be holy by excluding would-be defilers and only allowing those maintaining righteousness to be part of their lifestyle. For those who succeed, God would in future days collect all those individuals and give them a permanent place in a spiritual structure in the new Jerusalem which descends out of heaven from God. (Revelations 3:12) Since the New Jerusalem itself is a temple, those in it will be part of the plans and processes for implementing the Biblical Civilization globally. Meanwhile, the Christian sees the tabernacle set up by Moses as a symbol of those who want to be a part of the spiritual temple. See Figure 7.17. But to be part of God's spiritual temple, one must be invited by God. After all, the impulse to pursue God originates with God. One pursues God because and only because God has first put an urge within the individual to pursue. Before a person can seek God, God must first seek the person. The Hebrew Mosaic Tabernacle has not been symbolically dismantled. This symbolic tabernacle defines the way to God. It is really a thoroughfare, a passage like door between two worlds; God's world and the human world. It takes five steps in a certain order to move through this passageway to God. See Figure 7.17.

There are certain features of the journey for those who want to travel from the camp, through the gate, sacrifice on the altar, wash in the laver, pass through the first veil, then through the second veil and arrive in the presence of God. There are features to this journey toward God that are formal and definitive.

1. To reach God one must take all five steps. No steps can be skipped. The sequence is unchangeable. The steps increase in difficulty and challenge. See Figure 7.17.
2. Signs or indicators are measures of one's progression in the journey. The signs are not conclusive, but evaluative. Establish where the positions are in the journey.
3. Steps are milestones of progress upward, that is, from the physical, earthly to the spiritual, heavenly. Perseverance and patience required as falling back to a previous step is possible.
4. Greatest danger in the journey is settling on a step and going no further. Christendom has settled at Step 2-Redemption of Jesus. Few thirst after God in the Holy of Holies.

5. Most difficult step is Step 4-Sanctification. Acquiring a new nature while in the old is severe, painful and discouraging.
6. Others found in the journey are more than journey companions. They are other spiritual creatures to be known throughout ages of eternity.

#### WARFARE'S IMPACT ON CIVILIZATION

“From whence come wars and fightings among you? Come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members?” James 4:1

Conquering armies reverberate throughout human history. Several reasons comprise the motivation to invade a neighboring country. See Figure 7.21.



**Figure 7.21 Basic Reasons for the Conduct of War**

For one, lack of critical resources such as water, food and land. This meant the invader’s resources were unable to sustain it’s constituent citizenry. Invading another country and stealing these resources while inflicting violence and even death provided a way for the invader’s survival especially with an expanding population growth. Land expansion and border disputes reflected the need for access routes to other resources as well as room for the growing population. In early times when farming began, farmers became a natural object of attack from the hunter and herder tribes. Because farmers were scattered, they feared being destroyed one at a time. In a national strategy, they collected together which increased the chances of defeating the invading hunter and herder attacks. Grouping together was the move toward villages and eventually the city. The appearance of the city marked the true beginnings of civilization as we define it today.

Another reason for war and invasion was to acquire a labor market. Most empires were growing and expanding, the need for construction and building skills for projects was critical. Obviously, forced labor or slavery in huge proportions was extracted from a defeated country. All the empires including Israel practiced slavery and/or forced labor. Unpaid forced labor was practiced by Solomon. It was a criticism of his administration. Indeed it was a strong reason for the division of the kingdom. Yet it was the method he used to construct enormous projects such as the temple.

For still another reason, was the rise of ambitious leaders. These leaders had an insatiable desire to usurp a supremacy over an inferior country. Many expanding empires can be seen as the outreach of one or more of its ambitious leaders, usually military, sometimes political or both. These leaders want history to record their unusual role and unique contribution to civilizations. For the most part, they have accomplished their historic position. Often, however, it's been with negative and diminishing contributions.

Still another reason for invasion and warfare has been religious. An invading country wishes to impose its religious ideologies and practices upon a conquering nation. Here, the religious cleric persuade ambitious leaders that their God wants all people to be unified in their religious commitments. One can see the ambitions of the religious clerics are as intense and aggressive as their ambitious king. The partnership serves each party equally well. This can be easily seen with the kings of Judah and Israel. The ambitious clerics promised the kings their support over the people of the king would in turn give his support over the needed resources. Israel's theocracy was unique since it was ruled by law rather than a ruler. This aggravated the rulers since they wanted to do what is right in their own eyes and not be constrained by constitutional law.

Finally, one can see women as a motivation for an invading empire. Women, historically, have been a form of slavery for a variety of purposes - domesticity, childbearing, sealing alliances between countries and frequently, as vehicles for gratifying the wanton desires of males. The kings of history were seldom satisfied with one woman. In many cases, sizable harems developed as in the life of Solomon. In recent years, the status of women in society has changed immensely in certain countries even to roles of leadership over men. More will be said about the role of women in the fourth stage of the Biblical Civilization.

War has had a transforming effect on the ancient concept of city civilizations. As a conquering city over other cities, groups of cities emerged giving rise to a central unifying city which later was defined as a nation. It was

Nimrod, the first king, who instituted imperialism. He was the sixth son of Cush, a Hamite who proceeded to invade and capture eight independent cities to form the first kingdom or empire. The cities were: Nineveh, Calah, Resen, Rehoboth, Babel, Enech, Accad and Calmel. Later, Ninevah became the capitol of Assyria and Babel the capitol of Babylon. Nimrod was not only a hunter of animals, but also of men. He set the “roots” for the development of later empires and civilizations.

War has integrated many nations into vast universal states dominated by a ruler or an invading country. As the national polity increased with conquered countries, resources increased which in turn increased the power over individuals. This in turn decreased the freedom enjoyed by individuals. The conquerors plundered the vanquished civilizations and instituted new ones in their place. The rapid demise or rise on any civilization, in many instances was due to the crisis sparked by an invading country. This phenomena of a crisis bringing a civilization to an end and giving birth to a new civilization appears to be a common mechanism throughout human history. The crisis can also be sparked by a major catastrophe such as the fall of governments from the uprising of desperate people, an environmental disaster such as earthquakes or hurricanes or simply the change of governments from a democratic process of voting in a new and radical leader. When an invading country succeeds in their military campaigns, the subdued nation was absorbed into the empire. This meant cultural traits and values were spread into the absorbed nation. When a second or third invading empire seized the same conquered nation, other cultural traits were spread and freely interchanged. The colonists took from the Indians tobacco and the Indians took from the Colonists the use of horses. The Hebrews took from the Egyptians garlic, spices, boat technology and a camel transport system. They in turn gave the Egyptians the value of family, the concept of law, the practice of morality and the concept of an invisible one God.

The fall, absorption and rise of civilizations gives the civilizing process a dynamic character. The fall of one overlaps with the rise of another. The conquering empires fostered this type of dynamic interchange. While warfare has been the means of transforming individual cultures to a more regional and global culture, it has also been an obstacle to the improvement and growth of an outstanding individual civilization. Thus, as invader number one sets up a new highly desirable culture, invader number two changes it. Invader number three imposes it's changes forcing a mixture of cultural elements deviant from an original highly desirable one. Thus, over the centuries, several conquering empires could lead existing civilizations to a downhill cultural decline.



## CONQUERING EMPIRES IMPACT ON THE JUDAIC CIVILIZATION

“The nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad.” Jeremiah 51:7

The predatory eyes of neighboring conquerors saw Israel at the western end of the Fertile Crescent militarily and economically positioned for trade and interchange among the north, south, east and west routes. It was a junction where caravans converged. Control of this junction would control trade and communication interchange. It would reap great commercial gain. Israel fell victim to many successive and expanding predatory empires. With this victimization, Israel lost the opportunity to become politically and economically the global civilization it was intended to be. In this section, six empires and their cultural effects they had on Israel and Israel on the empires will now be briefly described.

1. *Assyria - An empire build on stealing and looting conquered people.* The Assyrian development of mobile warfare was the chief effectiveness of empire expansion by seizing cities and terrorizing populations. The warfare mobility gave Assyria enormous land expansion. Horses, chariots and archers were matchless. They literally took control over the entire Fertile Crescent. Tiglath-pileser III, called Pal in the Bible was the dominant Semite leader which brought the entire Middle East under Assyrian control. See Figure 7.22.



**Figure 7.22 The Assyrian Empire at it's Height  
(Approximately 700 BC)**

The Assyrian reign from beginning to end was almost constant warfare. The conqueror must sustain their warfare to hold on to what they “stole”. Pal employed a well developed provincial administration which forced the transplantation of captured people to the homeland. The process served to make Assyria and its capitol more cosmopolitan. Inventions, customs, and the technology of one people was brought to the attention of others. The Assyrians developed a system of messengers traversing the empire. News, information and communications were interchanged like a network that might be compared to America’s early system of the Pony Express. A nationwide system of highways was the most modern. The uniqueness of the communications and highway system introduced the first postal system to the Assyrians.

Religiously, the Assyrians were idolaters. This practice was different from other idolatrous practices in that the king and not the high priest was supreme even in religious rituals. The national god was Assur. This god was a warrior-god armed with bow and arrows. This created an attitude with Assyrians to be ferocious in war along with cruelty and stern discipline during the peace. The Assyrians build their empire on the stealing and looting of conquered people. Assyrian takeover of Israel started gradually with demands of tribute money and food. Later, the tribute requirements were oppressive and overwhelming. The Assyrian invasion and conquest of the Northern Kingdom of Israel in 721 BC brought to an end the split kingdom of Israel and their dynasties. The ten tribes were assimilated into the Assyrian culture never to recover. Sargon II carried away 27,190 Jews into captivity with complete absorption into the Assyrian culture. In total, the Assyrian Sennacherib not only systematically destroyed the land, but in the time of King Hezekiah took into captivity over 200,000 captives.

The decline of Assyria was the failure to generate its own system of resource development. The empire obtained its main system of resources from booty, stealing and conquest. Add to this, the cruelties over the conquered people generated fierce foes intent to bring about an Assyrian downfall. The contributions the Assyrians made to civilization centered primarily in military science and provincial administration. They adopted the cultures of the people they conquered and disseminated them over the entire Fertile Crescent.

2. *Babylon - An empire built on pagan worship and astrology.* In ancient time, the histories of Babylon and Assyria were frequently merged. It was often difficult to separate them. The first city ever built was Nimrod. It provided the basis of both Assyria and Babylon. It was under Nebuchadnezzar that a new city of Babylon reached its highest growth and splendor. See Figure 7.23.



**Figure 7.23 The Babylonian Empire at it's Height  
(Approximately 600 BC)**

Babylon was referred to as “the praise of the whole earth”. It was also called the “beauty of Chaldee’s excellence, the golden city”. The city itself, had immense high double walls for unique protection. The famous hanging gardens of Babylon, one of the seven wonders of the ancient world was a great achievement in landscaping, water systems, terraces and roof gardens. Nebuchadnezzar was a daring and prudent monarch who extended his dominion further than any previous monarch. It was he that brought the Kingdom of Judah to an end and led the Jews in a state of captivity to Babylon. It was he that destroyed the temple in Jerusalem after four invasions. Even with the restoration of the temple in Jerusalem much later, Nebuchadnezzar created a two part Jewish culture and history - the Jews of Palestine and the Jews of the Diaspora. Here is a brief synopsis of each invasion:

*First invasion in 606 BC.* King Jehoiakim of Judah unable to stop invading Babylonians; Babylon demands and receives high tribute from Judah; Israel loses sovereignty; Jews who might format an uprising deported to Babylon; Daniel and 26,000 Jews exiled to Babylon; Jehoiakim kept on throne; 70 weeks of predicted captivity begins at this time; temple treasures taken.

*Second invasion in 598 BC.* King Jehoiakim rebelled over heavy tribute; King captured and exiled to Babylon; Jehoiakim’s son placed on the throne; Ezekial and 10,000 Jews deported to Babylon.

*Third invasion in 597 BC.* King of Judah continues to rebel over heavy tribute demanded by Babylonians. Jehoiakim exiled to Babylon; Zedekiah placed on throne; Chief of temple deported.

*Fourth invasion in 586 BC.* Babylon conquers Jerusalem completely; Walls removed and temple burned and destroyed; the remains of the temple treasure confiscated; vast majority of Jews deported to Babylon except poor, sick and crippled; David dynasty brought to an end; Zedekiah blinded; Gedaliah installed as governor of Judea; Kingdom of Judah destroyed.

Babylon had over 53 temples and 180 altars to the pagan deity Ishtar. Although Nebuchadnezzar had recognized Daniel's God as god of all gods, he remained an idolater. The Babylonians even compiled a list of God-names and ranked them in order of importance. Marduk was regarded as the chief god of Babylon by the First Century BC. Nebuchadnezzar set up an enormous image to display this deity. At the dedication of the colossal image, all were commanded to bow before it in worship. Refused to demonstrate this deity would result in death. Three of Daniel's friends refused to worship the image. They were Shadrach, Meshach and Abed-nego. As a result, they were thrown into a fiery furnace, but was delivered by their faith.

Babylon's contribution to civilization were many: identification and codification of many diseases; development of an orchestra with 53 different instruments; tables for squaring and cubing numbers; use of pi; identification and codification of metals, plants and minerals; tables for the movement of the moon, the planets and the stars along with a calendar; and they were the first to use the practice of "lifting of hands" in prayers that we see in vogue today.

There were several reasons for the decline of Babylon. For one, it was Nebuchadnezzar's mental state. He cycled from sanity to insanity back to sanity. This produced an infrastructure instability. For another, it was the power of the person. At Nebuchadnezzar's death, the power he had accumulated rapidly crumbled because Nebuchadnezzar was gone. The power was more in an individual than in an organization. Finally, Babylon was weakened greatly by internal strife over idol worship and religious practices. Destructive strife existed with the idolatrous priests over many issues. For example who was the god of Babylon - "Zin" or "Marduk". This was never resolved. When Belshazzar, grandson of Nebuchadnezzar took control of the empire, the decline hastened rapidly. Belshazzar's behavior and practice of profanity and drunkenness diminished any respect and allegiance other's may have had with his grandfather. Belshazzar had a shameless sense of lewdness. Instead of caring for the safety and threat posed by the Medes and the Persians, Belshazzar gave himself over to sensual pleasures. He even showed

contempt for God by revealing in a banquet with holy vessels brought from the temple in Jerusalem. There he insulted the captive Jews and the God they worshipped. It was during one of the banqueting nights when Belshazzar was sentenced and condemned in a vision. Strange fingers wrote on the wall “Mene, Mene, Tekel Upharsim”. You have been weigh in the balances and found wanting.

3. *Persia - An empire build on conciliation and appeasement.* In it’s maximum expansion, the Persian empire stretched from Egypt through the Fertile Crescent to India. It was the largest land conquering expansion of any of it’s predecessors to last over 200 years. See Figure 7.24.



**Figure 7.24 The Persian Empire at it’s Height  
(Approximately 500 BC)**

As a rule the Persians monarchs were kindly disposed toward the Jews because of Semitic origins. The Persians along with the Hebrews are descendants of Shem. The Persians under Cyrus, the Great threw off the Babylonian yoke and was highly successful in dealing with the Greeks. They had the swift chariots and the destructive weaponry of the Assyrians. They were facing a weak Babylon who was experiencing a disruptive infrastructure upheaval with issues of who was the god of Babylonians. When Cyrus conquered Babylon, his conciliatory policies made him a popular conquer. He restored Marduk as the deity of the country along with a priestly order.

Cyrus maintained strict discipline in his occupation of conquered countries so that plundering, violence and rape were avoided. This prevented any movements of dissatisfaction, uprising and insurrection among conquered people. Cyrus also believed it was in the best interest of the empire to permit people to return to their native countries to rebuild them and to establish their original temples. This would give them economic betterment and a peaceful state of internal living. With this base, Cyrus would be more productive to collect tax money for subsidizing his campaigns for war as well as his administration for peace. Cyrus' new policy of appeasement led to the policy of return of the Jews to Jerusalem. This was welcomed by the Jewish communities since they were exiled to Assyria in 723 BC and to Babylon in 586 BC. The Jews saw this turn of events as a God-send sign of the end of their captivity. In addition to releasing captive Jews, Cyrus gave permission to rebuild the temple for the worship of the God of Israel. In 536 BC, seventy years after Nebuchadnezzar's first invasion, Cyrus released 42,000 repatriated Jews and commissioned the rebuilding of the temple. Cyrus returned those valuable articles which had been taken out of Solomon's temple by Nebuchadnezzar in 586 BC. This included 30 gold platters, 1000 silver platters, 30 gold bowls, 29 vessels of various kinds, 410 bowls of silver and 1000 other vessels. (Ezra 1:9-10) As the temple construction started, the Samaritans from the original kingdom under the Davidic Dynasty demanded a participation and involvement in its rebuilding. Since they were prohibitive idolaters, an intense disputation emerged. The construction was halted until 522 BC. As Darius ascended the throne, he ordered the rebuilding of the temple for the repatriates while excluding the Samaritans. Under the leadership of Zerubbabel who was in the lineage of David, the second temple was built and dedicated in 516 BC.

The contributions of the Persians to culture were many - a system of administration headed by a governor and double-checked by the king's representative; a system of roads and highways for transportation with a post station every 14 miles and a Bill of Rights to exercise the principle of equal rights and responsibilities for all racial groups.

The defeat of the Persians by the Greeks and the beginning of their decline was largely due to a superior military machine. The Greeks were able to conduct superior naval warfare. When the Persians lost ships, they also lost soldiers. On the land, the Greeks developed the "phalanx" which was a front line strategy that overwhelmed the Persians every time it was used. The phalanx often called the turtle was a series of soldiers holding extra large metal shields tightly linked together in an oval that would penetrate a weak part of the Persian line. Greek soldiers with arches hid inside the oval. When the turtle penetrated the line to the opposite side, the shield holding soldiers would

drop to a low level allowing the arches to shoot their arrows at the Persians from the rear. In addition, to these military strategies, the Greek city-states became more unified under a common Persian threat. This unification gave birth to a new emerging empire - the Greeks.

4. *Greece - an empire built militarily but not culturally.* It was Phillip of Macedonia in the north of Greece with his incredibly conceived military strategy called the phalanx which challenged and defeated the Athenian city-state. With the Athenian defeat the Hellenic League was set-up unifying over 300 of these city-states. The league was able to aggregate under a single control because of the common threat of the invading Persians. Several naval attempts were made by the Persians to invade Greece. Each time they were defeated. Thus, it gave the Greeks the undisputed masters of the Aegean and Mediterranean Seas. During his short tenure, Phillip was assassinated. His twenty year old son, Alexander took the rule of the league in 336 BC and embarked on a military campaign which defeated country after country. See Figure 7.25.



**Figure 7.25 Grecoian Empire at it's Height  
(Approximately 300 BC)**

Alexander's policies of tolerance toward people he conquered permitted him to spread Greek culture throughout the empire. These policies of tolerance also minimized the possibilities of revolt and uprising. The Grecoian empire expanded even further than the Persian imperialism. Alexander knew no defeat. He used the military strategy of his father effectively. He conquered half the known world in approximately twelve years. He died at the age of 32 with

fever and excessive drinking. Historians dispute this cause-death explanation. Some prefer, he simply “burned himself out”.

The decline of the Grecian Empire started with the death of Alexander. The empire was broken up into separate kingdoms, each headed by a Grecian general. Six are noted: Achalan League; Aetolian League; Antigoid Monarchy; Selencid Monarchy; Pergamene Monarchy and the Ptolemaic Monarchy. These monarchs were weak since Greek rulers were not accepted by non-Greek people. The monarchs often battled to preserve what they had. Often they battled each other. This continued to weaken the empire as it was originally founded. Additionally, the monarchs practiced partiality. Cultural benefits, economic opportunities and human rights were reserved for Greek citizens and the elite. Non-Greek citizens, immigrants, slaves, and the conquered ones did not enjoy these benefits. Philosophy and its discussion was the exclusive province of the wealthy and those of leisure time. This practice of discrimination and partiality prevented an integration of the people under the control of the monarch. What it did, was to generate a hate and a desire to overthrow the monarchs. Border wars including the rising Romans were frequent and exhausting. Religious values and perceptions also contributed to the Grecian decline. It weakened the infrastructure. The disputes were exhausting. These disputes were preoccupied with astrology, fate, destiny, superstition, soul-survival and pleasing a multitude of gods.

It was General Seleucus who assumed control of Syria, Persia and Palestine. He set up a dynasty called the Seleucid Kings who were never secure since they were Greeks in a foreign land. It was the Seleucid Kings that propagated the god-king idea. This meant kings as heads of state were also to be worshipped as God. This was a variant of an older idea where clerics who were God’s representatives here on earth was also to be recognized as heads of state. Antiochus Epiphanes, a fourth generation Seleucid King, was the individual who rendered extreme cruelty upon Israel that knew no bounds. Known as Antiochus IV, he deprived the Jews of their civil and religious liberty. In 169 BC, Antiochus plundered Jerusalem, pillaged and profaned the temple. He had a plan to eradicate Judaism as an ideology by Hellenizing the Jewish practices. Jews were forced to take part in Pagan worship of Greek Gods. These gods were many. They include Zeus, Herta, Athana, Apollo, Diana and Artemis. The worship ritual of these gods involved impious and obscene rites to Jewish practices. Antiochus forced the construction of a statue-altar of Zeus into the most holy compartment of the temple. Swine were offered on it. Jews were forced to eat sacrificed swine from the altar. Additionally, Jews were forbidden to read the Torah, forbidden to observe the Sabbath and



forbidden the practice of circumcision. Those failing to conform to these prohibitions would be put to death. Many died. Daniel refers to this activity as the “abomination that makes desolation”. (Daniel 11:32) The unparalleled persecution under Antiochus lasted 3 years until the Jewish uprising of the Maccabees defeated the Antiochus forces. A special miracle occurred at the time which has set up the festival of Hanukkah which is observed into today.

5. *Rome - an empire close to a global civilization, but failed morally.* History records a government and a people who did the spectacular. In less than 53 years, the Romans conquered nearly all of the entire inhabited world and brought it under their rule for as much as 500 years. This was an achievement never before in prior history was reached. The basic military unit of the Romans was the legion composed of 3000 heavily armed men, 300 cavalry and 1200 lightly armed foot soldiers. The phalanx used by the Greeks had tremendous crushing power, but like an elephant, it moved slowly forward with irresistible force. The Roman Legion, on the other hand, was like a pack of lions incredibly swift in several locations simultaneously. The principle achievement of the Romans was the military conquest and the ability to incorporate the conquered into the Roman system. The democratization of government started as early 287 BC. The Greeks refused to share citizenship. On the other hand, quite innovative, the Romans extended their citizenship to all people of the conquered provinces and confederate cities. Also Roman law defined the rights of citizenship and placed stringent controls on governments, courts, magistrates and bureaucrats. This protected human rights. These innovations set up a framework for Western Civilization that continues even to this day. With Roman citizenship went the expectation to conform to Roman government and its laws. Rome created both an empire and came very close to becoming a global state. It can be said the Roman state was the closest to what can be called a world civilization. See Figure 7.26.



**Figure 7.26 The Roman Empire at its Height  
(Approximately 300 AD)**

Law, culture, rights and values were distributed and spread to all who would be part of this global civilization. Rome's law, language and administration has become a heritage to medieval and modern Europe. Indirectly, it influenced North and South America. The Roman law regulated the lives and behavior of citizens. It protected lives and reputation of citizens. This regulation paralleled the laws of the Hebrew people. The "laws" became "king" as opposed to an individual who did whatever seems right in their own eyes. Of all the contributions made by Romans in government and politics, Roman law is preeminent. Roman law is the basis for present day law codes in Italy, France, Spain, Britain, Japan, Scotland and the Americas. It has been favored by a majority in the modern civilized nations.

The Roman religion had little connection with morality. Ideas of the future life were very vague. Their preoccupation of the unknowns and the future fell with the myriad of gods, one for every phenomena of the human experience. Their religious commitment was more a kind of bargain to one or more of an idolatrous god. They would placate this selected god with special ceremonies and sacrifices. The most important of the early deities was Jupiter who controlled the physical universe, Mars who was the god of war, Janus, the guardian of the gateway of

Rome and Tellus, the female goddess of fertility also known as mother earth. Much of the ritual in Roman religion was originated from the Etruscans and later, from the Greeks. In fact, the Romans would incorporate Greek gods into their won list after they would subdue them militarily. Essentially, the incorporation of religious ideas from the Egyptians and the Orientals along with the Etruscans and the Greeks produced a Babylonian mixture. Several religious concepts were formalized from this mixture. To cite a few: the trinity - Jupiter, Juno and Minerva which was imported from Greece; Ritual mysticism - the mysterious glamour in a religious ceremony to captivate the common mind from the Orientals; Fertility and sensuality - sensuous worship to satisfy the cravings of temple priests and to inspire those who observed the proceedings. Roman tolerance of the Jewish religion was liberal. This included infant Christianity which, at first, was seen as a variation of Judaism. But later, the tolerance of the Jews became strained which had a spillage affect on Christianity. A major decree which banned all Jews from Rome was given by Caligula. But the peak of Jewish intolerance occurred in 70 AD when 1.1 million Jews were killed in Jerusalem and 97,000 taken captive under the siege of the Roman General Titus.

Devotion and worship in religious practices were often indulgences in wanton sex orgies. Moral virtues were abandoned. Homage was given to so many divinities that it was hard to separate a god from a man. The worship of the emperor was the most vital religious force in the Roman world until the Christian concept of a one, invisible god arrived on the scene. Emperors were thought of as gods like Zeus who was regarded as the savior of the whole world. These and other internal social and religious practices brought about a disintegrating influence in government behavior, military ineffectiveness and moral weakness. These practices failed to preserve the prosperity of seventy-five million people.

In the life cycle concept of civilization described earlier in this book, Rome would be an excellent example of the various stages of a civilization's life cycle. The beginning stage started with a once small city that deliberately spread throughout the empire. The Cardo in Jerusalem was the first indoor mall identified in history. It was built by the Romans. Today, the Cardo Mall still continues in Jerusalem. Public baths and gymnasiums as well as theaters and circuses were introduced. Augustus Caesar was known to have said, he found Rome a city of bricks, but left it a city of marble. A most significant Roman innovation was the extensions of roads that led to all parts of the empire. This provided easy access for the Romans to reach outermost places within minimum time. It also allowed, the conquered people of primitive countries to visit and see the thriving culture of Rome. The cultural interchange

between Rome and its provinces were evidenced with the “Rome-ance” languages. This was the basis which resulted in Italian, Spanish, Portuguese, French and Romania. There was such an influx of foreigners into Rome that local Romans complained that Rome was no longer Roman.

In the maturity stage, Rome reached the zenith of glory under the Caesars. Fourteen administrative districts identified as dioceses gave the empire an infrastructure organization for local government autonomy and central government control. In the days of Diocletian, military and government processes were set up for supervising and controlling the prosperous lifestyles achieved by the Romans. There was no middle class in Rome. The wealth rested with a small minority being served by a vast, poor majority. The Roman Empire was highly centralized in organization. This centralized control was achieved through a territorial division of the empire into 13 Dioceses. See Figure 7.27. Each diocese had an administrative head that reported to Rome. A general with his army was also assigned to a diocese and reported to Rome. This separation was intentional as it gave Rome a better way to control any rebellion or separation from the empire. Interesting to note, the territorial division of the Roman Catholic Church is made with dioceses. Each diocese had many parishes with its own appointed pastor and people. Often served Diocese is aggregated to an archdiocese. Thus, the centralized organization and control started by the Roman Empire was perpetual, with much success, with the Roman Catholic Church.



**Figure 7.27 Dioceses Centralized Control by Rome and the Roman Catholic Church**

When the Apostle Paul reach Rome, greater than half the population were slaves. They were brought there as prisoners of war to support the luxurious lifestyles of the Romans. Roman citizens were free from taxation where as the provinces and the conquered people were heavily taxed both directly and indirectly. At the zenith of the Roman civilization, higher and higher taxes were levied. This was to support the spending of public money for free bread and the operation of the circuses. Romans had a mad craze for pleasure and sports. As time went on, sports became more and more brutal. Violence became more and more deadly. Religion became more and more out of touch with life. Rome became the recipient of every form of religion throughout the empire.

The decline stage of the Roman Civilization was a long gradual one. The Romans had developed a system of controls that kept the coherence and unity of the empire intact. Yet, movements and trends were developing to weaken this unity toward the empire's demise. These movements and trends will be taken up later in this book under the Christianity Stage as Christianity was one of the movements that struck a lethal blow at the heart of paganistic Rome.

Thus, Rome as well as other civilizations had their impact on the Judaic civilization. It both assimilated Judaic ideas as well as brought to an end Judaic practices. Rome's impact on other civilizations can be viewed into phases or stages. The beginning phase introduced new concepts and innovations. The emergence phase would note how ideas and concepts take root. The growth phase was based on how well the concepts and ideas were assimilated into people's minds and lifestyles. The maturity phase sees the fruition and harvest of the assimilated concepts. An assimilated concept became a value and an institution for all to see and scrutinize. The decline phase is where an institutionalized value no longer serves the needs of its people.

6. *The Ottoman Empire - an example of growth and decline.* The Ottoman Civilization<sup>45</sup> can also be viewed in life cycle stages with the effects on Judaism. At the beginning, its founder Ertoghrul and 400 horsemen saw the battle between two hostile groups. Both groups were unknown to him. After consultation with his men, they deliberately chose to support the losing group. This turned the tide for the losing groups toward a victory. It earned for Ertoghrul lands and wealth. Later, his son, Osman, with his wealth and prosperity from his father was converted to Islam. This came about through the reading of the Koran. The book influenced him with a vision of world conquest. Osman's followers were called Ottomans. Thus the emergence stage of the Ottoman Civilization was based on the idea that Allah wanted Osman to create an Islamic world. The fall of Christian Constantinople to Islamic Tuks was one of the many of Allah's confirmations of this destiny. It was also among many transitioned factors that hastened the decline of Western Christendom in the Middle East.

Constantinople's growing population and prosperity produced many innovations in buildings, market trading, shops, bath houses and warehouses. Complex public buildings were grouped around a mosque, a hospital and a hotel for travelers. The craft guild system was developed which resulted in vigorous economic growth along with a religious lifestyle character. The guilds were organized by trades and became world famous. The populace was divided into three classes. One class represents the Sultan, administrators and Islam's clerics. The second represents the farmers and the craftsmen. The third represents the merchants, businessmen and entrepreneurs who were free from legal and social restrictions. They became the capitalists who engage in profits of goods imported and exported. Istanbul was at the crossroads between Europe and Asia. Istanbul combined religious, cultural and commercial factors financed and controlled by the state.

The growth stage of the Ottoman Empire, like the Romans encouraged conquered people to visit Istanbul and emulate it's lifestyle. See Figure 7.28.



**Figure 7.28 The Ottoman Empire at it's Height  
(Approximately 16th Century AD)**

The Sultan even ordered men of means, merchants, artisans and craftsmen from conquered cities transferred to Istanbul. This only increased the city's urbanization and commercialization. This fostered an exchange of social and cultural materials, technology, products and values. The Ottoman Empire was built on a non-European conception of state and society. There was complete absence of private property. The Sultan owned everything and exploited as he saw fit. There were no landlords and therefore no mobility. Everyone depended on the Sultan. Each year the Sultan levied a tax on the conquered Christian populations. Many could not pay the tax. The Sultan demanded children as payment of taxes. Thousands of children were moved to Istanbul and raised as Muslims. Their training was destined for either the Sultan's administration or the Sultan's military forces. The most talented went to the top bureaucracy and the non-talented went to the army. As long as the Ottoman Empire expanded, the system worked. The more territory the Sultan would conquer, the more he would impose his child slave tax on large populations. The growth

of the empire was nurtured on conquered land and people. It combined a unique tax structure with an equally unique civil service system.

At the zenith of the empire, Suleiman the Magnificent was the ruler. He put together one of the largest military empires in history founded on the idea of Christian children slave tax of conquered people. Suleiman was able to synthesize a sprawling diverse collection of conquered countries into a cooperating unity even though it was only transitory. The Suleymanized Mosque in which Suleiman is buried has become a notable example of religious architecture. It symbolized the Ottoman reign of religious infusions, architectural innovations and poetic classical styles that continue even today.

The decline of the Ottoman Empire was both external and internal. Externally, Christian Europe eventually stopped the military expansion and even caused a withdrawal. This broke the children tax concept. Internally, harem politics coupled with the assassinated deaths of sons of harem women became nefarious. The politics was crucially connected to secure the succession of Sultan's reign. Twenty-five successive Sultans ruled the Ottoman Empire. They were of lesser breeds than Suleiman. These successors were born and lived in harems which diminished their ability for military leadership. This caused the empire to watershed. Even the power of intimidation and coercion outside Istanbul also declined allowing distant provinces to govern in a semi-independent way. The Ottoman Civilization began in 1300 AD with Osman. It reached its apogee in the 16th Century under Suleiman the Magnificent, but gradually diminished thereafter when Mehmed VI was sent into exile in 1922.

#### PROPHETS SENT TO CHANGE A DECLINING BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION

“By a prophet the Lord brought Israel out of Egypt and by a prophet was he preserved.” Hosea 12:13

The prophets were not philosophers. They did not indulge in abstract discussions about God. Prophets were sent by God. They were spoken persons for God delivering special messages to a people. They acted as a conscience to both rulers and people. The messages they gave was often predictive. In each message there is usually an urgency to change or redirect the quality or nature of the cultural behavior or practice of the people or the king. In most cases, the messages are scathing denunciations to return to God and His laws. Lofty promises are often included giving hope and optimism of a brighter future. Interesting to note, God delivered His messages through specially selected individuals rather than the established priesthood. The priests were comfortable with the status quo created by the



monarchs. They may have even helped in creating the unacceptable status quo. It's the status quo that God wanted changed. Obviously, the change preached by the prophets developed a resistance or reluctance of the priests to cooperate with the prophets. Many times prophets were persecuted or killed by the instigation of the priests.

Prophets were highly respected by the people. The message given, either written or oral, is called a prophecy. One type of prophecy foretells a future event. Daniel interpreted Nebuchadnezzar's vision of four beasts predicting five expanding governments that would create five civilizations in the world long before they occurred. Prophecies can also involve morality. That is, immoral behavior has been judged and condemned with a disastrous punishment about to occur. Prophets attacked the evils and decadence that entered the Biblical Civilization. Noah preached to the people about their immoral behavior. This made Noah a prophet. He implored them to change and desist. They refused. The great flood was the consequence. Prophecies can be motivated. Jeremiah was a priest who went up to Jerusalem with Zerubbabel to seal the covenant with Nehemiah for the dedication of the rebuilding of the temple. This was the beginning of a change and a restoration from a diverted condition. Prophecies can be divine judgments. Elijah fought the Baal prophets and was responsible for their massacre on Mount Carmel. Here God intervened. Then, in turn, Elijah was persecuted and forced to flee and hide. Because prophecies are messages from God, the prophets become intermediaries between God and His people. Messages were given to nations, rulers, tribes, families and individuals. Unfortunately, the messages were often in the form of a judgment rebuking for wicked ways. Prophecies can be literal, figurative, poetic, symbolic or typical depending on the time period, the message and whom it is directed.

Prophets were sent to the kings of Judah, Israel and the great empires decrying the fact religious and moral standards were being compromised, ignored or broken in favor of military strength or sensual practices. The prophets made their attitudes known even if they were contrary to public opinion and royal favor. They refused to condone despotism, severely criticizing acts that produced economic and social stress. To that extent, prophets were somewhat political and governmental. They were vocal and intensely critical over foreign idol worship. They were not reluctant to criticizing that low morality of the kings which gave poor examples to the people.

The office of the prophet was not through genealogical descent although many were from the tribe of Levi. Nor were prophets a profession developed through formal education and training. Prophets were selected by God to deliver and announce a message to an intended recipient. In Elisha's case, his appointment as prophet came through

his predecessor, Elijah. From the Biblical records, many prophets were appointed, often within the same time period. This did not mean God spoke to them continually. Rather, God's spirit came upon them to reveal a message and stirred them to take up the mission to its completion. Seldom were they stirred to take on several missions. This stirring by God's spirit was strong enough to create a condition of mind to deliver the message even at the threat of persecution or death.

God used several methods of inspiring and stirring the prophets. For one, He used verbal communications through angels. It was an angel that spoke to Moses in the burning bush to commission Moses to deliver the Hebrews from captivity in Egypt. For another, God used dreams to the prophet or to another person while they slept. The prophet was given the meaning to interpret the dream. It was a dream of Pharaoh's where he saw seven starving and lean cows eat seven well-fed cows grazing in the meadows. A second dream by the same Pharaoh saw seven thin ears of grain devour seven fat and full ears. The spirit of God stirred Joseph as to the meaning of the dream and conveyed it to the Pharaoh. For still another method, God used visions to prophets or to rulers. Daniel had a vision in a dream of four great beasts that came up from the sea. In the dream, Daniel inquired what these beasts represent. One who stood by in the dream explained, they are four kings who shall arise out of the earth. Finally, on occasion, God used music to give a divine communication. Elisha asked for a minstrel during a reproving confrontation with King Jehoram of Israel. When the minstrel played the hand of the Lord came upon Elisha.

The prophets in the Old Testament of the Bible both in the Edenic Stage and the Judaic Stage saw their role and their duty to preserve the moral and spiritual values of the people they lived with whether free or in captivity. They also related their message to the coming Biblical Civilization which gave them hope. Sometimes they sought to console the people for the predicament they were in. An example is the vision of Ezekial during the captivity period in Babylon. The vision of the dry bones of Ezekial was to give the Jews a bright future for those in captivity. Like dry bones which become covered with sinews and flesh, Israeli exiles would rise up again to a restoration and rebirth. God, then would send from time to time messages of encouragement and hope. Since these messages are forms of communication, it might be useful to identify some of the Biblical prophets and their related prophecies. The following list is selected and correlated to the predicted arrival of the Biblical Civilization. Twenty four are selected. They were prophets who foretold things pertaining to the arrival of the Biblical Civilization.

1. *Enoch*. “Behold, the Lord comes with ten thousand of his holy ones to execute judgment upon all and to convict all the ungodly among men of all their ungodly deeds which they have committed and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners spoke against God.” These are the men who complain and curse their fate while at the time they mold life according to their own desires. They talk big, but talk to their own advantage. (Genesis 5:19-24; Jude 14-16) God has a plan for executing judgments upon any and all civilizations. God has an organization who will deal with the ungodly in politics, finances, religion, society, government, etc. Those who are ungodly: complainers over God’s arrangements, self-servers who exploit others, evil-doers who render violence, misery and harm to others. God’s organization is a new civilization which will have a takeover from existing civilizations to establish justice and righteousness for all nations.

2. *Noah*. “God spared not the old world but saved Noah, the eight person, a preacher of righteousness bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly.” (II Peter 2:5) Noah walked with God in spite of the surrounding iniquity. Society in his day had become sadly corrupted by the custom of intermarriages of different natures. This is between angels and humans. The union of the two natures produced a mixed condition of culture, religion and family life which was not pure. Noah preached against these practices. He endured the ridicule and persecution of the ungodly. He obeyed God, built an ark, survived a flood, continued the human race and perpetuated the Biblical Civilization.

3. *Abraham*. “I will multiply thy seed as the stars of heaven and as the sand of the seashore. In thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed.” (Genesis 22:17-18) Abraham is the first significant worshiper of the one true God. Notable lessons come from his life. Faith has always had trials. These trials are to confirm that a faith exists. The greater the faith the greater the trial. He received a distinct revelation from God of a future civilization and his descendants both Jews and Arabs would be countless. This testimony of activities and life will bring about blessings to the families of humankind.

4. *Jacob*. “The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet until Shiloh (Messiah) come. (Genesis 49:10) Shiloh is the great peacemaker, the Prince of Peace who will gather all nations unto him. Jacob was a man of two natures - good and bad. He was a man of guile and a man of prayer. The Hebrew nation is spoken of as the sons of Jacob. His was the first identification of the Jews being called Israel. The blessing that Jacob gave his sons was a proof that his faith in God’s promise of Shiloh was strong.

5. *Joseph*. “How can I do this great wickedness and not sin against God?” (Genesis 39:9) Adultery is a sin against God as well as against the natural laws of the body and the involved people. Sin begins with the uncontrolled lust of the eyes which results in temptation. Wickedness emerges from small and insignificant behaviors rather than great issues. Lies, deception and deceit are components of wickedness. His life was an example of brotherhood to be practiced in the Biblical Civilization.

6. *Moses*. “God said, Get thee down quickly from here for thy people have corrupted themselves. They are quickly turned aside out of the way which I commanded them. They have made a melted image. They are a stiff-necked people. Lord destroy not thy people which thou hast redeemed through thy greatness bringing them forth out of Egypt. They are thy people and thine inheritance.” (Deuteronomy 9:12, 20; 26-29) He was a great leader and legislator. He fed a multitude, endured murmurings, and he spoke on the oracles of God. He was a friend of God. Intercession by people with God does have value. God will listen! Priests were raised up and trained to help people to know between clean and unclean, truth from error, right from wrong. People forget easily the good and the benefits God has given them in the past.

7. *Joshua*. “Behold I have set the land before you; go in and possess the land which I swore unto your fathers.” (Deuteronomy 1:8) God gave support and victory in Joshua’s military campaigns for conquering the promised land. God provided detailed instructions for the division of the land among the tribes. All who follow God will be in conflict with ungodly behavior found almost everywhere - family, friends, neighborhoods, governments and country. Recognizing and serving idolatrous and alien gods will kindle an anger and often punishment from the true God. Hesitancy in implementing God’s will is a great mistake.

8. *Samuel*. “He shall build a house for my name and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever.” (II Samuel 7:13) Samuel was the last of the judges and was dedicated to God by his mother. He functioned in four ways: a prophet, a priest, a judge and an intercessor. Building a house was to be the construction of the temple, that would be the go between God and humankind. This temple, primarily spiritual, is to last forever.

9. *Elijah*. “The dogs shall eat Jezebel by the wall of Jezebel.” (I Kings 21:23) Provoking God to anger can be an enormous personal disaster. God has the power to alter and suspend the laws of nature even though he set up these natural laws to be perpetual. The prayer of a righteous man is effective even against kings and governments.

10. *Elisha*. “Run to meet the Sunammite woman and tell here it is well for a dead child.” (II Kings 4:26)

There is a remarkable power to prayer for those who represent God in civilization. Being hospitable, generous and kind toward strangers may be a representative role from God. God does intervene in the affairs of mankind from time to time to do the impossible such as resuscitating the dead.

11. *Job*. “For I know that my redeemer liveth and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth.” (Job 19:25-26) Job was the classic case that the sufferings of the righteous are not necessarily due to their own sins. He was an upright man that feared God and eschewed evil. Some have supposed the book of Job is an allegory. But other Bible writers such as Ezekial and James refers to Job as an example of patience which they would not have been likely to do if he was a fictitious person. He lived 1800 years before Jesus and 600 years after the deluge.

12. *David*. “Weeping may endure for a night but joy cometh in the morning.” (Psalms 30:5) David was referred to as the man after God’s own heart. He was a warrior, a musician, a sinner, a poet and a prophet. David as a king is almost above reproach. His private life only proved him to be a man. His writings have been the source of consolation and instruction far beyond many books of the Bible. These writings portrayed future scenarios of a coming kingdom that gave hope and comfort.

13. *Solomon*. “The path of the just is like the shining light that shineth more and more unto the perfect day.” Solomon worked on the development of his father’s ideas of a consolidated kingdom. Solomon was a merchant as well as a monarch. His fame, however, was established by the building of the Great Temple at Jerusalem. He is known as one who possessed wisdom. His writings reveal this wisdom especially in his later years when he realized that all earthly things, material possessions are seen as the vanity of vanities.

14. *Daniel*. “Thy kingdom is numbered and finished. Thou are weighed in the balances and art found wanting. Thy kingdom is divided and given to another.” (Daniel 5:24-28) God still controls the affairs of mankind even though these controls remain mysteriously silent. It’s not surprising that the demise of a culture or even a civilization is largely due to God’s intervention. God can foresee the emergence and demise of a culture or civilization long before they are active on the scene. Mocking and ridiculing God’s arrangements will eventually bring a condemnation.

15. *Isaiah*. “Of the increase of his government and peace, there shall be no end.” (Isaiah 9:6-7) Isaiah as a prophet foretold the future of Israel, the downfall of Gentile nations and the coming kingdom of God. He was a

statesman, a reformer, a teacher and a theologian. Isaiah wrote the prediction and manner of the birth of the Messiah. God was to perpetuate the Biblical Civilization through the Davidic ancestry. Prophets convey messages from God, but also serve as instructors of these eager for the prophet's vision. When God gives an important message, details and specifics are also supplied.

16. *Jeremiah*. "Judah shall be carried away captive, all of it and it shall be wholly carried away captive." (Jeremiah 13:19) God always allows a difficult period to fall on a people to teach a lesson. In this difficult period, God will test the degree of faithfulness. God will see if away from home and in foreign conditions will there be an abandonment of his principles and laws. Jeremiah was a priest, but called by God to be a prophet. His ministry was intensely sad because the truths he proclaimed were unwelcomed and brought him enemies.

17. *Ezekiel*. "Thou profane wicked prince whose day has come when iniquity shall have an end. I will overturn, overturn, overturn it. It shall be no more, until He comes whose right it is and I will give it to Him." (Ezekiel 21:25-27) Idolatrous practices with unflinching boldness will bring God's condemnation. Judgment upon foreign nations by God will be accompanied with much tribulation. God allows temporary rulers, but will overturn them until the time is right for takeover of the Biblical Civilization.

18. *Joel*. "And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh." (Joel 2:28) The pouring of God's spirit will happen under the administration of the Biblical Civilization. A new life and a new start will be everyone's legacy. It will begin with the spirit of truth and end with a new relationship with God. Joel was Samuel's oldest son and was a judge.

19. *Amos*. "Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that the plowman shall overtake the reaper and the treader of grapes that soweth seed and the mountains shall melt and I will bring again the captivity of my people of Israel and they shall build the waste cities and inhabit them, and they shall plant vineyards and drink the wine thereof, they shall also make gardens and eat the fruit of them." (Amos 9:13-15) Amos was outraged at the violence in Israel and in the name of righteousness and justice. His preaching was that social justice cannot be separated from true piety.

20. *Micah*. "But in the last days if shall come to pass that the mountain of the house of the Lord shall be established in the top of the mountains and it shall be exalted above the hills; and the people shall flow into it. And the nations shall come and say some and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us his ways and we will walk in his paths." (Micah 4:1-2) Micah preached as a prophet

judgment and the kingdom of God. He described in his writings specific promises of future glory under the Messiah and his righteous reign.

21. *Habakuk*. “For the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord as the waters cover the sea” (Habakuk 2:14) God has given mankind a vision in which the Biblical Civilization will one day be instituted globally. The vision will motivate people as it has the solutions to the complex issues of man’s affairs. The Biblical Civilization is God’s vision for the ultimate destiny of mankind.

22. *Zephaniah*. “Therefore wait upon me saith the Lord until the day that I rise up to the prey, for my determination is to gather the nations that I may assemble the kingdoms to pour upon them mine indignation even all my fierce anger, for all the earth shall be devoured with the fire of my jealousy. For then I shall turn to the people a pure language that they may all call upon the name of the Lord to serve him with one consent.” (Zephaniah 3:8-9)

23. *Zechariah*. “Behold the man whose name is the Branch; and he shall grow up out of his place and he shall build the temple of the Lord; even he shall build the temple of the Lord; and he shall bear his glory and shall sit and rule upon his throne and he shall be a priest upon his throne and the counsel of peace shall be between them both.” (Zechariah 6:12-13) God’s ways of accomplishing his purposes are radically different than human agencies. The most effective method of changing people is not with money, resources or power, but through heart-felt convictions. Impossible achievements are accomplished with the workings of the spirit of God.

24. *John the Baptist*. “Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near.” (Matthew 3:2) John dwelt alone in the barren region west of the Dead Sea. When he visited the populace areas, he preached baptism of repentance for the remission of sins. Crowds gathered around him since he was proclaiming the Messiah was to make his appearance.

Many of the prophets described above and others, were harassed and persecuted because they preached to people in power what they did not want to hear. The prophets criticized kings, challenged and legalized behaviors, condemned practices alien to the law and urged social reforms. Sometimes they were the voice of conscience that reminded the people of their original covenant and commitment with God. The awesome responsibility of delivering God’s message to his people produced in many prophets an agony and distress. They feared they may fail in their special mission. The prophets knew so well that false prophets according to the law is punishable with death. The prophets had an additional fear of not being accepted as God’s emissary. The people used several methods to evaluate the authenticity of the prophet himself. One was the content of the message. Did it answer their prayers.

Ezekial delivered the message of return to Jerusalem in spite of their captivity in Babylon. But the message was an answer to prayers of a captive people. Another was the credibility of the prophet as a man of God. People are perceptive enough to evaluate a prophet's life as being a Godly life. Jeremiah was accepted as a prophet as he exhibited an extraordinary moral sense. He was often called the "weeping prophet" as he was committed to God and to holiness. His compassion for the people was a ministry in itself. Still another evaluation of prophets authenticity was the alignment of the message with the law of Moses. Amos was outraged at the people's abandonment of justice and righteousness of God's laws. His message was that social justice is inseparable from true piety. Still another confirmation of a prophet's authenticity was the continuity and extension of the message from a preceding prophet. Elisha was easily accepted as they saw him as an extension of Elijah's work. Finally, many of the messages from God had a preliminary sign to convince people of the role of the prophet. If the sign was authentic, the message would be authentic. Isaiah's message was that a virgin would conceive a son and he would be the Messiah. The conception of a virgin would be the sign. Most likely, the authenticity of any prophet was a combination of any and all of the above criteria.

#### JUDAISM AS A STAGE IN THE RISE OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION

"I have chosen thee to be a special people above all people who are on the face of the earth." Deuteronomy 7:6

Israel has always been politically weak and physically negligible. There was a segment of time between Saul and Solomon that a political momentum was developing to give Israel an outstanding role in the global arena. It fissioned out. If there is a unique genius that singles Israel out, historically over the years, it is in the moral power found in Judaism. This moral power as a formal religion with the Jewish people did not emerge within a short period of time. It developed as a process with contributors along the way. Seventy of Jacob's family went down to Egypt. Four hundred and thirty years later over 2 million participated in the first Exodus out of Egypt to the promised land. They brought their moral laws. Today close to 6 million participated in the second exodus out of a global diaspora to the same promised land. They still brought with them their moral laws. The name Judaism was given to the religion of Israel after the fall of the Northern Kingdom when only the tribe of Judah (the Jews) remained. It was at this time that the Jewish religion began to assume the formal organizational arrangement centered in the Torah along with the oral tradition. This arrangement has been retained ever since. Some have said Judaism started with Moses. Others



identify it with Joseph. Still others with Jacob or Abraham. It's more important to see and separate ideas and concepts from the heroes along the way from formal organization of a religion with priests, rituals, artifacts and physical attributes. This occurred with the Davidic Dynasty and the construction of the temple in Solomon's time. The temple became the great symbol of Judaism which even today continues even if only a retaining wall is left. There is no doubt the Judaic saga started with Abraham, continued by Jacob and his sons, given impetus by Joseph, defined by Moses, but it was David and Solomon that gave Judaism its character as a civilization.

From Moses to the present time, many others have made contributions in spite of their non-Biblical reference. Maimonides, Hellel and Mendelssohn are some to be mentioned. A careful look at the Judaic process, one cannot help see differences from non-Jews in matters of religious beliefs. Here are some distinguishing fundamental beliefs:

- a. Belief in an invisible God, indivisible and without parts.
- b. Belief in the Mosaic law as a covenant with God making the Jews a chosen people to bear witness to good works and moral conformance.
- c. Belief in the Sabbath as a rest and no-work day to link with God's continuing creative process.
- d. Belief in the sanctification of life through ethical and moral behavior.
- e. Belief in the upholding and obeying God's laws. Any failure is a trespass against God and therefore a sin.
- f. Belief in prayer as the way to approach and have a relationship with God. God is approachable through prayer.
- g. Belief in repentance as a means to return to God which forms the basis of salvation. The nature of man must be changed.
- h. Belief in a Messiah, the anointed one, who will bring about world changes to improve humankind.
- i. Belief in the wisdom of the prophets, the brotherhood of man and the supremacy of righteousness.
- j. Belief in the superiority of Moses to all other prophets.
- k. Belief in the resurrection and human immortality.

The above beliefs are more than statements to be read. They are the basis of the Jewish faith. They are to be infused into the Jewish lifestyle so that following them brings a communion with God.

The Jews also differ from non-Jews in culture and traditions. Here are some distinguishing fundamental cultural practices.

a. *Education is important.* The home is the foundational educational agency. The father is responsible for transmitting values. He also motivates sons for an occupation as a basis for making a living. The mothers are to teach daughters skills for home-building especially in dietary laws and Jewish living. The Synagogue, next to the home, was also an educational agency. Here is where reading and discussing the scriptures took place. It was in the synagogue where the prophets and spiritual leaders delivered their messages.

b. *Communal Separation.* The Biblical concept of sin is more than a transgression of God's laws. It is a rejection of God's will. Separation and isolation from those who reject God's will is a commitment to do his will. Isolation and separation from other societies even with prohibited intermarrying was the way to uphold the commitment to God's will.

c. *The Bible is the textbook of life.* Practices of reading, writing and analysis of the Bible was the way to enhance reasoning, learning and making judgments on how to live. The Bible gave principles and guidance in everyday decision making. Responsibility for ensuring this "life training" was the parents, especially the father. As the father was the instructor, the Bible was the textbook.

d. *Sacrifices exhibited attitudes to improve.* The Bible leaves no doubt that man has the tendency for both good and evil. This was an unwelcomed endowment from the beginning in the Garden of Eden. The tendency for evil was due to the lack of understanding of the consequences of evil practices. A sacrifice offering was an open admission of making a mistake and a condition of repentance. The offering was an attitude not to make the same mistake again.

The Jews have mixed with other civilizations, but have retained their original character to a large degree. In fact, the regathered Jews today have been from 70 different countries, speaking 70 different languages, bringing into Israel 70 different cultures and values. They bring to Israel what they have acquired in non-Jewish cultures. Jews coming out of the diaspora bring a portion of the world with them into Israel. This has now made Israel a microcosm of the world. Additionally, the world is waking up to the fame of the Jews in every land. Jews are interwoven with humankind like a fabric. No matter where the world turns, it encounters a Jew! If you take an aspirin, Bayer, a Jew gave it to you. If you enjoy nuclear power electricity in your home, Einstein, a Jew gave it to you. If you go to a dentist for a painful tooth, Trabo, a Jew gave you Novocain. If you enjoy socialistic ideologies in society, Marx, a Jew gave it to you. If you have heart trouble, Striker, a Jew gave you digitalis. If you have sexual maladjustments,

Freud, a Jew gave you clinical procedures and therapies. If you get married, Wasserman, a Jew provided you with a blood test. If you get a polio shot, Salk, a Jew provided you with an immunization. If you are a Christian, Jesus, a Jew opened the way for you. If you live in the Bible and the Bible lives in you, you live in the world of the Jews. Almost all of the Biblical heroes are Jews.

It is not possible to capture the character of the Judaic civilization in a summary way. The elements and the interrelationships are far too complicated. Rabbi Similar of the 3rd Century gave a religious construct which helps. He said:

*First.* The number of commandments given to Moses was 613. 365 were prohibitions corresponding to the number of days in a year and 248 are positive precepts corresponding to the number of members in the human body.

*Second.* David reduced the 613 to 11 as found in Psalm 15. Those who do these eleven dwell in God's sanctuary. The eleven are: walking blamelessly; doing righteous; speaking the truth; avoiding slander; doing no wrong to a neighbor; casting no slur on anyone; despising a vile man; honoring those who fear God; keeping an oath; lending money without interest; accepting no bribes.

*Third.* Isaiah continued to reduce the eleven to six. (Isaiah 33:15) The six are: walking blamelessly; speaking justly; rejecting gain from extortion; refusing bribes; refusing to murder; looking away from doing evil.

*Fourth.* Micah reduced the six to three. (Micah 6:18) The three are: acting justly; loving mercy; walking humbly.

*Fifth.* Amos reduced the three to one. (Amos 5:4) It is "seek God and live".

These basic Jewish beliefs and practices were carried on and perpetuated through the Judaic conduit of the fourth stage of the Biblical Civilization. The world famous Jewish diaspora throughout history has often been seen as a negative activity since Jews were scattered without a homeland or a national polity. Yet with an overall historic view, there is a positive aspect to the diaspora. The diaspora permitted Jewish principles and practices to be "light" to others in a wide variety of civilizations where Jews lived. This included Egypt, Canaan, Assyria, Babylon, Persia, Greece, Rome, Spain, Italy, Germany, France, England, Poland, Russia, Europe, North America, Middle East and even the Far East. These civilizations made their influence felt on the Jews and through them on Judaism itself. But conversely, Judaism through the Jews had an impact on these civilizations. Truly, the Bible was and continues to be

a torch to existing civilizations. But more, the Bible is a civilization unto itself awaiting its time for a global takeover.

Getting all Jews to conform to an agreed set of laws, doctrines or dogmas is both difficult and challenging. The variety of ideas collected in a variety of host countries have been indirectly interwoven into their lifestyles. To expect a single coherent religion to unite all Jews is as futile as it is for a simple coherent Christian religion to unite all Christians. Consequently, Judaism has polarized into fundamental groups: Orthodox, Conservative and Reform. Similarly, Christians have polarized into many smaller groups which will be taken up in another section of this book.

Judaism as a civilization is far more comprehensive than any one Jewish denomination. It includes history, literature, language, social organization, folk traditions, standards of conduct, spiritual ideals and esthetic values. Religion, nonetheless, is its centerpiece. Civilizations for the most part rise not from a planned consortium of nation-states, but out of centuries of random but inevitable elements from living, working and striving together. This was not true with the Judaic Civilization. As a stage of the Biblical Civilization, activities and lifestyle was not arbitrary or random. They were based on formalized laws, persecuted moral behavior, aggregate living in communal living, restricted and preferred intermarriages and cultural activities common to the Judaic experience. What was missing over 2500 years since the Babylonian invasion was land, a common language and a national polity. This has been changed since 1948 and 1967 when Israel was reconstituted as a nation with land, a government, a common language and Jerusalem as its capitol. Israel's greatest asset is its hold and constancy for the Biblical purpose. A civilization without purpose is like a ship without a rudder whose course is anywhere and consequently goes nowhere. Purpose is what gives civilization meaning.

## CHAPTER 8

### CHRISTIANISM: THE GROWTH OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION

Judaic failure to produce a global civilization. How do we know Jesus really lived. The many roles of the life of Jesus. Jesus as the Logos. Jesus as the word of God. Jesus as a teacher. Jesus as a servant. Jesus as a miracle worker. Jesus as a prophet. Jesus as a leader. Jesus as a mission. Jesus as the Messiah. Jesus as priest and king. The chosen twelve Apostles. Traditional locations of Apostle's activities. Jewish and Christian views of the Messiah. Why Jews rejected Jesus as Messiah. Modern Jewish views of Jesus. The founder of Christianity - Jesus or Paul? Anti-Semitism. Causes of anti-Semitism. Links between Judaism and Christianity. Early Christianity. Christian archaeology confirms Biblical history. Demise of the Paganistic Civilization. Christian martyrs. The Christian Roman empire. Biblical doctrines through the ages. Formulating the Bible. Biblical doctrines of the early church and down through the Gospel age. Christendom in crisis.

#### JUDAIC FAILURE TO PRODUCE A GLOBAL CIVILIZATION

“That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ.” Galatians 3:14

God wanted Israel to be the rising Biblical Civilization to fill the earth in fulfillment to the Abrahamic promise “in thee and in thy seed shall all the families of earth be blessed”. This global position, however, required Israel to accept the Messiah, who was sent to them and to meet standards of values, behavior and morality. In this manner, they would be an example for other nations to follow. From Saul to Solomon, Israel seemed ready and on the way to becoming a global civilization. However, the nation split into two kingdoms after Solomon's reign which was the beginning of Israel's decline. From that point down to the destruction of Israel as a nation in 70 AD, Israel lost the “special role” that was it's destiny. From 70 AD to 1948, the Jews dwelt in a diaspora hoping and longing for a

return to their homeland and to the special role God intended Israel to be. Because of Israel's failure as a nation, God made a major adjustment. This does not mean He abandoned all His commitments made with Israel. Nor did He vacate a role for Israel. Rather, He found a new pathway to complete His original goals. The pathway obligates God with undeviating loyalty to respect covenants made in the past and new ones He would make. Thus, God held to His promise to past devotees while He reformulated a new way to move the Biblical Civilization into the future. The Biblical Civilization was in a state of flux when Christianity appeared. It, itself, was not failing nor was it succeeding. The civilization was confined. It was at a standstill. It was not growing. It was a time of transition for moving from Stage IV to Stage V.

The rapid growth of Christianity as a link with Judaism is open evidence that this new religion met a fundamental condition of growth, that is, growth occurs when all the necessary vital factors for increase and expansion are present. This is like plant growth which increases when soil, water and sunshine are all present to give the plant the vitality it needs. The growth of the Biblical Civilization occurred because more problems were being solved than problems it was generating. The Roman historian Tacitus stated that Christianity had spread from Palestine to all segments of the Roman empire within a 25 year period. Judaism remained confined in Palestine for over 2000 years. If anything, Judaism was shrinking and splitting into many segmental groups. *Judaism was going nowhere!* It started exclusively for the Jews and remained exclusive. The Gentiles and the world were left out! The Judaic devotees kept that exclusivity from the rest of the world tight. The door was shut for the involvement and salvation of a global population. The non-Jews, a huge population needing God, were left drifting with no direction. If Christianity had not arrived, Judaism would not only be confined, but may have been relegated to extinction with the Roman pulverization and scattering in 70 AD. Christianity was, therefore a plan to link with Judaism for keeping Judaic values alive and sharing them with all members of the human family. The Christians inherited from the Jewish matrix a strong sense of being "called out". They felt the role of God's chosen people like a baton, was passed on to them. A glance backward in history reveals the plan is progressing as Christianity continues to grow as a movement toward a global position. The movement is still alive. The movement is still progressive. It is an active force as the largest religious set of values in the world today. This is because Jesus is alive and behind the movement. If it wasn't for Jesus and Paul, the God of Israel would still have been the God of a handful of petty, obscure and

insignificant tribes. The magnificent moral teaching of Moses, Isaiah, Jeremiah and Ezekial would still be confined to a thinly, scattered group of people. It was Paul who made the Jewish Messiah, Jesus, known outside of Judaism. In doing this, he has also made the God of Judaism, Moses and the Old Testament prophets known to people outside of Judaism. Some Jews can't forgive Paul for having shared the light of life with other nations. Interesting to note, had the Jews accepted Jesus as the Messiah, Judaism would not have been dissolved into the sea of Christianity, but rather survived, grown and become global. If the Jews accepted the teaching of Jesus of "love your enemies" and loved the Romans or at least been friendly with them, they would not have lost their temple. Jerusalem would have been saved, the killing of 1.1 million Jews would have been avoided and the diaspora scattering in foreign lands would not have taken place.

As we view history in an overview, the character of Western Civilization can be seen as the by-product of Edenism, Judaism and Christianity. The fundamental values of Edenism are *power* and *design*. That of Judaism are *law* and *justice*. That of Christianity are *love* and *mercy*. That of the future Stage VI which we have labeled as Messianism are *wisdom* and *understanding*. Humankind will have learned much from history and their experiences. That of the final Stage VII of the future are *life* and *culture*. The final stage is the integration of power, justice, love and wisdom into a new civilization. One can see the whole world, as it now exists, is striving toward a higher level of existence. Civilizations of the past revealed this surge toward higher levels. When the final level has been attained, God will emerge at this level.

The matrix of variable beliefs will converge into a single, unified and transforming influence for the upgrading of all humanity. Great truths will be made clear. The definition and likeness of God will not be debated. The grounds of salvation will be simple and opened to all. The seat of final authority and ownership will be established and accepted. The social issues of race, gender, class and cultures will be solved. The links between theological, intellectual, scientific and moral will be conceived and established. The spiritual and the supernatural will not be mysterious, but well known to the human and the natural.

The reasons and background for the vigorous growth of Christianity and how it links with Judaism is the subject of the next sections.

## HOW DO WE KNOW JESUS REALLY LIVED?

“Whom do men say that I the son of man am?” Matthew 16:13

How does one go about establishing or proving that any particular person in history actually lived? Several ways can be cited. For one, check the birth records that are available in the towns they were born. Tax records or government benefit records would identify the individual. This is difficult since in ancient or even medieval times no such records exist. If they did they are now lost. Another way is to read what people wrote about them. These are writers of the time who knew about them and the activities they engaged in. Alexander the Great and King Richard of England are known because someone wrote about them. Still another way is to examine physical monuments built to celebrate their life long journey. The obelisk in Egypt established the existence of Ramses. The sculptured head in the Louve in Paris identifies Antiochus Epiphanies IV of 167 BC. Still another way is to examine the imprint or achievement they left in their legacy. Julius Caesar’s existence is known by the lands he conquered and the empire he built. Moses is known by the laws he brought to the Hebrew people. These laws are still preserved and have changed the course of history.

Critics of the Bible continue to attack the validity and provability of scriptures. Recently, Time Magazine did a cover story titled “Is the Bible Fact or Fiction?” While Time couldn’t bring itself to declare the Bible is fiction, it’s reporters quoted enough scholars to lead the skeptical and doubting minds to the conclusion that the Bible contains elements of historical facts you can’t rely on nor to follow to order your life. Because archaeologists have not found any direct physical evidence that Moses nor Jesus ever lived. They infer these characters were invented to prove the points of the writers. There are no monuments built to celebrate the life of Jesus nor are there birth records to show that Moses existed, but writers have written about both of them. More important Jesus left an imprint on mankind that has inspired an unknown poet to write and summarize his life in the poem “One Solitary Life”. The poet said:

Jesus was born in an obscure village, the child of a peasant woman.

He grew up in still another village, where he worked in a carpenter’s shop until he was thirty. Then for three years he was an itinerant preacher.

He never wrote a book. He never held an office. He never had a family or owned a house. He did not go to college. He never visited a big city. He never



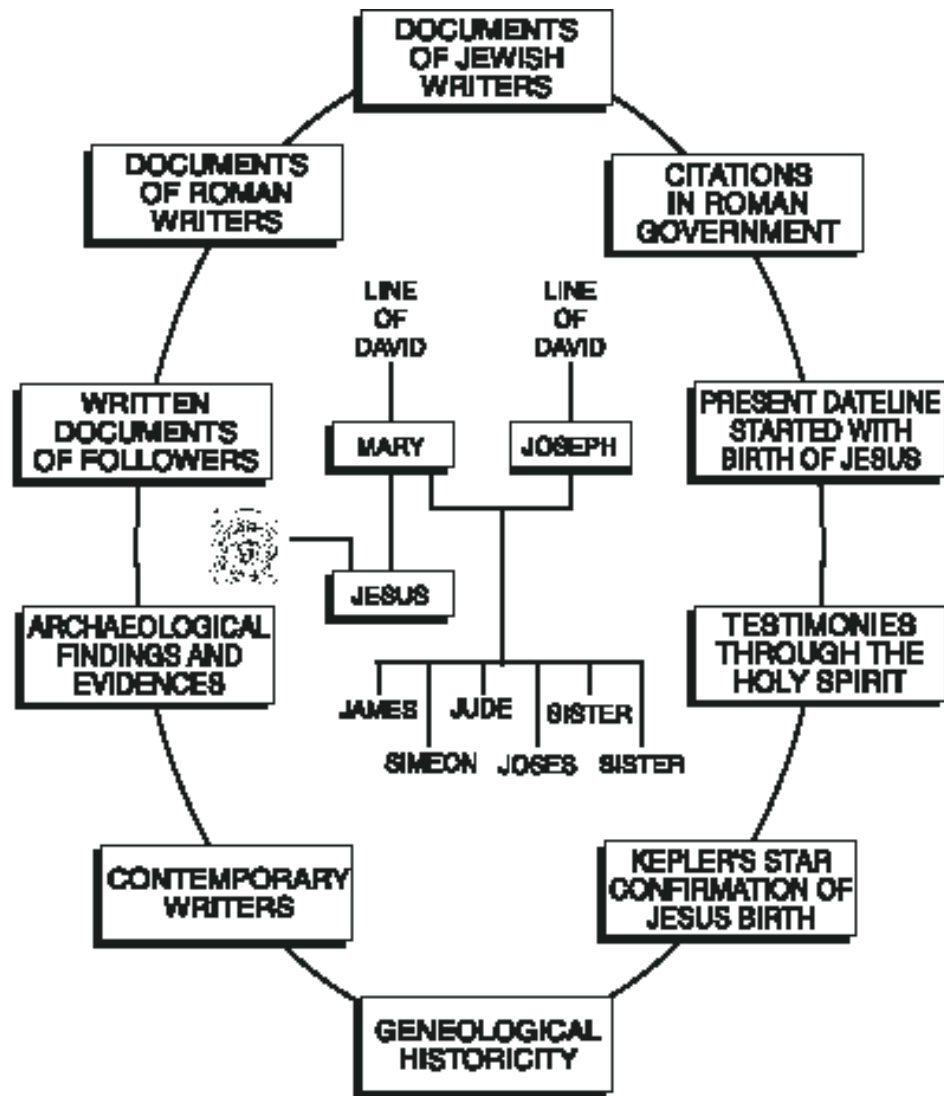
traveled two hundred miles from the place where he was born. He did none of the things one usually associates with greatness.

He had no credentials but himself.

He was only thirty-three when the tide of public opinion turned against him. His friends ran away. He was turned over to his enemies and went through the mockery of a trial. He was nailed to a cross between two thieves. While he was dying, his executioners gambled for his clothing, the only property he had on earth. When he was dead, he was laid in a borrowed grave through the pity of a friend.

Nineteen centuries have come and gone, and today he remains the central figure of the human race, and the leader of mankind's progress. All the armies that ever marched, all the navies that ever sailed, all parliaments that ever sat, all the kings that ever reigned, *put together*, have not affected the life of man on this planet so much as that one solitary life.

Jesus did not captivate the attention of ancient historians of his time. Nor does archaeology directly contribute to a complete understanding of events of Jesus' life and ministry. He is depicted as an eloquent preacher, skilled healer, and a miracle worker with an undeviating mission. Now Biblical scholars are uncovering elements of his mission. This mission involves the issues of life and death. This may very well be the major reason for Jesus' quick acceptance by the people and the subsequent growth of Christianity throughout the world. The preponderance of evidence supports the existence of Jesus even though many still deny him. The communistic world for example, teach Jesus was invented in Second Century to support the bourgeois class. Other religions and philosophical writers continue to argue that Jesus of the Gospels did not exist. Yet, his existence is known and his birth verified by an amazing throng of people throughout history. Ten factors can be identified. See Figure 8.1.



**Figure 8.1 Ten Ways to Know Jesus Existed**

The major source of information about the life of Jesus of Nazareth is found in the writings of his followers - Matthew, Mark, Luke and John. Other writers such as Paul, Peter and James relate and refer frequently and indirectly about him. The history of the early church is another indirect source of information. Jesus himself, never wrote. Even the writers of Jesus never wrote during his lifetime. Their records were produced probably in the middle of the First Century AD. The Old Testament largely reflects the varied history of the people of Israel, approximately 200 years. Much is seen prophetically in the Old Testament about the forth coming Jesus. The New Testament is concerned with the life and sayings of a few individuals around his disciples, Apostles and the early church with an approximate period of 100 years. Archaeologists cannot produce direct physical evidence of the life

of Christ other than to reconstruct the environment, the villages, the cities and the miracle sites where Jesus lived, worked and died.

Nonetheless, there are some non-Christian references and evidences about Jesus from secular sources which enable us to get a bold, confirming and consistent picture of this astonishing person. These references and evidences confirm the New Testament which provided the details in the gaps that complete an overview of his life. Most references picture Jesus as a counterculture rebel, an insurrectionist or having an affair with Mary Magdeline. In some cases, the reports of these writers were hostile to Jesus and Christianity as well. The writers had a myopic view. They were not well informed. Certainly, they did not have information sources as contemporary historians would have. Yet, these writers accepted the existence of Jesus as a fact and confirmed that Christianity was a widespread and growing movement. Their reports were interpretations which made the life of Jesus controversial, but they discounted completely that Jesus was a mythical figure who never existed. Here is a summary of some of these references and evidences:

1. *From the Roman Writers:* Cornelius Tacitus, a Roman historian in 115 AD, Governor of Asia, cites the great fire in Rome in 64 AD where Nero deceptively and cruelly blames the Christians. Tacitus identifies the Christian group as founded by a man called “Chistus” who was executed by Pontius Pilot when Tiberius was emperor. He also identifies and describes nasty and disgusting ideas from this group that conflict with their pagan practices of the Roman gods. These ideas were pouring into the Roman empire from all over the world creating a non-stoppable following. Tacitus continues to report that Nero saw the Christians as having noxious superstitions. Nero issued an edict that any and all who confessed to these noxious superstitions were to be tried and if found guilty to be executed. Nero’s charge of arson was only one type of conviction. Noxious superstitions was another. Several forms of executions were used. These included eating by lions and tigers. Torn to pieces by dogs, slow death on a cross and burning to illuminate the night. (Tacitus annuals 15:44)

Pliny, the Younger, contemporary historian with Tacitus wrote a letter to the Emperor Trajan about the Christians. He was seeking counsel on how to deal with them. Pliny describes the Christians as a group of zealots spreading like wildfire to become a social and economic problem. Pagan temples were closing down, sacred festivals were being deserted and the demand for sacrificed animals had ceased. Pliny as Governor of Bithynia in Asia Minor

identified the Christians as never committing fraud, theft, adultery or falsifying their word. Pliny even complained the Christians refused to worship the imperial status and images of the Gods. They had a habit of singing hymns to Christ as a God. (Epistles X 9.6)

Mara Bar-Serapion, a Syrian non-Christian wrote a letter from prison in the seventies of the First Century reflecting on the advantages and disadvantages of putting to death leaders and statesmen of reputation. He referred to the great turmoil, plague and famine the Athenians received from putting Socrates to death. In this same letter Serapion draws a parallel by referring to the great destruction the Jews received from executing their wise king. The Jews were sacked, humiliated and dispersed as a nation. The wise king was an obvious reference to Jesus.

Letter to Tiberius from Pontius Pilot<sup>1</sup> who describes a young man named Jesus who was neither seditious nor rebellious. Pilot reports the claims that this man was stirring up the people against Rome was not true. He was a victim of a local plot. The letter was more of a report of the facts concerning Jesus who reputedly performed many miracles and even brought a man from death to life. This Jesus of Nazareth , about 30 years of age, was a preacher with a very humble attitude. There was nothing in him that was repelling. Nor was his character hostile and uninviting. All in all, Pilot indicated the deep impression Jesus made on him of his simplicity, humility and affection.

Justin Martyr, a philosopher born in Flavia Neapolis about 150 AD wrote defending Christianity to Emperor Antoninus Pius. In this defense, he referred to Pilot's report addressing himself to the crucifixion in which they pierced his hands and his feet. Other who have described Martyr, saw him converted to Christianity and gave a wholehearted dedication to the movement. He lost his life as a result. His name became associated with those Christians who lost their lives. They became "martyrs".

Seutonius, Roman Biographer and author of the literary record "Lives of the Caesars" wrote during Nero's reign about the Christians. In several biographies in the lives of the Caesars, he describes events where brief mentions are made of Jesus and the activities generated in Judea because of his ministry. He referred to the Christians as a class of believers given to a new and mischievous superstition.

Publius Lentulus' letter to the Roman Senate describes Jesus Christ, a man of great virtue accepted by the Gentiles. He cites the disciples of Jesus referred to him as the son of God. He made reference to the miracles of Jesus such as curing diseases and raising the dead. Lentulus gave a description of Jesus which would be typical

Jewish. He cites the character of Jesus as admonishing, courteous and pleasant in conversation. The letter refers to Jesus as a wise man.

2. *From the Jewish Writers:* Flavius Josephus, famous Jewish historian, 37 to 95 AD, a non-Christian cites many names found in the New Testament such as the Herods, Caiaphus, John the Baptists, James brother of Jesus and an extended reference to Jesus. These name references validates the name references cited in the four gospels. Josephus referred to Jesus as a wise man who performed astonishing deeds. He even wondered if Jesus was a man. Josephus reports that the teaching of Jesus became a movement as many Jews and Greeks were converted to him. In several areas, Josephus refers to Jesus as the Christ - the Messiah who was a doer of wonderful deeds. He included in his report the death of Jesus, but reappeared the third day alive. The group of converts were called Christians. The group was growing in number when his historic report was being written. For Josephus to record this biography is noteworthy since he was at the age of nineteen and continued to be a Pharisee. The Pharisee group was often in conflict with Jesus and his many activities. (Antiquities 18:33)

Thallus, the Samaritan born historian wrote in 52 AD about Christ, but unfortunately his original writings have been lost. We know of him through quotations of other writers, Julius Africanus cites him in 221 AD to explain the darkness which fell on Palestine during Christ's crucifixion. The point he made was the darkness could not have been from the time of the full moon since the moon is what causes the eclipse. The explanation must be from unnatural causes.

References in the Jewish Talmuds have been reported by Josh McDowell<sup>2</sup> in his book "Evidence that Demands a Verdict". He compiled many references of "Jeshu be Pandera" - Jesus, son of a virgin. Comments in these Talmud are confirming evidences of the life of Jesus even though the context of interpretation is negative. They identify the crucifixion event on the "eve of the Passover". The statements attributed much of Jesus as acts of sorcery and Jesus as a bastard of an adulteress.

3. *Evidences from Biblical Archaeologists:* Archaeology has not revealed with conclusive and indisputable proof any place or artifact *directly* relating to Jesus and his family. This may be true of thousands of people who had lived 2000 years ago. Nonetheless, archaeological remains, ancient ruins, geographical materials, historic constructions do still exist which confirms *indirectly* to the time period and activities of Jesus' ministry. These

remains also confirm the events and miracles described by the Gospel writers, the secular historians and the activities of Pilot, Herod, the disciples of Jesus and the crucifixion event. Here is a brief list of archaeological remains and historic construction sites which still exist today in Israel that confirms the Old and New Testament scenarios with their testimonies:

- a. Overview of Jerusalem seen from the Mount of Olives has not changed in 2000 years.
- b. Palm Sunday road where Jesus entered Jerusalem as a proclaimed king is still there.
- c. Kidron Valley and it's cemetery of 70,000 Jews still exists, but formally known as the Valley of Jehosaphath.
- d. Ascension area where Jesus taken up into heaven is marked with a church structure.
- e. Eight olive trees approximately 2,000 years old is where Jesus may have given his Olivet discourse.
- f. Grotto of Gethsemane, possible site of Judas' betrayal of Jesus.
- g. Potter's field at the junction of Hinnom and Kidron Valleys which was purchased with bribery money - 30 pieces of silver.
- h. Antonia Fortress where Jesus was flogged and the start of his last journey to Golgotha.
- i. The sealed Golden Gate on the Temple Mount which was entered by Jesus when proclaimed king.
- j. The House of Caiaphus and the prison dungeon where Jesus awaited for trial.
- k. Hinnon Valley also called Gehenna where the refuse of the city was burned.
- l. Western (Wailing) Wall, Wilson's Arch and Robinson's Arch as remnant remains of the retaining walls that circled the Temple Mount.
- m. Pool of Bethesda where Jesus healed a man who was lame for 38 years.
- n. St. Stephan's Gate, the traditional spot where Stephan was stoned to death.
- o. Cave in Bethlehem where the manger was at the birthplace of Jesus.
- p. The road to Bethlehem, the ancient ridge road where Abraham and the Patriarchs traveled.
- q. The Tomb of Rachael, wife of Jacob who died giving birth to Benjamin.
- r. Room of the Last Supper, where Jesus instituted the first memorial.
- s. Gordon's Garden Tomb and the site of the resurrection of Jesus.

- t. Jezreel Valley and the plains of Megiddo.
- u. The brook of Moreh in the Valley of Elah where David found his stones to slay Goliath.
- v. Mount Tabor - the traditional site of the transfiguration.
- w. The synagogue of Capernaum and the house of Peter.
- x. The Arbel, possible site of the Sermon on the Mount.
- y. Bedouin Campsites - a view of life 4,000 years ago.
- z. Masada, Herod's fortress where 967 zealots ended their lives rather than surrender to the Romans.
- aa. Qumran Caves where Dead Sea Scrolls were found.
- bb. Acrea, site of the Roman crusader ruins.
- cc. Elijah's cave where Elijah hid from Jezebel.
- dd. Caesarea and the ancient Roman capitol of Judea.

An Israeli archaeologist, Professor Sukenik<sup>3</sup> in 1945 uncovered a sealed tomb just outside Jerusalem. The contents of the tomb were intact which included bone caskets. The caskets were clearly marked with crosses symbolic of the early Christians. Both caskets had the names of Jesus inscribed on the caskets. This inscription implies that Jesus was connected with the hope of the resurrection for the one who was buried there. Sukenik found it in the tomb dated approximately 50 AD.

Many tomb and cemetery remains uncovered by archaeologists had inscribed on them the "fish" symbol. The Greek word for fish is "Ichthus". Early Christians saw that each of the fish letters represented in Greek "Jesus Christ, Son of God, Savior". The fish expression was used to identify Christians especially in areas where persecution and incarceration was rampant.

Pontius Pilot's inscription on a stone bearing his name is in front of the Roman Theater in Caesarea Maritima, city of Pilot's residence in Israel. Pilot was prefect from 26 AD to 36 AD. Despite the stone's poor condition, three of the original four lines is still visible; "Tiberium of the Caesarians, Pontius Pilot, Prefect of Judea". I personally confirm the inscription on this stone in the ruins at Caesarea as well as all the other historic sites.

4. *From Contemporary Writers.* Professor Tischendorf transcribed the Codex Sinaiticus which is a sister manuscript to the Vaticanus which dates approximately the mid-Fourth Century. These documents remain the oldest

and the most complete of the Old and New Testaments. It took 360 young sheep and goat skins to contain these writings. Tischendorf found the existing books of the Old and New Testaments used today had suffered little textual change from the original. This gives reassuring consistency with the original written documents. The Gospel descriptions and records of the life of Jesus and the subsequent copyists were reasonably accurate and reliable in reproducing the actual origin.

Evidence of the Dead Sea Scrolls. These scrolls were discovered in 1947 at Qumran by a Bedouin youth named Muhammed Adh-Dhib while searching for his lost goat. Over 42,000 fragments of scrolls were found in over 10 caves. This made up the 800 manuscript scrolls. The findings describe the Essenes - a group of Jews contemporary with Jesus. The Essenes were long known as they were referred to by Josephus, Philo and Pliny. It was the Essenes who wrote the scrolls describing the period of their times. Fragments from almost every book of the Old Testament were found. The Essenes have serious disagreements with both the Pharisees and the priesthood in Jerusalem. These disagreements caused a disassociation and subsequent separation. They left Jerusalem to abandon the polluted temple and the sin-stained city to establish a pure community in a desert conclave. This conclave was Qumran. There they were to remain to prepare themselves to receive the Messianic era. Even though this group was far removed in time and distance from the events they were describing, the words they used had a strikingly original and authentic ring with the New Testament. The similarities between the practices of the Qumran community and the New Testament teachings are especially noteworthy. For example, the Qumran community had one teacher and 12 disciples. Their goods were in common. They practiced baptism daily and they shared a communal meal. The scrolls they produced contained no recognizable mention of Jesus nor the Christian movement. Surprisingly, the New Testament does not refer to the Essenes group. The intriguing features of the scrolls are that they use the type of language and concepts found in the New Testament such as war between the sons of light with the sons of darkness, children of the light, spirit of truth, walking in the darkness, etc. Included in the discovery of the sectarian scrolls was a manual setting rules for the congregation of Israel in the last days. It actually described the covenant between God and the Essenes, the laws and the regulations, the principles of religion and the rules of conduct. The similarity of cadence and words with the New Testament is striking. The Qumran community expected life would continue as it was until the coming of the prophet, the anointed one, the Messiah of Aaron and Israel. Other



fragments of Qumran refers to Melchizedek, King of Salem. This was described earlier in Stage IV of the Judaic period. In the Qumran fragment, Melchizedek is associated with a series of Messianic quotations. The Qumran interpretations disclosed at least two different Messiahs at two different periods of time - a Davidic king and an Aaronic priest. More will be said of this in the future section on the Messiah.

Bellarmino Bagatti in 1955 excavated in Nazareth beneath the Church of the Annunciation ruins that appears to be a Jewish/Christian synagogue. The excavator called it a “synagogue church”. This may have been the first church built in Nazareth by Joseph Tiberius, an eminent Jew who converted to Christianity.

Charles Gordan in 1883 excavated a tomb site now known as the “Garden Tomb”. This site is proposed as the burial place of Jesus. It is located 100 yards outside the Damascus Gate. The site is controversial since many burial sites have been uncovered. Several evidences have been presented by General Gordan to support the conclusion that the Garden Tomb is the burial place of Jesus. For one, Skull Hill is next to the garden which represents Golgotha or Calvary. This topographic configuration even has the “look” of a skull. For another, it was the lay of the land, north of the city of Jerusalem. Gordan reasoned that sacrificial lambs used as types would be slain north of the city. Jesus would be the antitype slain north of the altar of the temple. Gordan’s vision of this layout was a skeleton superimposed on the city of Jerusalem with the skull at the Garden Tomb and the hips at the Dome of the Rock with the feet extended to the Pool of Siloam. Protestant and Evangelical groups favor this site because of its appeal as a garden.

#### THE MANY ROLES OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

Roman Centurian: “Truly, this was the Son of God.” Matthew 27:54

Who can compute accurately all that Jesus has meant to humanity? The love he has inspired, the peace he has given, the good he has engendered, the hope and the joy he has kindled - all that and more - is unequalled in human history. Jesus has started a movement which has made Christianity the largest religion in the world. It is still growing. The name of Jesus appears over 1000 times in the New Testament. References of him both in the Old and New Testament are uncountable. He is often titled Jesus the Nazarene pinpointing his geographical home. He is also called Jesus Christ relating to his anointing and his Messiahship. Also he is referred to as the Son of God revealing a

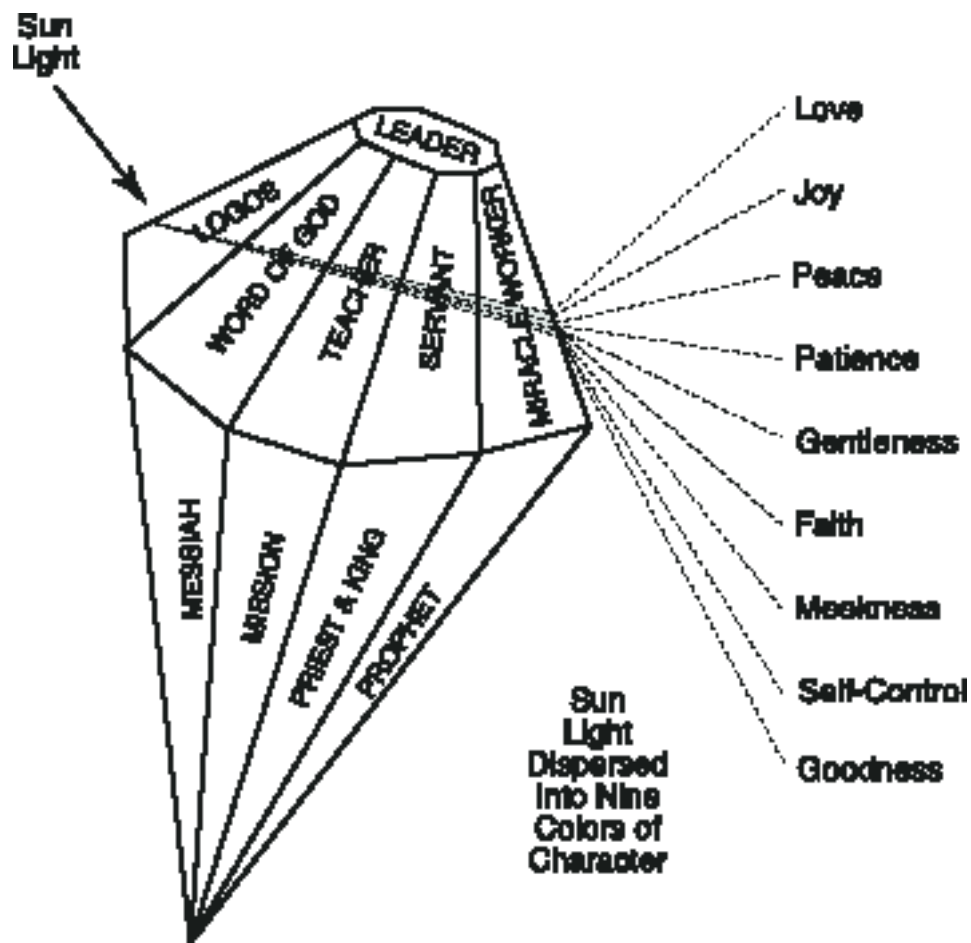
pre-existence relationship. Finally, he preferred to call himself Son of Man suggesting a preferred humility in his earthly life.

But what is it about this individual that was born into the world with such unfathomable mystery and long-standing controversies that his existence and memory is still with us. One would expect after 2000 years he would be forgotten by now. Why would this Jesus become a centerpiece in human history with critical knowledge that involves the issues of life and death? Should one expect another fellow human being to be the author of life itself? Who is this person whose only goal was to serve God and his fellow human beings? While doing this, he accomplished many other goals. His humility is unparalleled. He lived as if he was executing a mission. One might even say his life was a mission. How could this Jesus forecast events and future scenarios with unerring accuracy? One would need exceptional power to see a future episode. What is it about this Jesus that made him a leader? People will follow him today anywhere and anytime even if it means their death. This is extraordinary! Few, if any in history, emerged as this type of leader. His life directed the mainstream of history. How could this man defy the natural and physical laws of life and environment to produce miracles that are astonishing? He even raised the dead. Who is this man that even the calendar was changed with his birth? There are disputes whether it was 7 BC, 2 BC, or 4 AD. Nonetheless his arrival was so significant that our present year is counted from his birth. Our present timeline date confirms indirectly the birth of Jesus. The world's population at the time of his birth was 200 million with approximately 7-8 million Jews. Most all of these are forgotten, but Jesus is still on the minds, lips and hearts of people today.

These and other questions are the subjects of this section. The author apologizes to the reader if the treatment of Jesus in this section is shallow. His life was too colossal for the pen of an unartful writer. His life can be seen in ten intricately interwoven roles:

- |                              |                              |
|------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. Jesus as the Logos        | 6. Jesus as a Prophet        |
| 2. Jesus as the Word of God  | 7. Jesus as a Leader         |
| 3. Jesus as a Teacher        | 8. Jesus as a Mission        |
| 4. Jesus as a Servant        | 9. Jesus as the Messiah      |
| 5. Jesus as a Miracle Worker | 10. Jesus as Priest and King |

Jesus' many roles produces a multifaceted diamond that disperses light into quality features of his character. This is symbolically portrayed in Figure 8.2. Jesus, like a diamond when held to light and turned to catch a sunbeam, a dispersion occurs. The results is a spectrum of magnificent colors. Turn it again in a different direction and a new spectrum of colors is experienced. Beautiful colors in the dispersion of light symbolizes the character effects of the life of Jesus in his many roles. In spite of these superficial divisions of his life, the depth of his nature still remains as a mystery. But we come closer to an understanding of the mystery by examining the roles as separate entities.



**Figure 8.2 Jesus' Many Roles Produces a Multifaceted Diamond**

1. *Jesus as the Logos (Pre-human existence)*

“Father, glorify me with the glory I had with thee before the world was.” John 17:5

Jesus did not begin life here on earth. He had a pre-human existence as the Logos - meaning “the word”. From many scriptures, the Logos was the first creation of God in the early eons of time. Michah 5:12 speaks of his existence from everlasting. The Logos was regarded as the only begotten son by John 1:14. If estimates of modern

day scientists as to the age of the physical universe are anywhere near correct, the Logos' existence began billions of years prior to the creation of the earth. The Hubble Telescope on a new satellite orbit is expected to see distances 14 billion light years away. If the origin of light was at least this figure, it would make the existence of the Logos *at least* 2.6 quadrillion years ago. This probably falls far short of the actual figure. This enormous period of time would include the creation of billions of other spiritual sons of God as a heavenly family as well as the physical universe itself. The Logos shared in the creative works of God. This relationship was not a co-creator relationship, but more an agent or instrumentality from which the power of God was channeled. It can be reasonably concluded that Jesus was with God and spoke for him in Eden when God said, "let *us* make man in our image". (Genesis 1:26) It also can be reasonably inferred he was the one who guided Israel through the wilderness when God said, "obey his voice and do all that I speak". (Exodus 23:20-23) It also can be reasonably inferred he was the fourth one in the fiery furnace when Shadrach, Meshasch and Abednego were cast in the fiery doom for refusing to worship the image of gold. (Daniel 3:25) Thus there was several roles the Logos occupied in his pre-human existence: a creation assistant ( Colossians 1:16); a protector (Daniel 3:25); a planner (Revelation 13:8); a preserver of law and order (Job 26:7); a communicator (John 1:1); a praiser (Job 38:7).

The birth of the Logos to a human conception with the Virgin Mary is shrouded with much mystery. It cannot be adequately explained. It was not a death of the Logos, but a translation from spiritual to human without the interruption of his life principle. Thereafter, he was called Jesus, the son of man. With this process, he retained his identity as the same person who resided in his pre-existence as the word. The perfect life force, in the translation, was strong enough to cause conception and to cancel out any flaws in the womb of his translated new home. This produced a genetic pattern and an embryonic development that was flawless from the start. The power of God overruled any natural negative influences so that the child was born holy and perfect. The mysterious star which announced his birth is another mystery. Many theories have been offered to explain it. Some have said the star was a flying saucer. This is not likely since saucers are erratic in their movements and not visible at great distances. Some have theorized a luminous body such as a star moved into place for this purpose. This also is not likely since a second sun bearing on earth would cause enormous environmental negative effects that would be disastrous. The theory most appealing has been offered by the famous German astronomer, John Kepler (1571-1630) who observed

an unusual conjunction of planets in 1603 among Jupiter, Saturn and Mars. His calculations pointed to a similar conjunction that could have occurred between 7 BC to 4 AD. This conjunction of planets producing a large luminous body which could appear as a star harmonizes with two Old Testament prophecies - Numbers 24:17, “a star shall come out of Jacob and a scepter shall rise out of Israel” and Micah 5:2 “Thou Bethlehem out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel whose goings forth have been from old, from everlasting. The unusual light in the sky would signal the birth of the king of the Jews. The Magi were not magicians, nor astrologers, nor kings. They were Jewish scientists who studied the Torah, knew the prophecies of the Messiah and saw the spectacular light in the sky. Several reasons are offered why they were Jewish scientists. First, to study the movement of the planet and stars one must be a scientist. Second, they were Jewish because they were waiting for the sign of the Messiah’s arrival. They knew the Torah. Third, the record shows they prostrated themselves before the babe in the manger. Gentile kings nor pagan astrologers would do this to a Jew. Fourth and finally, anti-Semitism was as prevalent then as it is now. Gentiles would not likely worship a Jewish person. The babe in the manger was given gold, frankincense and myrrh. These are the ingredients of priests in the practice of religious worship. These gifts were given to the babe Jesus in recognition as Messiah/King. These students of the Torah practiced scanning the skies frequently. When they saw the astronomical phenomena, they were convinced the Messiah arrived. They proceeded to find him through Herod. Eventually, they located the child in Bethlehem. Thus the Logos entered the human realm shrouded with many mysteries. It should be noted in this perspective of Jesus, he was born three times, but died only once. He was the first-born of creation as a spirit. (Colossians 1:15) He was born the son of man as a human. (Luke 2:11) He was born the first resurrected from the dead as a divine being. (Revelations 1:5) His origin was as the Logos.

A question is often raised if Joseph was not the father, why the two genealogies reported in the report? (Matthew 1:1-17; Luke 3:23-28) Several reasons may explain this. First, to establish the Davidic legacy an heir to the promises of the Old Testament (Isaiah 9:6-7) Second, to allay and prevent enemies of Jesus from criticizing the lineage from either Mary or Joseph. Third, to involve Joseph since Jewish women in Old Testament times had little, if any, legal standing. (Exodus 12:37) Finally to show the genealogy of Jesus was both noble and ignoble. In the genealogies for both Mary and Joseph, there are kings, patriots, adulteresses, harlots and gentiles. This revealed Jesus’ humility and

confirms the Gentiles were a part of the Messianic lineage. A brief genealogical outline from Adam to Jesus is seen in Figure 8.3.

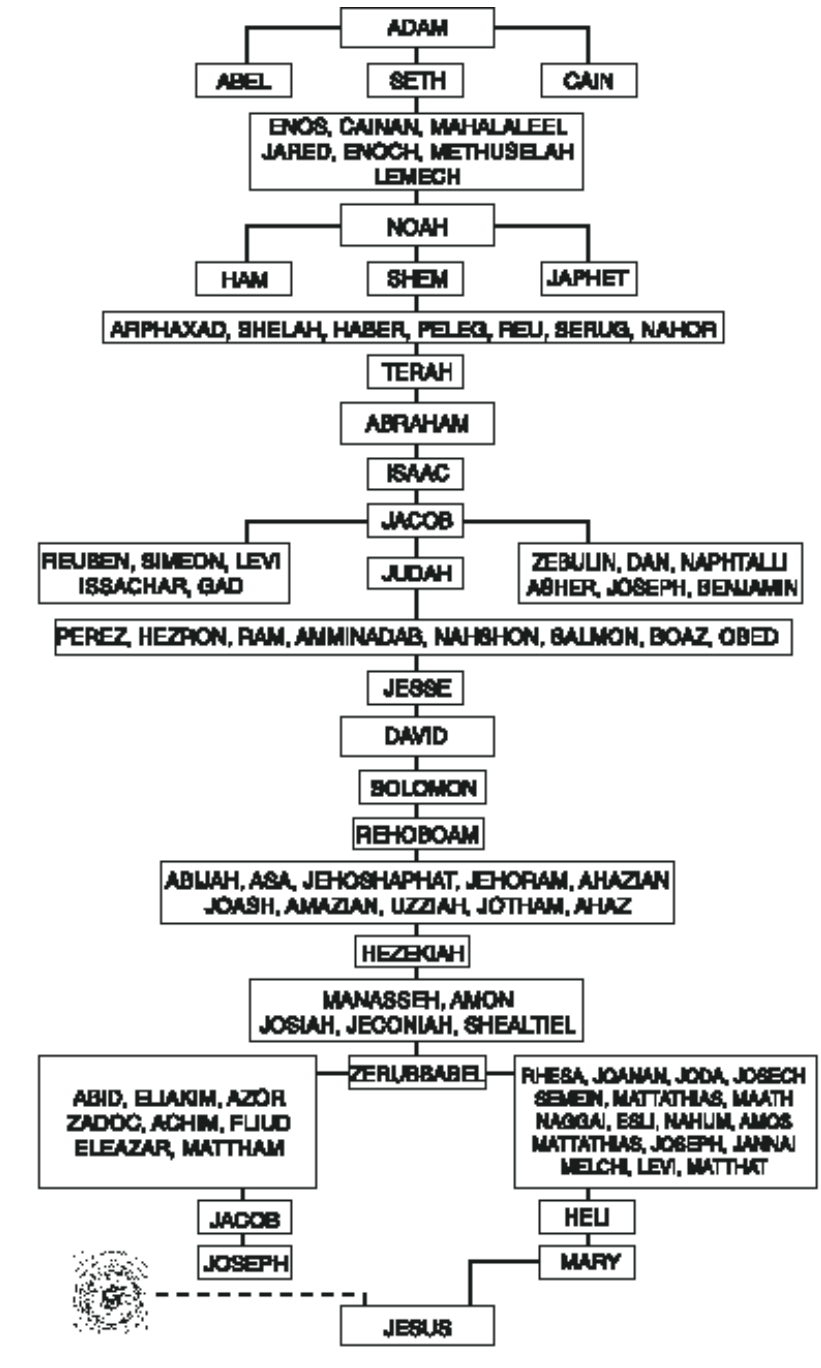


Figure 8.3 Genealogy of the Life of Jesus (Sixty-two Generations)

Furthermore, this author is not aware of anyone in the annals of history who can trace back their ancestral lineage greater than 4000 years. Jesus can be traced back 62 generations, approximately 4000 years with such specificity from the Bible as to his arrival, his presence and his departure.

Still another question has been raised whether Jesus had any brothers or sisters. The record shows he had four brothers, James, Joses, Simon and Judas and five sisters. (Matthew 13:55-56; Matthew 19:29) Obviously, they were stepbrothers and stepsisters having only a mother in common. They were born long after Jesus was born with Joseph as the natural father.

## 2. *Jesus as the Word of God.*

“The word of God came unto John.” Luke 3:2

When the earth was created, Jesus during his prehuman existence acted as God’s spokesperson to people on earth. He was, as the Logos, the go-between heavenly and earthly activities. He communicated for God. He handled relationships for God. He was the voice of God. This is the reason he is referred to as the “word of God”. A careful examination of the 66 books of the Bible will reveal that Jesus as the word of God is mentioned in every book as a metaphor or comparison with a quality feature that exemplifies his character, mission or role in his pre and after human existence.

### Specified metaphorical references of Jesus in the Old Testament:

Gen 3:15 Seed of woman	II Chron 20:16 God’s hand	Dan 9:25 Messiah
Ex 12:7 Blood on posts	Ezra 6:5 Holy vessel	Hos 13:9 Divine Helper
Lev 9:15 Sin offering	Neh 13:31 First Fruits	Joel 3:16 Hope in God
Nu 24:17 Morning star	Esth 10:3 Seed of peace	Amos 4:2 God’s Holiness
Deu 18:18 The prophet	Job 19:25 Redeemer	Obad 1:1 The vision
Jos 3:5 The Ark	Psm 45:7 Anointed one	Jon 1:1 Word of the Lord
Jud 2:2 The voice	Prov 18:10 Strong Tower	Mich 5:1 Judge of Israel
Ru 4:15 Restorer of life	Ecc 9:8 White Raiment	Naham 1:3 The whirlwind
I Sam 1:11 Lord of Hosts	S of S 2:1 Rose of Sharon	Hab 1:3 Purer Eyes
II Sam 22:32 The Rock	Is 9:6 Mighty Counselor	Zeph 3:12 Name of the Lord
I Kings 3:9 Wisdom	Jer 2:15 Fountain of life	Hag 2:19 Desire of all nations
II Kings 18:4 Brazen serpent	Lam 3:26 Salvation of the Lord	Zech 3:8 The Branch
I Chron 21:12 Sword of the Lord	Ez 10:18 Glory of the Lord	Mal 4:2 Son of righteousness

## Specified metaphorical references of Jesus in the New Testament:

Matt 26:24 The vine	Eph 2:12 Cornerstone	Heb 7:17 High Priest
Mark 1:24 Holy one	Phil 2:15 Light of the world	James 2:5 Chosen one
Lu 22:19 Bread of life	Col 1:18 Head of the Church	I Peter 5:4 Chief shepherd
John 8:12 Lamb of God	I Thes 2:5 Mediator	II Peter 3:10 Thief in the night
Acts 3:14 Just one	II Thes 3:3 Divine keeper	I John 2:1 Advocate
Ro 11:26 Deliverer	I Tim 6:2 Blessed Potentate	II John 1:3 Son of the Father
I Cor 15:45 Second Adam	II Tim 1:9 Called one	III John 12 The witness
II Cor 4:4 Image of God	Titus 3:1 Savior	Jude 21 The Mercy
Gal 5:22 Fruit of the spirit	Philem 2:15 Light of the world	Rev 19:17 King of kings

Jesus is directly or indirectly inferred to in all books of the Bible. Several themes can be identified with these inferences that connect his many roles and functions to be accomplished in his first and second advents. Since the Bible connects with Jesus in so many ways and since Jesus is regarded as the word of God, one can conclude the Bible is the word of God. The Bible is a book not only opened to those who want to know, but expected to be eaten. This is what Jesus meant in John 6:54, “except ye eat the flesh of the son of man and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. He that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood hath eternal life”. Eating the flesh of Jesus meant to ingest into one’s life his spiritual principles and commandments. Drinking his blood meant a willingness to accept the pain and sufferings that transforming a person’s life will require. Ezekial ate the book. (Ezekial 2:8-10; 3:1-3, 14) John the Revelator ate the book. (Revelation 10:8-9) For each, the book was sweet in the mouth, but the eatings would be bitter in the stomach. This suggests qualifying for eternal life is sweet, but the cost and sufferings would be bitter. Jesus is the book of the word or the word of God.

### 3. *Jesus as a Teacher.*

“And Jesus when he came out saw much people and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd; he began to teach them many things.” Mark 6:34

The words and teachings of Jesus are still on the minds and tongues of people. His parables alone, more than 40, are as fresh as when he first uttered them. Scholars continue to study what he said as much as before. Even though he never took up the pen, many consider him a literary genius. The remarkable ability of Jesus as a teacher was due to the integration of his character, his message and his method. This is like saying truth, personality and style were one. His life was not detached from his teaching. His method related to the people he was reaching. Some teachers



tell others what to do and say, but they themselves do not believe not what they are saying. Jesus proclaimed the truth and his life was an embodiment of this truth. It is this oneness that made his message understandable and believable. Nicodemus, a wealthy and well educated man, a Pharisee, ruler of the Jews, teacher of the Law and close associate of the famous Gamabiel said of Jesus, “You are a teacher come from God”. (John 3:2) His manner of teaching was remarkably effective. He presented matters of great complexity and baffling difficulty with simplicity, brevity and clarity. To those he wanted to reach, he used simple metaphors known by the common people such as bread, water, salt, vineyards, weddings, fig trees, shepherd, sower and fishing. He wanted with his message to reach the hearts as well as the minds. To those he did not want to reach, he spoke in parables, dark sayings and mysteries. On one occasion the words were so mysterious and highly figurative that many who were curiously following him left him saying, “This is a hard and difficult saying to understand and believe”. This is when Jesus said, “Unless you eat the flesh and drink the blood of the son of man you have no life in you”. (John 6:60)

During his teaching ministry he began to gather disciples around him to make teachers of them. This added an additional quality to his mastership as a teacher. A master teacher not only teaches, but creates within the learner, the desire to become a teacher for what one has learned. This is the essence of the Christian movement. Conversion means new teachers to perpetuate the messages of the original teacher. He never traveled more than 200 miles from the place he was born, but he was thoroughly effective in the locality of his concentration. The fact that he experienced immediate conversions indicates he was penetrating and persuasive.

Any attempt to summarize his teachings would be a futile exercise. After all the Bible contains his entire teaching portfolio in both overview and details. Needless to say, they have been interpreted in so many different ways. However, highlights of his message will be suggested as follows:

a. *Knowing God.* “The first of all commandments is, hear, O Israel, the Lord God is one Lord.” (Mark 12:29-33) Jesus made God real and personal. He taught that God is a Father. He spoke often on how to reach God and love him. He brought the message that God cares for mankind both sinners and non-sinners. Jesus emphasized God is one and not many.

b. *Being influenced by the Holy Spirit.* “In the Holy Spirit shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.” (Luke 12:12) Jesus teaches the Holy Spirit is the power and influence of God in one’s life. This spirit will give the truth and be a comforter. This same spirit comes from God to give guidance and direction to people’s lives.

c. *Perceiving the Spiritual World.* “A spirit hath not flesh and bones as you see me have.” (Luke 24:39) Jesus teaches there’s a spirit world beyond the earth where God and the Angels live. He invites others to journey to this world. This world is far bigger and more important than the small planet where humans live. The spirit world is radically different than the human world.

d. *Understanding the Scriptures.* “Search the scriptures for in them you will find external life in their pages. They testify of me.” (John 5:39) Jesus teaches that everything he learned from God was being conveyed to them. The scriptures are knowledge and wisdom. The study of the scriptures is to discover the plan of God and the message that God has for all people.

e. *Having a clear perception of Satan and Evil.* “You are of your father the devil.” (John 8:44) Jesus teaches there is a devil who is the evil one, an enemy of God who goes about tempting and luring people to evil ways. He is a spiritual being who controls, invisibly, people and organizations here on earth.

f. *Avoiding Sin.* “I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.” (Matthew 9:13) Jesus spoke much about sin - the breakage of moral laws. He describes how sin is bondage holding back life. His teachings critically urges not to sin and thus avoid the permanent death. He also pointed to the inherited sin from Father Adam. Non-conformance to God’s laws is a definition of sin.

g. *Pursuing the opportunity for life.* “I am the resurrection and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.” (John 11:25) Jesus teaches he is the one through which everlasting life can be obtained. No other person in history has ever made that statement. No other person claims to be the channel for life everlasting. Jesus teaches the Bible is the map which reveals the road to life.

h. *Understanding the Ransom and Salvation.* “The son of man came not to be ministered unto but to minister and to give his life a ransom for many.” (Matthew 20:28) Jesus teaches his life was given as a redemption for delivering those who are lost in the world. This is to counterbalance and erase the inherited original sin from Father Adam.

i. *Urging Repentance.* “Repent for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.” (Matthew 4:17) Jesus teaches imperfect and sinful behavior must change. This behavior is breaking God’s laws. It is non-conforming with behavior throughout the universe. Jesus teaches repentance is the first stage in the process of correction and change.

j. *Being Righteous.* “Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness for they shall be filled.” (Matthew 5:6) Jesus teaches the truth shall make a person free. This freedom must be guided by principles or the results would produce unrighteousness. When decisions in work, occupations, leisure time and communities follow principles, a righteous person emerges.

k. *Loving the truth.* “I am the way, the truth and the life; no man comes to the Father but by me.” (John 14:6) Jesus teaches the world is filled with lies, errors, mistakes, blunders, inaccuracies, carelessness, misunderstandings, and hypocrisies. Truth people are those who consciously and deliberately conduct their lives to avoid the failings of the world.

l. *Increasing your faith.* “If your faith is as a grain of mustard seed, you can say to this mountain move from here to a yonder place; it shall move; nothing shall be impossible for you.” (Matthew 17:20) Jesus teaches that faith means trust in God that his purposes and plans will one day be realized. Faith does not mean using God to give an individual some kind of gain. Rather, it means trusting and believing to such an intensity as to give God some kind of gain. Jesus teaches believing is being faithful. Great faith emerges from great beliefs and great contributions toward purposes of God.

m. *Engaging in Prayer.* “When you pray, say our Father who are in heaven.” (Luke 11:2) Jesus teaches who to pray to, how to pray and why to pray. The practice of prayer is a practice of the spirit. Praying to God is praying to a father who has given life.

n. *Calling of the Church.* “If you continue in my word, then are you my disciples, indeed.” (John 8:31) Jesus teaches doing his principles in everyday life makes a person a disciple. The collective body of disciples and doers of his teachings as defined as his church. Jesus teaches the invitation to be members of his church is open to any and all without discrimination or qualification.

o. *Loving others.* “You should love the Lord God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment. Second is like it. You should love your neighbor as yourself.”

(Matthew 22:37-40) Jesus teaches the highest priority in a Christian relationship is love for God, then love for others. Since God is love, the practice of love will make the Christian godly. Jesus' teachings on love is a major message of his ministry.

p. *Looking ahead for the Kingdom.* "I must preach the kingdom of God for therefore am I sent." (Luke 4:43) Jesus teaches a unique kingdom will be established on earth. It's operation will be as in Heaven. This expression occurs fifty times. This is the ultimate arrival of the Biblical Civilization. There has been no time in human history when the kingdom of God was on earth. It is still future. Jesus teaches in his model prayer, "Thy kingdom come thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven".

q. *Practicing Peace.* "Blessed are the peacemakers for they shall be called the sons of God." Jesus was a peacemaker. He was willing to encourage this peace with others. The greatest peace-making effort on his part was to remove the alienation between God and humans. Jesus teaches to remove alienation between and among people is a peace-making practice.

r. *Having Good Works.* "Let your light so shine before men that they may see your good works and glorify your Father who is in Heaven." (Matthew 5:16) Jesus teaches doing good things for others. When this is done, light shines before others. The practice of good works by Jesus in miracles and teachings was light in the world.

s. *Anticipating his Second Advent.* "I go to prepare a place for you. I will come again and receive you unto myself." (John 14:3) Jesus teaches there is one Messiah but two comings. The first advent as a redeemer. The second advent as a king with a kingdom. This kingdom will bring restitution and restoration of all things.

t. *Looking ahead to the Resurrection.* "Those who are worthy to obtain in that age of the resurrection of the dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage, neither can they die anymore." (Luke 20:36) Jesus teaches there will be a resurrection of the dead. It matters not who, when or why of those who have died. The resurrection of the dead is an incredible belief. Only faith in it, will it be understood.

The teaching of Jesus was distinctly different than found in the secular and paganistic world. His teachings conflicted with the lifestyles prevalent in the Roman Civilization. The conflict was needed to allow his teachings to filter and screen out the pollutants so that beliefs and understandings of God's expectations were pure and unadulterated. See Figure 8.4.

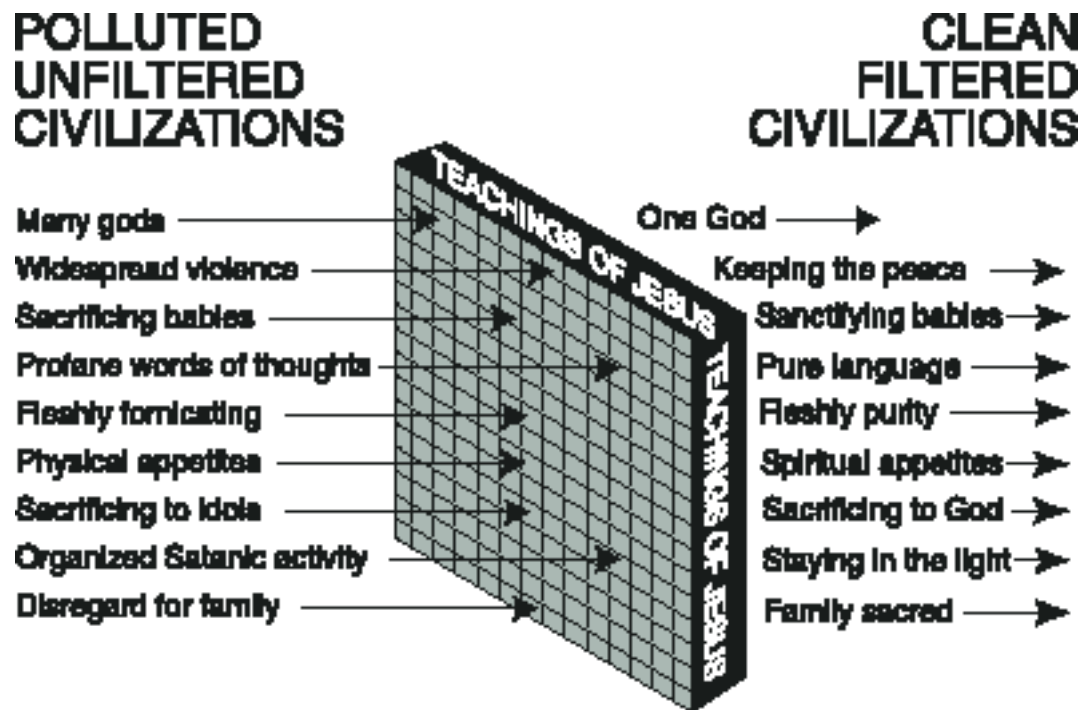


Figure 8.4 The Teachings of Jesus Filters Polluted Lifestyles

#### 4. *Jesus as a Servant.*

“I am among you as he that serveth.” Luke 22:27

The ministry of Jesus required more than speaking, dialoging, preaching and teaching. He did bear witness to the truth. He had to consummate all the scenarios and themes predicted about him. Jesus was a man of destiny. Jesus had to live in such a way to make the truth become a reality. This demand on him removed any erratic or capricious straying he might have taken. He conformed to that which was expected of him. This does not mean he was an “ascetic” practicing self-denial to an extreme degree without regard to the circumstances at hand. He accepted many invitations to meals, banquets, weddings and visitations to homes. He had a balanced view of material things. Nonetheless, Jesus gave spiritual goals and expectations the highest priority. He served these priorities and goals without wavering.

The outreach to the poor, the sick and the rejected for over three and half years is noteworthy. It is difficult to find the greatest service he rendered for his services were many: feeding the poor; preaching the gospel; condemning sinful practices; discussing the truth in synagogues; challenging the hypocrites; teaching his disciples; predicting future events for Israel and the world; interpreting the scriptures; praying for others; giving hope to slaves, aliens and

even the Gentiles; expelled demons from the possessed; washing the feet of his disciples; confronting Satan; controlling the environment; witnessing to the Romans; raising the dead; preaching to imprisoned spirits; walking a 200 mile periphery; forgiving others; and dying on the cross. These and still other services defined the ministry of Jesus. These services were so encompassing, it made him a superlative servant. He practiced and demonstrated with his attitudes, his words and his behavior what he preached. His motivation was to do the will of God by rendering a service that would bring hope, joy and well being to the human family. The expression “servant of the Lord” refers to a designation of a divinely appointed individual who is called upon to undertake a task of importance for God. In religious terms, those who dedicate their lives to a deity are regarded as servants bound to the deity with pledges and vows of loyalty and mission. Thus, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob were regarded as God’s servants. Moses and other prophets who paid a supreme price for their fidelity were also regarded as servants. Mary regarded herself as a servant when she said, “Here am I, the servant of the Lord, let it be to me according to your word”. (Luke 1:38) This designation “servant of the Lord” is highly distinctive and of great prominence for one chosen officially to act on behalf of God.

The service that Jesus rendered was not a spontaneously driven activity which emerged during his human existence in the Judean Hills. His was a divinely appointed service planned by God long before the Logos arrived as Jesus. This in itself reveals a God that loves his creatures and has not abandoned their plight and their cry for help. This is noted in the scripture, “the lamb slain before the foundation of the world”. (Revelation 13:8) With this long term perception, one can see Jesus as a servant of God from the beginning of time when he existed as the Logos.

##### 5. *Jesus as a Miracle Worker.*

“Thou art a teacher come from God for no man can do these miracles that you do  
except God be with him.” John 3:2

Some historical scholars have exerted every effort to discredit the miracles of Jesus associated with his life. They have tried to explain these miracles in terms of natural phenomena or circumstantial evidence. The record shows that no one before Jesus, nor after him has had such an enormous listing of miracles reported in their lives as did Jesus. Moses performed some miracles. Also, Elijah and Elisha were miracle workers. Others can be cited as creating splendid deeds. The Old as well as the New Testaments are filled with miraculous deeds. But no one has

the portfolio of number, type, range and difficulty of the power needed to accomplish the stupendous deeds that was accomplished by Jesus. Throughout the 2000 years to the Twenty-first Century, the discrediting process seems to have failed as believers today are as convinced as ever that the miracles really did happen. If there is one feature of Jesus' activities that repeatedly shines out from the gospels, it is his capacity to accomplish miracles. This feature alone was enough to generate hundreds and hundreds of followers. The miraculous deeds is one of the best attested evidences of his connection with the God of life and death. Watching miracles performed is a powerful drama to observers. For this reason, Jesus would ask often to his disciples that his miracles be kept secret otherwise thousands would flock to him. This huge flow of people would obscure his Messianic mission and his opportunity to teach.

Several descriptive concepts can be assigned to the meaning of miracles. For one, they are deeds uncommon or unknown in the human experience. A miracle is incomparable. Giving life to one who is dead is an extraordinary deed caused by an extraordinary person with an extraordinary power. This is saying miracles are unique for their nature, time and place. For another, miracles are deeds impossible to achieve since they oppose natural or physical laws. They oppose what is normal and expected. Walking on water is not a conceivable nor possible human experience. To walk on water requires a power to render the weight and density of the human body to float on water with non-solubility. This is not done by humans. For still another, miracles are deeds that require a superhuman power since nothing on earth has the potential nor the natural ability to do them. This supernatural activity cannot be scientifically nor logically explained. Miracles, therefore, are events or effects in the natural or physical world deviating from the known laws of nature or transcending our knowledge of these laws. This deviation is brought about by a superhuman agency. Although God is above and beyond the physical laws, seldom will He violate any of these self-instituted laws. God is an upholder of the operation of nature since He created it.

The miracles of Jesus were a continuation of miracles in the Old Testament. There is only a gap of approximately 400 years between the record of the Old Testament and the beginning of the New. The purpose of Jesus' miracles was not to astonish and impress those who witnessed them. After all, those who did observe them were obscure and common people. Yet there was several purposes for these miracles. Here are a suggested few:

First, to reveal a God who cares. After all, the power Jesus used was God's power. Second, to give a convincing sign that Jesus is the one who was long awaited and expected. The Old Testament prophecies, to be believed, must

have a powerful drama associated with these expectations. Third, to reveal that any problem or difficulty in human affairs no matter how challenging, the power of God can solve it. Raising of the dead one can see is probably the most challenging. Finally, to achieve some proclamation of truth or some lesson for his disciples. Many of these miracles set the stage for a parable or doctrinal lesson.

It is difficult from the record to calculate the many miracles Jesus performed. Several scriptures would say, “healed all manner of sickness”, “healed all the sick”, “healed all that were diseased”, “he cured many”, “as many as touched him, they were healed”. We can be certain many miracles were performed that did not get into the Biblical record. If we compiled a list of the recorded miracles by Jesus and those performed on his behalf, the list would total between 55-57. The healing miracles of Jesus were a fulfillment of Messianic prophecies described in the book of Isaiah written 700 years before Jesus arrived. Categorizing the healing miracles, the following can be tabulated:

- a. relief of hunger by feeding - 2
- b. healing of the sick and diseased - 9
- c. opening eyes of the blind - 4
- d. restoring body parts to function - 4
- e. cleansing of demon possession - 5
- f. curing the deaf and the dumb - 3
- g. supernatural interventions for Jesus - 4
- h. dematerialization to be unseen - 2
- i. controlling or changing the natural environment - 8
- j. raising of the dead - 3
- k. post-resurrection appearances - 12
- l. miracles on the Sabbath - 7

Here is a brief description of specific miracles, beginning at the time of Jesus’ ministry at Jordan to his ascension:

1. Holy spirit as a dove on Jesus’ head with voice from Heaven. (Matthew 3:16-17)
2. Transactions and visions between Jesus and Satan after the wilderness. (Matthew 4:1-10)
3. Water made to wine at wedding in Cana, Galilee. (John 2:1-11)



4. Healing of a dying child of a nobleman in Cana. (John 4:46-54)
5. Passed unseen through a hostile crowd. (Luke 4:28-30)
6. Healed a bed-ridden man for 38 years at pool of Bethesda on the Sabbath. (John 5:5-8)
7. Man with unclean spirit in synagogue cured. (Mark 1:13-26)
8. Peter's mother-in-law healed of fever. (Mark 1:30-31)
9. Net full of fishes in lower Galilee. (Luke 5:1-11)
10. Man's healing of demon possession and sickness on Sabbath. (Luke 4:40-41)
11. Leper cleansed of leprosy after sermon on the Mount. (Matthew 8:1-4)
12. Paralytic healed in Capernaum. (Luke 5:18-25)
13. Restoring a withered hand to normality. (Luke 6:6-10)
14. Healing centurian's servant of the palsy in Capernaum. (Matthew 8:6)
15. Widow's son in Naim raised from the dead. (Luke 7:11-17)
16. Calming of the storm on the Sea of Galilee. (Matthew 8:23-27)
17. Two blind men healed in Capernaum. (Matthew 9:27-31)
18. Demon possessed man healed in Galilee. (Luke 11:14)
19. Cleansing of a dumb and deaf man demon possessed. (Matthew 9:32-35)
20. Cleansing of two demon possessed men in Gadara. (Matthew 8:28-34)
21. Raising of Jairus' daughter from the dead. (Luke 8:41-56)
22. Healing of woman with an issue of blood. (Matthew 9:20-22)
23. Feeding 5000 with 5 loaves and 2 fishes. (John 6:1-14)
24. Walking on troubled waters. (Matthew 14:22-36)
25. Cleansed the Gentile Syrio-Phoenician woman's daughter. (Mark 7:24-30)
26. Curing a deaf and dumb man of Decapolis. (Mark 7:31-37)
27. Feeding 4000 with seven loaves and few fish. (Mark 8:1-9)
28. Opening the eyes of a blind man in Bethseda. (Mark 8:22-26)
29. Heavenly visitors in a transfiguration scene. (Luke 9:28-36)

30. Cleansing of a demonic possessed boy near Caesarea. (Mark 9:14-29)
31. Tribute money in the fish's mouth. (Matthew 17:27)
32. Opening the eyes of a man born blind in Jerusalem. (John 9:1-11)
33. Passed unseen through crowd in the temple. (John 8:59)
34. Cured a woman with sickness. (Luke 13:11-17)
35. Cured man with dropsy. (Luke 14:1-6)
36. Lazarus raised from the dead condition. (John 11:1-46)
37. Ten lepers cleansed in Samaria. (Luke 17:11-19)
38. Opened the eyes of two blind men on road for Jericho. (Matthew 20:29-30)
39. Fig tree withered on Mount of Olives. (Matthew 21:17-22)
40. Healing of Malchus' ear at Gethsemane. (Matthew 26:51-56)
41. Second net full of fishes. (John 21:1-14)
42. Resurrection of Jesus. (Luke 24:6)
43. Post-resurrection appearances: Mary Magdelene (Mark 16:9); other woman (Matthew 28:9); two disciples (Luke 24:15); Peter (I Cor. 15:5); ten Apostles (John 20:19); eleven Apostles (John 20:26-28); seven disciples fishing (John 21:1-24); eleven Apostles (Matthew 28:16-17); 500 brethren (I Cor. 15:5); James (I Cor. 15:7); ascension (Acts 1:29); conversion of Paul (Acts 9:1-5)

#### 6. *Jesus as a prophet.*

“After the people saw the miraculous sign that Jesus did, they began to say, surely this is the prophet who is come into the world.” John 6:14

Prophets were already known in Israel as spokespersons for God to deliver a special message to the people. The message is often predictive of a future scenario. The message is an urgency to transform or change the direction or the character of the culture they were practicing. If not, dire consequences would result. Jesus as a prophet was foretold to the priests and levites who were expecting this prophet but they mistakenly thought John the Baptist was he. Many asked, “Art thou that prophet?” John always answered, “no”. (John 1:21) When Jesus was asked the question, he said, “look at my works and decide for yourself.” (Matthew 11:1-6)

Most prophets of the Old Testament were not appointed to that office through genealogical descent nor through a choice vote of a collective group of people. Nor did they emerge from the established religious organizations. They were selected and appointed by God since they have no commitments nor obligations to other groups. Jesus was not committed to any of the groups at the time such as the Zealots, the Sanhedrin, the Pharisees, the Sadducees nor the Essenes. This gave him the freedom and flexibility to accomplish the mission intended for him as a prophet. The significance of the prophets should be judged on the basis of what they were and not the efforts to transform the behavior or the practices they had in their culture. As we see the history of the Jews before and after Jesus, reform and correction was not implemented which put Israel through many disastrous experiences.

Many people of Palestine accepted Jesus as a prophet based on the miracles he performed. Some saw him as “the prophet” spoken of by Moses. Most of the religious community did not. Several reasons why the religious community rejected Jesus. For one, he was performing miracles on the Sabbath. The work prohibitions of the Sabbath was so intense and restrictive that those who broke the rule were often persecuted. Jesus saw doing a good should never be restricted. For another, Jesus identified himself as the Son of God. The Jews reacted to this as blasphemy. The Son of God implied a plurality of Gods which conflicted with their commitment to the one God and one Lord. Jesus never said he was a God, but identified God as his father. Finally, the temple incident in which Jesus overturned the tables of the money changers was and still is regarded by Jews as an attempt by Jesus to stop the atonement sacrifices in the temple according to the Mosaic law. Jesus overturned the tables of money changers because he perceived the motive of the money changers as greed and profiteering. Jesus said, “the house of prayers had been turned into a den of robbers”. But more, the incident was strikingly symbolic of his mission of cleansing and purifying the temple of many defiling ways including the stoppage of sacrificing animals for the atonement of sins. The arrival of Jesus as the Lamb of God was to be the last and permanent sacrifice for atonement of sins. This is what Jesus meant when he said he came to fulfill the law. The sacrifice of his life once would be for all time for the atonement of sins. A major adjustment was being made with the original Mosaic law. It can now be seen in historic retrospect, animal sacrifices are no longer practiced in Judaism. Both the sacrificing of animals as well as the temple itself in Jerusalem has been gone for 2000 years. The adjustment made by God is now permanent.

Several prophecies were given to the Jews by Jesus during his ministry that have realized their fulfillment. Some are still future. The following lists some of the prophecies:

*Prophecies made for the time of Jesus.*

- a. *Jesus predicts his death.* Jesus tells his disciples he would be betrayed to the chief priests and the scribes. They would condemn him to death. Further, they would deliver him to the Gentiles to be mocked, scourged and crucified. (Matthew 20:18-19)
- b. *Jesus predicts his resurrection.* Jesus foretells his death when they would go to Jerusalem as written by the prophets. He also cites how the son of man would rise again on the third day. (Luke 18:31-33)
- c. *Jesus predicts the destruction of the temple.* Jesus tells his disciples that the beautiful temple with its beautiful stones, architectural masterpieces and adorning gifts will be leveled so there shall not be left one stone upon another. (Luke 21:5-6)
- d. *Jesus predicts his disciples would scatter after his death.* Jesus saw himself as a shepherd with sheep. He foretells when the shepherd is smitten the flock would be scattered abroad. (Matthew 26:31)
- e. *Jesus predicts Peter's denial.* Jesus foretells that Peter will deny him three times. This denial will be heard with the cock crowing three times. (Luke 22:31-34)
- f. *Jesus predicts the Jewish Diaspora.* Jesus foretells the daughters of Jerusalem not to weep for him, but weep for themselves and for their children for the time of great tribulation upon Israel. (Luke 23:28-31)
- g. *Jesus predicts the siege of Jerusalem.* Jesus laments over Jerusalem that its enemies will encompass the city and will level the stones of the wall. (Luke 19:41-44)
- h. *Jesus predicts the betrayer of his life.* Jesus indicated in advance the specific individual who would betray him as one who will give a sop when he dipped it. (John 13:21-27)
- i. *Jesus predicts seven woes on the Pharsees.* Jesus cites seven disasters that will fall on the scribes and Pharisees of his generation that will render this group extinct. (Matthew 23:13-26)

*Prophecies of Future Time.*

- a. *Jesus predicts his return in the future.* Jesus foretells a second coming. This return would define his mission as one person but two advents. (Luke 17:22-25)

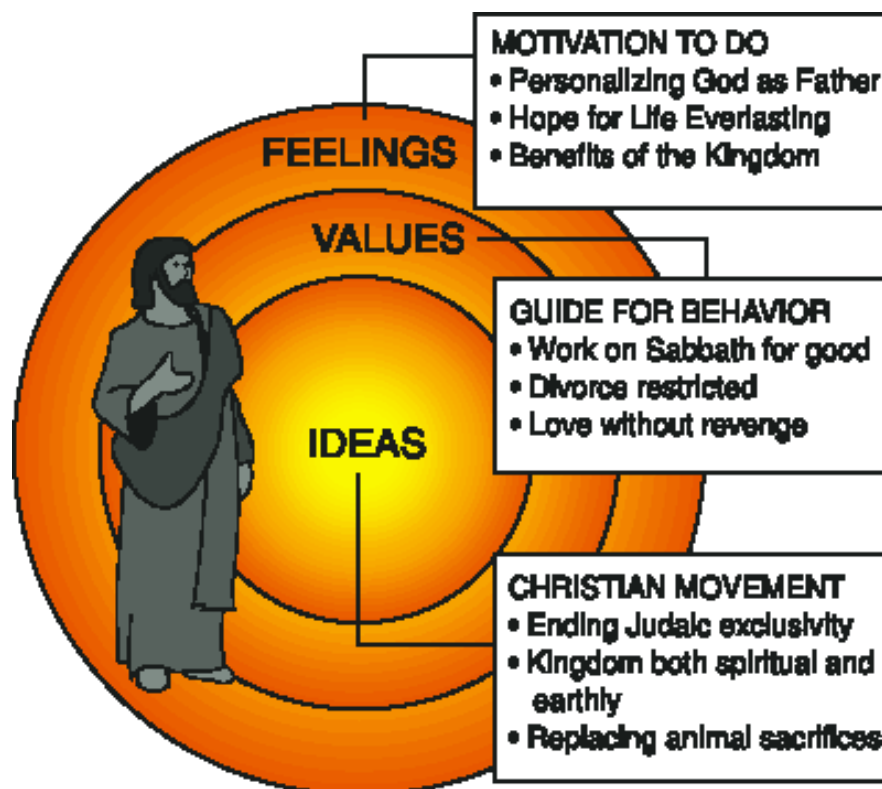
- b. *Jesus predicts world conditions at his second advent.* Jesus foretells there will be wars, nationalistic conflicts and great tribulation never since the beginning of the world at the time of his second presence. (Matthew 24:4-51)
- c. *Jesus predicts Jerusalem will be occupied by the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.* Jesus saw the great empires maintaining their control over Jerusalem. Yet, he said a time would come when Jerusalem will be free. This appears to be in 1948 and 1967. (Luke 21:24)
- d. *Jesus predicts not all will understand him.* Jesus said the mysteries of the kingdom will not be understood by all his followers. Today, we see over 25,000 registered Christian groups. (Matthew 13:11)
- e. *Jesus predicts his church will be a small number.* Jesus said many are called, but few are chosen. It appears only a small elect group will eventually qualify. This is due to nominalism in large church memberships. (Matthew 22:14)
- f. *Jesus predicts the Jews will not see him until they recognized him as the Messiah.* Jesus said the House of Israel is made desolate and they will not see him until they recognize him as the one sent by God to them. (Matthew 23:39)
- g. *Jesus predicts who will have everlasting life.* Jesus states that God loved the world that he gave his only begotten son that whosoever believes in him shall not perish, but have everlasting life. (John 3:16)

#### 7. *Jesus as a Leader*

“The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over their people and they that exercise this authority upon them are called benefactors. But you shall not be so. He that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger and he that is chief as he that serves.” Luke 22:25-27

The greatest measure for evaluating Jesus as a leader is to examine the results of the movement he started. Detailed statistics are found in earlier chapters. The impact of Jesus on human history is so enormously obvious that few people would question his placement at the top of the list of the most influential persons in history. If there is dispute for the top, there would be easy agreement in the top three. Hart<sup>4</sup> made a ranking of the 100 most influential persons in history and places Jesus third after Muhammed and Isaac Newton. He did not place him first because his

mission was strictly religious where as Muhammed was religious and political. This could be debated! Nonetheless, Hart places Jesus in the top three. Christianity is the largest religion in the world. This includes the greatest number of people, nations and races. Books about the life of Jesus and what he said are history's best selling books. Christianity continues to rise suggesting the acceptance rate is rising. The world's population today is approaching 6 billion. One-third of this aggregate nominally confesses formal or informal membership in Christianity. Of the remaining 4 billion, fifty percent of them, 2 billion have heard of Jesus and know something about him. The remaining 2 billion have not. Jesus left his mark primarily in three areas: spiritual matters involving life and death; call and development of a group of devoted followers who would carry on the mission he started; and human morality and it's consequences in everyday living. Jesus as a leader made adjustments to the Judaic movement, but firmly linked it with the new movement. His leadership fell in these categories: ideas, values and feelings. See Figure 8.5.



**Figure 8.5 Jesus as a Leader made Adjustments to Judaism**

Jesus emerged as a leader at a time of great turbulence. Military Rome was ruling the world. The Roman civilization was undergoing a barbarization from the invasions from the Barbarians of the north. Polytheism was strong and widely practiced. New religions were very popular as disillusioned people sought solace in new experiences. The popular ones were Neoplatonism, Stoicism, Isis, Osiris and a host of Oriental ideologies. They

were popular because they offered the idea of everlasting life. Economic decline also accompanied governmental chaos and foreign invasions. Poverty, sickness and disease were rife. The physical needs of the people were enormous. The leaders themselves were strong autocratic types who demanded conformity to laws and edicts. The people themselves were no longer meek, but self-interested as it gave them strength to survive. Value systems were well entrenched and immovable such as slavery, social classes and human inequality. Groups were strongly polarized since it afforded protection and survival. Add to this list the turbulent times facing Jesus as a leader and the fact he was rejected by his country, its leaders and the majority of Jews. Only a small group of followers continued with him. These and other challenges confronted Jesus as leader in starting the Christian movement. Judaism with its emergence from Abraham through the centuries began to wane. Judaism itself was splintering into smaller groups thereby weakening its emergence as a source of values for the world. Jews were hated. Jews did very little or none at all to bring in other nations and races into their beliefs. They practiced forceful separations. Judaism was a flicker of light about to be quenched. Judaism was failing as a movement to fulfill the Abrahamic promise that through Israel all the families of the earth would be blessed.

The emergence of Jesus as a leader was timely to start a new movement, but linked with Judaism. But he had his own mission. This meant Jesus had to make adjustments in the way Judaism was moving. These adjustments received much opposition, but they demonstrated the need to move Judaism in areas not served. These adjustments also intended to eliminate obsolete Judaic concepts and practices which at one time were valid, but no longer needed. The key expression that Jesus used which revealed an adjustment was to be made is as follows: “you have heard that it was said...but I say unto you...”. Here is a brief list of some of the Judaic adjustments Jesus made as a leader.

a. *Work on the Sabbath.* Judaism forbids work on the Sabbath except such work which has to be done by the priests in performance of their duties in the temple. Jesus said good works or good deeds on the Sabbath pre-empted the strict observance of the Sabbath. He said, “the Sabbath was made of man and not man for the Sabbath”. (Mark 2:27) He also said God works on the Sabbath and so will he. (John 5:17) Miracles, healing and feeding of the hungry and poor were done on the Sabbath in spite of the intense Pharisaic condemnation.

b. *Personalizing God as a Father.* Judaism had many names for God such as “I am”, “Jehovah” “El-Shaddi”, “Elohim”, “Adonai”. The custom was Jews abstained from using or pronouncing God’s name for fear of irreverent use. Jesus wanted to personalize God and to present him as a Father who cares about his family. He said when you pray, say, “Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed by thy name”. (Matthew 6:9) He wanted to establish a relationship between God and the people which was personal, warm, communicative, compassionate and merciful.

c. *Ending Judaic Exclusivity.* Judaism enjoyed an exclusive relationship with God through a covenant relationship with his people both on a national and individual basis. Jesus removed the strict separation line and opened opportunity for the involvement of Gentiles into Judaic concepts. “Go and teach all nations to observe all things I have commanded you”. (Matthew 28:18-20) Jesus said to Ananias about Paul, “Go thy way for he is a chosen vessel unto me to bear my name before Gentiles, kings and the children of Israel”. (Acts 9:15) Paul’s work was highly successful as he brought the message of the Gospel of Jesus to a Roman Empire against unbelievable odds and oppositions.

d. *Grounds for Divorce Restricted.* Judaic law permitted a writ of divorcement if the husband lost interest in his wife. Jesus was against this casual dissolution of the marriage contract. He instituted new grounds for divorce. He said, “It has been said whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement. But I say unto you, that whosoever shall put away his wife except for the cause of fornication causeth her to commit adultery and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery.” (Matthew 5:31-32)

e. *Kingdom of God both Spiritual and Earthly.* Judaism sees Israel as the kingdom of God. “You shall be to me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation.” (Exodus 19:6) The Pharisees were against Jesus since they perceived him as negating this world for another world. Jesus emphasized that the kingdom is to be both in heaven and on earth. He said, “pray thy kingdom come, thy will be done in earth as it is in heaven”. (Matthew 6:10) “There will be weeping when you shall see Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God and you yourselves thrust out.” (Luke 13:28-29) “At that time, they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the Lord and all the nations (Gentiles) shall be gathered unto it.” (Jeremiah 3:17) “Any many people shall go and say come, let us go up to the mountain of the Lord and to the House of God and he will teach us his ways and we will walk in his paths.” (Isaiah 2:2-3) “I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven (spiritual) and as the sand upon the seashore. (earthly) And



in thy seed shall all the nations (Gentiles) of the earth be blessed.” (Genesis 22:17-18) “Behold I create new heavens and a new earth and the former shall not be remembered.” (Isaiah 65:17) The two phases of the kingdom was a new vision not known to the Israelites. The Pharisees opposed it vehemently. This kingdom is the centerpiece of the Gospel message.

f. *Love without Revenge.* Judaism sees Israel taking revenge and cursing on enemies and punishing those who hate Israel. (Deuteronomy 32:41; Numbers 23:11) Jesus rejects these past practices when he said, “You have heard that it has been said, then shall love thy neighbor and hate thine enemy.” But he made a profound and significant change. “But I say to you, love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them who despitefully use you and persecute you.” (Matthew 5:43-44) This is a major adjustment in the relationship in the family of humans. Hating and killing enemies only perpetuates the cycle of hate and killing. Making your enemies your friends breaks the cycle and enhances the brotherhood of man. Loving your enemies is a new idea and it become a major behavioral expectation of the Christian.

g. *Replacing Animal Sacrifices.* Judaism practiced animal and other forms of sacrifices for the atonement of sins. From Leviticus Chapter Eight, the sin offering occupies a central role in Judaic practices. These were vegetable offerings, burnt offerings, meat offerings and peace offerings. Besides these public offerings, there were sacrifices of the people for themselves individually. These sacrifices were to atone for sin and to heal the broken covenant with God which sin destroys. If there were any individuals who did not sin, the covenant with God would not be broken and that individual would enjoy the blessing of continued life. The record is clear that no individual was perfect before the law. All Jews both before Jesus and at the time of Jesus were sinners. This inability to meet the requirements of a perfect law closed the door for anyone to be blessed with continued life.

A new pathway was opened up for continued life. As a mission Jesus was himself to be the sacrifice for the atonement of sins. “Behold the lamb of God who taketh away the sin of the world.” (John 1:29) “If we walk in the light, we have fellowship one with another and the blood of Jesus Christ, his son, cleanseth us from all sin.” Interesting to note, the Judaic animal sacrifices have ceased since the destruction of the temple in 70 AD. Since that time to the present time, nowhere in the world has this animal sacrificing practice continued. Jesus has become the

lamb sacrificed for all times. It is for this reason Jesus said, “Think not that I came to destroy the law or the prophets; I came not to destroy but to fulfill.” (Matthew 5:17-18)

h. *Higher Standard of Behavior set for the Christian.*

1. *Anger as important as murder.* “You have heard that it was said to the people long ago, do not murder and anyone who murders will be subject to judgment. But I tell you that anyone who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment.” (Matthew 5:21-22)
2. *Oaths to cease since they cannot be kept.* “You have heard that it was said, do not break your oath but keep the oaths you have made to the Lord. But I tell you do not swear at all.” (Matthew 5:33-34)
3. *Nonresistance to evil commanded.* “You have heard that it was said an eye for an eye and tooth for a tooth. But I tell you, do not resist an evil person. If someone strikes you on the right cheek turn to him the other also.” (Matthew 5:38-39)
4. *Grounds for committing adultery.* “You have heard that it was said, you shall not commit adultery. But I say to you anyone who looks at a woman lustfully has already committed adultery with her in his heart.” (Matthew 5:27-28)
5. *Polygamy forbidden.* “For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife and the two will become one flesh. So they are no longer two but one. Therefore what God has joined together, let man not separate.” (Matthew 19:4)

The qualities and abilities of Jesus as a leader forged quickly ahead. His leadership model had several steps. First, he produced a “vision”. This is a common characteristic of leaders. Cite any leader of importance inevitably, they started their leadership with a vision. The vision Jesus had was to set up a kingdom of God on earth as it is in heaven. Jesus provided this vision when he spoke of repenting for the kingdom of God is at hand. The vision was the plan of God. There have been many places for kingdoms and civilizations but the plan for the kingdom of God was to be a people’s kingdom solving fundamental unresolved problems such as health and death. Jesus provided specifics with his planned vision.

Second leadership step was to provide the how and the when. This was the outreach of followers who also would commit to the same vision as a movement. The beginning wave of committed followers were the twelve Apostles.

Then there was the seventy disciples who were sent out two by two. After that, there was five hundred disciples who had a personal experience with Jesus. This was followed by 3000 converted in one meeting in Jerusalem with the twelve Apostles during Pentecost. Down through the ages, the movement continued to rise with thousands and thousands of followers. Today, it's over a billion. These followers learned much of what the vision meant and it's implications for all.

A third practice of leadership was the motivation of his followers. Jesus motivated his followers by giving them a view of the benefits of the kingdom they were preaching and the role they would occupy in bringing it about. The benefits became motivators. Here is a brief list of a few of them: the granting for each follower life everlasting without the prospect of ever dying; a role in government in which they would help operate the kingdom; a mediational relationship as a communication go-between God and the affairs of man; an honorable recognition to be a part of a successful effort to solve man's problems; and finally, to be inheritors of the earth and the fullness thereof. These non-financial motivators generated an intense desire to join and further the movement in spite of trials, difficulties and persecutions.

Finally, the fourth practice of leadership was the power and capacity to implement the vision without failure. This power is a physical or coercive force to compel an individual to comply with the kingdom's operation. This power is not to be an intimidating compulsion that bullies the free will endowment of humans. But rather, the power is to be an enlightenment and understanding of the mission of the kingdom, it's goals and solutions it intends to solve. The power is to reveal unique and innovative approaches and methods of solving historic unsolvable problems such as scarce food and water, idle workers and demeaning work, inadequate housing and conflicting interpersonal relations. But the biggest has and still is aging, sickness and death. The power is to be an eye-opener of purging the confusion, the ignorance and the errors which have been stumbling blocks in the past in other kingdoms and civilizations. The power is to have an organization and system arrangement for implementing the vision. Thus, Jesus as a leader in the short span of three and half years laid the foundation for a unified global congregation with the human family. The movement he started to this end continues.

## 8. *Jesus as a Mission.*

“I heard the voice of the Lord saying whom shall I send and who will go for us?  
Then said I, here I am, send me.” Isaiah 6:8

“My food is to do the will of Him that sent me and to finish his work.” John  
4:34

“I have glorified thee on the earth; I have finished the work which you gave me  
to do.” John 17:4

“It is finished.” John 19:30

“Jesus answered to Pilot - to this end was I born and for this cause came I unto  
the world that I should be witness for the truth.” John 18:37

Jesus lived his life to accomplish a mission. He spoken of it often as the work of God. It is for the cause of the Father he was translated to the human world. He was sent to accomplish a four-part mission: revive and reform Judaism; reaffirm the promise of the kingdom of God; redeem a lost and disengaged mankind from God; and to call and develop his church as a movement. Let’s examine each of the four parts.

1. *Jesus was sent by God to revive and reform Judaism.* It is crucial to note over the ages the decline of the Judaic religion and the Israeli polity. They lost their national unity and never recovered when the two kings Rheobans and Jerabaums split the country which divided the Judaic religion. After the split, many Jews were assimilated in captivity by a conquering Assyria. These assimilated Jews are called the “lost tribes” In 606 BC, Nebucadnezzar brought about the destruction of the temple which ended for a long time an important symbol and practice of Judaism. Doron through the turbulent era of the Gentile empires, these conquering countries slowly strangled the vitality of the Jewish culture. Even during the diaspora scattering in Gentile countries which lasted 2000 years, Jews were struggling to survive. More recently, the Holocaust removed six million Jews by Nazi Germany. These and other significant events were critical processes which brought the Jews near to extinction.

At the time of Jesus, Judaism was at a low ebb. The Jews had no leader. They were expecting the Messiah. They had a Roman occupation. Herod as a leader was not accepted by the general public as well as the Orthodoxy. The culture was going nowhere. One may raise the question as to why God was abandoning a people who he had chosen to bear his name. God who was the protectorate of the Jews appeared to be temporarily withdrawing himself for important reasons. The Palmist summarizes cogently these reasons. They are referred to as national sins which were committed by the Jewish people. They brought about their rejection by God. The Jews have paid dearly for these sins. These national sins are described in Psalms 78 and summarized here:

- a. “They kept not the covenant of God and refused to work in his law.”
- b. “They forgot his works of old of how God led them to their land.”
- c. “They complained to God about God and about the wilderness experience.”
- d. “They murmured in their beliefs about God. They trusted him not.”
- e. “They lied to God.”
- f. “They tested God.”
- g. “They moved God to anger with carnal images.”

These and possibly other reasons indicated Israel turned it's back to God and rejected him. The prophet Samuel highlighted this rejection of God when he quotes God saying, “They have not rejected you, but they have rejected me”. (I Samuel 8:7) The Psalmist confirms Samuel's quotation of God when he records the words of God. “My people did not hearken to my voice and Israel would have none of me”. (Psalm 81:11)

The rejection of the Jews by God is often referred to as the Misnah which is a period of a time of favor followed by a period of disfavor. Caiaphas, the temple priest, brought three articles of indictment against Jesus. The first, was Jesus' threat to destroy the temple. The second, his claim to be the son of God. And three, his claim to be the king of the Jews. It was the third article that carried a capital offense under the Roman law. The death sentence was exactly what Caiaphus had in mind from the outset.

Israel's apostasy needed a new form of leadership. Jesus was sent to revive and reform the practice of Judaism. As it were to institute a series of reforms to give Judaism a new surge and a new life. These reforms would be the adjustments needed to perpetuate the Biblical Civilization as a movement. Disciples of Jesus were the bearers of these reforms. They were Jews formerly committed to Judaism. In it's very early stages Christianity was a Jewish reform movement. It was linked and extended from Judaism. The reform efforts of these early disciples failed. Judaism was not reformable. Jesus was sent of God for the revival of Judaism. They rejected him! As a result, Jesus, as a mission, gave a new direction and a new pathway for channeling the promises and continuing the movement of the Biblical Civilization.

## 2. *Jesus was sent by God to reaffirm the promise of the kingdom.*

The expression “kingdom of God” refers to God's universal sovereignty toward his creatures. The expression has been used over 100 times in the scriptures. An alternate expression may be the universal government of God. This suggests God himself is head of all subdivisions. The earth is one subdivision. Obviously, all subdivisions must conform in principle and policy with other subdivisions. Hence the need for a divine coordination in both the spiritual and physical worlds.

Originally, the kingdom of God started in the Garden of Eden with Adam and Eve. They were given a dominion. They were to be king and queen of the earth's subdivision. The kingdom concept was lost when they were expelled from the garden in an unfinished earth. Following the flood, the tribal structure was the arrangement which gave autocratic authority in decision making with the tribal chiefs. During the exodus, the concept of participative government was introduced by Jethro and Moses which was held for many years even through the period of the judges. During Israel's monarchy a human king was demanded. This was the first time God was rejected and replaced by a secular type monarchy. When Jesus arrived he spoke of the kingdom as a future expectation as well as a present reality. At the future level, Jesus was predicting the removal of the existing civilizations replaced by a new civilization in which God's reign would triumph over every evil. At the existing level he was preaching the kingdom was written as if to say a new movement was starting with his Messianic role that would move the world toward a future arrangement. Jesus' message of the kingdom as both present and future was one of promise and assurance. The message of the kingdom appealed to the outcasts of society - the poor, the harlots, and the needy as it meant hope for a better life. Thus his ministry was to bear witness to the truth that clarified the character of the kingdom. To accomplish this witness required more than talking, preaching and teaching. He had to be the truth in a living style as well as a verbal source.

### 3. *Jesus was sent by God to be the Redeemer of mankind.*

If there is a centerpiece in the mission of Jesus, it is his role as the "ransom of the Lord". The concept of the ransom carries the thought of liberation from slavery or from some undesirable captivity. It is the thought of regaining a possession which was lost. In these terms, it requires giving a price or value to effect a release or redemption. People today live a short and temporary life. Originally, it was to be a continuing and perpetual life. Mankind has lost this legacy. The redemptive effort of Jesus was to restore the opportunity for mankind to retrieve this lost legacy. In tabernacle and temple times, God designated various sacrifices as offerings to atone or cover sins. In effect, the life of the animal sacrificed was a corresponding price to make atonement for the sinner. These sacrifices were required if the nation of Israel were to have and maintain God's acceptance and approval. But these animal sacrifices were only a type or shadow of the permanent sacrifice to be given by Jesus. Thus Jesus became a corresponding sacrificial ransom for the redemption of the lost legacy of a permanent life for every individual. The

death of Jesus was not an edict from God. It was voluntary. This is an astounding point about the redemptive process. Jesus told his friends and disciples that nobody was taking his life from him. He was laying it down of his own free will. As the ransom of the Lord, the Logos entered the world as Jesus to provide with his life the corresponding price for all who have died. This is the central meaning of his crucifixion on the cross.

4. *Jesus was sent by God to call out a church.*

Jesus deliberately chose twelve disciples to be his Apostles. The number is highly significant as it was the counterpart to the twelve tribes of Israel. As the twelve sons of Jacob brought about the nation of Israel, so also the twelve Apostles will bring about the church of God also known as the Israelites. These twelve Apostles would start a movement which would give Christianity the growth that it experienced throughout history. It was Peter who made the positive assertion that Jesus was the Messiah, the son of the living God and that Jesus would build his church. The church would be a community of believers who would follow Jesus as the Messiah in inaugurating his kingdom. The church would consist of people who live ordinary lives in daily activities but are spirit-begotten and sustained by God. These believers would set themselves apart from the immorality of the world and make every effort to conform to the will of God. These church members would model their characters after the character of their founder.

9. *Jesus as the Messiah (The Christ)*

“Thou art the Christ (the Messiah), the son of the living God.” Matthew 16:16

“Tell us if you are the Christ, the son of God. Yes, it is as you say.” Matthew 26:63-64

“The woman saith unto him, I know that Messiah cometh who is called Christ. when he comes he will tell us all things. Jesus responds, I that speak unto thee am he.” John 4:25-26

“We have found the Messiah which is the Christ.” John 1:41

“Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God.” I John 5:1

Jesus has become the most popular, the most studied, and the most influential figure in the religious history of mankind. Over two billion people celebrate the holidays of Christmas and Easter from year to year. These people acknowledge Jesus as “The Christ”, “the anointed one” who is the long expected and waited leader. The widespread

popularity of Jesus is unsurpassed. Well known figures such as Moses, Muhammed, Buddha and hundred of others cannot match this widespread popularity. Jesus is even known to most children in the Western World. They can retell the familiar story of his birth in Bethlehem every Christmas time. Christmas gifts and cards are reminders of this story. They can reflect on the crucifixion in Golgotha with Jesus dying on the cross. Resurrection themes and Easter singing are reminders of this occasion. These two holidays keep the majority of people throughout many countries mindful of Jesus. His popularity continues.

The name of Jesus is somewhat mystifying. He was called “Immanuel” in Matthew. The wise men of the east referred to him as the “King of the Jews”. Other scriptures refer to him as the “son of man”, “son of David”, “Savior”, “the carpenter’s son”. Isaiah calls him “wonderful counselor”, “Mighty God”, “everlasting Father”, “Prince of Peace”. John calls him the “word of God”. The missionary Apostle Paul referred to him as the second Adam. He also referred him to the “likeness of God”, “the first-fruits”, a light shown in the human heart. John the Baptist called him the “Lamb of God” who takes away the sins of the world. Peter exclaimed him to be “the Christ-son of the Living God”. Jesus variously assigned to himself extraordinary titles such as: “I am the light of the world’ I am the good shepherd; I am the door; I am the vine; I am the resurrection and the life; I am the way, the truth and the life.” The closing book of Revelation pictures him as the “Alpha and the Omega”, the king of kings and Lords of Lords.

Many have said Jesus is the torch for enlightening existing civilizations. But few have seen him as the torch for starting a new civilization. Many have said Jesus gives rules of harmonious living in their lives. But few have seen him give a new living and a new life. Many have said Jesus is a source of inspiration for behavior, philosophy and counseling. But few have seen him as an author of behavior, philosophy and counseling. Many have said no great battles were ever recorded on the day Jesus was born. But few have seen this as the day the prince of peace was born. Many have seen and read what Jesus prayed for the world, for Israel and for individuals, but few have prayed to God for Jesus, about Jesus and with Jesus. Many have exchanged greeting cards at Christmas time. It is estimated that each family receives on the average 60-70 cards making it a staggering five billion dollar card per year industry. But few have sent a card to Jesus in the form of prayer at the same time they send cards to other.

Jesus so often asked that his miracles and mission be kept secret. He also insisted to his disciples not to reveal he was the Messiah. Several reasons exist for this Messianic secret. For one, the miracles would overshadow and



obscure his redemptive mission. For another, the miracles were to demonstrate qualities of kindness and mercy. The time had not come for these qualities to be for all people. For still another, the teachings and messages given by Jesus were more important than the miracles since miracles were temporary and teachings were permanent. Finally, the first part of the mission of Jesus was as a servant. The second part of the mission of Jesus was as a king. Both parts had to be completed.

The coming of the Messiah with his mission, had been foretold in the Hebrew scriptures. The terms Messiah and Christ derive repeatedly from the Hebrew and Greek words meaning “the anointed one”. Messianism was and still is a Jewish expectation. It was and still is a Christian expectation. It is the Messianic theme that binds the Old and New Testaments. Views of the nature and timing of the arrival of the Messiah varied among the prophets as well as the people. The Jews longed for the Messiah at the time of Jesus since the Jews were finding the Roman rule intolerable. They longed for the advent of a great national leader to reestablish Israel as an independent and prosperous state. When Jesus said, “love your enemies” and “give the Caesar what belongs to Caesar” major disappointments resulted over Jesus being the Messiah. He did not sound like a conquering, military hero.

Christian theology has never been able to explain completely why Jesus, a Jew, should have come out of Judaism, unless of course, originally he was to be the Jewish Messiah, first for the Jews and later for the Gentiles. His rejection by the Jews has also been a rejection of the many Hebrew scriptures that foretold his arrival. We summarize here from the Hebrew scriptures a consistent and chronologically progressive series of texts which define the concept of the expected Messiah. Whoever would match the criteria of these scriptural texts would easily qualify as the Messiah.

- a. A Seed - Genesis 3:15 “The seed shall bruise his head.”
- b. A Genealogy - Genesis 12:1-3 “In thee and thy seed shall all the families be blessed.”
- c. A Star - Numbers 24:17 “A star out of Jacob.” - a great sign
- d. A Scepter - Numbers 24:17 “A scepter - a ruler shall come out of Israel.”
- e. A Prophet - Deuteronomy 18:15 “The Lord God shall raise up unto thee a prophet.”
- f. A Brother - Deuteronomy 18:15 “The prophet will be from the midst of thee, of thy brethren.”
- g. A Redeemer - Job 19:25 “The redeemer shall stand at the last days on earth.”

- h. An Anointed One - Psalm 45:7 "God has anointed thee."
- i. A Falsely Accused One - Psalm 109:2 "Thy have spoken against one with a lying tongue."
- j. A Messenger - Isaiah 6:8 "Here I am send me."
- k. A Peacemaker - Isaiah 9:6 "He will be the Prince of Peace."
- l. A King - Isaiah 9:7 "The increase of his government shall never end."
- m. A Seed of David - Isaiah 9:7 "Made of the seed of David."
- n. A Governor - Isaiah 9:6 "The government shall be upon his shoulders."
- o. A Counselor - Isaiah 9:6 "He shall be called wonderful counselor."
- p. A Gentile friend - Isaiah 11:10 "To him shall the nations seek."
- q. A Savior - Isaiah 19:20 "He shall send them a savior."
- r. A Deliverer - Isaiah 19:20 "He shall deliver them."
- s. A Servant - Isaiah 42 "My servant whom I uphold."
- t. A Light - Isaiah 42:6 "A light of the nations."
- u. A Despised One - Isaiah 53:3 "He is despised and rejected of men."
- v. A Smitten One - Isaiah 53:4 "He was stricken and smitten."
- w. A Dying One - Isaiah 53:5 "He poured out his soul unto death."
- x. A Preacher - Isaiah 61:1 "Anointed to preach good tidings."
- y. A Mediator - Jeremiah 31:3 "To bring a new covenant to Israel."
- z. A Reconciler - Daniel 9:24 "To make reconciliation for iniquity."
- aa. A Sacrifice - Daniel 9:26 "The Messiah shall be cut off."
- bb. A Priest - Zechariah 6:13 "He shall be a priest upon his throne."
- cc. A Spoiled One - Zechariah 11:3 "The pride of Jordan is spoiled."
- dd. A Sold One - Zechariah 11:13 "They weighed for a price of 30 pieces of silver."
- ee. A Pierced One - Zechariah 12:10 "They shall look upon me who they have pierced."
- ff. A Shepherd Smitten - Zechariah 13:7 "Smite the shepherd and the sheep shall scatter."

Additional Old Testament scriptures give strong evidence of the fulfillment of the Judaic Messianic expectations. He was to be born in Bethlehem (Micah 5:2); He was to be born of a virgin (Isaiah 7:14); He would make a flight to Egypt (Hosea 11:1); He would make his appearance in the second temple (Haggi 2:7-9); He would work miracles (Isaiah 35:4-6); He would make a triumphal entry into Jerusalem riding upon an ass (Zechariah 9:9); He would be betrayed (Psalm 41:9); He would give a silent defense (Isaiah 53:7); He would be numbered with transgressors (Isaiah 53:12); He would have his hands and feet pierced (Psalm 22:16); They would gamble for his garment (Psalm 22:18); He would die without broken bones (Psalm 34:20).

The above Old Testament scriptural passages reveal three outstanding observations about the expected Messiah:

1. The Messiah is to be genealogical connected with the lineage of the Davidic monarch both physically and spiritually. This implies all the promise given to the Davidic lineage would be carried to and through the Messiah.
2. The Messiah is to be humiliated, mocked, rejected and killed. The Messiah when he appears would lose his life. But he would live his life as a suffering servant, preacher, teacher and miracle worker. He would be falsely accused, smitten and rejected by those whom he intended to serve.
3. The Messiah is to bring in a new age, an age of salvation and blessings both materially and spiritually for Jews and Gentiles. He is to be a ruler and king during this period for both Jew and Gentile. This Messiah would be a conciliatory means between God and mankind functioning as a priest and mediator.

The above observations of the Old Testament texts lead to the conclusion of a two-fold mission of the Messiah. The political (a king) and the spiritual (a suffering servant). These two different Messianic personalities have been a mystery for both Jews and Gentiles. There are those who only want to see their Messiah as a king and reject him as a suffering servant. There are others who only want to see him as a suffering servant and reject him as a king. Then there are those who see both functions. They see one person with two missions, a suffering servant and a reigning king, but contexted in two different periods of time.

Thus, the criteria of the Messiah is clear. Summarily, only one person in history both past and present fits the above criteria in exactitude. This is Jesus of Nazareth. He would be one person with two comings. In his first advent, he came as the suffering servant to provide the redemptive price for a lost and dying world. In this period, he

would teach the principles and precepts for moral and spiritual living. In his second advent, he would come as reigning king of a new era to usher in the age of peace, prosperity and spiritual regeneration.

Interesting to note the Jewish Essenes of Qumran 2000 years ago were very close in understanding to the early Jewish Christian concept of the Messiah compared to the Judaic view. According to Josephus, there were 4000 members of the Essene community. It's very likely Jesus had heard of the rigorist community at Qumran or even encountered some in his travels. But the fact remains, the record makes no mention nor visits to them implying the Essenes pattern was not for his ministry nor his mission. Neither did Jesus follow the pattern of John the Baptist even though he was baptized by him. What Jesus did was to set up a new ideal and a new force which obviously was an adjustment from the prevailing movements already in Israel.

The Qumran community<sup>5</sup> had studied carefully the Hebrew scriptures quoted above as Messianic criteria and their conclusions are now documented in the Dead Sea Scrolls. The fragment most significant is 4Q521 entitled "On the Resurrection". This fragment describes the Messianic figure who will rule heaven and earth. It describes the resurrection of the dead expected to occur during the time of the Messianic era. Obviously, for the Essenes as well as the only Jewish Christians the resurrection of the dead at the end of days was a cardinal and crucial doctrine.

The Qumran community in their interpretation of the Hebrew scriptures concluded there was to be two Messiahs coming at two different periods of time - a suffering servant and a reigning king. The more prominent Messiah would be the suffering servant who would become a world savior. The second would be the king Messiah of Israel. Their view of these two Messiahs would emerge at end times and would share authority over a restored Israel. It never occurred to the Essenes in their reasoning that the Messiah would be one person with two comings at two different periods of time. Nonetheless, their two Messiah concept brought about a separation with the priests of Jerusalem. The disagreement may very well have been the motivation to start the new community at Qumran to await both the serving and royal Messiahs. At Qumran, these expectations were future in spite of preliminary signs. For the Jewish Christians, the Messiah in Jesus appeared as a suffering servant in his first advent but they await this same person to reappear as reigning king.

### 10. *Jesus as Priest and King*

“So also Christ glorified not himself to be made a high priest, but God said unto him thou art my son, today have I begotten thee. For thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek.” Hebrews 5:5-6

Melchizedek was the King of Salem, a city which later was renamed Jerusalem. He was both a king and a priest. He met Abram in the Valley of Shaveh, gave Abram bread and wine, blessed Abram and received tithes from him. This king is notable since he was both a priest and king of the one God over Jerusalem. Salem means peace. Melchizedek’s mission and reign was to bring peace and righteousness to this city-state. Few, if any, of the Old Testament heroes and patriots who were approved by God combined both functions of priest and king. This was the joining of the religious and the political - the work of God with the work of government. Few, if any, had the ability and the skill to carry out this double function responsibly and effectively. It is interesting to note Melchizedek gave two important items - bread and wine.

Melchizedek is a type of Christ as king and priest. The type strictly applies to both the kingly and priestly function of Christ in his second advent. “After the order” refers to the royal similarity between Melchizedek and Christ. Melchizedek’s origin and his end remains a mystery. This enhances the type suggesting Christ’s beginning and his end also remains a mystery. The Aaronic priesthood also typifies Christ, but it pictures mainly the sufferings of Christ but show nothing of the glory and reign of Christ. The Melchizedek priest represents the future role Christ will have in the Resurrection and his kingdom.

Conveyance of the bread and wine typifies the bread and wine offered by Jesus to the Apostles and to all subsequent disciples. (Matthew 26:26-29) This is currently known as the Lord’s Supper in the Upper Room. As they were eating, Jesus took bread and blessed it and broke it and gave it to the disciples to eat. It was symbolic of his mission to earth as the bread from heaven that whoever eats of it would have eternal life. Jesus also took the cup of the fruit of the vine, gave thanks and gave it to his disciples saying drink all of it. This was symbolic of his sacrifice he was making and he invited others to sacrifice with him so that they may share in his kingdom. The Apostle Paul calls it the communion of the blood and body of Christ. In spite of the many members in the body, all are partakers

and participants of the one loaf of bread to be offered to others. (I Corinthians 10:16-17) Thus we see performing priestly functions on behalf of his disciples. His kingly functions awaits the time of his second advent.

Thus, we see the legendary saga of Jesus. It reveals a person in so many different roles yet interwoven to produce a remarkable and extraordinary life doing the will of God. Here is a summary framework of the chronicle history of Jesus.

### 1. Jesus as the Logos

- a. He had a pre-human existence with God being his first begotten.
- b. He assisted God in the creation of much of the universe.
- c. He spoke for God. This made him the word of God.
- d. He intervened from time to time in the history of human affairs.
- e. He was translated to human form about 4 BC.
- f. He was born in Bethlehem near the end of Herod's reign.
- g. He grew into manhood in Nazareth, a Galilean Village.
- h. He was baptized by John the Baptist.

### 2. Jesus as the Word of God

- a. He acted as God's spokesperson during his pre-human existence.
- b. He handled relationships for God.
- c. He is referred to as the "voice of God".
- d. He is mentioned in all 66 books of the Bible with metaphorical qualities.
- e. He dominates the scriptures so much that the Bible can be referred to as the word of God.

### 3. Jesus as a Teacher

- a. He spoke words that are still on the tongues of people.
- b. He used parables and metaphors to teach deep truths.
- c. He integrated his character, his message and his method in reaching people.
- d. He did not make clear all things because they were secrets to his disciples.
- e. He never traveled more than 200 miles from where he was born.

- f. He taught in small towns, villages and open areas rather than cities.
- g. He reached the hearts of people as well as their heads.
- h. He focused his teaching to Apostles and disciples.

#### 4. Jesus as a Servant

- a. He lived in such a way as to make the truth a reality.
- b. He made spiritual goals and expectations the highest priority.
- c. He reached out to the poor, the needed, the rejected.
- d. He fed the poor, preached the gospel and condemned sinful practices.
- e. He resolved strife, challenged hypocrites and interpreted scriptures.
- f. He prayed for others, gave hope to slaves and cleansed the temple.
- g. He confronted Satan, expelled demons and witnessed to the Romans.
- h. He gave hope to the world and the coming Kingdom of God.

#### 5. Jesus as a Miracle Worker

- a. He had a power unmatched by anyone in history.
- b. He was continually discredited for his miraculous works.
- c. He performed miracles uncommon to the human experience.
- d. He had a miracle portfolio uncomparing with other men of God.
- e. He healed all manner of sickness, diseases and deformities.
- f. He restored body parts to normal functions.
- g. He changed and held-up environmental laws to serve a purpose.
- h. He did the greatest miracle of raising the dead.

#### 6. Jesus as a Prophet

- a. He was predicted to come as a prophet by previous prophets.
- b. He delivered not his own message, but a message from God.
- c. He predicted his own death, how it would happen and his resurrection.
- d. He predicted the destruction of the temple and Jerusalem.

- e. He predicted Israel would be occupied by the Gentiles.
- f. He predicted his church would be a small number.
- g. He predicted the conditions that would prevail at his second advent.
- h. He predicted his return in the future to establish the kingdom of God.

#### 7. Jesus as a Leader

- a. He had an impact on individuals, communities, countries and history unparalleled.
- b. He styled a leadership 2000 years ago that draws increasing numbers of followers.
- c. He set up a movement that destroyed a Paganistic civilization.
- d. He formulated a vision that has captured the minds and hearts of people.
- e. He generated new leaders as followers with his vision.
- f. He introduced values that are still yet to be realized.
- g. He was more than a torch for civilizations. He was a new civilization.
- h. He was rejected by the Jews which resulted in a historic disaster for them.

#### 8. Jesus as a Mission

- a. He was sent of God for the revival and reform of Judaism.
- b. He was sent by God to reaffirm the promise of the Kingdom of God.
- c. He lived his life with a total commitment to his mission.
- d. He created a disturbance in the temple area to symbolize it's cleansing.
- e. He was arrested, incarcerated and crucified by Romans but instigated by Jews.
- f. He became the ransom for a lost and disengaged mankind with God.
- g. He selected, trained and organized his followers to execute a movement.
- h. He issued a call for a worldwide Christian movement.

#### 9. Jesus as the Messiah (The Christ)

- a. He is now recognized by over two billion people as the Messiah.
- b. He is still denied the Messianic recognition by the Jews.
- c. He fits exactly the prophetic model given by the Old Testament prophets.

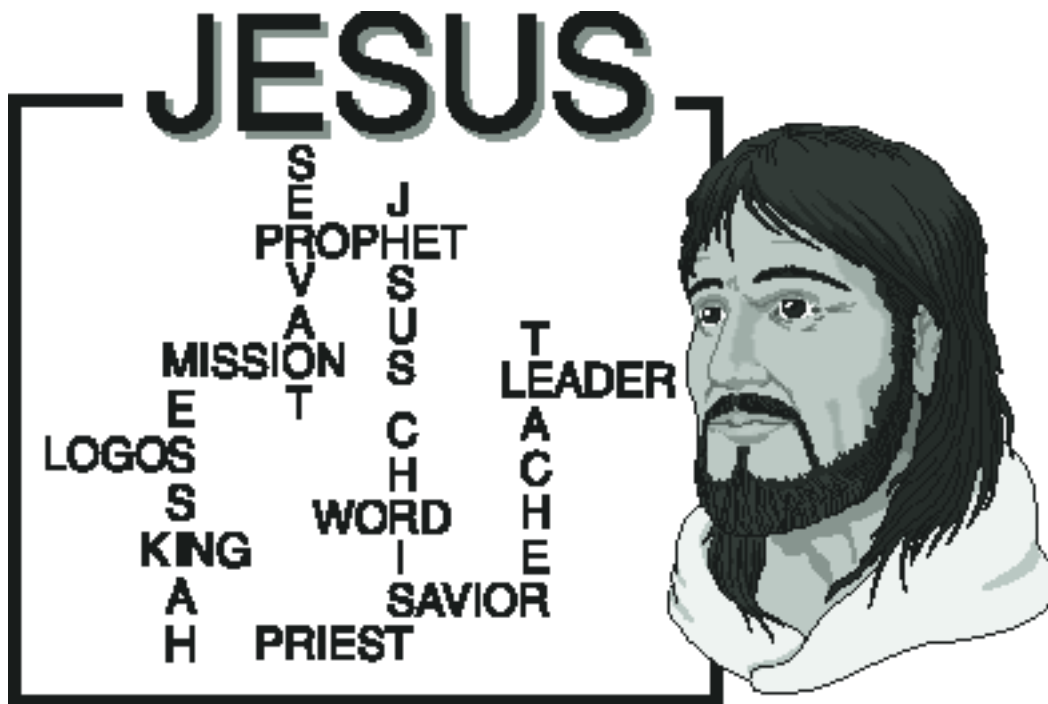


- d. He has names that describe his purpose and mission.
- e. He is seen in two ways: a suffering servant and a royal king.
- f. He carried out his role as suffering servant in his first advent.
- g. He will carry out his role as royal king in his second advent.
- h. He wanted his Messiahship recognized by his works rather than his personal claim.

#### 10. Jesus as Priest/King

- a. He is seen after the order of Melchizedek.
- b. He combines both the function of priest and that of king.
- c. He is the antitype of Melchizedek's reign of peace and his priestly relationship with God.
- d. He is mysterious, like Melchizedek in his priestly and kingly time period in the future.
- e. He has invited his body members to participate in the bread and wine symbols.

Jesus is a matrix of the most extraordinary life in human history. See Figure 8.6.



**Figure 8.6 Jesus is a Matrix of the Most Extraordinary Life in Human History**

## THE CHOSEN TWELVE APOSTLES

“Follow me and I will make you fishers of men.” Matthew 4:19

“I am the light of the world. Whoever follows me will never walk in darkness  
but have the light of life. John 18:12

“Whoever serves me must follow me and where I am my servant also will be.”  
John 12:26

“God, through Jesus Christ hath given us the ministry of reconciliation.” II  
Corinthians 5:18

“And he said to me (Paul) Depart; for I will sent thee far from here unto the  
Gentiles.” Acts 22:21

“He chose twelve whom he named Apostles; Simon, Andrew, James and John;  
Philip and Bartholomew; Matthew and Thomas; James, Simon, Thaddaeus and  
Judas Iscariot.” Matthew 10:2-5

Jesus started the Christian Movement. But he knew that a team of followers and supporters would be needed to keep the movement continuing. Twelve Apostles were selected for this task. They were not volunteers. They were chosen for the special role that would be theirs as the movement began to grow. It was the Apostle Peter’s privilege to give the initial impetus into both Judaic and Gentile communities. His sermon at Pentecost was the start of the spread of the Gospel. It included 14 different countries. See Figure 8.7.



**Figure 8.7 Peter's Sermon Converted 3,000 from 14 Different Countries (Acts 2:9-11)**

It's important to emphasize that the twelve did not simply volunteer for the destined mission. They were specially selected by Jesus for certain qualities and aptitudes which would be needed to start the Christian movement. They were also to be a part of an eventual role. Jesus attracted men from every walk of life. There were fishermen, a tax collector, a lawyer, business men, a tentmaker, farmers and peasants. The expression to make them “fishers of men” suggests conversions were planned and expected. This would produce the high growth in the movement even beyond the Jewish community. This invitation to be fishers of men is often been referred to as the “calling to Christ” or the “call of his church”. The original twelve were called around the Sea of Galilee. These called ones were not the highly educated, nor the wealthy, nor highly esteemed. Their credentials were not impressive. For the most part they were illiterate, poor, common and unimportant. However, there was several factors common to all of them. They were all Jews and most likely devout. They were highly familiar and conversant with the Hebrew scriptures. They had a heart reception for the message of Jesus and the potential will to deliver this message even against the

greatest opposition that would be given by the Jewish priests and Roman officials. The “call to follow” meant they must separate themselves and devote their lives and efforts to the mission of their leader.

The word apostle means “one sent forth”. Even Jesus was considered an apostle. (Hebrews 3:1) Extraordinary powers were conferred upon the Apostles which were not given to the disciples as a whole. The first commission given to them was “to preach the kingdom of heaven is at hand; heal the sick; cleanse the lepers; raise the dead; cast out devils; freely you have received, freely give”. (Matthew 10:5-8) This commission associates the Apostles with the great mission of the Messiah to bring in the kingdom of God. The kingdom at hand suggests Jesus was that king and he was there. It also suggests a time limiting factor for the short life of people to qualify for entrance into the kingdom. These Apostles were chosen representatives. They were an inner circle to see and hear things from Jesus that no others would.

The number twelve as a grouping was symbolic of the twelve tribes of Israel. Twelve representatives of a people is portrayed by the twelve sons of Jacob. This symbolizes the complete and perfect representation of government designed for the benefit of all the families of earth. Other scriptural passages refers to twelve gates, twelve angels, twelve pillars, twelve stones in the breastplate. Also Jesus was twelve when he reasoned with the members of the Sanhedrim. Twelve can also be symbolic such as the twelve tribes of Israel will one day be restored. The number twelve was significantly important to have a replacement for Judas Iscariot who betrayed Jesus and forfeited his place among the twelve. Later Mathias was voted in by the other eleven. But Jesus selected the twelfth personally with a man called Paul while he was traveling on the road to Damascus. There was another wider circle composed of 70 disciples. This number is also symbolic of the 70 elders of Israel or the 70 nations of the world listed in Genesis. Seventy is made of seven multiplied by ten. Since seven is the perfect arrangement and ten represents completeness, seventieth would suggest the complete and perfect organization needed to bring Christianity to it’s growth stage. Both twelve and seventy were sent out on the mission of preaching in the name of Jesus. This inner and outer circle needed to be trained and developed for this mission. Many scriptural references show these disciples had great difficulties in understanding Jesus and his mission. Jesus needed to develop a relationship with his followers as master-pupils. The thought being he was their teacher and school master. Disciple simply means one who learns from a teacher. This learning forms a discipline in their lifestyle. The Apostles and disciples accepted Jesus as the

Messiah of the Old Testament. Thus, Christianity in its origin, was Jewish in the making. Later, the promise of the Holy Spirit, the power of God, was given to them. Jesus chose twelve obscure men to be his Apostles to certify the facts of his life, death and resurrection before his ascension to heaven. This eye-witness testimony is important to make his mission and Messiahship overwhelmingly convincing. The most important certification was the witness of his resurrection which has become the centerpiece of the Christian message. Thus, the Apostles should not be thought of as officers of the church since the church was non-existent. They were emissaries and witnesses of the Risen Jesus. Through them his church would be built. Later, they would write their experiences and associations with Jesus.

Some claim the doctrines of Christianity can be understood more clearly from the writings of the Apostles than from the sayings of Jesus as reported in the Gospels. There is some justification to this claim because much of what Jesus said were parables, mysteries and obscure sayings. Did he not say “unto you is given the mysteries”. Specifics were usually left out when Jesus addressed the general public. These specifics which are deep spiritual truths, were given to the Apostles in private. On one occasion, the words of Jesus were so deeply figurative that many of his followers left him saying, “this is a hard and difficult saying. Who can understand it?” This reaction occurred when Jesus said, “unless you eat the flesh and drink the blood of the son of man, you have no life in you.” The Apostles understood many of these sayings after the Holy Spirit was given to them. Paul, especially was one who understood, elaborated and related Christianity to Judaism. Information about the Apostles is fragmentary and sparse. The Apostles themselves and their converts were too busy making history to bother with writing it. Nonetheless, the following is a summary<sup>6</sup> of salient points of the twelve Apostles:

### 1. *The Inner Circle*

a. *Simon Peter*, son of Jonah, whose home was in Bethsaida and Capernaum. The archaeological discovery of the house of Peter is a major achievement of modern archaeology. Italian archaeologists have been digging and restoring many areas in Capernaum. Peter’s house is the most visited tourist spot in Galilee. Peter’s occupation was as a fisherman. He was in business with Andrew, Zebedee and their two sons. The business appeared to be a prosperous one. Peter wrote two letters. The first, written in 65 AD, contained the theme of suffering and the glory to follow. The second, written in 66 AD, involved the theme of the last days. Although Peter

did not write Mark's Gospel of Jesus, there is much evidence to believe the Gospel is Peter's personal remembrance of his life with Jesus. This would suggest Mark's Gospel reflects Peter's view of Jesus. One reason for this view is that Mark was Peter's secretary, recorder and translator. For another, Mark did not have a personal witness of Jesus as he was much too young. Peter was a leader among the group of the Apostles. He often was their spokesman. Unfortunately, he was rebuked for some of the things he said. Much is made of Peter's temperament. He was not modest, but self-assertive and impulsive. He often acted first and thought second. Peter is placed first in the list of Apostles in all four Gospels implying he was the most prominent among the original twelve. The book of Acts of the Apostles can be divided between the Acts of Peter and the Acts of Paul. These acts were written to show the transition of Christianity from a Jewish sect to a world faith. For a short time, Peter was the undisputed head of the church of Jerusalem. It was Peter who prompted the choice of the twelfth Apostle Matthias to take the place of Judas. His evangelistic and missionary work was among the Jews in Lyddia, Joppa, Caesaria and Babylon. A great deal of time was spent preaching in Babylon and Mesopotamia since these were large Jewish communities settled in these areas. It was in these areas that the ten last tribes of Israel were living. Both Peter and Mark worked among the Jews in these areas. (I Peter 5:13) At the time, the city of Babylon was still of great importance and the center of Jewish colonialists. There is some traditional evidence to indicate Peter did visit Britain and Gaul several times. His last visit to Britain took place shortly before his final arrest and crucifixion in Nero's circus at Rome. He preached in Corinth suggesting his travels involved Greece and Turkey. His leadership and prominence was exhibited when he spoke for the Apostles on the Day of Pentecost. This was the time a miracle of languages for 14 countries was demonstrated. Eventually, he ended up in Rome. Tradition has it, he was crucified in Rome with head downward.

b. *James the Elder*, son of Zebedee and Salome and brother to John whose home was in Bethsaida, Capernaum and Jerusalem. He was a fisherman and in business with his brother, father and Peter. They owned several boats and employed hired servants suggesting the fishing company was prosperous and the partners were affluent. This economic freedom permitted them to follow Jesus while others were taken care of the business at home. Some scholars place James' mother, Salome, a sister to the Virgin Mary. If this is correct, James and John would be first cousins to Jesus. James' style was indistinguishable from his brother John and they were inseparable. The brothers were recognized as a dynamic duo called "the sons of thunder". This description was given to these

brothers when a Samaritan village refused to admit Jesus. The brothers wanted Jesus to rain fire on the village. James, along with Peter and John were regarded as the inner circle. This was due, probably because of three experiences in which other Apostles were excluded. They were present at the raising of Jarius' daughter who had died. They saw Moses, Elijah and Jesus talking at the transfiguration. They were present in the Garden of Gethsemane during his moments of agony. Jesus must have wanted these three to have a person view of these intimate secrets. The three never forgot them! James had a vigor of mind and spirit which resulted in a permanent position in the church in Jerusalem. Tradition supports the idea that James visited and preached often in Spain. He is credited to finding the Christian faith and establishing many churches in Spain. There is no record of any writings from James the elder. He also preached in Jerusalem and Judea. James was murdered by Herod in 44 AD, the third martyr of the Christian faith after Jesus and Stephan, but the first martyr of all the Apostles.

c. *John, the Beloved Disciple*, son of Zebedee and Salome whose home was in Bethsaida, Capernaum and Jerusalem. He owned a home in Jerusalem in which many activities with Jesus were held. He was part of the prosperous fishing enterprise with Peter, Andrew and James. John was probably the business representative in Jerusalem. This permitted him to become acquainted with prominent people in Jerusalem. He was probably first cousin to Jesus. He had a close relationship with Jesus. His writings include the Gospel of John, Epistles I, II, III and the Revelation. The Gospel of John written in 85-90 AD was a biography of Jesus with details not found in the other Gospels. It was at Ephesus that John wrote the Gospel of John. Ephesus was considered a center of Pilgrimage for the Christian movement. John was a part of keeping this center active. His closeness with Jesus revealed insights of Jesus as the son of God. The first letter written in 90-95 AD followed the theme of fellowship. The second letter written in 90-95 AD contained Christ's commandment. The third letter written in 90-95 AD had the theme walking in the truth. The Revelation was written in 95 AD whose contents were the last days and the future scenarios in the ages to come. John often journeyed with Peter. Paul called John one of the pillars of the church. Because of the prominence John gives to love in his writings, he earned the title of the Apostle of love. He labored among the churches of Asia Minor especially at Ephesus where tradition has it he was the pastor of the church in Ephesus with a special relationship to other churches in the area. John wrote about the seven churches that surrounded Ephesus. It is believed that John had with him, Mary the mother of Jesus for a few years. Tradition records Mary may have died in

Ephesus rather than Jerusalem. He was banished to Patmos where he wrote the Revelation in a cave now known as the Cave of the Apocalypse. This cave still exists hidden below the monastery in Patmos. Patmos was a penal colony off the coast of Turkey. Eusebius, the historian of Christian antiquities reports that John was a victim of the Roman Caesar Domitian whose cruelty executed or banished numbers of people without a fair trial. John was banished for preaching and giving testimony to the Gospel. Later he was freed by a new Emperor and died a natural death at Ephesus around 100 AD. His brother James was the first Apostle to die. John was the last.

## 2. *The Humble Worker*

a. *Matthew*, son of Alphaeus and Mary and may be the brother of James the younger. His home was in Capernaum in Galilee. When Jesus called him, he was sitting in the customs house collecting taxes. Jesus simply said, “come with me”. Matthew did, leaving all. Among the original twelve Jesus chose, there was not one rich man, not one of noble birth, nor highly educated except Matthew. Perhaps Matthew had more money and education than the rest. At first, he was despised because he was a tax collector and was often referred to as a publican. This meant he was a collaborator with the Roman oppression. His Hebrew name was Levi. He developed a self-effacing humility where he lost sight of himself in the presence of his master. In his record of the names of the twelve Apostles, he is careful to attach his name with the term publican. There was no need to do this. It revealed his humility. His familiarity with the Hebrew scriptures gave him insights on Hebraic concepts as they related to the Christian movement. But Matthew was an evangelist which meant he proclaimed the good news of the gospel wherever and whenever he could. This is easily seen with his writing of the Gospel according to Matthew. He was gifted as an author and writer and his gospel is clear, insightful and fully descriptive. He wrote the Gospel in 50 AD as an overall biography of Jesus from birth to ascension. The Gospel of Matthew is filled with many references to the Old Testament prophecies about the Messiah as being fulfilled in Jesus. Tradition describes his missionary work in Ethiopia or Persia where he was martyred. One tradition about Matthew had him while preaching in Ethiopia, lodging in the house of the eunuch who had been baptized by Philip. This eunuch hosted Matthew with great honor.

## 3. *The Quiet Workers*

a. *Andrew*, brother of Peter, son of Jonah whose home was in Bethsaida and Capernaum. His occupation was a fisherman and in business with his brother. Apparently, Andrew thought more about matters of life



than about fishing as he often left the nets to follow John the Baptist. He was a disciple of John the Baptist. Andrew learned from the Baptist that someday soon the Messiah would arrive. This Messiah would be the king of the Jews. Little is known of Andrew since he always kept himself in the background. It was Andrew who introduced Peter to Jesus. When John the Baptist saw his cousin Jesus, he stopped preaching and said of him, “behold the Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world. This is He whom I said would be coming.” Andrew heard these words and was convinced, Jesus was the Messiah. He left John and joined Jesus. Tradition describes his preaching in Scythia, South Russian, Greece and Asian Minor. He founded many churches in these areas. He was crucified on an x-shaped cross in 69 AD in the city of Patre of Archaia. To this day, this type of cross is known as “St Andrews Cross”.

b. *Philip*, who lived in Bethsaida of Galilee, was a missionary to Armenia. Philip is a Greek name leading to the conjecture the Apostle has a Greek influence. There seems to be no doubt that Philip was named after “Philip the Tetrarch of Greece”. It was this Greek Tetrarch that raised the status of Bethsaida to be the capital of the province. This young liberal Jew with certainly some Greek influence was predicted to be useful to Jesus. It was Philip later who introduced certain Greeks to Jesus. Although the Gospels say very little of Philip except for John, enough is recorded to note his inquiring mind. Philip was satisfied that Jesus fulfilled all the prophecies and descriptions given of him in the Old Testament as the Messiah. It seems from the story of feeding five thousand, Philip was responsible for the provisions and supplies for the eating rations of Jesus and the disciples. Tradition describes his finality as one beaten to death in the city of Hierapolis in the province of Phrygia. Philip’s tomb is now found in the remains of the ancient Turkish city of Hierapolis.

c. *Bartholomew*, also known as Nathaniel, was the son of Toionai. His home was Cana of Galilee. He was a man of deep religious sentiments. Jesus even said of him, “here is a true Israelite”. He often meditated on the Psalms. Little is known of his specific works. According to tradition, he did missionary work throughout Mesopotamia and India. In India, it was discovered that Bartholomew left a copy of the Gospel of Matthew written in Hebrew. His ministry belongs more to the tradition of the Eastern churches than to the Western ones. He went to Asia Minor in the company of Philip where he labored in Hierapolis. This is near Laodicea and Colossi in Turkey. His work later centered around the south end of the Caspian Sea in the section called Armenia. The modern name of his area is Azerbaijan. The Armenian church claims him as it’s founder. He was martyred by the king of Armenia.

d. *Thomas*, also known as Didymus. His home was in the Galilee area and his occupation was as fisherman. He is known as a skeptic with his questions and sometimes grim outlook. The phrase “doubting Thomas” summarizes his mental disposition of a doubter. On hearing of Jesus’ resurrection, he was stubbornly unconvinced. He said, “except I see the print of the nails...I will not believe”. Yet, Thomas had a notable courage. When Jesus intended to go to Bethany to help Lazarus in the face of dangerous and hostile Jews, it was Thomas who said, “let us also go that we may die with him”. (John 11:16) Thomas is credited in starting the Marthoma church in south India. He went to India at a time when the Buddhists of India were making inroads on Zoroastrians of Parthia. The Indian Christians credit him for bringing in the Christian concept of brotherhood. He was martyred on the Indian coast near Bombay with a lance thrust through his body while kneeling in prayer.

#### 4. *The Little Known Workers*

a. *James*, the younger, son of Alphaeus and Mary whose home was in Galilee. This would make him brother to Matthew. Temperamentally and perhaps ideologically, he differed with his brother Matthew on secular matters and the relationship between Herod’s government and its cooperation with the Romans. The family is honored to have two Apostles like the sons of Zebedee, James and John. The distinguishing feature of James, the younger was his obscurity with which he was content. Tradition describes his preaching in Palestine and Egypt. He was crucified in Egypt.

b. *Jude*, also known as Thaddaeus and Judas, lived in the Galilee area. Tradition says he preached in Syria, Arabia, Mesopotamia and Persia. The story is related how he cured the King of Edissa at the time of Jesus’ ministry. Jude becomes one of the first Apostles to witness directly to a foreign Gentile king and convert him. This tradition also relates Edessa, which is part of Armenia, to be the first country to be converted to Christianity. Jude is consistently associated as one of the five Apostles who visited Armenia and evangelized there. Christianity was officially proclaimed in 301 AD as the national religion of Armenia. Tradition identifies his martyrdom from a javelin while tied to a cross.

c. *Simon*, also known as the Zealot or revolutionist, lived in the Galilee area. He was labeled a Canaanite. This distinguished him from Simon Peter. The Zealots were the sect who looked for the Messiah who would restore the kingdom again to Israel with all the glory of the old monarchy. They wanted to rid the Roman yoke

for both independence and freedom to observe the many ceremonial laws of Moses. Simon forsook the Zealots because he saw the mission and effectiveness of Jesus as the Messiah as more productive to restore the kingdom back to Israel. But his witness to the miracles of Jesus convinced him of the divine power of God himself would be greater than the sword. He might have first joined Jesus for political reasons, but his converted life came about by spiritual reasons. Simon, the Zealot, never lost that affixation. Neither did Matthew. Both were seen in the extremities - Simon the tax hater; and Matthew, the tax collector. But their relationship in the chosen twelve was seen as close and friendly. Simon's journeys were widespread - Egypt, Cyrene, Africa, Martania, Lydia, Spain and Britain. Tradition identifies his sojourn in England along with Joseph of Arimathea. There his evangelizing was short-lived. He was arrested by the Roman Catus Decianus and given a trial that was a mockery. He was condemned to death by the Romans in Lincolnshire in 61 AD.

#### 5. *The Traitor*

*Judas Iscariot*, son of Simon whose home was in Kerioth of Southern Judea, a few miles south of Hebron. He was the only non-Galilean among the twelve. This Apostle had a disappointing and sad ending because of his terrible deed and tragic death. Judas was identified early as a betrayer by Jesus when he said, "Have I not chosen you twelve. But one of you is a devil." (John 6:70) Judas was the only suicide. All others, except John, experienced martyrdom. His life was an example of how far a man can fall when so near to salvation. The Gospel evangelists gave him many negative titles such as "thief", "betrayer", "possession of the devil", and "son of perdition". Jesus must have seen in Judas a potential useful member of the group. Likewise Judas must have seen Jesus as the fulfillment of the Messianic promises. He betrayed Jesus for 30 pieces of silver which is equivalent to ten dollars. In market terms, this was the equivalent price of a foreign slave. Judas Iscariot regretted his betrayal act after which he hanged himself. He is now known as the greatest failure the world has even seen. The preaching locations of the Apostles has not been clearly known. Tradition and oral reports give their activities as seen in Figure 8.8.



Figure 8.8

### Traditional locations of Apostles Activities

**Figure 8.8 Traditional Locations of Apostle Activities**

#### 6. *Specially Appointed Workers*

a. *Matthias*, who was voted in by the remaining Apostles was a replacement for Judas. Nothing authentic is known of him prior to Pentecost. It was Peter who called for the replacement of Judas. He described how two candidates were associated as disciples from the Baptist of John to the ascension. But Matthias qualified on the basis of one essential point as an Apostle - he was a human witness of Jesus' resurrection. The other candidate was Bar-sabbas. Both candidates were part of the original 70 trained and educated by Jesus himself and sent out two by two. Scholars have argued that Paul should have been chosen. But Paul's conversion did not occur until a very long time after the Matthias election. Paul was contemporary with Jesus, but resided in obscurity in Tarsus. Tradition reports Matthias first worked in Judea and later in Cappodocia. In Ethiopia, Matthias is said to have encounter cannibalism. This was a form of ritual giving those who eat human flesh supposed benefits. For example,

pagan rites encouraged the eating of the heart of a fallen warrior in battle. This would provide new victories for the eater. Wherever he might have been located, Matthias was both stoned and beheaded in 61 or 64 AD.

b. *Paul*, whose former name was Saul, lived in Tarsus in Asia Minor. His occupation was a tent maker although he was educated as a Pharisee and a scribe under Gamaliel. Portraits of Paul have had a traditional basis. He was of low stature, bald, crooked thighs, hollowed eyes and a crooked nose. One source said he was even bow-legged. Sometimes he appears as a man and sometimes as one extraterrestrial. Paul was strong and robust or he could not have endured the rigors of his missionary work over a vast area for a period of 30 years. Add to this, his persecution including stoning, imprisonment, mob assaults, beatings, shipwreck and snake bites. He was the Apostle to the Gentiles having completed three missionary journeys with an incomplete fourth one. Tradition gives him a far more reaching ministry as preaching in Spain and even Britain. Several scholars indicate his likelihood of spending as much as 2 years in Spain. There were many colonies of Jews there and churches were springing up as a result of other Apostles' work there. Paul had an unusual driving energy with an unshakable faith. But more, he was a force that took on a character which challenged the Roman Empire. He succeeded! His deep spiritual insight as well as his intellectual abilities had a powerful effect on his listeners. He made many converts and established many churches. His first imprisonment in Rome was really not a stay in prison as such, but a restricted stay to a house. He was allowed to have visitors and was able to send letters. In his second arrest, he was put in prison and restricted completely. Paul's thinking and working in prison had a profound effect on the nature of the Christian movement and its subsequent direction. While a contemporary of Jesus, he never met him, but was aroused by his teachings which he regarded as undermining Roman authority. This led him to persecute the Christians until about 35 AD when he experienced his profound spiritual conversion. He along with all the other Apostles witnessed the resurrection of Jesus while on the road to Damascus. At this remarkable conversion, he said, "Lord what would you have me do?" He was given the task of proclaiming the gospel to the Gentiles. In Judaic policies and restrictive practices, this was indeed significant. As long as the followers of Jesus regarded him exclusively as the Jewish Messiah who had no interest in the salvation of non-Jews or Gentiles, the growth of the new religion was seriously impeded. Paul removed this obstacle. He made Jesus the Messiah for both Jew and Gentile and in the process made Christianity a universal religion. No longer was there to be a distinction between Jew and Gentile. Paul quickly

appreciated that Christianity could grow only very slowly in Palestine. He perceived that the most fertile soil for converts was in other area of the Roman empire where hundreds of thousands of Gentiles were dissatisfied with the Paganistic state religions. He established churches throughout Palestine, Syria, Asia Minor, Greece and other parts of Europe. He created a world-wide church movement in the mere space of 37 years after the crucifixion of Jesus. Everything Paul achieved was the result of a three-fold background - a Roman citizen; a hellenized Jew; and an in-depth possessor of the Jewish faith and law. His continued defense of his Apostleship and his strained relationship with Judaizing Christians kept him away from Jerusalem most of the time.

Many Jewish writers claim that it was Paul who planted the seed for the final separation of Christianity from Judaism. He created what they call the part-time Jew. Paul knew the Jewish laws - rules about food, the Sabbath, the sacrifices, circumcision, etc. They claim Paul introduced variations in the law to make Christianity palatable to the Gentiles. If he did not do this, would-be converts would be frightened off. But that was not a motive of Paul. He saw the ceremonies, the rituals, and the traditions as works of the law which did not lead to salvation, but only subjugation and bondage. Paul's argument is that no one in the history of Judaism was able to fulfill the law perfectly. Therefore, the law was not able to produce the perfect human. Except, of course, Jesus who claimed he was the one who fulfilled the law exactly.

Paul wrote fourteen letters. Letter writing was one of the techniques Paul used in strengthening and encouraging the many little Christian communities he had founded. He would dispatch letters to his converts, had them read and shared with other communities. Romans was written 57-58 AD with the theme of redemptive truth. I Corinthians was written in 56 AD with the theme of Christian conduct. II Corinthians was written in 57 AD on the theme of Paul's authority. Galatians was written in 49 or 52 AD with the theme of salvation by grace. Ephesians was written in 60 AD on the theme of the church is Christ's body. Philipians was written in 60 AD on the theme of the Christian experience. Colossians was written in 60 AD on the theme of Christ's pre-eminence. I Thessalonians was written in 51 AD on the theme of Christ's return. II Thessalonians was written in 51 AD on the theme of the Day of the Lord. I Timothy was written in 64 AD on the theme of church order. II Timothy was written in 67 AD on the theme of holding the truth. Titus was written in 65 AD on the theme of church's order. Philemon was written in 60 AD on the theme of love exemplified. Hebrews was written in 68 AD on the theme of the priesthood of Christ. Tradition

describes his finality not by crucifixion or beheading, but by the sword of an execution in Rome by Nero's order in the summer of 68 AD. His attitude, found in his writings was, "I have finished my course." "I am now ready to be offered." "To die is gain." "We in this tabernacle do groan." He had no hesitation to undergo martyrdom.

#### CHRISTIAN AND JUDAIC INTERACTIONS

"Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew." Romans 11:1-2

Many have raised the question why did God choose Jesus to be born a Jew. He could have been born in a Gentile nationality separate from Judaism. Jesus coming out of Judaism is a paradox. Should not this paradox of Jesus as a Jew serve to demonstrate the "link" between Judaism and Christianity? Should not Christianity regard itself as an adjustment of the Jewish expectation? Should not Christianity see its beginning as a Jewish movement. Jesus was a Jew. The Apostles were Jews. The early proponents of the Christian message which formed the movement, were they not Jews? Should not Christianity accept the mission of Jesus was first to the Jews as a form of reformation. The reformation was to rekindle the Hebrew faith into which Jesus was born. The reformation intended to simplify and purify the deviations that had been infused over the years. The Judaic reformation was not directed to the elimination of the essentials, but to the recognition of their full significance for an enormous growth phase to cover the entire world.

The Christian Messiah is in essence an extended development of the Jewish Messiah. There are 450 scriptures that relate directly and indirectly with the Messiah in the Old Testament and over 350 in the New Testament. That's over 800 scriptural texts. The Messiah theme binds and links the Old Testament with the New giving the Bible its unity. The development of the Jewish Messiah passed to Christianity to incorporate the ideas of Messianic redemption, salvation, resurrection, judgment, repentance and the kingdom of God. These ideas were in the Biblical mainstream. It started with Edenism, emerged in Noahism, developed in Judaism and grew with Christianity. Thus we see a linkage of stages from Edenism, through Judaism to Christianity. But how did Christianity veer away so radically from Judaism where they both had so much in common? First, the Jews themselves with their practice of "separateness" caused an intense resistance toward fellowshiping, collaborating and cooperating with the Gentiles. They would not accept those who were not born, circumcised and raised according to Mosaic law. Even the Gentile

converts could not depend on their Jewish counterpart. Jewish leaders oriented Judaism inward toward the Jews. Christian leaders oriented Christianity outward toward all people in the world. Judaism stays with God exclusively for the Jews. Christianity goes out into the world to bring people to God. Because of this exclusivity, the Gentile converts were forced to cultivate themselves as best as they could with behaviors and practices found in the Paganistic culture. Second reason, the Greeks, Romans and Paganistic ideas and beliefs influenced greatly how the new Christianity was being shaped and formed. When church and state merged, the emperors and governmental officials enacted laws to compel Christian converts to accept the new Christian mixture. Christianity began to drift away from a Judaic orientation toward a Paganistic mixture. New doctrines in the Christian movement such as celibacy, trinity, transubstantiation, and homeostatic union was infused into the movement long after the early church was gone. The new doctrines were not found in Judaism nor are they found in the original Biblical texts. A look at the many new doctrines infused during the 2000 years of the Gospel period would reveal a continual progressive deviation from the original orientation of the early Christian converts. With time, the Christian concept of the Messiah as described in the Old Testament began to change. This was due to the writings of the church's leaders and to their secular orientation. This is very similar to the Messianic changes described from Rabbinical writings.

#### JEWISH AND CHRISTIAN VIEWS OF THE MESSIAH

“Of the increase of his government and peace shall be no end upon the throne of David and upon his kingdom to order it and to establish it with justice and with righteousness from henceforth even forever.” Isaiah 9:7

The Jewish Messianic concept comes from both the Old Testament and extra-Biblical writings such as Rabbinical documents. Rabbinical Messianism will vary immensely depending on the writer, the country of the writer and within what time period. The popularity of the expected Messiah throughout the whole world has not been planted by these Rabbinical sources, but by early Jewish and Gentile followers of Jesus. These same followers promulgate the Bible both Old and New Testaments. This author had the privilege to listen to a well known Rabbi in the Israeli ministry in Jerusalem on April 20, 1993 giving a Jewish perspective of the coming Messiah. The following are the salient points made by the Rabbi. They give interesting insights on the Jewish view of the coming Messiah. These are not quotes, but notes taken from his discourse:



The Rabbi said the Messiah will be a mortal, human being appointed by God and armed by Him with the power and authority to purge the world of its evils and establish the good upon foundations so firm they will never be moved. He will be a descendant of David often referred to as “the shoot out of the stock of Jesse.” He will be King of the Jews. He will establish a kingdom here on earth. The Messiah does not come for only one segment or ethnic group, but comes for all countries and all people. This Messiah will not be a perfect person, but will come from a family of sinners. This is important in order for him to help other sinners with their problems of sin. The world’s redemption is to be affected by this one single man in one climatic episode.

The Rabbi said the Messiah will have a militaristic role with power to succeed in any and all battles against evil. This is to suggest countries and people will oppose the Jewish Messiah. But the Messiah will be super-gifted with exceptional statesmanship to persuade and convince many in the Messianic Age. The Messiah will introduce the Messianic Age. Even though he will have extraordinary power, he must be conceived in naturalistic terms to bring lasting deliverance to Israel and the nations.

The Rabbi said that the Messiah is a prophet of God who will bring forth a message. The message is the “world will not end” but “God cares” for everyone and wants to help the people to bring about their perfection. The world needs redemption. After all, the world was created in 6 days. If it took 7, it would have been perfect. Since it took 6, this means that it is imperfect. The Messiah intends to bring about a perfect world. He will need many to help. Jerusalem will be the center of the Messianic Age directed by the Messiah. God will be involved and the people will be brought to God. The resurrection will take place in the Messianic Age.

The Messiah must be seen in the context of one God. There is absolutely no room for multiple gods or a god in many parts. (Deut. 6:4) Not only one God, but a God who cares. He is the one who created us and cares about our problems, our difficulties and our needs. It’s God that is our savior. The Bible is a guide or a blueprint to help us know God. God is King of all people. The Messiah is King of the Jews. The concept of ethical monotheism incorporates a god that is distant, but is also near.

The coming of the Messiah to bring about the Messianic Age requires belief in one God. But more, the Messianic Age will not start until all shall recognize the Sabbath. Also the recognition that God is the savior of all

people. The expectation of the Messiah has sustained the Jews for over 2000 years. This expectation will continue until he actually arrives.

The Jewish view of the Messiah had three basis elements: he is to be human, he is a son of David and he would rule a political kingdom. This falls short of the Christian view of the Messiah. The Christian view adds to the above three expectations that the Messiah would establish an eternal heavenly kingdom. The Christians adopted a spiritualized version of the Messiah. As stated earlier in this chapter, the Christians saw two roles for Jesus as the Messiah. It would come as the suffering servant in his first advent and later, in his second advent he would come as king.

#### WHY JEWS REJECTED JESUS AS MESSIAH

“But who say ye that I am? Simon Peter answered and said, thou art the Christ, the son of the living God.” Matthew 16:15-16

Messiah means the anointed one. In Greek it means the Christ. The Apostles were convinced right from the start that Jesus was the Messiah. But the Jewish leaders were not convinced. In fact, they actively sought to discourage the idea that Jesus was the Messiah. They convinced the general Jewish public which as a totality rejected Jesus as the Christ. Here are some specifics why Jesus was rejected as the Messiah.

##### 1. *The Jews rejected Jesus since he was not a political deliverer.*

The Jews under the Roman yoke, expected the Messiah to arrive and reestablish Israel as an independent kingdom. They wanted the Romans “kicked out”. What the Jews really got was a suffering servant who refused to become political. He even encouraged, “render unto Caesar the things that are Caesars and unto God the things that are God’s”. Jesus did nothing to rid the Gentile nations who controlled Israel from 606 BC down to his day. The Jews were disappointed in their expectations. There were at least four religious groups in the time of Jesus: the Pharisees, the Sadducees, the Sanhedrin were strong expectants of a political deliverer. When they saw Jesus taking no action to rid the Roman occupation, they rejected him. Jesus refused to use his power and authority to deliver the Jews from the Romans. The Essenes of Qumran described in the Dead Sea Scrolls a very close understanding to the Christian concept of the Messiah. The Qumran community studied carefully the Hebrew scriptures and saw two sets of scriptures: one set saying the Messiah would be a suffering servant who would die and the other set of scriptures

the Messiah would reign as king and reestablish the independence of Israel. The Qumran community accepted both sets of scriptures and concluded there would be two Messiahs - one a suffering servant, the other a reigning king. They expressed this two Messiah concept to the three other groups in Jerusalem and got kicked out of the city. They settled in the Qumran area near the Dead Sea. It never occurred to the Essenes that it would be one Messiah with two comings. How could they come to that conclusion. That's a spiritual understanding. But most of the religious community rejected Jesus as Messiah since he was not a political deliverer. The Jews held this political deliverer concept so firmly in mind that Jesus as a suffering servant became a stumbling block to their expectations.

2. *The Jews rejected Jesus since they failed to understand or ignored prophetic scriptures.*

It's amazing why the Jews did not accept Jesus as the Messiah since the prophecies of his arrival were clear and his life matched these scriptures with uncanny accuracy. The scriptural proofs were in the Torah and the writings of the prophets. Here is a sample list.

- a. Micah 5:2 Messiah was to be born in Bethlehem. Jesus was born in Bethlehem. Luke 2:4-11
- b. Isaiah 7:14 He was to be born of a virgin. Jesus was born of a virgin. Luke 1:27
- c. Hosea 11:1 He would be called out of Egypt. Jesus did come from Egypt. Matthew 21:5
- d. Haggai 2:7-9 He would make an appearance in the temple. Jesus did go to the temple. Matthew 21:10
- e. Isaiah 35:4-6 He would work miracles. Jesus accomplished over 57 different miracles. John 2:23
- f. Zechariah 9:9 He would ride into Jerusalem on an ass. Jesus did ride on an ass. Matthew 21:10
- g. Zechariah 11:12 He would be sold for 30 pieces of silver. Jesus was sold for 30 pieces of silver. Matthew 26:15
- h. Psalm 41:9 He would be betrayed. Jesus was betrayed by Judas. John 18:2
- i. Isaiah 53:12 He would be numbered with the transgressors. He was crucified with two thieves. Matthew 27:28
- j. Isaiah 53:7 He would give a silent defense. Jesus gave no witness nor did he make an attempt to defend himself. Matthew 27:12
- k. Psalms 22:16 He would have his hands and feet pierced. Jesus was crucified. John 19:18-23
- l. Psalms 22:18 He would have his cloak gambled. The Romans gambled for his cloak. John 19:24

m. Psalms 34:20 He would die without broken bones. Not a bone was broken with Jesus John 19:36

The matching of the life of Jesus with Messianic prophecies is amazingly accurate. The Jewish groups knew the scriptures. They either misinterpreted the scriptures or decided to ignore them.

3. *The Jews rejected Jesus since they misjudged his actions.*

The Jews really believed that Jesus was moving to crush Judaism. The overturning of the money changers in the temple was interpreted by the Pharisees, the Sadducees and Jews to this day as a move to reject the law that required sacrificing of animals for the atonement of sins. The record shows that Jesus was merely trying to get rid of the greedy thieves in the temple. (Matthew 21:13) He had said on several occasions that he came not to abolish the law, but to fulfill them. But they misjudged his actions as hostile to the law. Here are some comparisons that are proposed to seemingly prove Jesus was attempting to crush the law.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <p>a. The Torah of Moses said, "Honor thy Father and Mother." Exodus 20:8</p>                | <p>a. Once, when Jesus was speaking, his mother wanted to see him. Jesus made the remark, "all of these are my mother and brothers." Matthew 10:34-37. Was Jesus disrespectful?</p>  |
| <p>b. The Torah of Moses said, "Remember the Sabbath to keep it holy." Exodus 20:12</p>      | <p>b. When the disciples were plucking ears of corn to eat on the Sabbath, Jesus defended them. Matthew 12:1-8 Was Jesus breaking the Sabbath?</p>   |
| <p>c. The Torah said, "You shall tithe all the yield of your seed." Deuteronomy 14:22</p>    | <p>c. When tithing requirements were being neglected, Jesus said, "woe you scribes and Pharisees. You tithe the mint, dill, and cumin, but neglect the law, justice, mercy and faith. Was Jesus neglecting tithing?</p>          |
| <p>d. The Torah of Moses said, "you shall be holy for the Lord God is holy." Exodus 19:6</p> | <p>d. When the young man asked, "What must I do to earn eternal life?" Jesus said, "keep the commandments". He said, "I do". "Then to be perfect sell all and give to the poor." Luke 18:22 Was Jesus going beyond holiness?</p> |

4. *The Jews rejected Jesus as the Messiah because he was making adjustments to traditions and past practices.*

Jesus was adjusting the Judaic movement because it was going nowhere. God wanted the Jews as a chosen people to be the rising Biblical Civilization to fill the earth in fulfillment to the Abrahamic promise. Additionally, Jesus was making adjustments for spiritual reasons. These adjustments only confirmed Jesus as a leader. The sign of these adjustments came everytime he said, "You have heard it was said, but I say unto you." Parenthetically he was saying, here is what the law says, but here is what I say. Here are some of the adjustments he was making to Judaism.

- a. Good deeds on the Sabbath preempts the strict procedures of the Sabbath. Mark 2:27
- b. God is a father replacing Jehovah. Matthew 6:9

- c. Judaic exclusively is ended. The Gentiles are invited. Matthew 28:19
- d. Kingdom of God is both spiritual and earthly. John 18:36
- e. Love without revenge. Matthew 5:11
- f. Grounds for divorce is more restrictive. Matthew 19:9
- g. Do good to those who hate you. Luke 6:27
- h. Stop making oaths and vows. Matthew 5:34
- i. Stop lusting over women. It is adultery. Matthew 5:28
- j. Stop resisting evil. Matthew 5:39
- k. Love your enemies. Matthew 5:44

The rejection of Jesus was not so much by the common people as it was from the religious leaders. Interesting to note that Jesus' popularity has soared over the years where at the religious leaders of his time have become extinct.

#### MODERN JEWISH VIEWS OF JESUS

“Who do people say that I am.” Mark 8:27

There has been an amazing change in Jewish attitudes toward Jesus during the twentieth century. Prior to World War I, the bulk of the Jewish people would not even mention the name of Jesus let alone write about him. Today, the number of books and articles Jews are writing about Jesus are mounting. Since Israel has regained statehood in 1948 and a united Jerusalem in 1967, more books have been written about Jesus by Jews in the state of Israel than world Jewry had produced in all the preceding nineteen centuries. There is even dialogues started between Jews and Christians. One such example is the famous dialogue between Jacob Neusner and Andrew Greeley. This dialogue has been published<sup>6</sup>. The many dialogues range in character and include theology, scripture, history and Christian and Jewish interactions.

Arthur W. Kac, Editor of the *Messiahship of Jesus*<sup>7</sup> compiled an excellent series of articles on the changing attitudes of Jews toward Jesus. *The amazing change has taken place only since statehood in 1948*. Before that time the bulk of the Jewish people would not even mention the name Jesus let alone write about him. Even to mention the name Jesus in the synagogue would have immediately dispersed the congregation from the synagogue. Any Rabbi mentioning the name of Jesus would be fired right on the spot. Today, there are sermons preached about Jesus in

synagogues with no one protesting. In fact, the Jews are glad to claim Jesus as a Jew. Since 1948, there have been over 190 books written about Jesus by Jewish authors. More books have been written about Jesus by Jews since 1948 than world Jewry produced in all the preceding 2000 years. Attitudes about Jesus are changing. Here is a sample list from famous people in Kac's book expressing their view of Jesus.

a. *Sholem Asch*, best selling author, said, "Jesus was the light of the world and raised the world from void and nothingness. No one before him nor after him has brought the world to the feet of the living almighty God so effectively and globally."

b. *Constantin Brunner*, German Jewish philosopher said, "Why have we Jews ignored the super Jew with super Judaism. Are we Jews stricken with blindness and deafness as regards to the Messiah Jesus?"

c. *Martin Buber*, Professor of Social Philosophy, Hebrew University said, "Why have we Jews in our exile-psychology deleted New Testament Messianism. We Jews must overcome the superstitious fear we harbor about the Messianic movement of Jesus."

d. *Ferdynand Zweig*, English Scholar and Professor at Hebrew University said, "When the Jews left their land 2000 years ago, the land was holy for them alone. When they returned in 1948, the land was holy to more than half the world. Jesus was instrumental in their return to the holy land. The mystery of this simple Jew from Nazareth who conquered almost all the world and whose spiritual power is greater than all of Jewry combined is still puzzling to the Israeli Jew. How did Jesus manage to attract the immense love and adoration of the world while the Jews attracted hatred and contempt? How did this Jesus serve as a light unto nations while Jewry failed? Why has the genius of Jesus never been repeated within the Jewish gates nor will it ever be repeated."

e. *Albert Einstein*, Professor at Princeton University and Nobel Laureate said, "I am enthralled with the person from Nazareth. Jesus is a colossal person. When you read the Gospel you feel his actual presence. Jesus' personality pulsates with every word."

f. *Isaac Poysner*, author said, "The mutual prejudice between Judaism and Christianity must cease. Judaism must take the first step. Judaism's prejudice against Christianity must end. This will allow Christianity's true meaning and significance to take place that it was sent of God for the revival of Judaism and the salvation of Israel."

g. *John Cournos*, writer and author said, “Jesus was the acme of Jewish teaching. Without Jesus, Western Civilization would be wholly bankrupt. He was the apex of Jewish teaching which began with Moses, then David, Isaiah, Daniel and Hillel. The Judaic essence is crystallized in Jesus, the greatest of all Jews. It is time the Jews reclaim Jesus.”

h. *Hyman G. Enclow*, president of the Central Conference of American Rabbis said, “Jesus has become the most popular, the most studied, the most influential figure in the religious history of mankind. Who can compute all that Jesus has meant to humanity? The love he has inspired, the solace he has given, the good he has engendered, the hope and joy he has kindled - all that is unequaled in human history.”

i. *Solomon Freehof*, professor at Hebrew Union College said, “Jesus has the most famous name in the world. Millions praise him, children know him, artists paint him and scholars study him. He is the greatest moral teacher of all time.”

j. *Kaufmann Kohler*, president of Hebrew Union College in Cincinnati, said, “Jesus was a man of the people. He did not belong to any party. He broke the chains of the Sabbath laws. The Sabbath, he said was made for man and not man for the Sabbath. Jesus was a great and profound thinker, a tremendous personality, a religious genius. The Jewish people in general and its leaders in particular have no cause to hate the most noble and most exalted of all teachers of Israel.”

k. *Stephen S. Wise*, founder of the Free Synagogue in New York said, “Even if Jesus had not been born unto Israel, even if he had borne no relation to the people of Israel, it becomes of importance for Israel to determine for itself what shall be its relation to the man who has touched the world for nearly two thousand years as has no other single figure in history.”

l. *Dan Bravin*, spiritual leader Hebrew Christian Congregation said, “The religion of Jesus was Jewish but the religion about Jesus was not. Jesus preached and served the House of Israel. It was Paul who made the Jewish Messiah and savior known outside Judaism.

Many attitudes of Jewish writers in Kac’s book reveal a view that Christianity is Judaism for the Gentiles. Israel stays and belongs to God. But Christianity goes out into the world to bring salvation hope to the unsaved and unredeemed people of the God of Israel. Franz Rosenzweig in Kac’s book considers the Christian function as

symbolized by the cross. The vertical beam of the cross looks heavenward to God and its horizontal beam is outstretched toward mankind.

#### THE FOUNDER OF CHRISTIANITY - JESUS OR PAUL?

“He is a chosen vessel unto me to bear my name before the Gentiles and kings and the children of Israel. I will show him how great things he must suffer for my name’s sake.” Acts 9:15-16

There are some Jewish scholars and writers who would like to drive a wedge between Paul as a Hellenistic Jew and Peter as a representative of the Palestinian Jews. Paul, they claim was influenced by the Greek culture where he was born and raised. This influence manifested a different interpretation of Christianity. Peter, on the other hand was born and raised in Judea and thus presented an interpretation of Christianity more in alignment with Judaism. This variation of interpretation is normal and understandable. However, more recently, other Jewish scholars are attempting to drive a wedge between Paul and Jesus. They claim that Paul presented a Christian theology that was adjusted for a greater appeal to the Gentiles than to the Jews. The message that Jesus gave to only the Jews, since he stayed with the Jews, going nowhere within the Jewish community. Paul was commissioned by Jesus to deliver the same message to those outside the Jewish community. These two activities, the message and the delivery of the message outside the Jewish community has mistakenly ascribed Paul as the founder of Christianity. It should be emphasized that Paul was commissioned to go outside the Jewish community by Jesus himself. Furthermore, he delivered the same message that Jesus did during his three and one-half years of ministry. If some teachings of the New Testament appear to be in conflict with those of Judaism, it is because Judaism has moved away from the Old Testament. Paul gave the Christian movement the expansion needed for growth and to remove Jewish exclusivity. See Figure 8.9.





**Figure 8.9 Expansion of Christianity with the Apostle Paul**

In the early periods of the Christian movement, Christianity was not yet viewed as a separate religion from Judaism. Christians were viewed as a splinter sect from Judaism. Paul's conversion was really a move from Pharisaic Judaism to Christian Judaism. The Romans saw it as one type of Judaism to that of another. Paul's liberal attitude toward the Gentiles was more due to the fact Judaism and its requirements and practices of the law was not bringing about the right relationship with God. He even said those who follow the law are on the wrong path and exist in some kind of theological limbo. (Romans 11:17-24) It is for this reason Paul redefined circumcision of the

flesh toward circumcision of the heart. For the same reason, he stressed to the Gentiles no need to observe the dietary laws since they failed the Judaic converts to bring about what God had expected. Paul insisted, “what the law requires must be written in the heart.” Paul was extending a form of Judaism to Gentiles and thus opening up to all the privileges granted to Israel. However, at no time did Paul ever put the law as equal to Christ or on the same level. Only Christ was his major point, that could ever bring about the right relationship with God.

Today, the Christian movement has moved away from its Judaic relevance. Martin Buber, as an example, had a deep respect for Jesus, but could hardly accept the concepts and ideas presented by Paul. Buber felt Jesus and Paul had different views of faith. Buber interpreted Jesus’ faith as a personal trust in God. For Paul, it meant trust and beliefs in doctrines and principles. Buber failed to realize the Christian faith means both. Buber failed to interpret Jesus and Paul correctly. Jesus in his teachings and Paul in his writings described the Christian faith as a combination of individual trust in God and a collection of truths and principles. One was a manifestation of the other. The wedge between Jesus and Paul had raised the issue more pointedly: was Paul the founder of the Christian movement rather than Jesus? Did Paul exercise an authority beyond his commission? Discussions among these scholars have favored Paul as a founder of Christianity as it’s now known than the Jesus of the first century. Furthermore, these Jewish writers claim there is little or nothing in the teaching of Jesus that could not be paralleled in the teaching of the Tannaitic Rabbis. They say Jesus was a Galilean teacher standing in the general stream of Pharisaic Judaism. These claims reveal a covert attempt to pull Jesus into the Judaic camp with his mission and message while excluding Paul as one who mixed Judaic ideas with Paganistic concepts. These writers go so far as to oppose Paul’s teachings on Jesus as the Son of God. Their claim is the Son of God concept was derived from Pagan sources and Polytheistic thinking. Admittedly, some and perhaps many Christian doctrines and concepts of today are different from the original teaching of Jesus. Over a span of 2000 years, there have been infusions and mixtures not only from Hellenistic influences but from Roman Paganistic sources as well. Church related dogma of the early, middle and later periods of the Gospel age may contradict the pure and unadulterated concepts and ideas presented by Jesus and his Apostles. But we should not condemn or ostracize Paul for these variations that occurred in later periods. Nor should we blame Jesus for permitting the deviations that are now seen in Christianity! One might see over a span of 3000 years changes and adjustments in Judaism since its founders - Abraham and Moses.

Today's practice of Judaism has its variations. Within the three major Jewish groups - Orthodox, Conservative and Reform, there are wide variations from the original tabernacle setting in the Sinai wilderness. Judaism is no different than Christianity. There are wide variations in understandings and practices.

In this section, we take the position that the original Christian message was founded by Jesus, himself, but furthered into a movement with a plan for growth by allowing his Apostles and disciples, the last one being Paul, to give it the impetus for world-wide growth. The arguments against the claims of the Jewish writers will now be taken up with scriptural responses.

1. *Jewish writers say Jesus did not claim to be uniquely the Messiah.*

- a. Matthew 11:3-6 - John asked, "art thou he that should come or do we look for another?" Jesus answered and said, "Go and show John again those things which you hear and see, the blind receive their sight, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised up and the poor have the gospel preached to them. Blessed is he whosoever is not offended in me." (This is a direct reference to Isaiah 61:1 as to the sign of the Christ - the Messiah.)
- b. Matthew 16:13-17 - "Who do men say that I, the son of man am?" They said, "some say that you are John the Baptist, some Elijah, and others Jeremiah or one of the prophets." He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?" Peter answered, "Thou art the Christ (Messiah) the son of the Living God." Jesus answered, "Blessed are you Simon for flesh and blood did not reveal it to you, but my Father who is in Heaven."
- c. Matthew 26:63-65 (Philip Trans.) - The high priest said to him, "I command you by the Living God to tell us on your oath if you are Christ (Messiah), the Son of God." Jesus said to him, "You have said so. Yes and I tell you that in the future you will see the son of man sitting at the right hand of power and coming on the clouds of Heaven." At this time the high priest tore his robes and cried, "That was blasphemy. Where is the need for further witnesses. Look you've heard the blasphemy - what's your verdict now?" And they replied, "He deserves to die."
- d. John 1:41 - "We have found the Messiah who is being interpreted as the Christ."

- e. John 4:25-26 - The woman said to him, "I know that Messiah cometh who is Christ. When he is come he will tell us all things." Jesus said to her, "I that speak to you am he."
  - f. John 6:69 - Simon Peter answered him, "Lord to whom shall we go. You have the words of eternal life, and we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ (Messiah), the son of the Living God."
  - g. John 11:27 - She said to him, "Yes Lord, I believe that you are the Christ (Messiah), the Son of God who should come into the world."
2. *Jewish writers say Paul did not have the authority to present his views and interpretations of Christianity and how it aligned with Judaism.*
- a. Acts 9:15-16 - But the Lord said to Ananias, "Go thy way, for he (Paul) is a chosen instrument unto me to carry my name before the Gentiles and kings and the children of Israel. For I will show him how he must suffer for my name's sake."
  - b. 2 Corinthians 11:21-22 - "In whatever any is bold, I am bold also. Are they Hebrews? So am I. Are they Israelites? So am I. Are they the seed of Abraham? So am I. Are they ministers of Christ (Messiah)? I am more, in labors more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequently in deaths often."
  - c. Acts 9:19-22 - "And when he (Paul) had received food, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain days with the disciples at Damascus. And immediately he preached Christ in the synagogues that he is the Son of God... But Saul increased the more in strength and confounded the Jews who were at Damascus proving that this (Jesus) was the very Christ."
  - d. 2 Corinthians 10:7-8 - "If any think himself to belong to Christ, all right; but let him think again about himself for we belong to Christ every bit as much as he. You may think that I have boasted unduly of my authority which the Lord gave me, remember, to build you up and not to break you down."
3. *Jewish writer say Jesus was in the stream of Pharisee Judaism as if he was in support of the Pharisees. Paul was not in that same stream; Paul misunderstood Judaism.*
- a. Matthew 23:24-28 - "You blind guides who strain at the gnat and swallow a camel. Woe unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter but

within you are full of extortion and excess. You blind, Pharisees, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter that the outside of them maybe clean also. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like white sepulchers which indeed appear beautiful outward but are within full of dead men's bones and of all uncleanness. Even so you also outwardly appear righteous unto men but within you are full of hypocrisy and iniquity."

- b. Matthew 5:20 - "For I say unto you except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and the Pharisees, you shall in no case enter into the kingdom of Heaven."
- c. Matthew 9:34 - But the Pharisees said, "He casts out demons through the prince of demons."
- d. Luke 12:1 - "Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees which is hypocrisy."
- e. Luke 11:42 - "But woe unto you Pharisees. For you tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs and pass over justice and the love of God."
- f. Luke 6:7 - "The scribes and Pharisees watched him whether he would heal on the Sabbath day that they might find an accusation against him. But Jesus knew their thoughts and said to the man who had a paralyzed hand, rise up and stand forth in the midst. The man rose and stood forth. Then Jesus said to them (Pharisees) is it lawful on the Sabbath days to do good or to do evil; to save life or to destroy it?"
- g. Luke 16:14-15 - "And the Pharisees also who were covetous heard all these things and they derided him (Jesus) and Jesus said, you are they who justify yourselves before men, but God knoweth your hearts for that which is highly esteemed among men is an abomination in the sight of God."
- h. Acts 26:4-5 - "My manner of life (Paul) from my youth which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem know all the Jews. Who knew me from the beginning, if they would testify that after the strictest sect of our religion, I lived as a Pharisee."
- i. Acts 23:6 - "When Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees and the other Pharisees, he cried out to the council, men and brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee."
- j. Acts 22:1-3 - "Men, brethren and fathers, hear ye my defense which I make now unto you. And when they heard that he spoke in Hebrew to them they kept more quiet. And he said I am verily a man who is a Jew born in Tarsus, a city in Cilicea, yet brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel (8 years) and

taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers and was zealous toward God as ye all are this day.”

4. *Jewish writers say Paul’s Christianity turned to the Gentiles was more Hellenistic than Judaic. Was this due to Jewish rejection, Gentile acceptance or both?*
  - a. Mark 8:31 - “And he began to teach them that the son of man must suffer many things and be rejected by the elders, by the chief priests, and scribes and be killed and after three days rise again.”
  - b. Mark 10:33 - “Behold we go up to Jerusalem and the son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and unto the scribes and they shall condemn him to death and shall deliver him to the Gentiles.”
  - c. Luke 17:25 - “But first he must suffer and be rejected by this generation.”
  - d. Acts 9:15 - “Paul is a chosen vessel unto me to bear my name before the Gentiles, kings and the home of Israel.”
  - e. Acts 11:1 - “And the Apostles and brethren that were in Judea heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God.”
  - f. Acts 13:44-47 - “On the next Sabbath almost the entire population of the city assembled to hear the message of the Lord but when the Jews saw the crowds they were filled with jealousy and contradicted what Paul was saying, covering him with abuse. At this Paul and Barnabas did not mince their words but said, we felt it our duty to speak the message of God to you first (Jews) but since you spurn it and evidently do not think yourselves fit for eternal life, watch us now as we turn to the Gentiles! Indeed the Lord commanded us to do so in the words, “I have set thee for a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldn’t be for salvation unto the uttermost part of the earth.” (Quote of Isaiah 49:6)
5. *Jewish writers say that Jesus taught to uphold the law but Paul taught to circumvent the law.*
  - a. Matthew 5:17 - “Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets. I am not come to destroy but to fulfill.”
  - b. Mark 2:27 - “The Sabbath was made for man and not man for the Sabbath.”
  - c. John 5:18 - “Therefore the Jews sought more to kill him because he not only had broken the Sabbath but said also God was his Father making himself equal with God.”

- d. Acts 15:1-20 - “And certain men who come down from Judea taught the brethren and said except you be circumcised after the manner of Moses you cannot be saved...they commanded them to keep the law...but therefore my judgment is that we trouble them not who turned to God.” (Gentiles are not under the law.)
6. *Jewish writers say Paul modified the Jewish Messiah concept from that of a human being to that which is spiritual. Was it because Paul only knew Jesus as a spirit?*
- a. Acts 9:3-5 - “And as he journeyed (Paul) he came near Damascus and suddenly there shone round about him a light from Heaven (spiritual). Paul fell to the earth and heard a voice say, Saul, Saul why persecutest thou me? Who art thou Lord? The Lord said I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.”
- b. Romans 7:14 - “For we know that the law is spiritual but I am carnal sold under sin.”
- c. 1 Corinthians 2:15 - “But he that is spiritual judgeth all things; yet he himself is judged of no man.”
- d. 1 Peter 2:5 - “Ye also as living stones are built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.”
- e. Revelations 2:7 - “hear what the spirit saith unto the churches.”

Major adjustments were being made of Judaism by Jesus. Some of these adjustments are described in the previous section of Jesus as a leader. Ideas and concepts found in the Biblical mainstream were no longer the exclusive privilege of the Jews. Jesus wanted the movement to be world-wide. The message and the mission is for both Jews and Gentiles. Jesus wanted growth. He wanted the movement to be a global civilization. “Go therefore and teach all nations baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit. Teaching them to observe all whatsoever I have commanded you and lo, I am with you always even unto the end of the age.” (Matthew 28:20) We need not quarrel with Jewish writers who claim that all of Jesus’ teaching can be paralleled in the Tannaitic Rabbis. Teachings are worthless unless there is an application to a world-wide recipient. The original promise given to Abraham, “in thee and in thy seed shall all the families be blessed” was furthered more toward this goal with Jesus and the Apostles and the outstanding work of Paul than all of the Judaic prophets, teachers, priests and rabbis combined. What Jesus really did was to organize a force, train it, and direct it to reach a world-wide audience. Christianity in the strictest sense started with Jesus, but was promoted and extended by those who

followed. To answer the question directly - who is the founder of Christianity - it is the same founder of Edenism and Judaism - God himself. Judaism did not give birth to Christianity. Neither did Edenism give birth to Judaism. Edenism, Judaism and Christianity are continuity links of God's plan for a global civilization. In each link, God makes adjustments to forge a pathway to reach his goals. God used different individuals to implement the links in his plan.

#### ANTI-SEMITISM

“Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me but weep for yourselves and for your children. For behold, the days are coming in which they shall say blessed are the barren and the wombs that never bore and the breasts which never nursed.”

Luke 23:28-31

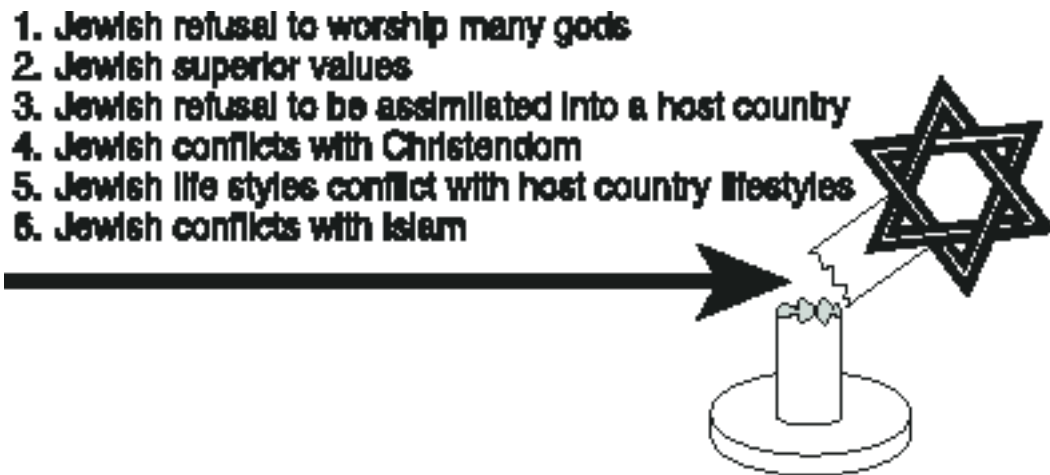
Anti-Semitism has often been thought of as a modern day phenomena. It's something that has arrived since the concentration camps of the Nazis. A phenomena that if ignored, it will disappear or be rendered harmless. During World War II, Anti-Semitism brought about the annihilation of six million Jews. The hate phenomena has historically focused on Jews and Jews alone even though Arabs are of Semitic stock. Recently, ant-Jewish feelings have often been mistaken for Zionism. This is historic blindness. Anti-Semitic roots are as ancient as the history of Jews themselves. A look back into the stream of time reveals world-wide hate and fear of the Jews had it's origin in antiquity, continued through the ages and one can see evidences that it is on the increase today. We thought after Hitler and Stalin were gone, Anti-Semitism would disappear. Anti-Semitic episodes are escalating on the contemporary scene. A search back for Anti-Semitic origins begins with the reasons the Egyptians enslaved the Hebrews, it continued with the Assyrian assimilation of the ten lost tribes of Israel and it was perpetuated by and through the Gentile empires through Rome and the medieval ages. The Roman scattering and pulverizing plan which produced the Diaspora threw fuel on the fire. The church's persecution of the wandering Jew with the Nazi Germany Holocaust was a major incitement to rid the problem only to have it return with greater impetus. How is it Anti-Semitism is still alive? Why is it so misunderstood? What has given it such an ugly historic character? Is Anti-Semitism something more than a slur of one race or nationality against another? Is there a difference between gutter



insults and vast generalizations about the Jewish people contemporarily and historically? Can we really believe the Jews are an evil phenomena? These and other questions will be taken up in this section.

### *Causes of Anti-Semitism*

The term Anti-Semitism was recently coined in Germany to describe anti-Jewish feelings in Europe. The term is now extended to all parts of the world for anti-Zionism, anti-Israel and anti-Judaism. It's a poor term because it implies it is a Twenty-first Century phenomena of hate when it is as old as the Jews themselves. This is 4000 years old. History will one day declare, Anti-Semitic hate is humanities greatest hate! The Jews have been hated so long and so deeply it matters not if they live in the neighborhood or live down the street or live outside the country. Hate for the Jews was born when Judaism was born. This is to say, as long as Jews continue as Jews with their tenacious hold on Biblical ideas, Anti-Semitism will continue to exist. Anti-Semitism is a world-wide hostile prejudice, hateful discrimination or an active persecution against the Jews as an entity culture. It is this hate for the culture and the Biblical ideas that formed the culture that infects the individuals who identify themselves with the culture. The term Semites are offspring of Shem, one of Noah's sons. The reason they are called Semites rather than Shemites is because the h's are not pronounced in Arabic or Hebrew. All the Arabs and the Jews come from Shem. Therefore, Arabs and Jews are Semitic. This is a puzzling paradox. All are Semitic, but Anti-Semitism refers only to the Jews. What's tragic about Anti-Semitism is it's generalized nature. All Jews get blamed for the behaviors of a few or a small number. Often they are blamed when there is absolutely no involvement. Anti-Semitism is a very evil phenomena. Like all other hates, it is out of proportion to the behavior which are said to give rise to them. It is hate for one or a few which condemns all. There are at least six causes or reasons why this phenomena of Anti-Semitism prevails. This section will examine each of these six causes. See Figure 8.10.



**Figure 8.10 Causes of Anti-Semitism**

1. *First cause of Anti-Semitism: Jewish refusal to worship polytheistic and Paganistic gods.*

Religion is the most serious and deepest reason for Anti-Semitism. The Jewish insistence of Deuteronomy 6:4, “The Lord God is one Lord” and denying everyone else’s God has caused the basic conflicts with other cultures. In the ancient world every nation had and worshipped their own peculiar gods. In Egypt, they had gods of the environment - the sun, the water, the season and the food. To the Egyptians, who can deny the value of the environment? Egyptians did not like it when the Jews had no worshipping respect for their environmental gods. The Hebrews would say, it’s nonsense to worship gods that can’t speak, see or hear. Here is a first rule of Anti-Semitism: If you won’t worship our gods, we will hate you for it. In Persia, the Persians had their unique gods. They enacted laws which forced adoration of these gods. Haiman said to the Persian king, there are a people in the land (Jews) that obey not our laws nor worship our god. (Esther 3:2-6) Haiman was really the first Anti-Semite. This hate developed because Mordecai refused to recognize his high governmental position. All Jews were to be punished for Mordecai’s guilt. Here is a second rule of Anti-Semitism: If one is guilty; condemn them all. If one makes a mistake; hate them all. In Babylon, the Chaldeans had gods of the stars and the celestial bodies. Their study of the heavens were more than simply astrology, but a study of their gods. Daniel, when taken in captivity during the first invasion by Nebuchadnezzar in Jerusalem, embarrassed the astrologers for interpreting correctly dreams which the astrologers were not able to do. So they plotted revenge against Daniel, but they took it out on all the Jews. Here is a third rule of Anti-Semitism: scapegoating. If you can’t hurt the one you think is guilty; hurt all the others for

revenge. This rule is a contemporary practice of terrorism today. If you can't hurt the ones you want to hurt; take innocent victims and hurt them as substitutes. Daniel was thrown in prison for failure to worship the gods of Chaldeans. (Daniel 6 and 7) In Greece, they had gods all over the place. They even had Zeus, the father of the gods! The enacting of laws to force Jews to worship Greek gods was a failure. An alternate approach was Hellenization. This meant imposing their social and cultural practices on their everyday living styles. Antiochus Epiphanes IV in 169 BC put a statue of Zeus in the most holy of the temple, prohibited the observance of the Sabbath and outlawed circumcision. The Greeks were saying, if you won't acknowledge and worship our gods, we will impose or restrict cultural behaviors that you enjoy doing. Here is a fourth rule of Anti-Semitism: If you are not willing to behave like us, we will force restrictions to prevent your normal and desirable behaviors. In Rome, they accepted all the Greek gods, but also made humans into gods. Most of the Roman emperors regarded themselves as gods. Caligula decreed that all Jews must worship him as a god. The Jews refused to put his statue in their temple. This outraged Caligula. In 30 AD, Caligula decreed all Jews must leave Rome. They were banned! Here is a fifth rule of Anti-Semitism: If you do not conform to our religious practices; you must leave the country and our culture. The Roman scattering is seen as a result of this. If Caligula did not die prematurely, the massacre of the Jews would have rivaled the Holocaust of Nazi Germany. Historically, it seems people have hated the ideology of a one God more than the possessor of the ideology. The belief in one God has disturbed many people at various times. For Anti-Semitism to disappear, the Jew must cease to believe in a one God. Since the belief in one God is the centerpiece of Judaism, Anti-Semitism will remain. The Diaspora has always been seen in a negative way. But there is a positive view of the Diaspora. As the Jews roamed, wandered and scattered throughout the world with the one God conception, they carried this concept and influenced the country or culture in which they resided. Today we see polytheism and paganism in a state of decline as the world moves ahead to a one God. Hence, we see the first cause of Anti-Semitism is the Jewish refusal to worship many gods.

2. *Second cause of Anti-Semitism: Jewish values and practices which give them a superior lifestyle.*

This first appeared in the days of Pharaoh of Egypt in 1450 BC who knew not Joseph. (Exodus 1:8-17) This Pharaoh had three fears about the Hebrews in the land. He said, "the people of Israel are more and they are mightier than we". The Pharaoh admitted the Hebrew were mightier. Here are several suggestions why. First, they held to

the value of the Jewish family. The Torah was not written at this time, but values were transmitted from Adam through Noah through Shem to Abraham. The concept of the family distinguished the Jews more than any other Paganistic group. This brought coherence and good bringing up of the children. Later it became a commandment - Deuteronomy 6:7, "You shall teach your children". Second, the Israeli's were non-alcoholics while the Egyptians were. Noah's story of alcoholism was often repeated in Jewish families. There was a powerful lesson of the results of inebriated behavior. Israelites abstained. Third, Hebrews living in a foreign country made them tough-minded. When you are a visitor with no citizen rights and no government to support or protect, survival becomes critical. Survival skills emerge when you need to depend upon your neighbors, your family and yourself. Tough-mindedness was practiced from generation to generation. Eventually it become genetic. The Pharaoh said, "let's enslave them lest they multiply and join our enemies against us." The fear was so great, the Pharaoh ordered all new born males to be killed. This is how Moses was saved by an Egyptian princess. In short, Anti-Semitism reared it's head 3500 years ago because Israel practiced family coherence, training and educating children, non-alcoholic practices and tough-mindedness disposition for survival. Jewish adherence to the concept of family, it's preservation and it's coherence is distinctive as compared to secular families.

3. *Third cause of Anti-Semitism: Jewish refusal to be assimilated into a host country.*

The Jews were told over and over, they were a chosen people. They should not mix with the Gentiles. They must be separate. (Deuteronomy 7:6) "I have chosen you as a holy people to be above all people upon the face of the earth." (Ezra 10:11) "Separate yourselves from among the people of the land." Because God chose the Jews to be a holy people, He gave them the law, the prophets, a vision, the tabernacle, the priesthood, a covenant, Messianic promises, practices of prayer, and the holy festivals. These were intended to make them a holy people. After all, if God chose the Jews, they were not ordinary, but intended to be extraordinary. The Bible supports God's activities with the Jews. The Bible is a book of the Jews. Biblical heroes, the prophets, Jesus and the Apostles were Jews. The Bible is a Jewish world. Jesus even said, "Salvation is of the Jews". (John 4:22)

This chosenness has provoked a jealousy and a hostility among the Gentiles or non-Jews. It has also led to arrogance, pride and a condescending attitude on the part of the Jews. But his separation as a holy people developed a stiff resistance of the Jews to be assimilated into the culture they lived in. The Gentiles were resentful of the

Jewish claim to divine selection, favor and protection. This resentment prompted Gentile government to force assimilation. The Jews resisted fiercely. It created Jewish Gehtollos. It started Anti-Semitism. From time to time, non-Jews would test this claim to chosenness only to have it verified. When Daniel was thrown into the lions den, the Babylonians became convinced God was with him. Gentiles were jealous of Jewish chosenness.

4. *Fourth cause of Anti-Semitism: Jewish conflicts with Christendom*

Christendom is a wide variety of Christian groups that have an equal variety of perceptions and interpretations of the Jesus of Nazareth, who he is and what he did. In the United States, there are thousands of registered Christian corporations with probably an equal number of non-registered organizations that have the Christian identification. A majority of these Christian groups are in conflict with the Jews over Jesus with his mission and his accomplishments. The use of the term Christendom will refer to the majority or mainstream holders of the Christian identification. Here are some of the reasons for the conflicts which has fostered the fires of Anti-Semitism.

a. *Christendom sees the Jews as “God killers”*

Of all the Anti-Semitic justifications in Christendom, this is the big one. This is based on the doctrine of the Trinity where God consists of three persons - the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. The theory is, if the son is killed, so has the father been killed. This view belongs to the past and to history. It must come to an end.

b. *Christendom sees the Jews rejecting the Messiah*

Evidences of Jesus being the Messiah for both the Jews and the Gentiles is so overwhelming that Christendom finds it difficult in understanding why the Jew have rejected him. Some in Christendom have not accepted Jesus as the Messiah and those who do accept him, accept him for a wide variety of reasons and roles.

The Jews continue to expect the “political” Messiah to establish a new age. This is equivalent to the second coming of the Christian Messiah. Jewish continued refusal to accept Jesus as the Messiah continues to be a wedge between Christians and Jews. Some Christians even blame Jews for the crucifixion of Jesus.

c. *Christendom sees the Jews rejected the divinity of Jesus*

This is based on the doctrine of the incarnation. The theory of this doctrine is Jesus was not a man at birth. He was a divine person wrapped in a cloak of flesh. This is known as the ecostatic-union. Not all Christians see the diversity of Jesus during the human manifestation. But they do see Jesus' divinity upon his resurrection.

d. *Christendom sees the Apostle Paul indicting his fellow countrymen*

In I Thessalonian 2:14-16 Paul describes how his own countrymen have both killed the Lord Jesus and the Jewish prophets. But in I Corinthians 2:7-8. Paul says the government of his age (the Romans) killed Jesus. There is a need to resolve these two texts. Who killed Jesus, the Jews or the Romans?

Who is to be blamed for the crucifixion of Jesus? Who put Jesus on the cross? The list of possibilities is long. Was it the Sanhedren? Was it the high priest or Pilot or the Roman soldiers? Surely they were part of a process that led to the cross experience, but the question is a question of responsibility. If one were to say sinners put Jesus on the cross, the answer is close to the truth for many scriptures say he died for sinners. But the answer is given in John 10:17-18 where Jesus said, "no man taketh my life from me. I lay it down by myself! I have the power to lay it down and to take it up again. This assurance I have received from the Father." This scripture confirms without a doubt that Jesus put himself on the cross. Jesus volunteered to do this work. This is what Jesus meant "I have finished the work that you have given me". (John 17:4) Ultimately, there is only one person responsible for the crucifixion of Jesus and that was Jesus himself. It was a self-offered sacrifice to the atonement of sins rather than a tragedy unexpected or accidental. These perceptions of Jesus, who he is and what he did bear hard in Anti-Semitic attitudes in Christendom.

5. *Fifth cause of Anti-Semitism: Jewish lifestyles conflicting with host country lifestyles*

Jewish lifestyles are different and in open cultural conflict with the host culture in the Diaspora. These lifestyles prevent the Jews from accepting and practicing behaviors expected by host governments. Here are a few of these lifestyle behaviors which is unique for Jews and aggravate Gentile governments: marital exclusivity; circumcision of infants; avoidance of eating fat and other diet restrictions; observing festivals and holidays separate from the host country; extreme observance of the Sabbath without regard to the affect on others. The mutual prejudice between

Christians and Jews must come to an end. When it does, both Jews and Christians will see the link between the two. The covenants and promises given in ancient times continue in a pathway from Judaism through Christianity and eventually to other people of the world. Judaism has been the preserver of the promises and expectations for the world and Christianity has been the conduit for these promises and expectations to take root and grow for all people. These cultural differences have generated a dislike and even a hate. Anti-Semitism can be more a dislike for the behavioral differences in lifestyles.

#### 6. *Sixth and last cause of Anti-Semitism: Jewish conflicts with Islam*

Like Christianity, Islam's Anti-Judaism is deeply rooted. The Islamic Bible contains attacks against the Jews since they refuse to accept Mohammed as the Messiah sent by God. Mohammed used the Jewish Bible to forecast Mohammed coming as the Christians used the Jewish Bible to forecast Jesus coming. Hate developed when Jews refused to acknowledge Mohammed and Jesus. On the modern scene, the hate has developed in calling for holy war and even extermination of the Jews and their right to exist. This is genocide! The hate is so intense that Islamic leaders embrace Nazi type Anti-Semitism.

Anti-Semitism continues to grow because the attempts to solve the problem has failed. Anti-Semitism has many causes and roots over history and cultures, but in spite of this the Jews have had a tenacious hold of Biblical ideas and concepts.

#### LINKS BETWEEN JUDAISM AND CHRISTIANITY

“For by one spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free and have been all made to drink into one spirit.” I Corinthians 12:13

The Christian movement did not start independently. It was linked to Judaism. One can see it was really only one movement, but in stages - Edenic, Judaic, and Christian with more stages to come. This section identifies the links between Judaism and Christianity. Like a relay race, the baton was passed on to the next runner. The goal was to restore what was lost in the original Edenic paradise and complete the Judaic Abrahamic promise for blessing all the families on the earth. Here are some of the many links that passed from Judaism to Christianity and no doubt will be passed on to future stages.

a. *Everlasting life.* Faith in a future life that never ends appears to be a focus of all religions. Judaism and Christianity is no different. It underscores the basic problems all people have that life comes to an end without choice. Opportunity for future life is a great hope. (Daniel 12:2) “Many who sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake some to everlasting life and some to everlasting judgment.” (John 6:47) “He that believeth in me hath everlasting life.”

b. *Messianic Expectation.* The longing for improved conditions through the leadership of an ideal king who solves world problems justly and mercifully is termed the Messianic hope. The Messiah is expected to be both religious and political. The long awaited Messiah is to usher in an era of peace and abundance and a new religious spirit for his own people and the world at large. (Isaiah 9:7) “Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end upon the throne of David.” (John 1:41) “We have found the Messiah which is the Christ.”

c. *Lord God is one Lord.* The Bible is the greatest source of spiritual truths that recorded history has documented. It’s central theme from Old Testament to New Testament is there is no god but God. (Exodus 20:3) “Thou shall have no other gods before me” is a powerful injunction from God himself. Multiple gods, families of gods or god divided in many parts are deviations from the one central theme: the Lord God is one Lord. (Mark 12:29-33) The Bible reveals God is life. God is truth. God is love. God is one Lord.

d. *Sowing and Reaping.* Everything, good or bad, comes into a person’s life as a result of unvarying laws, non-conformity with laws or sowing or the lack of sowing. More than often the operator of life’s results is the individual himself or herself. A simple way to avoid trouble is to plant seeds for the development of a righteous path. Learning how to think rightly instead of wrongly are the seeds which will reap an enormous harvest. (Leviticus 26:16) “Ye shall sow your seed in vain for your enemies shall eat it.” (Galations 6:7) “Be not deceived, God is not mocked for whatever a man soweth that shall he also reap.”

e. *Reward and Punishment.* Freedom of choice will always give opportunity for individuals to deviate from standards or high moral expectation. This will create a variety of mental states. If the choice and the will is to conform to standards of righteousness, blessings and rewards will result. If the choice and the will is to deviate from standards, cursing and punishment will result. If not in the short-run, always in the long-run. (Hosea 4:9) “I will



punish them for their ways and reward them their doings.” (Matthew 16:27) “Then shall he reward every man according to his works.”

f. *Repentance and Baptism.* Sin contaminates! The need for cleansing and starting over is needed. Repentance is a mental state for being sorry for the errors, mistakes and sins one commits. Baptism sets an individual captive free of the past and turns the individual looking to the future. Water symbolizes truth and is the medium for cleansing. (Psalm 51:2) “Wash me thoroughly from mine iniquity and cleanse me from my sin.” (I Corinthians 12:13) “For by one spirit were we all baptized into one body whether we be Jews or Greeks whether we be bond or free and have been all made to drink into one spirit.”

g. *Kingdom of God.* God is the central figure of the Bible and establishing his kingdom is the great message of the Biblical ages. The conception of God as ruler of the world is the ultimate. Truth, Messiah and world conversion are preparation processes toward establishing God as king. (Genesis 1:26) “And God said, let us make man in our image after his likeness and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the fowl of the air and over the cattle and over all the earth.” (Revelation 12:10) “And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, now is come salvation and strength and the kingdom of our God and the power of his Christ.”

h. *Prayer.* To pray to recognize several things: there is an outer spiritual world; there are beings that can help you from this spiritual world; and there is the need to raise your consciousness and awareness above the human level to communicate in this spiritual world. To pray regularly is to rise above the human level regularly and live in the spirit. (Jeremiah 29:12) “Then shall ye call upon me and ye shall go and pray unto me and I will hearken unto you.” (Matthew 6:6) “But thou when thou prayest enter into thy room and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father who is in secret and thy Father who seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.”

## EARLY CHRISTIANITY

“And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.” Acts 11:26

A society acquires its character from both the impact of new ideas and how the people respond and assimilate the new ideas. Christianity grew because it gave the population masses a new freedom from the political and economic oppression of the time. Christianity gave a perspective and an optimistic hope for an existence in eternity. It was the resurrection of Jesus that gave the Christian movement a strong and vigorous stance. The cross had brought the mission of Jesus and the masses together, but the resurrection injected power to the mission. People thought if Jesus was resurrected, why not me. This hope for a future life gave Christian adherents an active faith. The movement had other appeals to the masses. One most significant was the willingness to embrace both men and women, slaves and nobles, Jews and Gentiles. The Christian movement was not exclusive nor discriminatory. The Greek language became a unifier among the masses.

The Roman historian Tacitus<sup>8</sup> gives the account of the rise of Christianity as a movement whose name was taken from the Christ. Tacitus called the movement a noxious superstition. He did not connect the Christians with Judaism since he saw the ideas were quite different. Even the Jews insisted that Christianity was not Judaism. Christians were equally emphatic that their religion was the true Judaism preached by the prophets and Moses, but fulfilled by Jesus. The Jews rejected the link. The Biblical Christians connected the link as they saw a continuity between Judaism and Christianity. Yet in the eyes of the Pagans, the Christians were still Jews since the early bishops of Rome were Jews. It was from Tacitus we learn that the new Christian religion was extensive. In a brief 25 years, it spread from Judea to Rome itself. Tacitus notes the Christian rise occurred in connection with the great fire in Rome in the year 64 AD. It was Nero who threw the blame on the Christians. Nero had ordered the fire to clean out the slums and shacks of the old city. He blamed the Christians to bring the masses of people against them. Instead, the fire gave the movement its impetus since they saw Nero's deception. Nero's work was like throwing gasoline on the fire as the Christian movement really began to accelerate.

Christianity, if it accomplished anything, made five major achievements: 1) produced Christian writings which influenced the direction of Western Civilization. 2) gave Paganism its lethal blow. 3) converted the population masses to the vision and message of Jesus. 4) started the church of Biblicans who would follow as disciples of Jesus. 5) penetrated and aligned itself with government so that it became a state religion. The first use of the word

Christian was in the city of Antioch in Syria, a city 300 miles north of Jerusalem. It was here the disciples were first called Christians. This was outside of Jerusalem in a Gentile country and at the junction of the great trade routes. At Antioch, a strong and vibrant church grew to give the Christian movement the surge it needed to infiltrate the impenetrable Roman empire.

#### CHRISTIAN ARCHAEOLOGY CONFIRMS BIBLICAL HISTORY

“That in everything ye are enriched by him, in all utterance and in all knowledge,  
even as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you.” I Corinthians 1:5-6

Bible believers around the world are concerned more than ever to the significance of archaeological finds that confirms Biblical history. This confirmation establishes a reality of the events underlying their faith. Biblical archaeologists strive to assure Biblical events, scenarios, histories and prophecies are genuinely set against the backgrounds claimed for them. The Apostolic writers in many documents demonstrated a remarkable and accurate knowledge of the societal, political and geographic factors of the civilization existing at the time. Provinces, regions, locals with names and people that were mentioned in their writings have been accurately confirmed to history’s real situations. Customs, religious practices, and governmental policies in the Biblical writings are additional evidences that showed the writers understood the background of the times. For example, Luke refers to different local officers by their exact titles - the Procousul (deputy) of Cyprus (Acts 13:7), the Magistrates of Phillippi (Acts 16:20,35), the Politarch at Thessalonica (Acts 17:6), the town clerk and the templekeeper at Ephesus (Acts 19:35). These and other historic connections reveal Luke had a very high level of authenticity in his record of the time. One might even say, Luke’s eyewitness account of what happened has placed him into a first-class historian.

Many existing archaeological sites in Israel are under intense debate with scholars and scientists. The crucifixion site and the subsequent burial location of Jesus is still debated. One view identifies “via Dolorosa” to the church of the Holy Sepulche as Golgatha and the tomb of Jesus. Another view identifies Gordon’s Garden as the Golgatha and burial of Jesus. Still another view has a group of cave-tombs dating to the time of the Judaen Monarch as possible crucifixion and burial of Jesus. Still other sites are under debate. Peter’s house, the Grotto of Bethlehem, the Synagogue of Capernaum, the Upper room, twin Pools of Bethesda, Lazarus Tomb, the jail cell holding Jesus in Caraphas’ house, are some of the many archaeological sites under scrutiny by the skeptics. As new evidence piles up, the debate intensifies between the traditionalists and the skeptics.

Keller claims<sup>9</sup> archaeologists have little material evidence of Israel's existence in Palestine after the year 70 AD. Not even tombstones with a Jewish inscription. The temple was destroyed, the synagogues reduced to ruins and the many sites in Capernaum were erased with no historic identification. According to Keller, the Romans achieved their plan to scatter the Jews and pulverize their national identity. The many rebellions and uprisings in Egypt, Cyrene, Cyprus, Mesopotamia and Palestine only furthered the Roman fury. Jews continued their resistance to Rome even after the destruction of the temple in 70 AD. The emperor Hadrian in 130-132 AD finally decided to deal with the center of the rebellion - the city of Jerusalem. He made a great effort to obliterate the city, reduce it to ruins and renamed it as a pagan Roman city called Aelia Capitolina.

However, we see today the defeat of the Roman plan with the present state of Israel and the regathering of Jews from all over the world. There are some archaeological ruins still in Jerusalem of this period. The three Herodian towers in the Citadel area are still left standing. Part of the Western Wall has been spared. Dated coins of the period have been found. Excavations uncovered<sup>10</sup> inscriptions honoring Vespasian, Titus, Flavian and Silva. It was Hadrian's intent to outlaw Jewish circumcision and to establish a city on the site of Jerusalem. This sparked a significant rebellion in 132-135 AD by a Jewish leader named Bar Kochba. Coins have been found to establish the Jewish victory and the return of the Jews to Jerusalem. Archaeologists have uncovered the existence of world famous built Roman roads that connected all parts of the empire. These roads formed a road system for the military, commerce, transportation and postal communications. Many parts of this road system continue even into today.

Some of the most significant archaeological findings<sup>11</sup> of early Christianity outside the Jerusalem area are in Asia Minor, Greece and Rome. The ruins of the seven churches of Revelation is quite significant since it connected with John's prophecy. The number seven had an apocalyptic meaning as a symbol. The letters to these seven churches may have been intended for the entire province. Indeed, many of these letters were read in other churches. The church ruins, although all are not excavated, are located in the western part of Turkey. The message to the seven churches in Revelation 1-3 are arranged in a specific sequence. These churches followed a geographical right triangle extending northward, turning and continuing southward to Laodicea. This involved a main road which ran up the coast from Ephesus to Smyrna and to Pergamum and from there ran through the valleys of Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia and Laodicea. See Figure 8.11.



**Figure 8.11 Meaning of the Seven Churches of Asia Minor**

Ephesus was the largest which held about 200,000 people and functioned as a commercial and trading harbor. It was a distribution center of foods and goods to other cities. For Christians, Ephesus was the “mother church”. It was the base from which Paul evangelized the entire province of Asia. The various postal centers for disseminating information and letters followed closely to the road system found in Asia Minor. In one case, Paul asked the church in Colossae to be certain his letter to the Colassians was read to the Brethren at Laodicea. The restoration of Ephesus today provides much evidence to support the activities of Biblical scenarios. The stadium, Arcadius Street, harbor baths, shops, temple of Serapis, Celcus library, public latrines, Temple of Hadrian, town hall and many other facilities are in various stages of restoration. Probably, the most significantly restored facility in the ancient city of Ephesus is the amphitheater. This is where an uproar took place with the discontented silversmith named Demetrius who was also the warden of the temple Artemis. (Acts 19:23-41)

Smyrna, which still exists, has today been renamed Izmir. It is about 35 miles north of Ephesus. There are little ruins and remains other than the Roman Forum built after the New Testament period. Excavations reveal well paved streets that ran east and west with a roofed walkway. Two streets were named Sacred Way and the Golden Road. The population of Smyrna is estimated at 100,000. Little remains of the ancient city of Smyrna due to a severe earthquake in 178 AD.

Pergamum, which today is called Bergama, is another of the seven cities mentioned in Revelation. It is roughly 15 miles from the Aegean Sea. The city was situated high above sea level and 60 miles north of Sardis. It was a well planned city consisting of government, military, educational and religious facilities. Excavations in this city continues. A high altar to Zeus, which was constructed at the southern end of the city, has been excavated. A theater, circus and the temple of Athenia has also been uncovered. Stories and descriptions of the Pagan practices continue with us into today. One such story relates the sacrifices of 12 young virgin girls, one for each month. The sacrifice consists of throwing the young girls over a cliff. Pergamum was the center for the worship of several Pagan deities. A center often visited by the emperor. This may have been in the mind of John when he referred to Pergamum as the place where the throne of Satan dwells. Pergamum boasted a library of 200,000 volumes in it's collection. Only the library in Alexander was in the class with Pergamum as far as volumes were concerned.

Thyatira, Philadelphia and Laodicea were inland cities. Trade guilds were active in a strong textile industry. The guild of dyers was especially prosperous. Lydia whom Paul converted in Philippi identified as a woman from Thyatira who sold purple goods. (Acts 16:14) The purple dye was expensive suggesting Lydia was a wealthy business woman. Philadelphia remains unexcavated lying beneath the modern Turkish city of Alasehir, Turkey. The city has a history of earthquakes. The entire Meander Valley is subject to seismic activity. Laodicea was destroyed by earthquakes during the reign of Augustus. However, this emperor assisted in it's reconstruction. Laodicea has never been extensively excavated so that much of it's information was collected form coins and inscriptions. Today one can see traces of the original city wall, portions of the city gates, two theaters, a stadium, bathhouses and many miles of aqueduct. In the ruins of Laodicea, the remains of the city's potable water supply system has been uncovered. This included an old water tower, terra cotta pipes and an extensive aqueduct system. The water may have come from a nearby "hot" spring. For this reason, John the Revelator referred to the city as lukewarm.

Sardis, another one of the seven churches of Revelation had a first century population estimated at 120,000. The city was noted for gold mining, fishnet construction and textiles. A heavy earthquake in 17 AD destroyed Sardis. Pliny, the Elder called it the greatest earthquake in human memory. Tacitus and Pliny recorded 12 cities were destroyed in one night by this devastating earthquake. Effects of the disaster on Sardis was comparable to those of the great fire of Rome which destroyed much. Both however, allowed rebuilding on a new pattern. A colonnade

main avenue ran through the center of the city. The gymnasium-bath complex is the most impressive visible archaeological feature of the city. The Temple Artemis is also impressive in which ruins of the Temple still exists.

There are many other significant archaeological findings of the early Christian period. A number of good books are available relating to the archaeologies of the New Testament. It is not our purpose here to summarize these findings. The reader is urged to consult these sources. A brief listing of these are in the Bibliography. Suffice it to say, the ruins and remains of the seven churches of Revelation is significant as it confirms the Biblical account with the historical reality.

#### DEMISE OF THE PAGANISTIC CIVILIZATION

“...the Lord will smite the heathen...” Zechariah 16:18

Paganism can be thought of as polytheism. This is the belief and worship of many gods. Heathenism is an irreligious practice without the use of gods. The entire human race today may be generally divided into five groups: Jews, Christians, Muslims, Pagans and Heathens. The Paganistic form grew in ancient times from man’s uncertainty and his interpretation of this uncertainty of his environment and the struggles he had with it. Most Paganistic gods were the personification of the forces of nature such as Mithra, the Persian sun god and Thor, the Norse god of rain and storm. Others were personifications of animals and plants - Kukulcan, the feathered serpent god of the Mayas and Dionysus, the Greek god of the vine. Still others were part of a divine family such as the Greek god Zeus, the father of all gods and Diana, the Roman god of motherhood and fertility. Still others embodied human activities such as Mars, the god of war and the Maat, the Egyptian goddess of law and justice. The number of gods in the Paganistic civilization were uncountable. In India today, the greatest worshippers of gods may be the Hindus. They have over 300 million gods and goddesses. Robert Graves, famous writer on mythology, identifies by name over 3000 gods and goddesses in such civilizations as Egyptian, Assyro-Babylonian, Phoenician, Greek, Roman, Celtic, India, China, Japanese, Oceania and black Africa.

Polytheism is by its philosophical nature tolerant of new gods and most willing to accommodate new religions with their associated gods. The Romans, when conquering the Greeks, simply took over the Greek gods and gave them Roman names - Jupiter was equal to Zeus as father of the gods, Minerva equaled to Athena as goddess of wisdom and Neptune equaled to Poseidon as god of the sea. The Romans not only claimed the gods of a previous civilization and their myths, but then proceeded to add their own. This has been the reason for Paganism’s 4000

years of sustained existence. A new god would merely be absorbed into it's ranks and older gods, no longer desired, would simply be retained on the list. The population of gods continued to grow and there existed little to oppose it until the movement of Christianity when the one and only God arrived on the scene. Christianity with the one and only God, sought no toleration, nor absorption, nor compromise, but universal supremacy.

Another common feature of Paganism was the worship of images and idols. They publicly and privately worshipped these images and idols. This suggests Pagans saw their gods anthropomorphic rather than spiritual. The contrast with the Jews and the Christians is noteworthy since their God prohibited images of Jehovah or any other object to worship. The number of images and statues that have been constructed identifying the varying images and religious heroes are in the millions. The worshipping of these images is not only a past practice, but continues even into today.

In still another feature of Paganism was the practice of sacrifices to idols. This was to feed the gods and satisfy their temperaments. This would suggest the Pagans saw their gods with human wants and desires. A temple assigned to a god by name was the home of a god. Thus the temple of Diana was the home of Diana. The priests and staff at the temple were the god's domestic staff.

There were two radically different Paganistic views of the after life. From the east, there was no after life. When the gods created mankind, they fixed death to mankind without choice. The other view was there is an after life. In Egypt, the dead go to a territory ruled by Osirus. But in some separate views, this after life was only for the Pharaoh and his high ranking officials. This reveals the contrasts with Christianity. Paganism's after life was a religion for the king and the noble ones. Christianity's hope for an after life was for both noble ones as well as the general population masses. This was a major reason why Christianity appealed so much to the populace. The new religion embraced both men and women, slaves and nobles.

There were several reasons why the Pagans, who were tolerant of new gods persecuted the Christians. For one, the Christians denied the existence of Pagan gods. They called them evil spirits. To the Pagans, the worship of one god equaled to atheism. Christians even refused to worship the emperors as gods. As long as the emperor claimed to be a god, the Christians regarded him as an abomination of desolation. This revealed the continued conflict between Roman emperors and the Christian movement. What bothered Caligulia with the Christians more than anything else was their refusal to acknowledge him as god. The early Christians strongly held to a monotheistic vision. The



Christians also, like the Jews, kept to themselves separate from the secular Pagans and their worldly activities. They were fanatical about separation. The Pagans distrusted and feared the Christians exclusiveness. The Christians felt though in the world, they were not a part of the world. Pagans also distrusted some of the Christian rituals. They thought the upper room's last supper where Jesus' body was eaten and the drinking of his blood as an act of cannibalism. Rumors were even circulated that Christians were eating babies in the memorializing of the Lord's last supper. The Pagans saw this as an indecent ritual and an immoral act.

The Pagans too had their religious practices which the Christians regarded as indecent and immoral. When church and state merged during the Constantine period ideas, images and practices of the Pagans were infused and merged into Christian activities as Christian activities and ideas were infused into Paganistic practices. Here is a partial list of the theology and practices of the Paganistic religion in the early period of Christianity:

- a. Incense burning in the temple for the adoration and praise of the god that resides there.
- b. Candle lighting at home for recognition of a special god to be a protectorate for those living in the home.
- c. Sunday worship of the sun god at the seventh day of the week. This is in contrast to the Sabbath.
- d. December 25, an original worship of a festival god was replaced to the recognition of the birth of Jesus.
- e. Temples were the home of the gods. A visit to these temples was believed to result in a miracle of healing or answering a request.
- f. Veneration and worship of Artemis or Diana, a universal mother, was paralleled by the Virgin Mary. Ephesus, a city that belonged to Artemis until the end of the Pagan era was associated with the Virgin Mary who lived and died in that same area.
- g. After life of the Pagans was the belief that a person's spirit, when the body dies, is reabsorbed into the universal life force. Those who were outstanding would shine as stars. Life and death were not so much religious as they were philosophic.
- h. Many festivals were a religious practice. There were 160 festivals per year. One such festival was the transformation of a Roman emperor into a new god.
- i. The body of priests were the college of Pontiffs. The head one was Pontifex Maximus. The emperor was often the Pontifex Maximus. This gave the emperor extra power. Later the title was assumed by the Pope of Rome.

- j. Private sacrifices of bulls, pigs and sheep were made to a particular god to be a special protector. A god was picked because of a proven track record.
- k. Divorces were allowed in Paganism if the couple was childless, or a woman was ugly, or if a woman argued too much. Women could divorce their husbands if he deserted her.
- l. Superstition was universal in Paganism. Thousands of little acts if carried out every day would ensure a trouble free existence. Here are some superstitious examples: don't have a black cat cross your path, it means bad luck; don't trim a baby's nails before it is one year old or it will become a thief; when you are at a crisis decision, knock on wood and your decision will be a good one; don't walk under a ladder or something will happen to you; don't go near a cawing black crow because it means someone will die nearby; don't dream of eating white grapes, it means it will be storming the next day; have bald-headed babies which means they will be smart.

Since Christianity was monotheistic, the clash with Paganism was inevitable. It was to be a religious struggle between a new movement of one God and an old religion of the civilized world with many gods. Christianity became the enemy of a Paganistic culture with it's supported governments. The proselytizing nature of Christianity served only to aggravate this struggle between two religious systems.

The appeal of Christianity to the Pagan world had several attractive motivations. First, Christianity ignored the structure of the socio-economic classes. Men and women, Jews and Gentiles, slaves and nobles were all equal. This disregard eventually broke up the ancient social classes. This breakdown fostered a new freedom since religions supported and sustained class discriminations and social restrictions. The Jews excluded the Gentiles. Zorostrianism excluded women. Mithraism of Persia excluded all except men. The Greek Elensinian mysteries excluded all except Greeks and Romans. The Christian movement was very appealing to those who were outcasts and belonged to none. Christianity broke up exclusivity. Christianity appealed to common people - the poor, the slaves and the rejected. This was a large population in the ancient Roman empire.

Another reason why Christianity was attractive to the Pagan world was in the goals intrinsic in the Christian movement. The kingdom of God on earth was a cause that everyone can support and even help bring about. The kingdom was the best and only satisfactory solution to the problem of evil. Each and every Christian, no matter how

poor or humble, looked forward to realizing the triumph of the kingdom of God on earth. Christians stressed this goal was worth striving for. It gave the outcast population a worthy goal to pursue.

Still another reason for Christianity's appeal to the Pagans was the offer and promise of salvation. Jesus defeated evil on the cross. This meant he would reward his followers with eternal life after death. Christianity offered grace to its adherents since human nature was weak and many fell into sin. Forgiveness for those who repented did not interfere with the eventual goal of a life after death. The doctrine of salvation and forgiveness alone had a powerful attraction to give hope and solace to believers.

The connection with Judaism was another attractive feature to the Pagans. Judaic concepts of the law, monotheism, Hebrew martyrs and Biblical history was inspiring. These were novel and new ideas for the Paganistic civilization. The new believers felt the Christian link with Judaism was both right and reasonable.

Still another attractive feature of Christianity to Paganism was its democratic processes. Elders, Presbyters and Bishops were elected by the members of the ecclesia. The members felt that they too, if qualified, could become an elder, a presbyter or a bishop. This was the same with projects and programs. Paganism with its autocratic priests did not permit participation in decision making. Paganistic priests were appointed.

A sense of community was still another attractive feature of Christianity to the Pagans. This made Christianity a social and family religion. No Christian was alone. Everyone was striving for the same goals. Hence, a larger family was created than merely the biological one. The local family, called the church was in turn members of a greater community called the church general. Members whether local, regional or universal would refer to one another as brother or sister.

Still another reason for Christianity's appeal to Pagans was the purpose of conversion - to transform a sinner to a better person. The spiritual force emanating from God himself to the individual did in fact transform and improve people. This prospect gave Pagans the hope and strength to be a better person. The converted Christian knew and felt it. Transforming people was far better than the mysticism offered by Paganism. The Pagans were impressed with the strength the Christians had. Especially in their defiance of government and subsequent martyrdom.

Finally, the life and personality of Jesus had penetrated and fixed itself in the hearts and minds of the Pagans. The converts believed that the message of Jesus was for them. To the believer, Jesus was a real person in contrast to the mythical gods. Jesus was a human who lived and walked with humans showing compassion and sympathy to

their problems. The mythical gods were illusionary. Since no one saw one, there was much doubt about their existence. There was little doubt about Jesus. Jesus remained alive and vivid to the converts.

Thus, Christianity's attractions for the Pagans were many. It gave importance and encouragement to the individual. The ultimate reward with eternal bliss after death was the big one. At first, the wealthy and the educated scoffed at the hope of eternal life, but eventually they succumbed to its powerful message. It was unlike anything the average man or woman had ever known.

Christians followed the commission given by Jesus, "Go ye into all the world and make disciples of every creature". This made the Christian movement aggressive which in turn challenged even the Roman government with the emperor at its head. Christianity did not seek toleration, nor compromise, but universal conversion. Thus, this conflict between Christianity and Paganism was a "war" which could only end by the extermination of one or the other. The struggle between monotheism and polytheism existed in the Judaic stage. But the Jews were only able to maintain their position in the struggle, but unable to rid the opponent's entrenched beliefs. It was the Christians that eventually brought about the demise of polytheism right in the heart and center which sustained it - Rome.

A set-back occurred in the Christian advance for a take-over of the Roman empire. In 303 AD, the Roman emperor Diocletian made a final attempt to exterminate the Christians with several edicts. He started the persecution of the Christians with this first edict calling for the surrender of church buildings, copies of scriptures and apostolic letters. A second edict imprisoned church officers and any active leaders who were aggressively proselytizing the Pagans. The third edict sought to empty the prisons by extracting an agreement from church officers and leaders to a minimum of compliance with "living together" under government policies. The fourth edict demanded sacrifices for and on behalf of the empire or accept the death penalty. Diocletian had killed so many Christians with such outstanding cruelties and destroyed so many Bibles that many Christians went underground. Diocletian thought he made an end to Christianity. He even celebrated this seeming victory by minting a coin with the motto "the Christian religion is destroyed and the worship of many gods is restored". The many edicts of Diocletian failed to bring about the return of Paganism. The persecution stopped in 305 AD. Christianity emerged stronger than ever before.

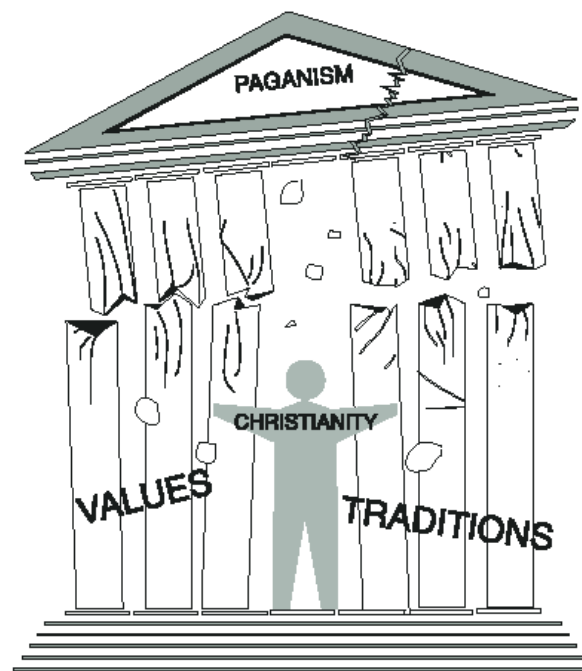
The struggle between Christianity and Paganism turned to favor the Christians in 311 AD when the Edict of Toleration was issued by the Roman emperor Galerius. The object of the edict was not to favor Christianity nor was it to support its activities. It was only to tolerate it. Formally, the government's opposition to Christianity was more

than policy and propaganda. It was with the use of violence and persecution. Galerius belonged to emperors imbued with an Hellenic culture that preferred the religious issue be contested in the discussion arena of ideas. Besides the government's persecution of the Christians did not achieve the goals it sought.

The battle between Christianity and Paganism came to an end with the Roman emperor Constantine. In the year 321 AD, the emperor who was converted to Christianity established the Lords Day as a public festival and a day of abstinence from labor. Constantine was an enigma. He professed two faiths simultaneously. After his conversion, he continued to support Paganism by minting coins with the image of Apollo. He also continued to pray to the Pagan gods of Rome even after he declared allegiance to Christ. Constantine as a Christian issued a decree in 324 AD in which he exhorted all subjects of the empire to forsake Paganism and worship Christ only. From that time forward, Constantine and all his successors ruled the empire as Christian emperors. Constantine took the decisive steps of making Christianity a legitimate religion supported and protected by government. No longer would Christians suffer persecution for their beliefs and worship. The persecution period ended. The Christian religion was inseparable from the state. Like it's Paganistic predecessor, it became the national religion. An attack on the state religion was an attack on the government that supported it. Constantine moved quickly toward a more favored position for the church. He restored church buildings that were confiscated by Diocletian. He even built more churches at imperial expense. Meanwhile Paganistic ideas began to drift into the Christian ideology. Symbols of sun worship practiced by the Pagans passed into Christianity. The Lord's day was changed from Saturday to Sunday suggesting it was the day of the Sun God rather than the day of the Lord. On Sunday, the early Christians, like the Jews gathered together to pray and worship. This grouping of Christians together formed the early pockets of assemblies which later were identified as churches. They would sing hymns, listen to scriptural readings and letters that were sent, pray and often partook of a sacrificial meal which commemorated the last supper of Jesus with his Apostles. After Constantine's period, this supper was eventually called the Eucharist. What Constantine expected from Christianity is not a matter of conjecture. As a Christian, he looked for favor from heaven. This first Christian emperor and the early churches started out with high hopes for each other. The Christian bishops when invited to dine with the emperor wondered whether the kingdom of God had come or whether they were dreaming. In one oration with Constantine, Bishop Eusebius had emphasized the church and the empire had finally found their ordained mission. The early church organizations were simple. All services were conducted by church members elected presbyters or elders. These

leaders conducted baptism, services, funerals, weddings and teaching scenarios. Deacons were required to visit the sick and help the poor. By the Third Century, priests and bishops became more formally appointed rather than elected. They were appointed by a chief priest. Eventually the more important bishops in the large cities dominated the lesser bishops. The position of the Bishop of Rome was leveraged since the emperor resided there. It was reinforced by the bishop's claim in Rome to be the successor of Peter. The Bishop of Rome eventually became the overseer of all the bishops and thus the head of all churches. The Bishop of Rome took over the ancient title that was given to the Caesars - Pontifex Maximus. The title Pope which means father did not designate head of the Roman church until the Ninth Century.

Thus, the Christian movement in the first three centuries overwhelmed a Paganistic civilization and brought about its demise. See Figure 8.12.



**Figure 8.12 Christianity Brought about the Demise of Paganism**

The Christian movement continues to seek aggressively, the removal and the worship of multiple gods. Today, the Pagan population of the world is estimated at 1.4 billion with most in Asia and Africa. This is roughly 24 percent of the total population. Over the centuries, the Christian movement has continued to reduce the percentage of worshippers of multiple gods. Christianity was and still is a standing opposer of many existing institutions upheld by

the Pagan valued civilization. It was a policy of the Roman empire to tolerate all national religions within the boundary of the empire. This toleration was suspended with the Christian takeover. Proselytizing activities were very effective. The Christians were the prey of the Paganistic predators. Later, they became the predators of the Paganistic prey.

## CHRISTIAN MARTYRS

“And I saw the woman drink the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus.” Revelation 17:6

Martyrdom was regarded by the early church as the ultimate sign to God and others of Christian discipleship. It is the free acceptance of death for the sake of faith. To be martyred for Christ was the ultimate test of faithfulness. This constitutes the supreme act of love for Christ. The term martyr means witness. A witness exhibited by the death of the person. Martyred for Jesus was often thought of as the second baptism. Martyrdom was applied primarily to those who died in Roman persecutions for their devotion and adherence to the mission and movement of Christ. See Figure 8.13.

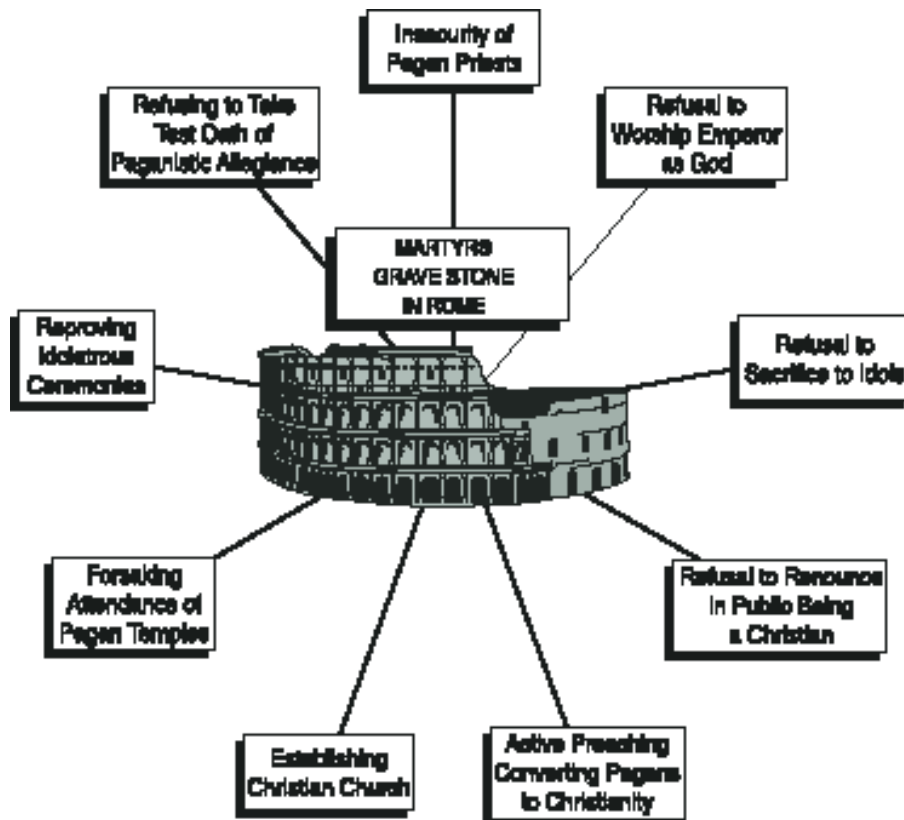


Figure 8.13 Reasons for Romans Killing Christians

Martyrs were also found in other parts of the world such as Persia, India and Africa. These are those who gave their lives rather than renounce allegiance to Jesus. These martyrs were held in high esteem. There were Old Testament martyrs as well. The martyr Stephan who was stoned to death by the Sanhedrin is described in detail in the book of Acts. He was accused of changing the customs and laws of Moses. During the later persecutions, Peter and Paul were executed as martyrs for the Christian cause. All the Apostles, except John, were persecuted and died as martyrs. Eusebius, the famous historian of the early church, records a notable 146 martyrs and the teachings of 47 so called "heretics" which eventually led up to the council of Nicea in 325 AD. Fox's "Book of Martyrs" is another historical record of the hundreds of lives, sufferings and triumphant deaths of the early Christians and the later Protestant reformers. Paul Lee Tan in his "Signs of the Times" reports that many of the martyrs occurred in and around the Roman Catacombs. The catacombs were underground caverns outside Rome which gave refuge to the early Christians who fled from the Paganistic persecution. There were as much as 600 miles of molelike tunnels in 60 distinct caverns. Ten generations of Christians were buried in the catacombs during approximately 300 years of suppression. The early church of Rome might be called the Church of the Catacombs. Those who died there were placed on slabs in berths along the walls of the tunnels. Archaeologists estimate two to four million Christians were buried in these dark tunnels making it one of the largest and oldest cemeteries in the world. This impressive number of people who died for their faith under the Roman persecutor have been repeated with others throughout the Gospel age. There have been reformers who made a prodigious effort to reform the direction and the activities of the movement. Dutch martyrs according to Grotius was well over 100,000. The Spanish Inquisitions punished over 105,000 Protestants among whom were 8,800 burned at the stake; 17,000 were destroyed in a single year. Paul Lee Tan estimates that more than 50 million Christians died for their faith when communists seized China. Causes of Roman persecutions may be thought of in three categories: 1) Policies of the Roman government; 2) Fanaticism and superstitions of the Pagan people; 3) Self-interest oppositions of the Pagan priests to preserve their religious craft. But more specifically, the reasons for the persecutions of Paganism against Christianity which often led to the death of the Christians is explained as follows:

- a. Refusing to worship an emperor as a god.
- b. Refusing to sacrifice to idols and the many images.
- c. Refusing to renounce themselves in a public affair as Christians.



- d. Refusing to take the test oath of Paganistic allegiance.
- e. Preaching and converting Pagans to Christianity.
- f. Establishing Christian churches.
- g. Forsaking attendance of Pagan temples.
- h. Reproving idolatrous ceremonies.
- i. Insecurity of the Pagan priests being alarmed over the progress of the Christian movement.

These were but a few of the reasons the early Christian church suffered under martyrdom. History is filled with many cases of Christian constancy and fortitude under the most cruel torments that human nature is capable of suffering. Not all Christians were able to endure these sufferings. Some broke down and rejected their new Christianity. When the storm of persecution broke out, they flew like chaff from the wheat and bent to the persecutors. They offered incense to the gods and even gave false witness of their return to Paganism in order to escape the cruelty they were faced with.

Those who gave their lives rather than repudiate Jesus and the Christian movement were held high by the early church. Needless to say, thousands of martyrs were never identified by name nor were there any records of them. The usual procedure of the persecution process was to give a test oath to swear allegiance to a Roman god. If the Christian refused, death was pronounced right on the spot. There was no trial nor defense. If the persecutors asked if they were ever Christian and the answer was yes, they would still be killed right then and there or collected to be fed to the animals. Sometimes the persecutors would allow the Christian to think over their stand. Later, a second question would be asked, if they would recognize a Roman god. If the answer was negative, they would be put to death immediately. Seldom was there a trial which was the process of Roman law. The antagonism against Christianity was so great that the due process of law for which Romans were famous was suspended. The Roman emperors were intensely set to stop and rid the Christian movement. They fabricated tales of superstitions, blamed the Christians if famine, earthquakes or pestilence afflicted the provinces. This type of persecution increased the number of informers. These informers for the sake of gain, witnessed away the lives of many of the innocent. Here is a short list of martyrs<sup>12</sup> categorized under selected Paganistic rulers of the Roman empire who were either directly or indirectly behind the persecution to stop the Christian movement.

#### 1. *Under Tiberius - 14 to 37 AD*

Tiberius was unpopular. It was during his reign that Jesus had started his ministry.

- a. *Jesus of Nazareth*, the first martyr, 33 1/2 AD, started the Christian movement and made adjustments to Judaism. His death was by crucifixion of the cross.
- b. *Stephan*, the second martyr, 34 AD, denounced Jewish ritual worship and its narrowness. He was stoned to death having been condemned by the Jewish Sanhedrin.

2. *Under Caligula - 37 to 41 AD*

Caligula was an intense opposer to the Jews. The whole Jewish race under his reign suffered to an extreme degree. Caligula seized the Jewish synagogues and filled them with images and statues of himself. He changed the temple in Jerusalem from a temple to the Jewish god to the temple of Jupiter. It was under Caligula that Pilate was recalled and involved in so many calamities that Pilate became his own executioner.

3. *Under Claudius - 41 to 54 AD*

Claudius expelled the Jews from Rome. Aquella and Pricilla moved to Asia Minor.

- a. *James, the Elder*, Apostle, 44 AD, preached Christianity and made converts in Jerusalem and Judea. He was beheaded by the sword.
- b. *Philip*, Apostle, 54 AD, preached and made converts in Armenia and upper Asia Minor. He was beaten to death.

4. *Under Nero - 54 to 68 AD*

Nero ruled with terror. The terror affected both Pagans and Christians.

- a. *Matthew*, Apostle, 60 AD, preached in Ethiopia and Persia where he was slain in the city of Nadabah.
- b. *James, the Younger*, Apostle, preached in Judea and Egypt where he was crucified in Egypt.
- c. *Matthias*, 64 AD, preached and did missionary work in Judea, Cappodocia and Ethiopia. He was stoned and beheaded.
- d. *Paul*, Apostle, 68 AD, preached throughout Europe, converted many and established many churches. He was beheaded by the sword of an executioner.
- e. *Simon*, Apostle, 61 AD, preached in Asia Minor, Europe and Britain. He experienced death through crucifixion.

- f. *Members of the original seventy disciples*, Ananias, bishop of Damascus; Joseph called Barsabas; Erastus; Chamberlain of Corinth; Aristarchis, the Macedonian; Trophimus, an Ephesian; these all died under the cruelty and barbarianism of Nero's persecution.
- g. *Several thousand Christians*, who lived in the city of Rome regarded as the slums by Nero perished in the flames or smothered in the smoke or buried beneath the ruins from a fire set by Nero.

5. *Under Galba, Otho, Vitellius and Vespasian - 68 to 79 AD*

The rule under these emperors was both cruel and corrupt.

- a. *Andrew*, Apostle, 69 AD preached in South Russia and Asia Minor, founded many churches. He was crucified on an X-shaped cross.
- b. *Peter*, Apostle, 70 AD, preached in Babylon, Asia Minor and Europe. He converted many and established churches. He was crucified upside down on the cross.
- c. *Jude*, Apostle, 72 AD, preached in Syria, Arabia and Persia. He converted the first country. He was killed from a javelin while tied to a cross.
- d. *Barnabas*, 73 AD, preached in Asia Minor and Cyprus. He assisted Paul in his missionary journeys. He was executed.
- e. *Bartholomew*, Apostle, preached in Asia Minor and Armenia. He was cruelly beaten and crucified.
- f. *Thomas*, Apostle, preached in Asia and India. He died from a lance thrust through his body while kneeling in prayer.

6. *Under Titus - 79 to 81 AD*

Titus was a well received emperor. His reign was marked by eruption of Vesuvius.

- a. *Mark*, assisted Peter and Paul with their missionary work. He wrote the Gospel of Mark most likely guided and informed by Peter. In some ways the Gospel of Mark could be the Gospel of Peter. He was dragged to his death by a chariot.
- b. *Luke*, preached and traveled with Paul throughout Asia Minor and Europe. He was hanged on an olive tree by a Paganistic priest.

7. *Under Domitian - 81 to 96 AD*

Domitian was an autocrat. He exiled or executed many senators.

- a. *John*, Apostle, preached and labored in both Jerusalem and Asia Minor. He was boiled in oil, but survived and later banished to Patmos. He later died a natural death in Ephesus.
- b. Persecutors by the emperor Domitian was inclined to cruelty. Domitian issued edicts to put to death any Christian who refused to renounce the Christian religion. *Simeon*, bishop of Jerusalem was crucified. *Flavia*, was banished to Patmos.
- c. *Nicodemus*, a Christian zealot was killed in Rome for his unwavering position as a Christian.
- d. *Dionysus*, bishop of Athens was persecuted, suffered and was killed by the emperor Domitian.

8. *Under Nerva - 96 to 98 AD*

- a. *Timothy*, 97 AD, disciple of Paul and bishop of Ephesus governed the churches in and around Ephesus. He reprovved an idolatrous procession going through the city of Ephesus. This reproof annoyed the people intensely. They mobbed and clubbed him. He died from the bruises.

9. *Under Trajan - 98 to 117 AD*

Trajan was the first non-Italian emperor.

- a. *Thousands of Christians were put to death daily*. Pliny, the second, a learned and famous historian seeing the lamentable slaughter of Christians wrote to Trajan to defend the Christians since none of them did anything contrary to the Roman law that was worthy of the death penalty. Pliny wrote that all they did was to repeat together a form of prayer to Christ and to God and to bind themselves to an obligation. They were not wicked nor did they break the law. Trajan ignored the letter.
- b. *Ignatius*, bishop of Antioch, was sent from Syria to Rome because he professed Christ. He exhorted his followers not to use any means for his deliverance from martyrdom lest he would be deprived of his discipleship. He was devoured in the arena by wild and vicious beasts.

10. *Under Hadrian - 117 to 138 AD*

Hadrian ruled over a prosperous empire building facilities and new cities.

- a. *Ten thousand Christians*, along with Alexander, bishop of Rome, his two deacons, Quirinus and Hernes and their families, Zenon , a Roman nobleman were all martyred for Christ.

11. *Under Marcus Aurelius Antoninus - 161 to 180 AD*

Marcus Aurelius engaged in many wars. He reestablished Roman superiority.

- a. *Polycarp*, bishop of Smyria was urged to reproach Christ. He was even pleaded by the proconsuls. He would be released with his rejection of Christ. Polycarp answered, "How can I blaspheme my king who hath saved me". He was tied to a stake and burned alive. Since the flames did not totally kill him, an executioner pierced him with a sword. The blood flowed out and was thought to have helped extinguish the fire.
- b. *Januarius*, the eldest was scourged and pressed to death with weights for not renouncing Christ.
- c. *Felix and Phillip*, two devout Christians had their brains bashed out with clubs.
- d. *Alexander, Vitalis and Martial*, all brothers were beheaded along with their mother with the same sword.
- e. *Justin*, a well known philosopher fell as a martyr in the intense persecution of this time.
- f. *Concordus*, deacon of the city of Spolito, was beheaded for refusing to sacrifice to the image of Jupiter.

#### 12. *Under Severus - 193 to 211 AD*

Severus was popular with the army. He won many wars.

- a. *Victor*, 201 AD, bishop of Rome preaching and serving the converts in Rome suffered martyrdom.
- b. *Basilides*, an army officer, refused to swear by Roman idols, was dragged to a judge, committed to prison and speedily thereafter beheaded.
- c. *Felicitas and Perpetua*, married ladies were stripped and thrown to a mad bull. They were gored dreadfully and finished off with an executioner's sword.

#### 13. *Under Diocletian - 284 to 305 AD*

Diocletian instituted many political reforms. He issued four edicts as an attempt to stop the Christian movement and destroy it once and for all.

- a. *A legion of soldiers*, (6,666 men) in 286 AD were all Christians being taught by Thebain. When a general sacrifice to the gods was ordered, the legion refused to sacrifice or take the test oath. They eventually were all cut to pieces with swords.
- b. *The city or Phrygia*, all Christians and there were many, but names unknown were tested and tried, homes burnt and inhabitants perished in the flames.
- c. *Sebastian*, an officer of the emperor's guard at Rome who refused to be a Pagan, was taken to a field and shot to death with arrows.

- d. *Agrape, Chionia and Irene*, three Christian sisters in Theisalonica were victims of Diocletian's persecution by being burnt at the stake.
- e. *Marcellinus*, bishop of Rome and head of the Roman Sel opposed praying divine honors to Diocletian was tortured to death.
- f. *Timothy*, a deacon of Mauritania, refused to surrender his scriptures. The governor put out his eyes with red hot irons so he would not be able to read. He was hung up by the feet with a weight tied to his neck. After refusing to recant, he was crucified with his wife.
- g. *In the kingdom of Naples*, several martyrdoms took place: Januaries, bishop of Beneventum; sosius, deacon of Misene; Proculus, another deacon; Eutycles and Acutius, tow laymen; Festus, a deacon; Desiderius, a reader - all on account of being Christians were condemned by the governor of Compania to be devoured by wild beasts. Since the animals would not touch the Christians they were beheaded.

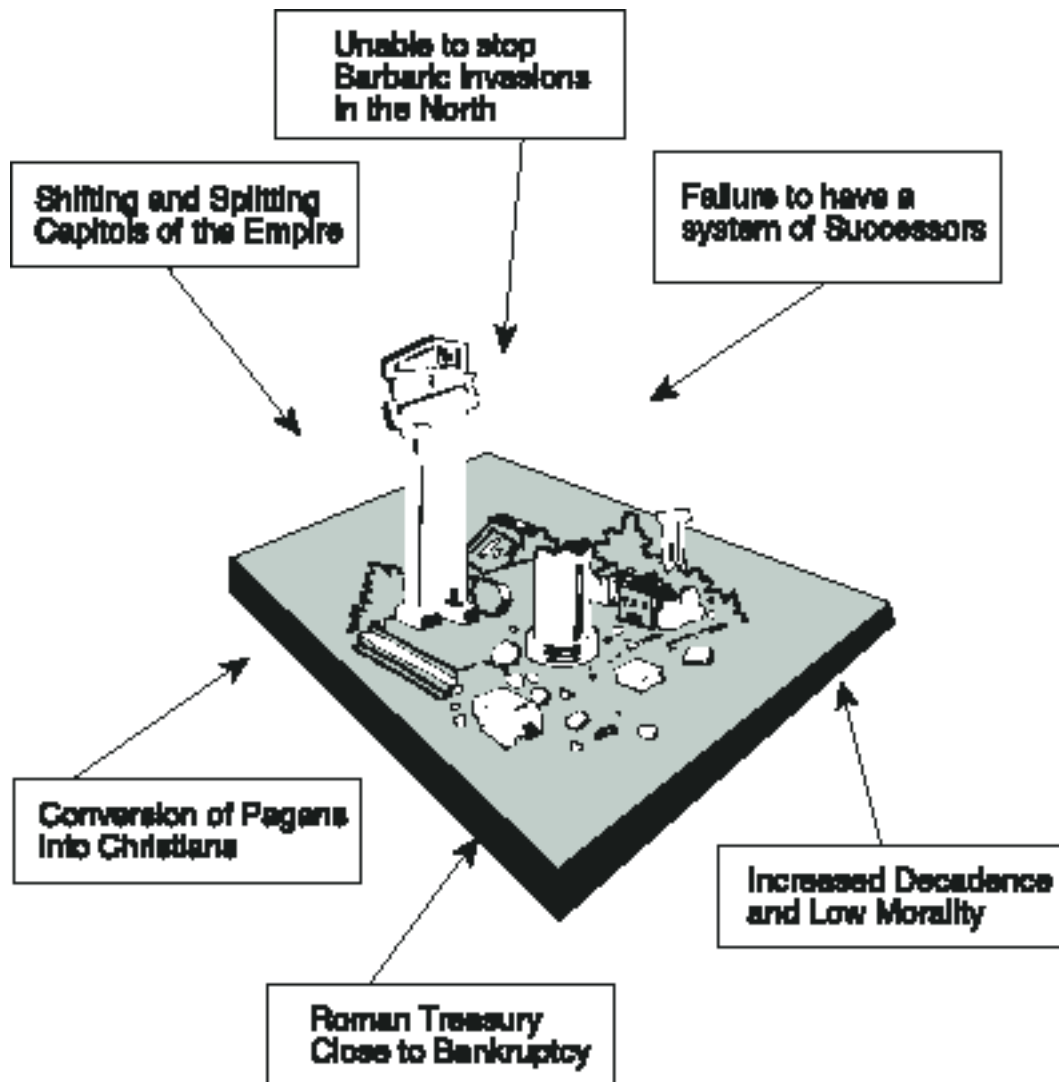
#### 14. *Under Constantine I - 308 to 337 AD*

Persecutions of the Christians under Constantine I ceased. The Roman government and the rising Christian movement were no longer hostile. They were at peace with each other. Constantine himself, was converted to Christianity after he and his soldiers saw a cross in the heavens. Later, Constantine claimed that Jesus appeared to him in his sleep and instructed him to carry the sign of the cross in his wars. This would give him the victory. Constantine's defeat of Maxentius at the battle of Milvian Bridge in the autumn of 312 AD was interpreted as the victory the Christian god gave to Constantine's prayer for help. This propelled church and state into a new age for which neither was prepared. The new church-state relations established at the time was to remain for later period of the Roman empire and throughout the Middle and Medieval Ages. Constantine's conversion into Christianity was real even though he continued with some Paganistic practices such as the worship of the sun. It was Constantine that made in 321 AD, the first day of the week, Sunday, a religious holiday. He called it Sunday as the day of sun worship. When the Pagan symbols eventually disappeared, the sun of Sunday was the last to go.

#### THE CHRISTIAN ROMAN EMPIRE

“Unto the church of Pergamum, thou has kept the faith even in those days in which Antipas was my faithful martyr who was slain among you, where Satan dwells.” Revelation 2:13

The decline of the Roman civilization was gradual over a long period of time. There were several reasons which brought about this decline. These same reasons brought about the empire's demise. Six will be described briefly here. See Figure 8.14.



**Figure 8.14 Six Reasons for the Decline of the Roman Civilization**

1. *Failure to have a system of imperial successors.* There was no system of constitutional replacements. Consequently, no one was ever certain who was to be the next emperor. Every emperor needed the support of the army to rule. This meant the generals were often influential when it came to promoting and supporting a new candidate for the imperial throne. This made the emperorship a “football” among aspiring and often incompetent leaders. The poor succession system gave ambitious army generals opportunity to intimidate the senate, place

puppets on the throne and even assassinate those who were proposed for the throne. During one period of 150 years before the reign of Constantine, the Great, as much as 80 generals were proposed as emperor at different times. This disunity tended to divide the empire and eventually led to civil unrest in the infra-structure.

2. *Shifting and splitting capitols of the empire.* The division of the empire into east and west sections with Constantinople and Rome only served to weaken the empire. This created an east army and a west army with an enormous distance between the two. In any military campaign, the distance was too long for any one army to help the other. Thus the armies were small. This will explain why the mighty power of the Roman army gave in to attacks from apparently minor forces from invasions from the outside. When Ravenna was established as another capitol, the empire continued to be weakened both militarily and administratively. There may have been continuity in one half of the empire, but discontinuity existed in the other half. Political differences between the three capitols prevented aid to each other when they were attacked.

3. *Unable to stop the barbaric invasions in the North.* The Germanic invasions in the North were intense and relentless. Since the armies were divided, a strong central military force did not exist to stop the tide of the Germanic invaders. Of the Germanic tribes, the most dangerous were the Goths. They were able to cross the Danube, attack military stations, sack Roman towns and return with little consequence. The Franks and the Carpi also crossed the Rhine and overran Roman outposts that were minimally fortified. These continued attacks in the North rendered the Roman position so weak that the frontier defense eventually collapsed. The final disintegration of the Roman empire was only a matter of time.

4. *Roman treasury was close to bankruptcy.* A poor economy and spending of public money for free bread and free circus admission for the general populace increased the depletion of the imperial treasury. The Roman treasury depended greatly on the small farmer class for its tax base. Paganism was strong in the rural areas since the forces of nature were each identified as a god. Thus the small farmer had many gods. When Christianity made its impact on Paganism, it converted the small farmers. These converted farmers moved into the cities. This affected food distribution, taxable sources and general commerce. Additional tax revenues from conquered lands was declining since high cost military engagements netted small gains for the imperial treasury.

5. *Increased decadence and low morality.* Roman moral decay was practiced with the general populace as well as the emperors and their nobility. Divorces increased since they were easily obtained. Families were broken up



since children were sold into slavery by parents. This was done to pay off a debt. Slavery itself, was an intuitive burden on the conscience of good people. Free bread and free admission to the circuses, at first, provided entertainment for the general masses. Later it shifted into gladiator combat in which blood and killing was expected. This expectation extended to be the Christian martyrs. The masses found it entertaining to see animals gorging human beings in the circus. This mad craze and yearning for brutality in sports and the insistence of killings for gladiators and Christian martyrs eroded the values of life and the respect for other human beings. This had a ripple effect beyond the circus into the culture itself. Distrust, disunity and degeneracy were eroding factors in the Roman culture. As the Christian movement escalated in their conversions of the Roman people, the government began to lose loyalty and control over the masses. This only forced a higher degree of control by the emperors. Diocletian made intense efforts to restrict and contain the new freedoms introduced and demanded by the Christians. Diocletian's efforts failed and his control edicts only served to accelerate the process of the disintegration of the Roman civilization.

The dominant philosophy, ethics and moral standards adopted from the Greeks was inadequate to guide and sustain the prosperous government developed by the Romans. Besides a new creative surge was emerging - the Christians with a new morality and a new vision. This vision centered on the prospect of the Kingdom of God to be shortly inaugurated. It gave hope and a new energy to the huge slave population in Rome. Fifty percent of the Roman population were slaves. The qualification of entrance to the Kingdom of God was love, non-violence and the liberation of the human spirit. This new religion practiced toward one's fellow man was a new conception. It created a wave that worked against the Roman Paganistic behavior. The conflict between Pagan Rome and Christian Rome generated a crisis from which Christianity succeeded and took hold. State and church worked closely together and coerced people to become Christians. The old Roman Pagan civilization gave way to the new Christian culture. Since the Roman government and the Christian church were working together, the Christian Roman empire emerged. The Roman civilization began in the sixth century BC with the Etruscans, reached its apogee with the Caesars and gradually diminished thereafter when Christianity became the state religion of Rome.

6. *The conversions of Pagans into Christians.* It was Constantine, the Great, which had a great deal to do with the merger of the Roman government and the Christian church. Quite often conflicts with and among church leaders would be resolved in asking Constantine to intervene. It is difficult to understand why the church readily accepted

the intervention of the emperor in religious matters so clearly outside his expert knowledge. An example of this was the Arian controversy. Arian, a presbyter and Alexander, Bishop of Alexandria disagreed intensely over the relation and nature of the Son of God to the Father God. Arian's position was the Son was himself created. Thus, he had a beginning and would therefore not have a divine nature like the Father. Alexander and his bishops judged this to be heretical and excommunicated Arian. Constantine's hope was to settle the controversy by calling a general council of bishops at Nicea in 325 AD. Constantine presided over the council. The decision of the council favored Alexander and his opposer, Arian, was exiled. The doctrine of the trinity resulted from the council's decision. Thus, Constantine made several attempts and succeeded to bring unity to the church. The Arian issue continued in controversy after the death of Alexander with his successor Athanasius. In spite of this and other controversies, Constantine began and succeeded in many ways to Christianize the empire. After the death of Constantine, the empire became divided. Constantius, a son of Constantine, received the eastern portion of the empire. He supported Arian. He backed the opposing reaction against the council of Nicea. He was known as the Arian Christian. He was successful in forcing an anti-Nicene creed on reluctant bishops. Constantius exiled Athanasius five times like Constantine his father exiled Arian. Eventually, Athanasius did change and accepted the Arian position. When all of the controversial characters died, the controversy died. But in 381 AD, the decision was reversed and the Nicene Creed was reinstated and the doctrine of the trinity was made a dogma of the church.

Christianity, a persecuted minority religion at Constantine's conversion in 312 AD, became the religion of the empire with Constantine after 325 AD. This was quite a contrast with Nero, the first imperial persecutor in 54-68 AD. It was Nero who rode his chariot among the Christian martyrs while they burned at the stake as torches. But it was Constantine, the first imperial Christian emperor that invited over 1000 bishops to the Nicene Council. 318 bishops accepted the invitation to sit with Constantine. The number of people who attended the council was well over 1000<sup>13</sup>. This included bishops, presbyters, deacons, subdeacons and laymen. The Bishop of Rome with the support and personal access with Constantine began to assume more authority and influence than other bishops. This paved the way for eventually becoming the Pope of Rome. The Bishop of Rome claimed supreme and universal authority in all Christian activities throughout the vast and spreading Roman empire. By the time Pope Gregory I (590-604 AD) took office, the collapse of the Roman western empire left the Roman Pope the real ruler of much of Italy and its regions.

The Nicean decision produced the Nicean Creed in 325 AD and was called N by scholars. It's extension which was authorized by the first council of Constantinople in 381 AD when Christianity was firmly and solidly set in as the empires religion was called C by scholars. The N Creed and the C Creed are reproduced here in it's exact form:

*N Text:* We believe in one God, the Father almighty, maker of all things visible and invisible; And in one Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of God, begotten from the Father, only-begotten, that is, from the substance of the Father, God from God, light from light, true God from true God, begotten not made, of one substance with the Father, through whom all things came into being, things in heaven and things on earth, Who because of us men and because of our salvation came down and became incarnate, becoming man, suffered and rose again on the third day, ascended to the heavens, and will come to judge the living and the dead; And in the Holy Spirit.

*C Text:* We believe in one God, the Father, the Almighty, maker of heaven and earth, of all that is, seen and unseen. We believe in one Lord, Jesus Christ, the only Son of God, eternally begotten of the Father, God from God, Light from Light, true God from true God, begotten, not made, of one Being with the Father. Through him all things were made. For us and for our salvation he came down from heaven: by the power of the Holy Spirit he became incarnate from the Virgin Mary, and was made man. For our sake he was crucified under Pontius Pilate; he suffered death and was buried. On the third day he rose again in accordance with the Scriptures; he ascended into heaven and is seated at the right hand of the Father. He will come again in glory to judge the living and the dead, and his kingdom will have no end. We believe in the Holy Spirit, the Lord, the giver of life, who proceeds from the Father and the Son. With the Father and the Son he is worshipped and glorified. He has spoken through the Prophets. We believe in one holy catholic and apostolic Church. We acknowledge one baptism for the forgiveness of sins. We look for the resurrection of the dead, and the life of the world to come.

When Constantine made Christianity the nationally supported religion, papal religious authority rose to a level of political authority. In 539 AD, the papal system was well entrenched so that the emperors and the kings gave power to church rulers. This started the papal persecutions against the Pagans. The cycle of persecutions reversed. It was now the Christians who sought to exterminate the Pagans. For the first three centuries, Christianity was placed in the most unfavorable circumstances. The next three centuries Christianity merging with state government where the spiritual world was co-mingled with the political world. In the sixth century, Christianity emerged as the leading religion with political and economic power over all and any opposing ideology.

As the Christian movement continued to spread throughout the world at that time, many Paganistic ideas and practices drifted into the church. Some converts from Paganism brought with them pre-Christian ideas. One particular idea was the role of martyrs in the Christian movement. Martyrs were elevated to the same role that the gods had earlier played in Paganism. Relics of the martyrs were superstitiously cherished. Their graves became sites of pilgrimages and prayers. Chapels and churches were built over the tombs of the martyrs. In many places, saints and martyrs took the place of Pagan gods. Christian shrines took the place of Pagan temples. Names were assigned to these churches from the saints and the martyrs. As the Pagans felt a temple was the home of a god who would grant health and prosperity to a worshipper, the Christians felt a church was the home of a saint or martyr who would grant health and prosperity to a worshipper. Some even believed visits to the martyr's graves would work miracles in their lives and grant special blessings. Although church leaders did not approve of the practice, the veneration of the martyrs and the saints took a greater and greater place in the population masses of early Christianity. Competition for saintly corpses soon degenerated into a superstitious search for relics. Relics of the martyred was extremely important in the memorial of the martyred. In fact, in 787 AD when the second council of Nice was convened, bishops were threatened with non-ordination of a church if it was consecrated without a relic. The consequence was that a relic supply was produced on demand. Frauds of every kind were perpetuated to satisfy this demand.

The Roman empire was indeed unique in western history. Never before did one state govern so many people over so much of the world for so long a span of time. The Roman laws were a unique contribution to the civilization movement. These laws gave the west a relative peace and security for an extensive period. These laws brought the practice of justice. With the introduction of Christianity into the Romanizing process, new freedoms were given which furthered the march of civilizations to unprecedented levels.

## FORMULATING THE BIBLE

“What you see, write in a book.” Revelation 1:11

Christ came into the world with love and mercy as an opposing force against the all-powerful rule of hate and violence of the Caesars and their invincible legionaries. He brought to an end the Caesar's self-perceived role as gods by declaring the one and only God both universal and invisible. He introduced a spiritual activity into the existing cultures and decaying societies which changed their nature. He declared that all men were their brother's

keepers and should love one another. He proclaimed a kingdom which would never end. A kingdom more powerful and enduring than imperial Rome.

The Biblical writers recorded his life and mission along with these activities before his advent and those activities after his advent. Little did these writers realize their written records would be a part of a great work revered as “The Bible”. Little did they realized they would be part of the greatest book ever written down through the ages. The writers had hope and faith in a kingdom on earth, but they fell short of the greater vision their written Bible would give for mankind and civilization.

Biblical writers lived at a time when the skills of communicating, recording and reporting history and culture was beginning to flower. Initial writings were recorded on scrolls. Copying was a big industry. New archaeological discoveries keep pushing back the date of the oldest surviving manuscripts of Biblical texts. At the present time, the oldest known manuscript is a fragmentary one of the books of Samuel dating approximately 225 BC. The Old as well as the New Testaments were more than an historical and cultural report. They were a record of God’s interaction through specially selected individuals such as Abraham, Moses, David, Jesus, Paul and the activities of early Christianity. The writings about these individuals captured the unique phenomena that occurred in their lives as they interacted with God. The writers were impelled by a single purpose to tell their message as directly and effectively as possible. With the sure force of inspiration, these writers conveyed God’s messages to the human race. The role of the Biblical writers is fundamentally passive. In many cases, there is a debate as to who is the author. On the other hand, the messages they conveyed is fundamentally active. The messages conveyed contained spiritual greatness and moral distinction. The role of Biblical history and literature took on a secondary importance as it supported the spiritual as well as the moral mission. Nonetheless, the historical and the cultural fallout gave the Bible a cultural influence and movement through the ages. But this movement was sustained by the spiritual prospects and the moral guidelines. If scripture is a literal transcript of God’s word, everything in it is of equal importance. But everything in it is not of equal relevance. The genealogy of Esau may be important, but not so relevant today as the Ten Commandments. The incident of John the Baptist being in prison is important, but not so relevant today as the Sermon on the Mount. This is to suggest the early Christian writers expected the readers of various periods of time to accept the scriptures with the importance intended, but to apply those areas, sections and topics that have immediate relevancy to their times and needs. As an example, many centuries after the Bible had been canonized, the early

colonialists used as the basis of starting a new government in the new world the scripture in Romans 8:21, “To deliver from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.” This was a vision for the colonialists which led to the American Revolution. In spite of the practice of slavery during colonial times in the minds of many Biblicans, a future hope was to deliver people from bondage unto a new freedom.

It took nearly a thousand years to write the Hebrew Old Testament and hundreds more before Christians added the New Testament to it. We can read a page of the Bible and sense two, three or even four persons, all writers, writing from their experience, in their own historical moments, separated by centuries, contributed to composing that page. This would suggest, the Bible as a final product is more than the sum of it’s writers since it is a synthesis of history, culture, religion, government, laws and lifestyles. This synthesis of many authors has produced a final product that none of the authors dreamed of. The Jewish Bible contains only the Old Testament. The Christian Bible contains both Old and New Testaments. An overview of the Bible’s books can be seen in Figure 8.15.

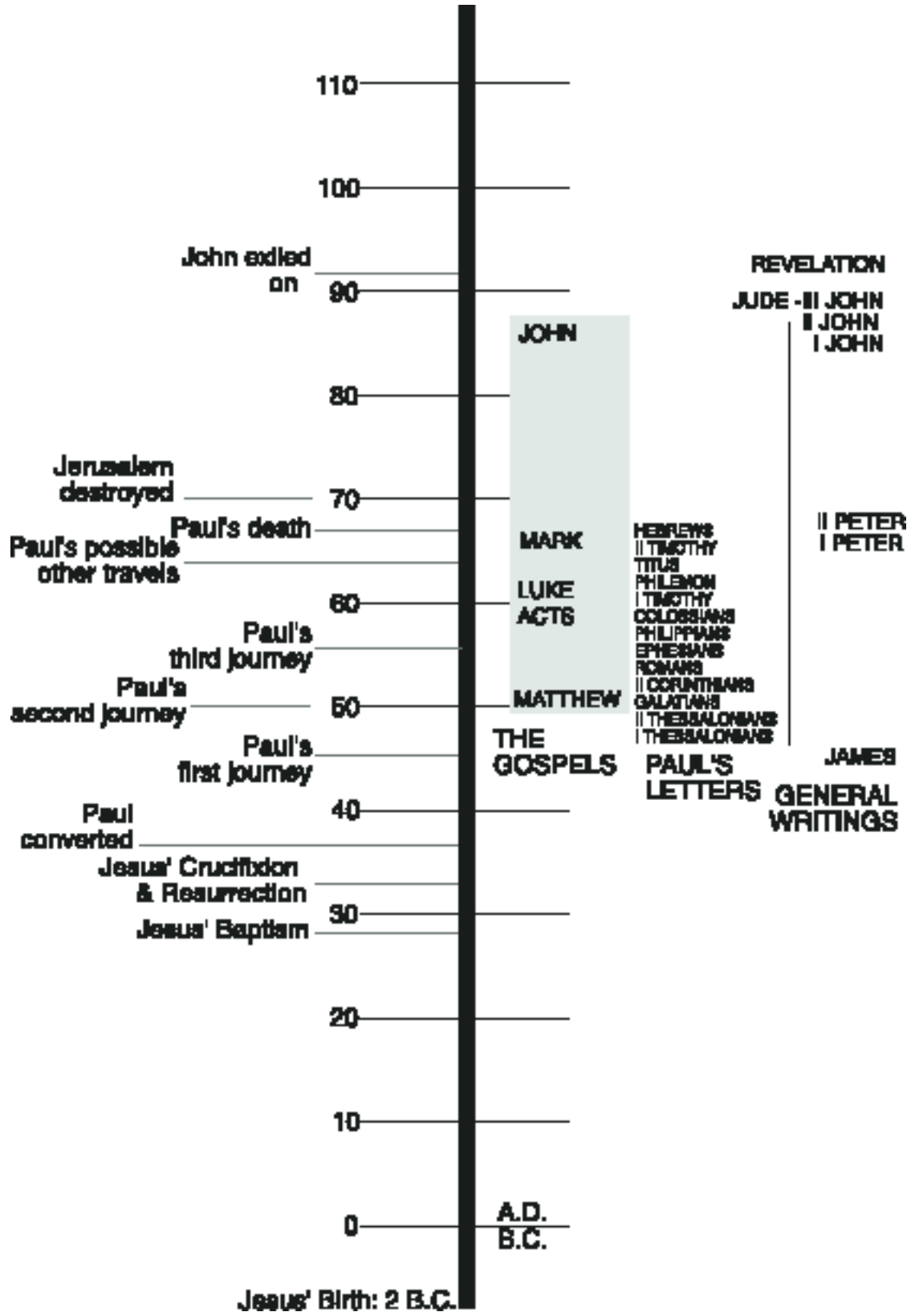


Figure 8.15 The Time Line when Books of the Bible were Written

Canon of scripture is a phrase that describes the cataloguing of writings into the form of books that are accepted as the official and authoritative “rule of faith”. This canon has developed over the years and denotes the authoritative accepted list of books belonging to the Old and New Testaments. There have been differences of opinions and views about books to be included. These differences still exist. Here is a summary of the final acceptances of the canon of the Old and New Testaments up to the period of 400 AD. Included in this list are the authors, approximate period of the writing and a brief overall statement of it’s contents.

#### A. *OLD TESTAMENT WRITERS*

##### 1. *The Law*

Moses. (1450-1410 BC) Wrote: Genesis-Beginnings; Exodus-Deliverance; Leviticus-Holiness; Numbers-Wilderness Wanderings; Deuteronomy-Law restated.

##### 2. *The Prophets (Time is century approximations BC)*

Joshua (14th): Book of Joshua-Conquering Canaan.

Samuel (11th): Book of Judges-Defeat and deliverance.

Isaiah (8th): Book of Isaiah-Israel’s Messiah.

Jeremiah (7th): Book of Jeremiah-Warning and Judgment.

Ezekiel (6th): Book of Ezekiel-Judgments and the Glory.

Hosea (8th): Book of Hosea-Redeeming Love.

Joel (8th): Book of Joel-Day of the Lord.

Amos (8th): Book of Amos-Judgment on Sin.

Obadiah (6th): Book of Obadiah-Doom of Edom.

Jonah (8th): Book of Jonah-God’s Mercy.

Micah (8th): Book of Micah-Judgment and Kingdom.

Nahum (7th): book of Nahum-Ninevah’s Doom.

Habakkuk (7th): Book of Habakkuk-From doubt to faith.

Zephaniah (7th): Book of Zephaniah-Day of the Lord.

Haggai (6th): Book of Haggai-Rebuilding the Temple.

Zechariah (6th): Book of Zechariah-Messiah’s Advents.



Malachi (5th): Book of Malachi-Formalism rebuked.

3. *History and the Prophets (Time is century approximations BC)*

Samuel (10th): Books of Samuel-Three kings.

Unknown author (6th): Books of Kings-Kingdom united and divided.

Ezra (5th): Book of Chronicles-Genealogy and history.

Ezra (5th): Book of Ezra-Return of the Remnant.

Nehemiah (5th): Book of Nehemiah-Rebuilding Jerusalem's Walls.

Daniel (6th): Book of Daniel-Rise and fall of kingdoms.

4. *Wisdom Writings*

Samuel (10th): Book of Ruth-Kinsman a redeemer.

Author unknown (5th): Book of Esther-God's providential care.

Author unknown (?): Book of Job-Problems of evil and sufferings.

David and others (10th): Book of Psalms-Praise.

Solomon and others (10th): Book of Proverbs-Wisdom.

Solomon (10th): Book of Ecclesiastes-Man's reasonings.

Solomon (10th): Book of Song of Solomon-The Beloved.

Jeremiah (6th): Book of Lamentations-Mournings for Jerusalem.

B. *NEW TESTAMENT WRITERS*

1. *The Gospels (Time is years after AD)*

Matthew (50): Book of Matthew-Christ the king.

Mark (68)(Peter as source): Book of Mark-Christ the servant.

Luke (60): Book of Luke-Christ the man.

John (85-90): Book of John-Christ, the total life.

2. *The Acts of the Apostles*

Luke (60): Book of Acts-First Century activities of church.

3. *Pauline Writings*

Paul's Books: Romans (57-58)-the Gospel; I Corinthians (56)-Christian conduct; II Corinthians (57)-Paul's authority; Galatians (49 or 52)-Salvation by grace; Ephesians (60)-The church as Christ's body; Philippians (60)-the Christian experience; Colossians (60)-Christ's pre-eminence; I Thessalonians (51)-Christ's return; II Thessalonians (51)-Day of the Lord; I Timothy (64)-Church order; II Timothy (67)-Holding the truth; Titus (65)-Church order; Philemon (60)-Love exemplified; Hebrews (68)-Priesthood of Christ.

#### 4. *Other Authors*

James (45-50): Book of James-Practiced Christian living.

Peter's Books: I Peter (65)-Suffering and the Glory; II Peter (66)-The last days.

Jude (90-95): Book of Jude-Walking in the truth.

John's Books: I, II, III Books of John (90-95)-Fellowship; Christ's Commandments; Walking in the truth; Revelation (95)-Consummation.

There are variations in the official inclusion of books as listed above. The Hebrew Bible in the Septuagint Greek translation of the Old Testament follows exactly the list above. The Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox Bible incorporates more books not found in the Hebrew Bible such as Tobit, Judith, Sirach and the Books of Maccabees. In the 16th Century, Protestant reformation, spearheaded by Martin Luther, a decision was made to include only the books accepted in the Hebrew Bible. The other books were dropped. There is an active effort to bring these lost manuscripts back into circulation. In the New Testament the Gospel of Luke alludes to lost books about Jesus and Paul in his existing writings cites letters to the Laodiceans and the Corinthians that are lost. These lost manuscripts could be valuable for their insights into the religious ferment of their periods in spite of them not accepted as canonical books of the Bible.

The Septuagint was the first translated Bible from the Hebrew into the Greek. This is what Christians call the Old Testament. It was Ptolemy II, King of Egypt from 285 to 246 BC that sponsored this work with approximately 70 scholars. The Septuagint has served as the Bible for a vast number of Jews of the Diaspora whose native tongue was Greek. The oldest complete copy of the New Testament is known as the Codex Sinaiticus. This was a large parchment manuscript from the fourth century, but discovered in 1844 at the Monastery of St. Catherine at Mount Sinai. A nearly complete and equally ancient copy of the complete Bible both old and new in Greek is the Codex Vaticanus which has been in the Vatican Library since 1475 AD. It is believed, from tradition, that the Codex

Vaticanus and the Codex Sinaiticus were commissioned by the emperor Constantine soon after Christianity began to receive imperial support in the fourth century.

The Bible through the ages has experienced many retranslations and versions. Scholarly research continues to redefine and reinterpret the meaning of Biblical words and expressions. Translating from one language to another is the formidable challenge. New and fresh translations intend to give relevance and familiar speech to each new generation of readers. Originally, after the fourth century, the only version of the scriptures was in Latin - the Vulgate translation that Pope Jerome had made. The Latin was hardly the language of the common people. It was a carry over language from the Roman empire and continued with the priests of the church. Reading the Bible in Latin was like having no Bible at all for the common people. Reading the Bible in Latin even though it was not understood gave the Gospel message a sacred mystery of solemnity, feelings and fear. Pope Innocent III declared<sup>14</sup> in 1199 AD, “The secret mysteries of the faith ought not to be explained to all men in all places, since they cannot be everywhere understood by all men.” In the century proceeding, another pope, Gregory VII had expressed it more categorically: “Not without reason has it pleased Almighty God that Holy Scriptures should be a secret in certain places, lest if it were plainly apparent to all men, perchance it would be little esteemed and be subject to disrespect or it might be falsely understood by those of mediocre learning and lead to error.”

If there was a central mission to the Protestant Reformers it was a Biblical movement to translate the unread book of mysteries of the Holy Scriptures, kept closed by the Catholic Church, and make it available to the common people in their own language. The church authorities were aggressively opposed in putting the Bible in the hands of the common people in a language they understood. The history of the English Bible is a history of bringing the Bible and it's meaning to the common people. The following is a summary outline of the translations over the ages up to the present time.

*Wycliffe Version (WV)* in 1382 AD by John Wycliffe was the first complete English translation direct from the Latin Vulgate. Shortly after, a decree from Oxford was issued that no future translations shall be composed in whole or part under penalty of a great excommunication.

*Tyndale Version (TV)* in 1525 AD by William Tyndale translated the New Testament into English in Germany. It was prohibited to translate in England. Tyndale was a friend of Martin Luther. The new translation was smuggled into England.

*Coverdale Version (CV)* in 1535 AD by Miles Coverdale published an English translation of the whole Bible in Zurich, Switzerland. This had the support of Henry VIII, King of England. The king favored the translation since it supported the Anglican Church and undermined the use of the Latin Vulgate.

*The Great Bible Version (GBV)* in 1539 AD was a revision of Coverdale's version with only a few alterations. It was named the Great Bible because of its large size.

*Geneva Version (GV)* in 1560 AD by several scholars in Geneva including Miles Coverdale, John Calvin, William Whittingham and others. They resided in Geneva since banned from England under Mary Tudor, the Catholic Monarch. The translation was based on the Tyndale Version. The Geneva Bible was used by Shakespeare and shaped the mind and thinking of the Puritans of England and later the Colonialists of New England. The Geneva Version was the first Bible to be divided into chapters by Archbishop Stephen Langton and versed divisions by Robert Estienne.

*Bishops Bible Version (BBV)* in 1568 attempted to revise the previous translations of the English Bible. It was produced by the Bishops.

*Donay Version (DV)* in 1609 by William Allen and George Martin translated into English direct from the Latin Vulgate. Although at the outset, the Donay did not have official sanction from the Catholic Church, it became the accepted Bible of English speaking Roman Catholics. It became the official version of the Roman Catholic refugees from England who wanted to escape the Protestant persecutions.

*King James Version (KJV)* in 1611 commissioned by King James I of England used Tyndale (TV), Coverdale (CV), Geneva (GV) and the Donay (DV) along with the Latin Vulgate and the Greek texts of Erasmus. King James Version brought together by 54 scholars an extraordinary unity of all the previous versions. Its general acceptance by authorities and the masses set its popularity until nearly two and a half centuries after 1611. Because it was authorized by King James, it became known as the authorized version. It has been assessed as containing over 20,000 translation errors.

*English Revised Version (ERV)* in 1885 by an English committee of Anglican Bishops to revise the King James Version. They sought to exclude obsolete words and usages left over from the Tudor speech of the King James Version.

*Young's Translation Version (YTV)* in 1898 by Robert Young, a theologian and orientalist. This translation is a strict literal rendering and idiomatic approach of the original Hebrew and Greek texts. It took 20 years to complete this translation.

*American Standard Version (ASV)* in 1901 by an American committee headed by Henry Thayer. This new American committee substituted American expressions for British terms found in the King James Version. The ASV committee aimed at word-for-word translation of the original Greek and Hebrew.

*New Translation Versions.* The interest in bringing the Bible afresh to contemporary generations has prompted many scholars both as groups or individuals to introduce new translations for the masses. Their purpose was to update the language and remove awkward and misleading expressions. These translations have been more or less popular. In some cases of attempting to clarify, they have misled. Here is a listing of these translations: James Moffatt, 1901; Richard Weymouth, 1903; C.I. Scofield, 1909; Masoretic Text, 1917; Edgar Goodspeed, 1923; Benjamin Wilson (Emphatic Diaglott, 1942); New World Translation, 1950; Revised Standard Version, 1952; George M. Lamsa, 1957; J. B. Phillips, 1958; Luckman Foundation of Amplified Bible, 1958; Joseph Rotherham, The Emphasized Bible in 1959; New American Standard, 1960; Companion Bible, 1964; Jerusalem Bible, 1966; Good News Bible, 1966; The Living Scriptures, 1966; New American Bible, 1970; New American Standard, 1971; New International Version, 1978; Life Application Bible, 1991.

#### BIBLICAL DOCTRINES: OF THE EARLY CHURCH AND DOWN THROUGH THE GOSPEL AGE

“All scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.” II Timothy 3:16

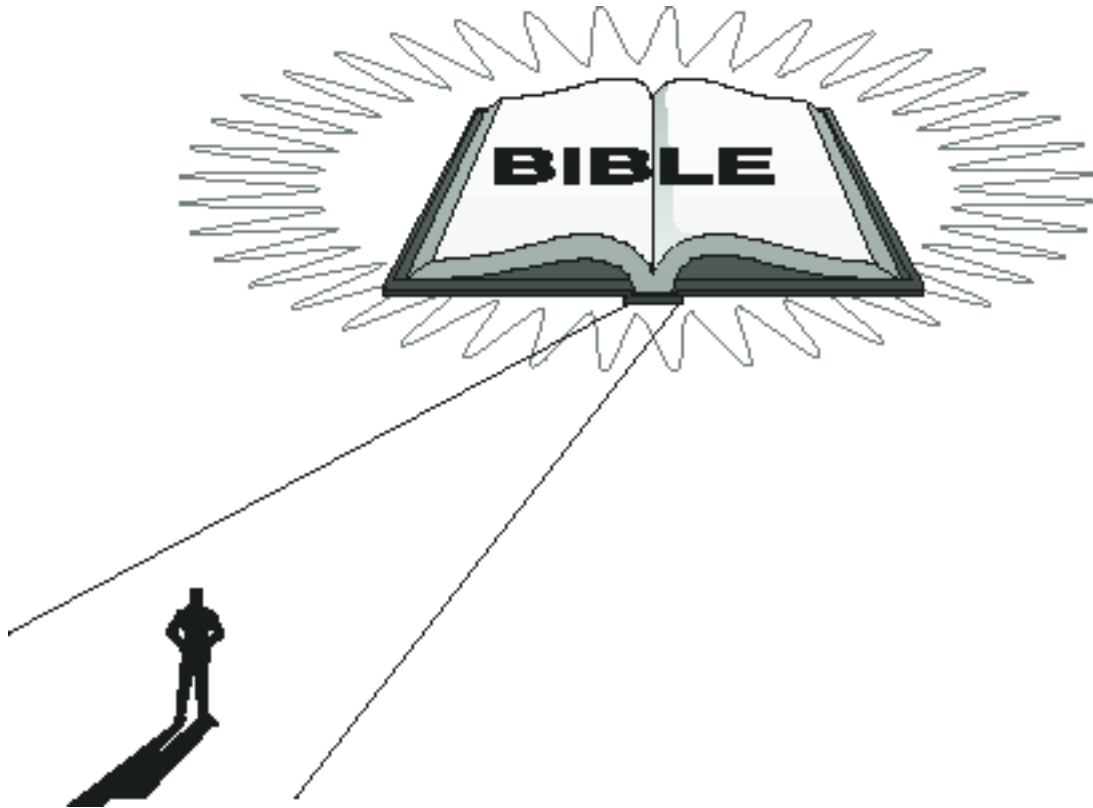
“Take heed unto thyself and unto doctrine; continue in them for in doing this, thou shall save thyself and them that hear.” I Timothy 4:16

The casual Bible reader has refrained from the study and focus on doctrine. Millions of Christians prefer to ignore the basic errors that may exist within their own religious organizations or from mistranslations. Sometimes they will leave doctrines to their ministers and pastors. Most of the time, they just ignore doctrines. There are several reasons why doctrines have been avoided by the masses of Christian believers. Here are some of these reasons:

1. Doctrines are difficult to understand. Their concepts are over the spiritual level of people even where an interest exists.
2. Doctrines divide whereas love unites. Love has become the supreme priority. This is what it should be. But doctrines cannot be ignored in the process.
3. Doctrines are dull and impractical. The chief issue of doctrines is it's spirituality. Most people are not spirit-minded, hence, they prefer the natural and the physical.
4. Doctrines are difficult to believe and live up to. People prefer to adjust their lifestyle to the easy and the natural.
5. Doctrines are so divisive that they interfere with soul-winning. For this reason, doctrines are kept in the background unless necessary to bring them into the foreground.

Doctrines are a set of beliefs or teachings held true since they are scripturally based. These same doctrines define the will of God. The word “doctor” comes from the Greek word “didasko” which means to teach or to learn. Doctors in the ancient world were teachers and not medical practitioners. The word “physician” described medical practitioners. Remember Jesus as a boy in the temple was sitting in the midst of “doctors” in the synagogue. (Luke 2:46) Doctrines are authoritative teachings that define “truth” and subsequently the “Biblical faith”. Jesus said, “Thy word is truth”. (John 17:17) He was referring to the Bible. An anatomical look of the Bible, one can find twelve main and interwoven structures: doctrines, principles, prophecies, biographies, histories, culture, science, poetry, advisements, laws, providences and plans. The role of doctrines in this line up is critical in the conceptualization of truth. Earlier in this chapter, under the section of Jesus as a teacher, twenty Biblical teachings of Jesus was identified and defined as foundation beliefs comprising the Christian faith. Furthermore, the scriptures establishes an opposition between the absolute and unequivocal teachings of Jesus and the fleeting and infiltrating thoughts of men, organizations and non-Biblical sources. (Isaiah 29:3) The church’s mission is to present and proclaim doctrines based and derived from scriptures. Since interpretations of the original Biblical sources have posed difficult perceptions of the original meanings, dogma has been issued. Dogma is not merely a statement about doctrine but a studied and collective agreement made official by all authorities that the understanding is true and irrevocable. In other words, dogma is a doctrine or set of doctrines issued by an organization which explicitly propounds the belief is revealed or confirmed by God. When dogma is issued, it is often sacramental. Any non-

conformity is condemned as hearsay and anathematized. Creed is a collective set of doctrines issued by an organization to define and set straight a whole set of issues that are needed to support and perpetuate the organization which issued the creed. Thus, one can see the importance of doctrines in it's role in dogma and creeds. Doctrines give the light of the Bible. Without it, there is no light. Guidelines can be followed to see this light as the Bible intends. See Figure 8.16.



**Figure 8.16 The Road to Greater Light**

Most Christians have ignored the principles of doctrine validity. Here is a list of guidelines that helps bring understanding and validity to doctrines.

a. *Doctrines must be Biblically based* especially from the teachings of Jesus. This insures involvement and perpetuating the Christian movement. Thus doctrines bring stability and foundation to the Christian movement. The only source of truth and hope of eternal life rests with the founder of the Christian movement.

b. *Doctrines must come from the whole Bible* and not just selected parts. If other sources are used, they must not contradict a portion or the total Bible. The Bible proceeds according to a plan. It is this plan that gives unity to the Bible. The Bible is not a miscellany of disjointed parts.

c. *Doctrines must harmonize with other doctrines.* Doctrines unite with other doctrines because of idea conformity. Contradictions indicate an incorrect interpretation has been made. Good doctrine enunciated in either the Old or New Testaments are valid at all times.

d. *Doctrines must come from original manuscripts.* Changes in the newer translations tend to change the character of the original doctrine. Indeed searching for the truth in the Bible is a formidable task since it was written in diverse life situations over a period of more than 1500 years.

e. *Doctrines must have a sampling sufficiency.* A doctrine should not be based on a single, vague and misunderstood scripture. If a doctrine is important, several scriptures should be it's support.

f. *Doctrines must be reasoned* to give a greater understanding of the truth. Correct doctrines will lead to deeper doctrines. False or contradictory doctrines will divide or separate. The Babylonian religion suggests contradictory doctrines. It is a doctrinal nightmare.

g. *Doctrines must harmonize with valid science.* The Bible and science are both collaborators for the search of truth. When doctrines are true and science is proven, there is harmony. Often unproven scientific thought is contradictory to unproven Biblical interpretations.

h. *Doctrines must give satisfactory answers to life's issues* and questions. These answers must fit into the overall plan and purposes of God. They defend the truth. Doctrines are the basis of truth which answers life's questions.

i. *Doctrines must fit the context* of the scriptural passage from which it has been taken. Doctrines must not be wrested from the context. Unfortunately, false doctrines have been founded in wrested scriptures which have become tradition in many religions.

j. *Doctrines must sanctify.* It inspires and motivates believers to want to be pure, holy and Godlike. Doctrines improve the character and personality of a believer. Sound doctrines are the substance for spiritual growth.



k. *Doctrines must nourish and give spiritual sustenance.* This means good doctrine continues to give growth to the new creature begotten by the holy spirit. Doctrines bring one closer to God. Doctrines bring God closer to an individual.

l. *Doctrines must unite.* This means light unites with other light. Valid doctrines do not unite with darkness. They unite with others in the truth and with God. If there are contradictory doctrines, it means some doctrines are connected with darkness.

m. *Doctrines must define the will of God.* This is to say when people want to do the will of God, they must know his doctrine. Doctrines give a clearer perception of what is the will of God. Sound doctrine will prevent condemnation.

n. *Doctrines must glorify God's character.* If God is love, there cannot be a doctrine that diminishes this equation. Good doctrines enhance our view of God and his purposes.

There is a need to formulate a list of doctrines of the early church (up to 100 AD) within a priority structure. The priority is in three categories: Fundamental doctrines, Dispensational doctrines and Ancillary doctrines. This structure enhances the principle brought out earlier in this section that everything in the Bible is equally important and essential even though everything is not equally relevant or timely. The brevity of this listing can be troublesome to some readers. The intent is only a title identification with only one or two scriptures.

*Fundamental Doctrines* (Selected few from many)

1. Doctrine of God. God exists. God is one. God has attributes. Gen. 1:1; Deut. 6:4-5; Rev. 4&5
2. Doctrine of Jesus. Jesus, son of God. His pre-human existence. His mission to earth. John 17:5; I John 4:9
3. Doctrine of Holy Spirit. God's influence. Indwelling in humans. Inspiration. Gen. 1:2; II Cor. 3:9
4. Doctrine of Spiritual world. Angels. Number and order. Functions. Location. Matt 18:10; Psm 34:7; Heb. 1:14
5. Doctrine of Satan. Satan spirit being. Source of sin and evil. Satan opposes God. I Peter 5:8
6. Doctrine of Creation. God created universe, man, animals & plants. Man special creation. Gen. 1:1, 26-27
7. Doctrine of Sin. Adam condemned for sinning. Death entered universe. All creation affected. Ro 6:23; I Cor. 15:22
8. Doctrine of Death. Death a sleep. No activities in death. Permanence of second death. Ecc. 9:5,10; John 11:11-

9. Doctrine of Soul. Soul's existence. Effects of willful sins. Heaven, hell or oblivion. Ez. 18:4,20
10. Doctrine of the Ransom. Life for a life. God's grace. Second chance for life. I Tim 2:5-6; John 1:29
11. Doctrine of the Kingdom. Spiritual & earthly. Greatest and only hope. New era & civilization. II Peter 3:13
12. Doctrine of High Calling. Jesus & his church. Consecration. Cross bearing. Mission of reconciliation. Ro. 1:7; Heb. 3:1
13. Doctrine of the Christ. Christ a body of people. Anointing. Sin Offering. Col. 1:26; Gal. 3:27-29
14. Doctrine of the Resurrection. The two resurrections. Resurrection process. Obedience for life. I Cor 15:20,22; John 5:28-29
15. Doctrine of the faith. Nature of faith. Faith increases & decreases. Defending the faith. Ro. 3:24; Jude 3
16. Doctrine of Baptism. Conversion. Signs of spirit begettal. New life. Ro. 6:3-5; I Cor. 12:12
17. Doctrine of Justification. Object of justification. Role of faith and works. Ro. 4:25; II Cor. 6:1
18. Doctrine of the Divine Plan. God's plan-past, present, future. Lessons from human experience. Isa 65:7; Rev. 13:8
19. Doctrine of the Messiah. Messiah's foregleams. Role and mission. Jesus as Messiah. John 4:25-26
20. Doctrine of Covenants. God negotiates covenants. Agreements & conformity. Abrahamic. Gen. 2:17; Ro. 11:17
21. Doctrine of Prayer. Model prayer. Public & private. Proper & improper. Matt. 6:9-13
22. Doctrine of the Last Supper. Upper room experience. Meaning of bread & wine. Participation. Matt 26:26-29
23. Doctrine of the Ministry. Ordination. Leadership. Services to God. Acts 14:23; Titus 1:5
24. Doctrine of Love. God is love. Greatest for God & Neighbor. Lifestyle practice. I John 4:7; Matt 22:37
25. Doctrine of Santification. Development of holiness. Doing God's will. Standards. I Thess 4:3; Ro. 12:1-2
26. Doctrine of Fruit Bearing. Gifts of the spirit. Talents & Character. Transformation. Matt 12:33
27. Doctrine of Marriage. Two become one. Matching. Standards. Divorce. I Cor. 7; Gen. 2
28. Doctrine of Doctrines. Definition of truth. Being right. Pursuing truth. I Tim 4:6; Titus 1:9

*Dispensational Doctrines* (selected few from many)

1. Doctrine of Second Advent. Christ's parousia. World changes. Matt 24:3; Matt 25:31; John 14:3
2. Doctrine of Restitution. Edenic loss restore. Earthly paradise restarted. Acts 3:19-21
3. Doctrine of the Harvests. Harvesting results in Edenic, Jewish, Gospel & Millenium ages. Matt 13:39

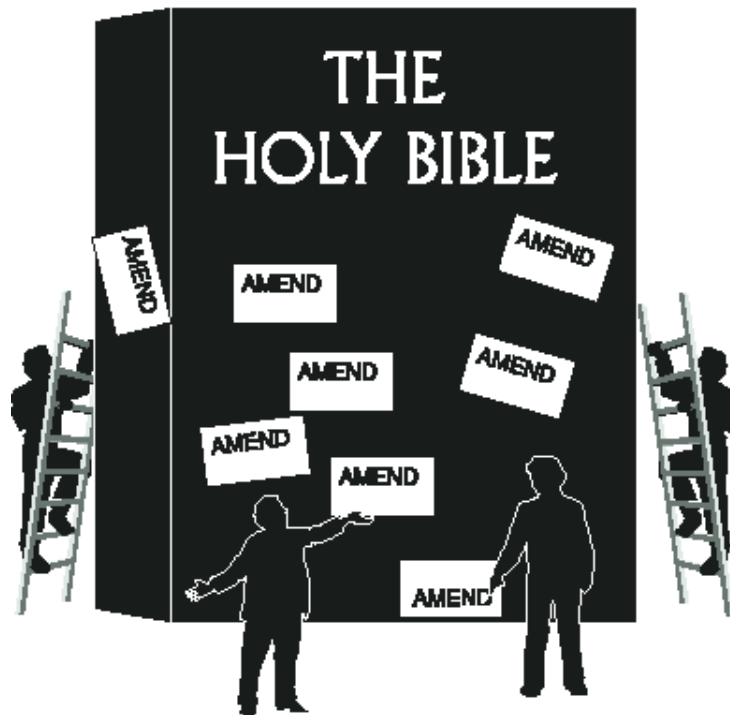
4. Doctrine of Israel's Restoration. Israel's double. Regathering from diaspora. Israel a nation. Matt 17:11
5. Doctrine of Chronology. Biblical time features. Milestones of progress. End times. Matt 16:3
6. Doctrine of Judgment Day. Trial & test for future life. Millennial period. Isa 34:8; Acts 17:3
7. Doctrine of Binding Satan. Control of Satan. Satan's removal. Effects of removal. Rev. 20:1-3
8. Doctrine of Last Days. Great transition. Prophecies. Cultural changes. II Tim. 3:1-5; Dan. 11:27-40
9. Doctrine of Babylon's fall. Religions confusion cleared. Removal of the stubborn. Rev. 17:5
10. Doctrine of Armageddon. Mustering forces. Great conflagration. Human systems changed. Rev. 16:13
11. Doctrine of the Jubilees. Israel's jubilees typical. Cycles of restoration for humankind. Lev. 25:10-12
12. Doctrine of Smiting the Jordan. Elijah & Elisha types. Effects on organized religions. II Kings 2:1-11
13. Doctrine of Little Season. Goats & sheep. Millennial harvest. Final judgment. Rev. 20:3
14. Doctrine of translation. End. time. Manner of change to heaven. Timing. Matt 24:40-41
15. Doctrine of Jacob's trouble. Israel's regathering. Israel at peace. Gog's invasion. Ezek. 38 & 39

*Ancillary Doctrines* (selected few from many)

1. Doctrine of Predestination. Election or grace. Foreordained events. Free will. Ro. 8:29-30
2. Doctrine of Melchisedic Priesthood. King of Salem. Type. Jesus fulfillment. Heb. 5:5-10
3. Doctrine of Mediatorship. The Christ as mediator. New Covenant. Heb. 12:24
4. Doctrine of Ancient Worthies. Heroes of Old Testaments. Examples of faith. Heb. 13
5. Doctrine of Great Company. Failures & weaknesses. Rejected class. Future work. Rev. 7:9, 13,17
6. Doctrine of the Ways. Origins. Directions. Narrow way. Broad way. Highway. Matt 7:13
7. Doctrine of Fallen Angels. Sons of God. Mission to earth. Demons. II Peter 2:4; Jude 6
8. Doctrine of Spiritism. Demon possession. End time involvement. I Tim 4:1
9. Doctrine of Tabernacle. Court. Holy. Most Holy. Articles of furniture. Ex. 25:8
10. Doctrine of Government. Restraining the lawless. Keeping order. Perpetuating humans. I Tim. 2:1-2
11. Doctrine of Divisiveness. Handling offenses. Dividing God's family. Effects. Ro. 16:17
12. Doctrine of Advocacy. Jesus an advocate. Defense before God. I John 2:1
13. Doctrine of Circumcision. Natural process. Circumcision of heart. Consecration. Ro. 4:9-12
14. Doctrine of Confession. Sign of remorse. Use of prayer. Faith necessary. Ro. 10:10

15. Doctrine of Knowledge & Wisdom. Importance for truth. Evidence of faith. John 8:32; II Peter 1:2-5
16. Doctrine of the Sabbath. Day of worship. Type & antitype. System of Sabbaths. Deut. 5:15
17. Doctrine of the Permission of Evil. Sources of evil. Why permitted. Ultimate experience. Isa. 45:7
18. Doctrine of the Gentiles. Separation from Israel. Acceptance by God. Eph. 2:11; Luk 21:24

The varied segments of the Christian movement has from their start down through the ages, opened up the idea that there may be growth in the objective understanding of the original Biblical Christianity. This attitude and perception has caused some serious deviations and conflict from the original doctrines of the early church. This is to say, there are contradictory differences between doctrines from Biblical Christianity and doctrines from later Christian movements that started down through the ages. Liberal theology, in it's many forms, follows the principle that faith has to be "revised" in the light of growing insights of reason and experience. The contrary argument in Conservative Theology is that a doctrine or teaching held as truth in an early period is truth in any period. The truth changes not! There have been many attempts to amend the scriptures based on doctrinal changes. See Figure 8.17. This is the reason the effective Bible student will always go back to the original manuscripts to grasp the meanings inaugurated in the early Christian movement.



**Figure 8.17 Historical Attempts to Amend the Bible**

The following list of thought and doctrines are selected that emerged down through the ages after 70 AD. The list would clarify “why” the Christian movement has been segmented and splintered from original Biblical Christianity. The history of Christian thought and doctrine is a record of the wrestling nature of the student of scriptures without clarification and justification from it’s founder. Each segment tends to interpret the history of Christian thought in such a way as to emphasize it’s continuity and authenticity. It should be mentioned that among all the ancient philosophers, Plato had the greatest influence on the early development of Christian thought and doctrine. Plato’s doctrines of two worlds, the pre-existence of the soul, the possession of immortality, the place of punishment for the wicked, the knowledge of reminiscence and polytheistic perceptions of God, had a profound influence on the early Christian movement that in fact found their way into Christian doctrines. From a very early date, the Christian church had to struggle with various interpretations of it’s faith which seemed to many to endanger a crucial aspect of that faith. Converts were coming to Christianity from several different Paganistic, Heathenistic religions and cultural backgrounds. As was to be expected, these various origins influenced their interpretation of Christianity. At the same time, other religious movements were taking important elements of the Christian faith and incorporating them into their systems. Here is the sample list of doctrines down through the ages introduced after the Apostles were gone. Most are in contradiction to the original Biblical Christianity.

a. *Doctrine of the Twelve Apostles (End of First Century)*. A sixteen chapter document that describes “two ways”, one of life and one of death. The way of life are those who love God and their neighbors and the way of death is accursed. Also, baptism is described which is normally administered in living water. But in cases of scarcity of water, baptism can be administered by pouring over the head three times in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost.

b. *Doctrine of Apostolic Succession (96 AD)*. From the letter to the Corinthians of Clement of Rome came the claim for authority based on Apostolic succession. The succeeding holy men in Rome that followed from Peter cannot be disposed by the congregation as they received their authority from God.

c. *Doctrine of the Eucharist (Second Century)*. Ignatius and Justin Martyr gave eucharistic prayers citing the presence of Jesus. The bread and wine were received more to strengthen the body and the soul. In this period it was more a thank-offering than a sin-offering. The eucharist was practiced as a thank-offering down to the twelfth and

thirteenth centuries. The eucharistic elements were presented as a thank-offering by the members of the congregation themselves and the remnants went to the clergy and the poor.

d. *Doctrine of Celibacy (305 AD)*. This doctrine specified that priests once ordained are forbidden to marry. They are obligated to live in total continence. Breakage of chastity vows is a sacrilegious sin. It was the Council of Elvira that established celibacy as law in the western part of the Roman empire. It was finally established for the universal church by emperor Justinian in the seventh century. The distinction between clergy and laity became sharp. It fostered an exclusivity of the ministry. The kingdom of eunuchs was born.

e. *Doctrine of the Trinity (325 and 381 AD)*. This doctrine debated by Arius and Athanasius came to a decision at the Council of Nicea. The doctrine clearly defines God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit are co-equal and co-eternal persons in the God head. This designates one God, but with three persons in God. The decision was reversed after 325, but reinstated in 381 AD.

f. *Doctrine of the Nature of Man (Early Fourth Century)*. Apollinaris, Bishop of Laodicea, expounded the tripartite constitution of human nature. Human nature is composed of body, soul and spirit. His reasoning was, if God had three immutable elements that form his unity so does man have three immutable elements. This doctrine is often referred to as Apollinarianism.

g. *Doctrine of Mariology (431 AD)*. This doctrine at this period of time cites Mary as the mother of God. This was proclaimed by the Council of Ephesus. The Virgin Mary was preserved in the first instant of her conception from all stain of original sin. This resulted in her being free of the consequences of sin and relieved her from the law of suffering and death which are the penalties of the sins of the human nature.

h. *Doctrine of Infant Baptism (Fifth Century)*. This doctrine is an appendage to the baptism of adults. Since baptism is necessary for salvation, infants are treated at their baptism as if they were adults. The parents stand for the infant which renounces Satan, confesses their faith, and indicate the desire to be members of the church. Infants are baptized as soon as possible since they are in danger of death which may put them in hell or purgatory.

i. *Doctrine of Papal Monarchy (539 AD)*. The Roman bishop on the grounds of his divine appointment and successor of Peter, the prince of Apostles is the primate of the entire Christian church and visible representative of Christ on earth. The appointment is made by the invisible supreme head of the Christian world, the Christ. This establishes the Papal Monarchy, its succession and its organizational hierarchy.

j. *Doctrine of Excommunication (Seventh Century)*. The doctrine that defines extreme disciplinary measures of the church to exclude a sinner from the sacraments of the faithful. Initially, it's purpose was corrective in order to recall the sinner into repentance and obedience. Later it became a method of punishment. Excommunication deprives the sinner of divine grace, states the person ceases to be a Christian and therefore, forfeits salvation.

k. *Doctrine of Exclusive Salvation (1215 AD)*. Salvation is the saving of humans from the power and effects of sin and death. It also includes saving from guilt and estrangement, ignorance of truth, bondage of habit and vice, fear of demons and hell. The Lateral Council specified no salvation outside the universal church is possible. Non-believers were automatically damned to a fiery hell.

l. *Doctrine of the Eucharist (1215 AD)*. This doctrine is based on the invitation to Christians to partake of the Lord's supper. Earlier, second century, this participation was a thank-offering. In 1215 AD by the Lateral Council and confirmed again by the Council of Trent in 1560 AD, the doctrine was confirmed. The Eucharist, often referred to as the Mass, is a sacrifice of the body and blood of Christ. The thought is that a miracle takes place at the words of institution so that the supper elements of bread and wine become the actual body and blood of Christ. This is a transubstantiation view. It is an offering for sin to maintain the hope of salvation. This participation is eating God. Participation in this process is exclusive to priests only.

m. *Doctrine of Indulgences (1517 AD)*. This was the means which the universal church gave remission before God of temporal punishment due to sins whose guilt has already been forgiven. The granting of indulgences has been the occasion of abuse and controversy. Especially true has been between Martin Luther and J.J. Tetzel at the beginning of the Protestant reformation. The church grants indulgences based on the merits of Christ, the saints and the martyrs. Remitting temporal punishment is based on these merits.

n. *Doctrine of Purgatory (1563 AD)*. This doctrine, established by the Council of Trent, states an intermediate state of grace exists between Heaven and Hell in which a purging occurs for those not good enough for Heaven and too good to go to Hell. The purpose of this stage is to cleanse one of imperfection, venial sins, faults or do away with temporal punishment. Those arriving in this state may stay a few hours or wait for thousands of years. Purgatorial punishment maybe relieved by offerings of the living faithful. The council saw the great masses of people that go to this intermediate state of purgatory.

o. *Doctrine of the Immaculate Conception (1854 AD)*. The doctrine of the Immaculate Conception was proclaimed for the universal church with Pius IX on December 8, 1854. The Virgin Mary was preserved from the stain of original sin. It states Mary had no other children which preserved her virginity and purity. She was free of sin. Mary is the Mother of God and has become the co-redemptrix along with Christ.

p. *Doctrine of Papal Infallibility (1870 AD)*. Infallibility is the state being incapable of error. It signifies perfection of view of scripture or a decision to be communicated to members of the church organization. The term implies sinlessness or without flaw. The head of the church is personally preserved by God from error and therefore any official statements, pronouncements or declarations while in office must be accepted by the church faithful. The infallibility doctrine was promulgated by the Vatican Council I.

The above doctrines over the many years records the many contradictory and erroneous rulings and official proclamations with original Biblical Christianity. Chamberlain in his book<sup>15</sup> on “The Bad Popes” of seven men who ruled the Church of Rome at seven critical periods in 600 years which caused the reformation. He gives the record of how Popes led armies, made love and war, conspired for power and armed themselves with the techniques of assassination and seduction while clothed in the official position as Vicar of Christ.

Protestants have used the term “inerrancy” of the scriptures rather than infallibility in which to protect the truth and the Bible. The problem here is the wide variation of scriptural interpretations that now exists. This is noted by over 25,000 formal organizations in the Protestant movement. Some have solved this problem by adhering to the literal acceptance of the scriptures without interpretation. These are known as the fundamentalists.

The above must be harmonized with the Biblical basis given as a promise that the “spirit of truth” will dwell within the believers. (John 14:17) Also in I John 5:20 which states the son of God has come and given us an understanding that is true. But are the understandings the exclusively of a single person. John 14:17 and I John 5:20 in it’s context applies the promises and understandings to all the disciples of Christ. Furthermore, Paul insists that “sin dwelleth in him” and he had great difficulty in his official Apostleship with members of the Christian faith. (Romans 7:15-25) Studying and proving the scriptures is mandatory for a clear and inerrant understanding of the truth. (II Timothy 2:15; Acts 17:10-17)



## CHRISTENDOM IN CRISIS

“And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldean’s excellency,  
shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah.” Isaiah 13:19

No one can approach a controversial topic as Christendom in crisis without serious reluctance and the feeling of uncertainty. There’s no desire on my part to be condemnatory not ungracious to the many conscientious Christians who are committed to the Christian movement. No one likes to be criticized. The following analysis is a criticism of the “system of churches” and not to the serious-minded devotee to Christ. The importance of the churches in our modern culture must be cited as the crisis is at the crossroads.

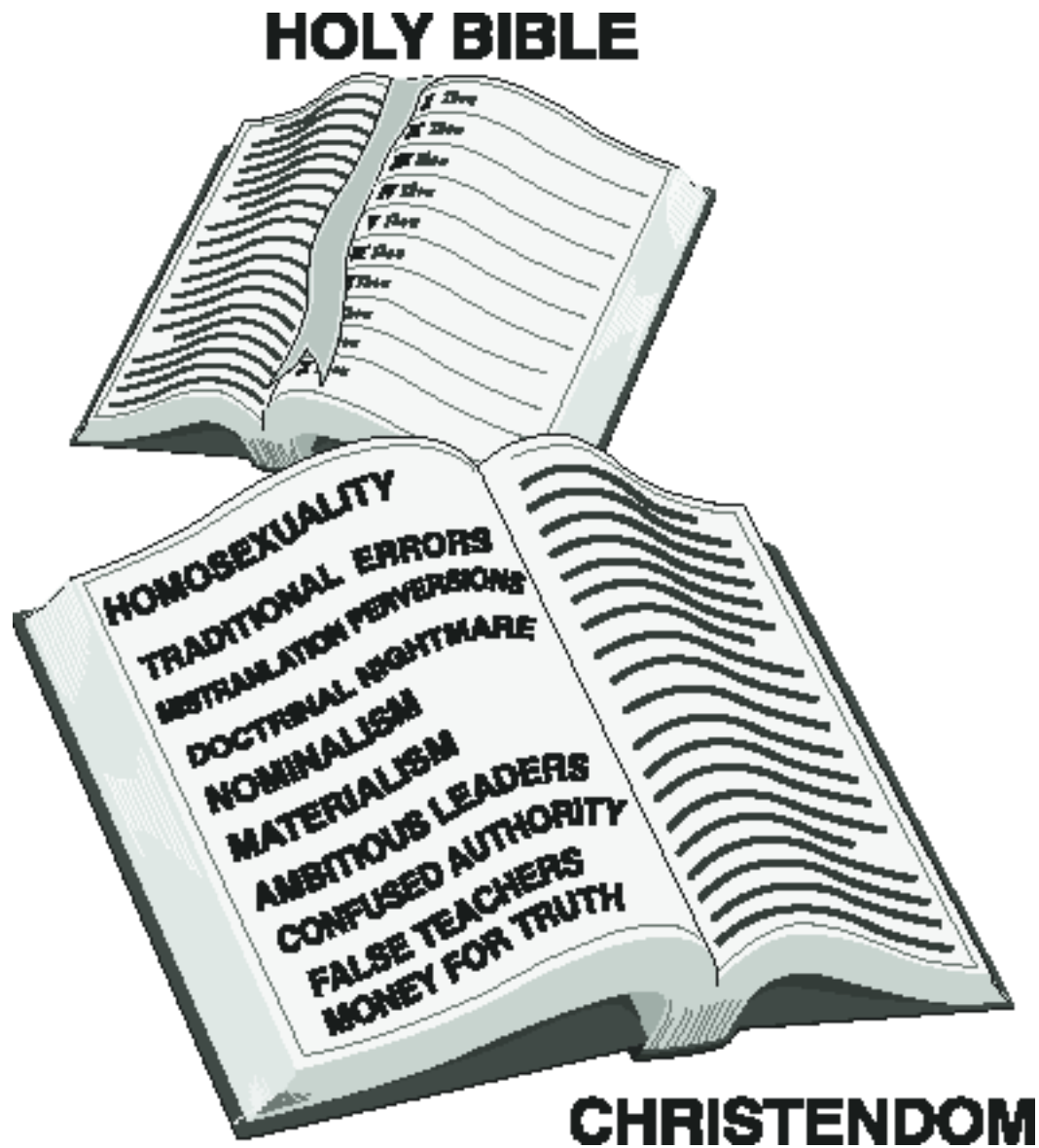
Christendom is the largest and most widespread religion in the world. It may also be the most confused religion in the world. One out of every three people claim to be Christians. This totals approximately two billion. The movement is founded on concrete events in historic happenings. Most particularly is the life of a Jewish carpenter born in a stable and executed as a criminal at the age of thirty-three and one half years. This carpenter attended no college and didn’t even write except in the sand. His life is so meagerly reported as to give the critics the basis he never lived. From his sayings, teachings and living style, he developed followers which has effected a growth resulting in the largest religion on planet earth. Jesus wanted his movement to grow and envelope the entire world as a new world-wide social order. The movement has grown and can be found in every nation of the world.

Jesus had as a major mission in his life, the “seeding” of the Kingdom of God in the hearts of men and then “establishing” that kingdom in the affairs of humankind. Very little in his teaching was there guidelines in the development and use of organization. In fact, he only referred to the word “church” twice in his ministry. (Matthew 16:18; 18:17) There is some doubt whether he meant is as an organization as it later developed. He did use the word “kingdom” hundreds of times. On the other hand, the Apostles and their writers seldom used the word “kingdom” but use the word “church” quite frequently. As time passed, unfortunately, the word “church” replaced the word “kingdom” by the Biblical writers and later by the writers throughout the Biblical ages. The concept of kingdom gradually diminished until today it is seldom used. This may be due to it’s association with ancient times. This book has endeavored to use the word civilization to combine the meanings of kingdom, church and culture.

With the measured growth of the churches throughout 2000 years, issues have developed within the infrastructure of the organization of the system of churches bringing the movement to a point of crisis. A crisis can be a

turning point in the course direction of a movement. It can be a change for positive as well as negative results. However, the critical situation in Christendom appears to be leading to bad consequences. Christianity is in the midst of a struggle which has every evidence of being the most serious ferment in Christendom since the Protestant Reformation. It goes beyond doctrinal disagreements. The entangling crisis is deep. It may seriously disrupt or alter the very nature of traditional organizations. Christianity does not seem to be effective to the challenge found in culture. America founded on Judeo-Christian ethics is floundering in a cesspool of immorality. America, the world's greatest creditor nation in 1980 has become the world's greatest debtor nation in 1990. American cities, where most live, have become dangerous as a place to live. America seems helpless in drug control, abortion stoppage, divorce abatement and Aids removal. America, with it's elderly finds them with financial insecurity and the move toward euthanasia. The churches are failing to make inroads into these serious problem areas. Most analysts will agree that America is moving from a post-Christian age to an anti-Christian period in which the ancient self-evident truths that started the movement is no longer self-evident, at least, not to the majority of it's devotees.

Note, it's not Christianity that is in crisis, but rather Christendom. Christianity is a conceptual movement containing truths given by Jesus and his immediate followers. On the other hand, Christendom is an organizational movement based on Christianity with followers and organizations throughout the 2000 years of the Gospel Age. Christendom is the practice of organization with memberships, hierarchies, policies, finances, and leadership. Nine issues are noted in Christendom. They will now be briefly described. The issues are critical. They are: system disunity; money for the Gospel message; perversions from mistranslations; emergence of false teachers; doctrinal nightmare; teaching authority assumed and confused; Christians in name only; uncontrolled materialism; and homosexuality in the churches. These issues have brought the value and effectiveness of Christendom to a point of collapse where survival is now questioned. Christendom is making a valiant attempt to hold together it's composition. The composition is decomposing. Christendom is not a mirror reflection of the Christianity of it's founder. Christendom has accepted the ideas, values and practices of paganism, eastern and middle-east influences, non-spiritual government policies and secular organizations. Unless it makes a radical change, it will collapse as a system. This does not mean Christianity will fall, but Christendom will. Christendom is now really in crisis. Christianity will serve as a link between Judaism and Messianism. Here are the issues seriously affecting the quality of Christendom. Also see Figure 8.18.



**Figure 8.18 Christendom is not a Mirror Reflection of the Bible**

1. *System Disunity*. Nearly 2000 years of Christian history has brought about an astounding diversity to the Christian movement. Christendom is no longer in a unified direction. It is no longer cohesive. Christendom has taken a wrong turn and is going off into a scattering dispersion similar to a Jewish diaspora. From the largest constituent of Catholics with their majestic cathedrals to the smallest component of Bible study groups that meet in unpretentious homes, there is a scattering. From the intellectual sophistication of Thomas Aquinas to the moving simplicity of ordinary people who merely say, “Lord I want to be a Christian”, there are splinters. From the psychological self-help found in the Crystal Cathedral to the brotherhood help in the slums of Calcutta, there is

disunity. Christendom is a bewildering complexity of wide divisiveness. There is even divisions and gaps between the pulpits and the pews. Unless ordained, one cannot speak from the pulpit.

There are three major divisions in Christianity: Roman Catholicism; Eastern Othodoxy; and Protestantism. But the subdivisions within each are many. Up to 313 AD, the church struggled in the face of persecution. After the Arius and Athenasia dispute starting in 325 AD, internal strife started until 381 AD when it became the official religion of the Roman empire. It became a united institution until 1054 AD when Eastern Orthodox split with the Roman Catholic Church. Many factors broke them up - politics, culture, language, geography, theology and most important, authority. Each charged the other for the responsibility for the break. The divisions with the Protestants occurred in the sixteenth century with the success of Martin Luther as a reformer. From that break, came four major religions - Lutherians, Baptists, Calvinists and Anglicans. Today, there are over 25,000 registered corporate Protestant organizations with an equal number of non-registered groups. While these churches are in varying degrees in communion with others, for the most part, they are self-governing.

Protestantism is not so much a church as it is a movement of many churches. It was originally a protest over Papal authority and it's claim of Apostolic succession. It resulted in ecclesia self-government on a local basis. Many reasons exist for this break with Roman Catholicism. To cite a few - renaissance individualism which sought freedom from church intrusions; Biblical study and interpretations which sought freedom from teaching authority; Church-state union which forced individual thinking into the channel of teaching authority and doctrinal understanding; and the rising concern over abuses by church leaders. Selling indulgences for money is one such example. Waldo, Luther, Calvin, Wycliff, Miller, Russell and Wesley are some of the successful reformers that led the protestations against Papal authority. These reformers instituted changes that have created more splintered groups.

Some may argue that diversity is not all bad. Life-affecting differences can be healthy since it develops and orients people to handle new situations. Differences promote a fluidity for challenge and change especially in institutions and practices. But change in values, virtues and doctrines is another issue since these are the heart and core of the nature of Christianity. To change these is to change the origins of the nature of Biblical Christianity.

The splinter groups have been unrelated to the problems and difficulties of the culture since they reside in their own comfortable closets. They spend a good deal of money to have their own radio and television stations, their own

publishing companies, their own magazines and bookstores and even their own form of organization to perpetuate their existence within their confined closets. They have removed themselves from the mainstream of the culture where they are most needed. To avoid the impending collapse which is sure to come, they need to come out of their closets, get back into the mainstream of the culture and proceed to win back the culture by the superior power of the original ideas of Biblical Christianity. Churches that are badly fragmented loses the power inherent in a network. Additionally, the sin of schism works against the unity of the body of Christ.

2. *Money for the Gospel Message.* There are “money changers” still in the temple. They make money over the Gospel message that was given free by it’s founder. The money changers want membership in great numbers in order to affect a huge cash flow. The money changers make money appeals for pastoral or healing help. One such individual claimed that Jesus told him God has selected him to find an effective treatment for cancer. This individual asked for money, but it was not from him, but for the Lord. The cancer curing project was to be a 20-story research tower. No cure for cancer was found. The tower was shutdown as a research project. The huge building has been acquired by a group of profit making investors. The property is now available for commercial use. The same individual launched a notorious campaign that if he did not raise 8 million dollars by a certain time, God would kill him. The point was by sending him dollars, they would save his life.

Another Christian leader induces individuals to send money for anointed prayer cloths, ceremonial breastplates and contact ropes and promises to press for prayer requests to God for prayer fulfillment. All this effort for a suggested donation. The theme of this cash generating tactic is “receiving follows giving”. Still another organization advertises spiritual consultation, prayers for healing and guidance for peace of mind. These will be given after sending a check for \$19.95 plus postage. The responses are in many forms: video tapes, audio tapes, cassettes, books, pamphlets, tracts, newsletters and TV programs.

Traditional evangelists have now become televangelists. Every week millions of Americans tune in the Gospel to hear TV preachers. This approach has been an upheaval in religion. After all, Jesus preached to probably no more than 20,000 people in his entire lifetime. The televangelists have amassed incredible power by reaching millions of people through a communication network that comprises hundreds of radio stations and syndicated television programs. Their influence has been extended from church vestibule to the living room to the ballot box. Televangelists see themselves as more than preachers, but as legislators of both public and private morality. The

business of these electronic preachers have been impressive<sup>16</sup>. Estimates have ranged as an industry from one half to one billion dollars a year. This comes from contributions, fund raising and product sales.

The Vatican accumulation of wealth has become the wealthiest institution in the world. This is an example how the money changers have experienced great gain in their work in the temple. Anro Manhattan<sup>17</sup> in his book *The Vatican Billions* describes the Vatican's acquisition of temporal riches that runs close to 100 billion dollars. This is from several sources: 5 billion voluntary contributions; 1.2 billion from business income; stocks, bonds and real estate 13 billion; commercial property 12 billion and religious use real estate to a total of 73 billion. Other sources of wealth in which figures are not available are solicitations of wills from deceased members; bingo revenues; tax exemption statues and the "free gift" from government of tax funds going to church related hospitals. The estimates are conservative since property and real estate is difficult to value at any time. Manhattan's book was copyrighted in 1983 which is almost 15 years ago, thereby rendering his estimates below present values.

Salaries for ministers and priests are difficult to ascertain since compensation packages include housing, facilities, food allowances, health insurance and pastoral expenses. The salaries themselves have varied from 20,000 to 50,000 dollars per year. We should be reminded that Jesus was born, lived and died in poverty. He had no assets, property, investments, salary or other financial revenues. There isn't even a trace or hint in the record where he conducted a collection campaign or solicited contributions from the people with whom he ministered. The only one item he owned was his cloak which was taken from him at the time of the crucifixion by gambling soldiers.

The money changers are still in the temple. They provide a message that sounds authentic using scriptural terminology. They operate under the banner "Jesus is Lord". But they are in reality a counterfeit. They charge for whatever authentic gospel message they do provide which they received as free.

3. *Perversions from Mistranslations*. In the Bible an interpreter maybe either one of two kinds. The person may be a translator, one who conveys meanings of words written in one language to persons reading another language. On the other hand, an interpreter maybe one who explains the meaning and understanding of a written statement in the same language. Errors and misstatements can exist in both type of translators. The error is compounded when both types of translations are required. The rendering of the Bible into many languages has been a monumental task that has occurred over the centuries of time. Translations are not inspired by God nor especially are they theologians who would understand the context. Many are linguistic scholars with proficiency in the language itself. This could be a

special advantage since it brings objectivity to the work. It also could be a disadvantage since it brings in irrelevancy and contextual misfits. In either event, the idea exists that errors are found in the very translation that one is using. This implies an uncertainty in understanding the foundations for faith. The translation changes are easily seen when one translation is in conflict with another. Most Bible students will accept a translation when it clarifies and enhances the thoughts of another translation. On the other hand, when one translation changes the thought found in another, doubt and perplexity emerges. Translators must take a careful look at Revelation 22:18-19 which declares “woes” are pronounced upon those who “add or take away from the prophecy and words of this book”. This is a warning about the dangers of error that could be introduced in translating words, phrases, sentences or statements. One estimate has been made of well over 5000 changes and omissions which have been identified in some 40 different versions. Obviously, these changes can change the thoughts as well as the doctrine as given in the original manuscripts.

Here are some examples of the changes and omissions that one can see in the newer translations as compared with the King James Version. The King James is used because of its wide acceptance in Christendom, its test for close to 400 years as a great publication (1604-1611), and its production by 70 commissioned scholars of the church who were widely known to be godly men, ministers and expert translators. When King James I came to the throne of England in 1603, there existed much religious confusion, doubt and debate about and over the Bible. The commissioned scholars were proficient and expert in languages as well in Biblical concepts. This is not to say there are no errors in the King James Version as there are. The rule to follow is a translation should enhance and clarify, but never change. Here are some examples.

KING JAMES VERSION	OTHER VERSIONS	CHANGES
a. Isaiah 7:14, “a virgin shall conceive”	Revised Standard Version: “a young woman shall conceive”	Virgin changed to young woman.
b. Matthew 27:54, “truly this was the Son of God”	Revised Standard Version: “this was a son of God”	The son changed to a son.
c. John 3:16, “God gave his only begotten son”	Living Bible Version: “God gave his only son”	The word begotten has been dropped.
d. Luke 9:55, “He turned and rebuked them and said ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. For the Son of man is not come to destroy men’s lives, but to save them.”	Living Bible Version: “But Jesus turned and rebuked them and they went on to another village.”	28 words have been omitted.
e. Matthew 27:25, “Then answered all the people and said, His blood be on us and on our children.”	Good News Version: “The whole crowd answered back, let the punishment for his death fall on our children.”	“blood be on us” has been dropped.
f. Hebrews 10:19, “Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus.”	Good News Version: “We have, then brethren, complete freedom to go into the most holy place by means of the death of Jesus.”	brethren changed to brothers; boldness changed to complete freedom; holiest changed to the most holy place; blood changed to death.
g. Romans 14:19, “Christ both died and rose.”	Phillips Version: “Christ lived and died.”	Christ arose is omitted completely.
h. Matthew 18:11, “For the Son of Man is come to save that which was lost.”	Phillips Version: All these words do not exist in Phillips.	13 words have been omitted.
i. Revelation 20:12, “And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God’ and the books were opened.”	Amplified Version: “I saw the dead, great and small; they stood before the throne and Books were opened.”	stand before God changed to stand before the throne; the books changed to Books.
j. Luke 2:33, “And Joseph and his mother marveled at those things which were spoken of him.”	Amplified Version: “God his father and his mother were marveling at what was said about him.”	Joseph changed to father.
k. Matthew 20:16, “Many are called but few are chosen.”	Moffatt Version: the entire expression is dropped.	The thought and 7 words are omitted.
l. Luke 23:45, “And the sun was darkened and the veil of the temple was rent in the midst.”	Moffatt Version: “And darkness covered the whole land till three o’clock, owing to the eclipse of the sun; the curtain in the middle of the temple was torn in two.	“Sun was darkened” was changed to an eclipse of the sun. “In the middle of the temple” was added.



This need to have scriptures clear and plain to reach the masses has fostered the “new Bible versions” industry that’s running into the hundreds of translations and in the millions of dollars worth of business. Unfortunately, the only means of verification a Bible student has in deriving exact meaning from a scriptural statement is a comparative analysis and harmonious connection with other scriptures. Those churches who do little comparison and contextual analysis of harmonies run the risk of actually accepting a statement never written into the Holy Scriptures. As more “newer” translations are made, the more the risk of these statement errors, the more the disharmony with other translations. When one group accepts a statement of error that other groups do not, the perversion generates confusion in Christendom. Is it no wonder Christendom is divided?

4. *The Emergence and Tolerance of False Teachers.* Dealing with the unseen and invisible is not easy. While the world is finite and seen, God is infinite and unseen. With this great truth everyone will agree. But people find it hard to keep this in mind. They continually let slip to equate God with something they can see, touch or at least bring down from the infinite to a more finite level. In ancient history, primitive people made God out of wood and stone. The prophets protested. In middle history, medieval people made God more human and anthropomorphic. The reformers protested. In contemporary history, modern humans made God dogmas and sacraments. The writers protested. None of these are God. They are all attempts of the natural and the physical to reach for and understand the infinite and the unseen.

False teachers are those who try to bring God down to the dogma, human and stone levels. They do this with their ideas mixed in with truth. Hand Hanegraaff in his book<sup>18</sup> identifies about a dozen of the influential Christian teachers on the scene today who have made statements in their written material that are infecting the Gospel message. These influences are coming straight from the metaphysical religions. Here are some excerpt from his book: “You don’t have God in you, you are a God”. “God cannot do anything in this earth unless you give him permission.” “Satan conquered Jesus on the cross.” “Being poor is a sin.” “Man was created on terms of equality with God and he could stand in God’s presence without any consciousness of inferiority.” “Never, ever go to the Lord and say, if it be thy will...Don’t allow such faith destroying words to be spoken from your mouth.” False teachers are leading unsuspecting Christians away from the Christian message given 2000 years ago.

False teachers are not necessarily people. A false teacher could be a false idea. It’s the idea that does the teaching. When Grecian Paganistic philosophers were infused into the Christian movement then false teachers

arrived in the midst of the movement. Confronting false ideas is equivalent to confronting false teachers. Unfortunately, false ideas as teachers have a high degree of cover-up. False teachers are spotted easily and often controlled with much success. But a false idea that finds its way into a Christian concept, doctrine or teaching is not easily seen. It is often overlooked and thus many false teachers still reside within Christendom without anyone engaging and confronting them.

5. *Doctrinal Nightmare.* Christianity is such a complex understanding that it is difficult to say anything significant about it that will carry the assent of all Christians. To find common ground is usually a struggle. Then there is the problem of permission to initiate new doctrines for the “after Bible” and the “after early church” that may contradict what occurred with the original church. When “after Bible” new doctrines are initiated contrary to the original conceptions and allowed to take preeminence, the original may fall by the wayside. Add to this process, the interest which prevails in Christian psychology and ethics which may differ with historic theology and the spiritual. The language of theology and the scriptures has been slowly replaced by the vocabulary of the therapeutic. The infusion of Paganistic and Heathenistic beliefs into Christian ideas which has been adopted by Christianity has also added to the nightmare. These processes and infusions have in turn changed Biblically based doctrines as to create new splintered groups with new allegiances, each claiming to be the “new inspiration” in Christendom. This has caused a crisis of beliefs in Christendom.

Many of these splintered groups want to avoid the doctrinal confrontation with its bitter disagreements. They do this by shifting from the theological and doctrinal arguments of the Apostle Paul to the soothing ethical teachings of Jesus. One must admit, theology and doctrines are often opaque. But actually one can say that about archaeology or science or even history. Even the universe is opaque even though its students behave as if its crystal clear. We are not surprised that there is a doctrinal warfare. The warfare has often been between believers and non-believers. But the battle has shifted. The Christian raises their sword and duels over doctrines against fellow believers. In many cases, the results are condemnation and alienation. Take as an example of the meaning of the “Last Supper” in which Jesus said, “take eat this is my body and drink this is my blood”. The statement by Jesus was so difficult to understand and even accept, that many of his disciples left him while he was there among them. Some believe the Last Supper means “transubstantiation” in which participants in the Eucharist literally eat the body of Jesus and literally drink his blood. This is seen by some as “eating God”, since these believers see Jesus as part of a trinity.

Others believe the Last Supper means “consubstantiation” in which participants experience the presence of Jesus in some way, but do not feel they are eating God. Still others believe the Last Supper means “symbolic-substantiation” in which participants experience the presence of Jesus in a metaphorical and symbolic way. There is a recall and remembrance of the Upper Room experience. These adherents do not believe they are eating God.

Doctrine truly matters! There cannot be unity of the spirit unless there is unity and agreement with, at least, basic and important doctrines. Doctrine mattered for Martin Luther who led a reformation. His original intent was change and reform. Since this was not possible, he started more than the Lutheran Church. He started the reformation movement that continues even unto today. Doctrines mattered for the Puritans who founded America. They too saw the unwillingness of the Anglican Church to change and reform. They started more than the Puritan Church in America. They started the reformation movement in America that continues into today. Liberal and conservative views of doctrines matters to many doctrinal devotees who see it give culture and civilization a sense of direction.

6. *Teaching Authority Assumed and Confused.* Teaching authority has been a historic issue throughout the Gospel Age of 2000 years. In Christendom, it has become a crisis. One can appreciate the criticality of this issue since salvation and eternal life are intricately interwoven with Biblical teachings and the teachers who define the salvation process. The door to salvation has been ajar for all people regardless of race, religion, nationality and social origin. In the early periods of the Gospel Age when Roman Catholicism emerged, the idea of papal infallibility as the authority on matters of Biblical interpretation was formally defined and proclaimed. The doctrine of infallibility asserts when the pope speaks officially on matters of faith and morals. God prevents him from committing errors through the Holy Spirit. The pope can make mistakes as a person in a variety of his activities. But in the area of faith and morals, he is the supreme teacher and lawgiver of the church. His answers and pronouncements are binding to all Roman Catholics. The papal approach avoids the problem of different interpretations and conclusions on Biblical statements. If he is wrong, the entire Catholic membership is wrong. On the other hand, if he is right so is the entire membership.

Other approaches to teaching authority has been consensus with leaders within homogeneous groups. Study commissions are organized to investigate and conclude a certain interpretation about a Biblical issue. Recently, the Anglican Church received a report from a study commission that there is no fire in hell. After hundreds of years

pronouncing fire in hell, in 1996 they have removed that perception and declared to all Anglicans there is no fire in hell. This is a major change in a Biblical perception from a historic position.

Still another approach has been the leadership approach. Certain leaders who have seen errors in the historic position of Christendom have taken a stand toward a new interpretation. More than often, they have convinced others who become followers, seeing and feeling the same way about the error. The development of the new perception around the scriptural interpretation formulates a new group in the Christendom network.

Still another approach is left to private interpretation. After all if salvation is an individual matter, then individuals must assume the responsibility to assure they are on the right road to salvation and that it has been individually validated. This private interpretation is fraught with many difficulties since private interpretations could lead in the wrong direction. Comparatively, private interpretation has led in deviant directions to give Christendom it's disunity.

The variety of approaches of teaching authority for salvation and other issues is of deep concern for organizations, leaders and individuals. The lack of consensus and uniformity has caused disruptions and cracks in the Christendom network. These disruptions and cracks in the network may result in new splintered groups. Take as an illustration, the abortion issue of our times. Abortion has divided the country politically. It has also divided the country religiously, and culturally. The impact has been felt by individuals, couples, families, neighborhoods, organizations, the professions, governments and nations. Abortion is only one issue. Other issues may be the basis of divorce, gays in the ministry, women into the priesthood, Euthanasia, test tube babies and surrogacy. Add to this list of contemporary problems are the religious interpretations made from Biblical readings: Did the flood envelop the entire planet earth or only a region? Did the waters part for Moses or was it only a low tide in the Red Sea basin? Was the body of the Virgin Mary resurrected or was it returned to dust? Did Enoch go to heaven or was he translated to another geographical area? Are the Eucharist symbols literally the body and blood of Jesus? The list is never ending.

One must keep in mind that religious organizations are voluntary associations. Individuals choose to participate out of their own volition and not because of some external force which compels them to membership. The frequency of involvement, the amount of financial support and the intensity of adherence to the doctrines and goals of an organization are to a large extent voluntary and discretionary. A person who derives nothing from a voluntary

association is not likely to continue to participate. Similarly, if negative factors involved in the participation are perceived to outweigh the positive benefits, membership or at least commitment is likely to be curtailed. The great schism of the Eastern Orthodox Church in 1054 AD the Roman Catholic Church is an example of rejecting teaching authority when the benefits are not there. It eventually caused another schism which resulted in three popes claimed the headship of the Catholic Church: Rome, Constantinople and Avignone.

Protestants received their designation because they rejected Papal authority. With the Protestants, teaching authority continues to splinter the already highly splintered groups in the “papal protest” movement. There are major differences between the Roman Church which has a pope, the Eastern Orthodox Church which has no pope but a collective judgment of a council and the Protestant groups which make decisions directed by the congregations themselves. The Roman Church is hierarchical and autocratic demanding obedience, the Eastern Orthodox Church is group oriented demanding polarization to the group and the Protestant Churches are integrative and permissive demanding cooperation.

7. *Christian in name only.* Analysts have long puzzled over results that show the United States as the most religious nation in the advanced industrial west. The surveys show consistently 90 to 95 percent of Americans profess a belief in God. More than half say they pray at least once a day and in any given week 40 percent claim to have attended worship services. All this in a society that is overtly, even aggressively secular. One explanation of this paradox is separation of church and state. Life is compartmentalized into two departments: church and state. But a gap exists between the two. It’s a huge gap. A gap between the principle of Christian behavior and the practice of that behavior. The great war of Europe, 1914-1918 was a war between Christian nations. These nations laid aside Christian principles of peace and good will and proceeded to kill each other in bloody battles. It was a poor example to the Pagans and Heathen of the world as to what the Christian religion must be. Other wars have substantiated the first World War. Wars are not the only evidence of Christians in name only. Surveys show Christians are divorcing at the same rate as non-Christians. Family values have been abandoned. People who say they are Christians are getting abortions at a rate as high or higher than those who do not claim to be a Christian. Even the leaders in Christendom are tolerating “sin in the camp” in preference to building large congregations. Pastoral reassignments to larger congregations have also motivated the pastors to tolerate the lower standards of behavior than that required in the Gospel message. It seems the Christian principles have little or no effect on lifestyles.

Christians in name only is nominalism. This means the practice of universals or principles in the lives of people do not exist. Christians have compartmentalized their lives. On Sunday morning, they visit and listen in the “box” they call a church. But from Monday morning until Saturday night they are on a par with the secular world. To these people, religion is an observance on Sunday morning and to be forgotten the rest of the week. Many are behaving as if religion is a compartment to be visited at appropriate times. The compartment can be opened or closed at will. Probably no area of society is there nominalism practices as in race relations. Many Christians give lip service to the Negro plight. If it were not for the government, black sponsored programs would seldom be instituted. If Christendom, in nearly 2000 years has failed to produce a Christian culture on planet earth or even in the countries that claim Christianity, will it ever do so? Will the vision of a Christian culture on earth be discarded or will the Christendom who attempted to make this vision a reality be discarded?

The most impressive observation one can make about the teachings of Jesus is not what he taught them, but what he showed them by living the teachings he expounded. He taught faith, humility, peacemaking, kindness, self-giving, patience, self-control and love. But his life exemplified these virtues. This one single factor is what impressed the new converts in the first and second century of the Christian movement. They were more impressed by what they saw than what they heard. They also saw Paganistic lives that were transformed. Men and women who were ordinary in every way, once converted seemed to have found the secret of living. It was like the secret of success that everyone would like to succeed at - that of life itself.

What has happened to this lifestyle? What makes a healthy religion or a healthy church? Where is the starting point? It really begins with individuals. Religion is what the individual does in their lifestyle. It, first, is an individual experience and only later a church experience. The church experience is built on the individual experience. The individual sees life as a journey from the known to the unknown. The individual does this with peace of mind. Healthy churches are a collection of these types of spiritually healthy individuals. Unhealthy churches result when it's members are practicing nominalism - Christian in name only.

8. *Uncontrolled Materialism.* Money, prestige, titles, assets and possessions have become modern indicators of cultural success. “In God we trust” appears on our coins as well as dollar bills. But it seems more trust is put into the value of money than the trust statement in God. Materialism has become a way of life for Christians as well as non-Christians. Spend, spend, spend has become the new highway for happiness. This has been a great disappointment.

It's not uncommon to find lottery winners who reaped huge amounts of money claim the new possessions the money bought did not add anything to their level of happiness. An interesting poem that has been circulating with an unknown author is quoted here for what money can buy.

***Money Can and Cannot Buy:***

A bed, but cannot buy sleep  
 Books, but not intelligence nor wisdom  
 Food, but not taste nor appetite  
 Finery, but not attractiveness nor beauty  
 A house, but not a home nor values  
 Medicine, but not health and long life  
 Luxuries, but not satisfaction and fulfillment  
 Amusements, but not happiness  
 A crucifix, but not a savior  
 A church-pew, but not a heavenly home

The acquisition accumulation and the spending of money provides a pseudo form of security as well as an empty form of virtue. Material accumulations from the number of shoes in the closet to the number of television sets in the home is now out of control. Three, four and even five sets is not unusual in a family. Pressures to conform to new cultural standards is fierce. This standard is labeled, "The American Way of Life". The churches are following the pattern of the secular world. They must have plush carpets, impressive stained glass, full-toned organs, a high cathedral ceiling in order to impress and hold it's members. Historically, most of the great cathedrals of Europe were built to the pride of bishops and monarchs. Most of them today have become relics. In Jerusalem, the church buildings in the significant and meaningful Kidron Valley of the old city are many. But there are no congregations to these buildings nor do they have dynamic pulpits when messages are heard. They are cold and irrelevant to the needy who walk by the front of these buildings.

What does a materialistic philosophy do to Christendom? Does Christian teaching confront materialistic accumulation? Materialism like an invisible, but powerful specter used people for gain. Similarly, Christianity used gain for people. Both use people, but inversely. The two work against each other. The two are incompatible. Christendom will never be the dynamic spiritual force they are expected to be unless they break with the materialistic hold that has crept into the movement. The materialistic movement is very much Paganistic. Paganistic values are seen by the huge, costly and beautiful temples of the ancient world where they thought were the homes of the gods. The temple of Artemis in Ephesus took over 200 years to complete construction. It did this while the needy passed

by its front doors. When a church loses its idealism of service and sacrifice, it has lost the mission of its existence. The church is in crisis.

9. *Homosexuality in the Churches.* There's a movement afoot which started roughly in the 1960's with a handful of men that in a relatively few years has grown to include thousands of followers, dozens of congregations and a denominational structure that mirrors those of straight Christian churches. Gay liberation within the straight churches has infiltrated all its levels from parishioners to bishops. Not long ago respectable people seldom mentioned the word homosexuals. It was whispered in hushed tones as they were seen as sex deviates. These deviates formed a closed and covered little world of their own with jargon and relationships peculiar to their movement. Homosexuals have developed a subculture - a way of life - as a means of coping with the larger society which has expelled them. Yet, recently, this subculture has emerged from the shadows into the light of the day. The American Psychiatric Association has ruled homosexuality can no longer be considered a mental disorder. The idea is to allow homosexuals to obtain help if they want it, but to reduce discrimination against those who do not.

One shocking area are celibate priests who have made vows of sexual abstinence. These priests with their altar boys, have been accused in courts by parents of sexual abuse. They lost their defense only to find their supporting churches making huge financial payoffs as well as secret cover-ups. One estimate<sup>19</sup> exists there is as much as five percent of the Catholic clergy that are homosexuals. The Kinsey study discovered that 37 percent of males as well as well as 13 percent of females have had at least one overt homosexual experience to the point of orgasm between adolescence and old age. Add to this, the 10 percent of men who are deeply involved in the homosexual experience as a lifestyle. Lesbians are also identified in a subculture of their own. Their subculture appear to be much less important for them. Thus, lesbians are thought to be much less promiscuous than male homosexuals. Homosexuals are now demanding public recognition and allowance for their unique lifestyle. They are even demanding legal marriages between those of the same sex. The issues are far from being settled as they are now contemporary concerns within and without Christendom.

The gay church presents a unique paradox since many scriptures prohibit the practices of sexuality in the same sexual orientation. It is, therefore, surprising that homosexual behavior would be allowed in the churches especially among ministers, elders, priests and bishops. The gay community is experiencing a growing militancy, particularly among the young. They have organized for civil rights, peace protests, ecological concerns and women's' liberation.



They have laid their course at the door of the churches. Many churches have opened the door and allowed their habitation in the church. Their movement has the banner, "Gay is good", "Gay is just", and "Gay is good as straight". The largest gay church is seen in Atlanta with a membership of 150,000. The "House of Joy" is a gay synagogue in New York City and represents the second largest in the United States. It is for the nine previously described reasons that Christendom is in crisis.

## CHAPTER 9

### MESSIANISM: THE MATURITY OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION

The rise of globalization. Messianic Age: a new frame of reference. New civilization overlaps with old. The Early Dawn of the Messianic period is both dark and light. Life expectancy over time. Negative factors of the dark half-sphere. Positive changes of the sunny half-sphere. Messianism: the integrator of Judaism and Christianity. Messianic Disappointments. Why Jesus rejected as Messiah. Why Jesus is the Messiah. Jesus' Lineage. Messianic Prophecies of the Old Testament. Jesus' first arrival predicted for 29-33 AD. Jesus' second arrival at a time of trouble. Gospel preached as a witness to all the world. Times of great positive changes as Messianic Civilization moves in. Israel reestablished. Regathering Jews from the Global Diaspora. Lessons learned from the history of civilizations: value of life; evil experience; war experience; slavery experience; despot experience; government experience; justice experience; rights experience; materialistic experience; attitude and learning experience. Visions of the future. God's outline of the past and the future. 2010 AD - 2050 AD predictions.

#### THE RISE OF GLOBALIZATION

“There shall be a root of Jesse, he shall rise to reign over the nations; in him shall all the nations trust.” Romans 15:12

The global citizen is emerging! Globalization is more than a catch slogan. People can no longer view the world in parochial cultures according to historic models. Understanding current situations depends on a world view. The loss of reality is due to a lack of world view. Understanding of reality cannot be limited to one region or country on planet earth. A global citizen is involved in the intercultural and cross-cultural interests. The global citizen has world view concerns. As civilization moves closer to the 21st century, it's clear it's moving to a one global culture.

In 1955, Arnold Toynbee, widely called the greatest living historian, made a statement that went worldwide: “The time for a one world government has come”. The well defined variety of nations in the traditional sense appears to be diminishing. The spread of western-style democracy and manufacturing industries across the globe has suppressed many of the unique differences in favor of a common style of life in cities and industries. Cultural variety probably reached a peak in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries when Europeans migrated and invaded the lifestyles of people on other continents. The nineteenth and twentieth centuries also experienced the beginning of world travel land, sea and air. This has and continues to have a mixing effect on isolated nations. The separate, independent countries are now becoming interdependent creating a global village. See Figure 9.1. The fences around the nations are being torn down. These fences are traditions, attitudes, habits, lifestyles, language, ways of doing things, localized laws and national commitments. The global village is replacing these parochial and narrow practices for a broader encompassing view of humanity. The rights of humanity is superseding the rights of nations. World watch is more than a “catchy” slogan. It is a formally defined activity to track a 21 trillion dollar world economy up 4 trillion in 10 years, a 6 billion world population growing at the rate of 100 million per year, quintupled in size since 1950, 100 million tons of oceanic fishery harvest in one year, a 360 parts per million concentration of carbon dioxide in the atmosphere and a 100 billion dollar weather-related disasters with damages in five years. World watch means stabilizing population, controlling climate, advancing technology and conserving the demands made on earth’s natural systems on a worldwide basis.

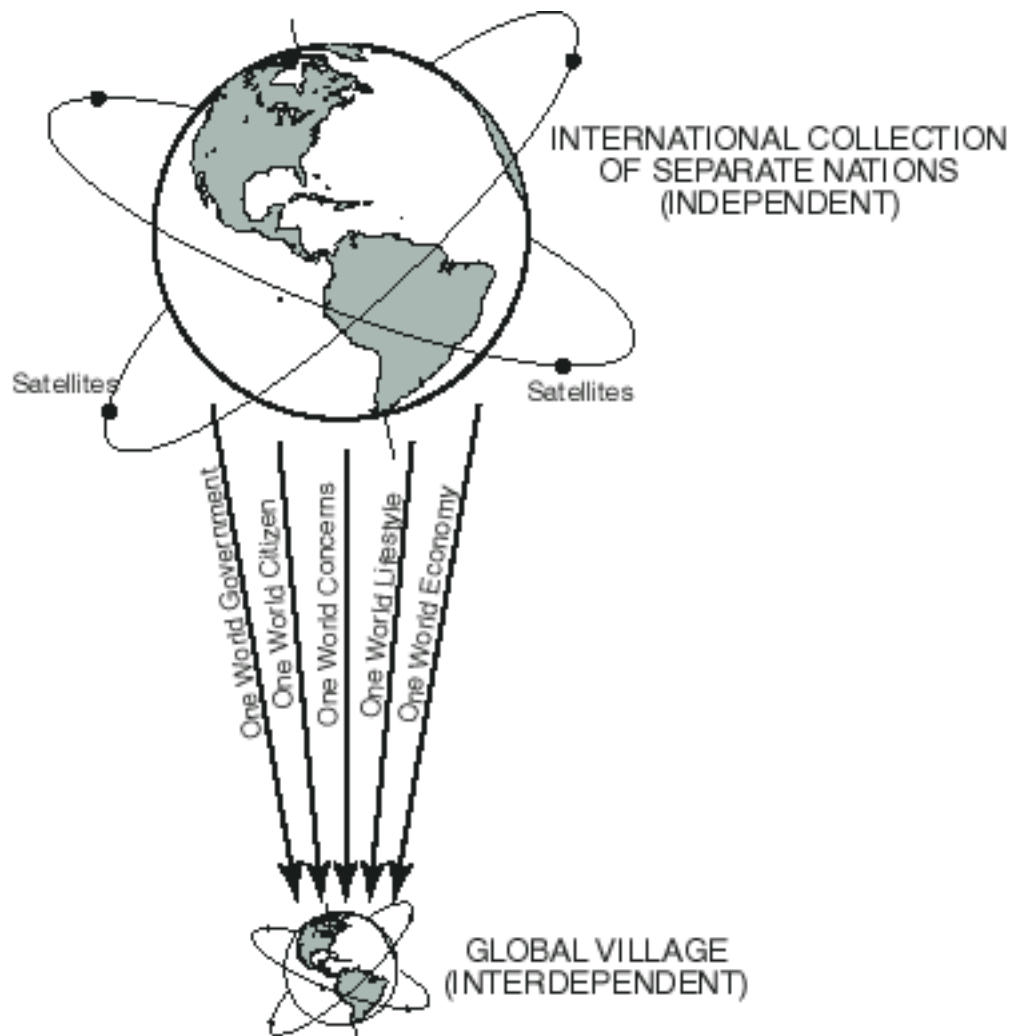


Figure 9.1

## Internationalism is Shrinking to Globalism

### Figure 9.1 Internationalism is Shrinking to Globalism

But globalization need not necessarily mean homogeneity or sameness in one world culture. But it can mean one earth with multi-cultures just like residents in one area are offered choices of French, Spanish, Mexican and Chinese foods. Also, a resident can be offered choices of American, Italian, British and German music. A one world government with a one world religion, concurrently can be in the context of multi-cultured experiences. The intercultural issues have now had an impact on nations of all kinds and sizes. The issues do not respect borders nor national politics. There is a difference between global and international views. A global view means you view one large worldwide society with important and selected common entities and interests. An international view means you view the world in fixed distinctive and separate entities. An international effort is to respect and sustain these

separate entities. A global effort is to integrate and bring about merging, cooperating countries. The effort to integrate countries is also integrating individuals. The rise of a globular civilization is rendering the traditional nations and commonwealths blatantly ineffective. It is still a world of nation-states, but nations are becoming like dinosaurs. They had their day similar to the tribes of the ancient world. Cross cultural transformations are shaking traditional lifestyles. The effort to reinvent government is well worth it since governments must operate in a context of new conditions. Whether the reinvention will succeed or not still remains to be seen. Unless, however, the reinvention has a globular theme, it won't work. A worldwide appraisal seems to indicate most governments are in crisis. Some a lot worse than others. In recent times the USSR and Yugoslavia changed from two empires to 23 nations. It appears the end is not in sight. The big empires in history had a similar experience. Greece and Rome eventually broke up into small fiefdoms. Today, there is the drift and movement toward a one world, but tangled by many conflicts. The same language may be spoken, but it is not the same meanings. There is trade and business with each other, but there is little love for one another. Taxes affect people from other parts of the world, but these parts are seen distant and irrelevant. Terrorism invades by people in lands not known, and people ignore the message they are trying to send. All of us, whether we know each other or not live in a complicated, snarled and intertwined world. Yet, we continue to ignore the needs of our neighbors. Globalism is the means to rise above cultural "tribes" and conflicts and make oneness a reality.

The rise of a global civilization is happening and nothing anyone can do will stop it. But nations are not going out of business. They are only changing their identities and relationships with other nations and their ways of doing things. These ways have increasingly become interconnected and interdependent. Interdependent means sharing, cooperating and collaborating toward mutually established goals. The global lifestyle is free from local, provincial or national interests, attitudes or prejudices. The style favors the interests and perceptions of larger regions or the entire world. The global citizen is developing an unspoken allegiance to the world as a whole. There are at least ten trends moving the world toward globalization:

1. *Globalization of information flow.* Studies show that people spend 75 percent of their wake time communicating. This includes talking, writing, reading and listening. In fact all relationships ultimately come down to transaction or interactions between individuals, groups, companies and countries. The success of any civilization depends greatly on how well people understand each other. The exchange of ideas, information, and even knowledge between and

among cultures that are different is difficult. Global communications are fostered by worldwide television viewing such as CNN. There are telephone networks that interconnect continents. There are also important services to any and all international cities, such as, movies, radio, books and newspapers which spread ideas and lifestyles. Satellites have become relay transoceanic calls which provide global weather, give air and water pollution information, provide military surveillance and transmits programs to every corner of the globe. There is worldwide delivery, 24 hours daily, of data for purposes such as currency exchanges, commodity markets, airline reservations and coverage of news and sports. The human species has extended its communication capability beyond print to that of electronic technology, faxing, e-mail, etc. The new forms have clouded and made difficult the traditional forms. But in intercultural communications, values, learnings, assumptions and cultural behaving must be conveyed with accurate clarity and understanding. Global communications cannot be avoided no matter how hard one tries. The drift toward a one world has entered our lifestyles.

2. *Global Cooperation.* The United Nations is the network hub of 233 nations listening and gathering global concerns and issues. Language is no longer a cultural barrier. Governments are sensitive and respond to public cries for help even to the other side of the globe in areas of starvation, disasters country takeovers, air and water pollution. Sharing waters has now become critical when rivers flow through two or more countries. In the world, there are 214 rivers that flow through two or more countries ignoring political boundaries. Cooperating with the use of these rivers for mutual concerns is a must. The summit meeting of seven powerful industrial democracies is really a global consortium to deal with common concerns. At this writing, Russia wishes to be a part of the consortium. Global cooperation has been a boon to developing or isolated countries. This cooperation has fostered a world view of relationships. Formal cooperatives are emerging in all parts of the world. In some cases it's on a voluntary basis. The cooperative movement is still growing so that small entrepreneurs and consumer groups have banded together for effective results. Major global concerns are being handled with formal cooperatives in such areas as inadequate housing, high cost of food and health and child care services. Just as corporations and governments must go beyond national and political borders to solve complex interdependent problems, so too formal and informal cooperation on a personal basis much cross borders as well.

Global cooperation has developed global use of air space. This is an agreement from nations to fly over nation's air space and their control towers and airfields in the event of an emergency. The common language in and out of

these countries is English. Another cooperative is the global radio frequency spectrum. This makes possible no interference from foreign countries because frequencies are assigned and respected. This holds true for TV reception, satellite phones and fax connections.

Still another global cooperation is world weather watching. This is weather forecasting on a worldwide basis with picture-talking, satellites and remote sensing satellites. The earth is moving into a climate of extremes with huge weather-related disasters with damages. Insurance companies are greatly concerned over weather changes and frequency of disasters since their companies are expected to absorb the financial losses. This effort alone may bring about the bankruptcy of insurance companies. Since warming of the earth is the basis cause, a shift and change is needed on a worldwide basis.

3. *Global Travel.* There is usually a great deal of interest and even excitement for people to visit a different culture and experience their uniqueness. Never before in history have people crossed and criss-crossed into foreign lands. In 1983 in the United States, 66 percent of adults traveled by air somewhere. In 1993, it increased to 77 percent. Today, the travel rate has exceeded 80 percent. Business purposes for these trips dropped, but pleasure and tours increased. High speed jet planes bring people to places never before visited for intercultural experiences. Travel to other parts of the world is like visiting an adjoining town. Currency exchange makes it easy to bring your own money and host countries will convert easily. Rising incomes, cheap air travel and proliferating credit cards make it easy to travel anywhere on planet earth. Travel to other lands brings a new vitality to lifestyles. All too often, our living activities get routine and boring. Travel affords the opportunity to enrich and challenge one another breaking the boredom cycle. Return trips with new insights, experiences and motivations enhance the appreciation of different cultures.

4. *Global Technological Sharing.* The scientific and medical community are active in intercultural cooperatives on mutual problems especially in the areas of research. Cooperation in outer space based on the principle that celestial bodies are the common province of humankind. As space begins to fill up, other kinds of agreements are necessary such as banning the use of weapons in orbit since more than targets would be effected and keeping track of launches and space vehicles for weather forecasting. There is also global agreements on the deep oceans as the common heritage of humankind. By unanimous consent, governments of the world are providing protection of the world's seas. An ocean law agreed upon by governments has been developed for all nations of the world.

Nobel prizes, a most high distinctive award, are for contributions made for a global betterment than for a local or specialized need. With advances in technology, the workplace, the family home, the social memberships and the entertainment areas have been revolutionized. Technological drivers are creating a new culture within the old. Here are some examples of technological drivers: advanced chips, high speed integrated circuits, personal computers, biotechnology, psychotherapy, transplantation, genetic engineering, robotics, automated production, supercool technology, fusion, geothermal, biomass, laser surgery, satellite power stations, genetic modification, electrostatics, spraying, desalinization, conservation and weather modifications. These drivers have global implications. Additionally, these technological advances are transforming old cultures into new ones. Where culture never existed, the drivers create new ones. High tech and fast growth environs are the harbingers of global movements. There is an

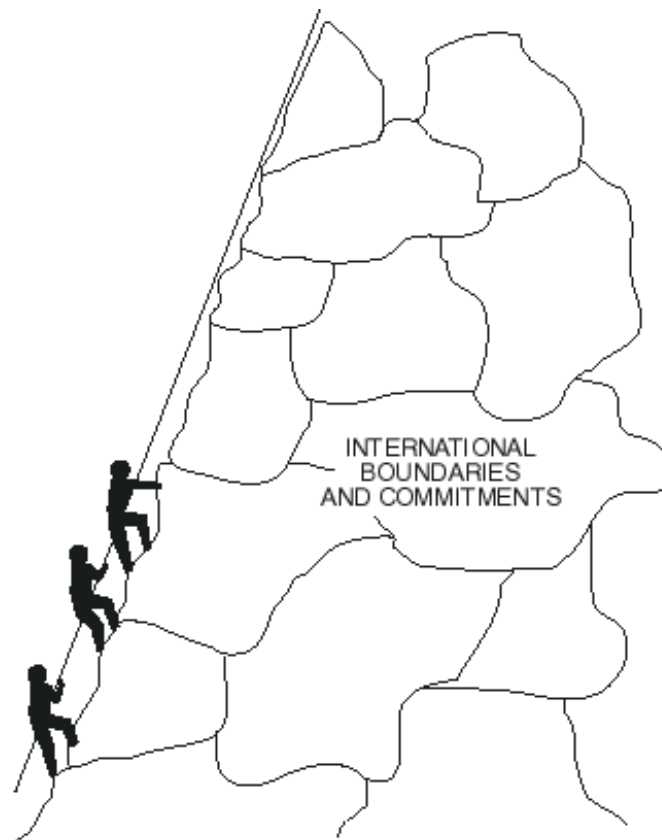


Figure 9.2

### The Challenge to Mutually Reach Global Agreements

enormous challenge to make global agreements workable for all nations and people. See Figure 9.2.



### Figure 9.2 The Challenge to Mutually Reach Global Agreements

5. *Global Government Changes.* Most of the traditional concepts of government ideologies are still operating even to a small degree somewhere on planet earth. To cite a few, there are monarchies, socialism, fascism, capitalism, dictatorship, democracy, communism and commonwealth. But they are undergoing changes. Most are declining or collapsing. Few are increasing in effectiveness. They are mixing and the trend is up for new forms of government. These new forms start with the emergence of new leaders. Leaders who are willing to encourage both individualistic and team approaches. Global leaders are conceptualizers who think in global rather than local terms. A global leader is an effective intercultural communicator that leads cultural change in the home, the work place and in relationships.

Here are some concepts of global leadership:

- a. Cosmopolitan view - able to operate in a global or pluralistic environment.
- b. Intercultural communicator - can speak and listen in foreign languages.
- c. Cultural sensitive - can understand and transfer awareness into relationships.
- d. Cultural adapter - can rise above cultural shock and adapt.
- e. Cultural influencer - able to influence the changes that are needed.
- f. Cultural innovator - able to innovate where needed toward globalization.

There are trends moving the world toward globalization: one calendar with many coincidental holidays; one type of traffic stoplight - red for stop, green for go; one musical language, but expressed in a variety of forms; similarities and oneness in style of clothes, food, entertainment, homes, appliances and transportation. Transportation vehicles have an amazing globular sameness.

6. *Global Fears.* There are dangers driving the world community closer together. Nuclear meltdowns, release of germs or chemical gas, pollution of the environment and overpopulation are examples of these dangers that demand a global approach for it's solution. These potential dangers are generating the need to coexist and cooperate together or separate and collapse together. The world has become increasingly interconnected and vastly interdependent. One effort to eradicate infectious diseases is sponsored by the World Health Organization. This organization coordinates the breakout of diseases. The W.H.O. requires the continuous cooperation of all nations on earth to track and stop the spread of diseases. The United Nations peacekeeping and peacemaking is another global effort in human

concerns. They are “soldiers without enemies”. This expression has been stationed in all corners of the earth to help where needed for globalized concerns.

There are also dangers with the trend toward globalization. A skirmish emerging in one sector of a one world would be felt by many sectors far distant from the trouble spot. Acts in remote parts will affect safety, taxes, ways of life in the whole. Disputes between Israel and Arab neighbors will be felt. Revolutions in Central America will be felt. Chaos in an Asian state or a disease outbreak in Africa will be felt. As we move closer to a one world, the ripple effect will be seen far distant to the trouble spot. The one world means one family which can result in a state of stress.

7. *Global Economic Interdependence.* Huge amounts of cash flow across political borders. Over 140 different industries operate worldwide where only global products are the name of the game. These global products range from zippers to nuclear power plants. There are buyouts, takeovers, mergers, acquisitions and procurements. World trade among the nations is expanding more rapidly than economic growth within nations. Trade protectionism is not working. Consumers are buying food and products halfway around the world. Satellites, video and television give instant viewing and participation of distant markets and buying trends. People see global transactions while sitting within the comforts of their homes. Everywhere people are drinking American coke, wearing Italian ties, driving German Mercedes, listening to Japanese Walkman’s, wearing Phillipino garments, drinking Colombian coffee, buying goods in Canadian built malls, burning Saudi oil and eating Chinese duck. These and other global products are indicating we are now part of a giant global economy with approximately 21 trillion dollars. National borders are beginning to lose their meaning since there is crossing and criss-crossing of these borders. Cash flow definitely crosses the borders. National resources are not enough to meet local consumption. Extra resources from other nations are needed. National markets are not large enough to spur the growth and expansion of businesses and new ventures. The business slogan “think global but act local” has been coined as “globalize”<sup>1</sup>. This is meaning global decisions on what to do but letting local concerns guide the implementation.

8. *Global Political Interdependence.* Governments are bonding together to form transnational confederations to settle conflicts and disputes. Recently, the United Nations voted a resolution as a collective body of governments to reject Iraq’s invasion of Kuwait and to condemn it as illegal. A war was conducted by 28 nations against Iraq. The same has happened in Bosnia. The United Nations since it’s inception supports a global perspective upholding

justice on the basis of agreed upon international agreements. As the world moves more and more toward global cooperation, collaborations of all kinds will enlarge in an effort to settle conflicts and difficulties. Governments are abandoning cold war strategies, historic border agreements, post-war settlements and even ancient vengeful rivalries. The new 21st century concerns and converging cultures are promoting new diplomacy and new politics. English speaking is becoming a global language at least in business and government. Educational curriculums are being instituted in major universities and schools with an international scope. Traditional governments are fiercely resisting globalization because it means major disruptive reforms. This is especially true in Europe with economic unification. The “United States of Europe” is expected to remove all trade barriers and produce a single economic unit. The European community is excited with the prospects of a 5 trillion dollar market with over 300 million customers. They are making whatever political adjustments necessary with other nations to exploit this huge opportunity. Peter Drucker<sup>2</sup>, the contemporary economist “guru” has stated that Europe will gradually become the world’s leading economic power replacing the United States and Japan. Europe may truly become the United States of Europe. According to Drucker, the United States and Japan have peaked. Europe is moving forward because of its adjusting political dynamics and interdependence for economic priorities. OPEC is another example of governments cooperating for economic gain even at the sacrifice of its political traditions. The Eastern Communistic Block with its perestroika is still another example of political adjustments to accommodate the new economic concerns. Political unrest could very well change the national borders for more interdependence.

9. *Global Environmental Interdependence.* Environmental issues and concerns for the global citizen has moved to the top of the “worry” list. Approximately 50,000 chemicals are commercially produced. 35,000 have been classified as hazardous to human health. These chemicals run off into wells, rivers, lakes and oceans. They don’t respect national boundaries. They are ingested by fish, plants, trees and animals. Most of the cities of the world do not have sewage plants. It seems that economic growth becomes the source of toxic wastes.

Out of control technology adds to the environmental issue of the global citizen. The fear of a nuclear explosion or the release of germs into a common atmosphere terrifies people. The release of chemical gas such as the accident in Bhopal, India affected thousands of people. The Chernobyl Nuclear meltdown in Russia contaminated over 500,000 people in many countries. The cement and steel “sarcophagus” encasing the reactor needs strengthening. This concern affects more than Russia, but to an interdependent humanity throughout the world.

10. *Resource Availability.* This is now a global interdependent issue. Conveying living and cultural standards are making unprecedented demands on resources. Resources are already scarce. This scarcity will become more critical. Demand for oil, electricity, food, water, money, time, materials, skilled employees, energy, supplies, buildings and equipment have reached new levels of consumption. As population growth continues to rise, scarcity will also rise.

A global village is emerging on planet earth. This presents a new identity: the global citizen. We have a sense that parochial type civilizations are moving out. They have had their day. As massive products cross borders, a huge number of people visit other cultures, and other pollutants move to all parts of the globe, the interdependence and cooperation of nations becomes inevitable. Existing governments are fiercely resisting globalization since they want to perpetuate the traditions which brought them into existence. Causes of globalization is summarized in Figure 9.3.

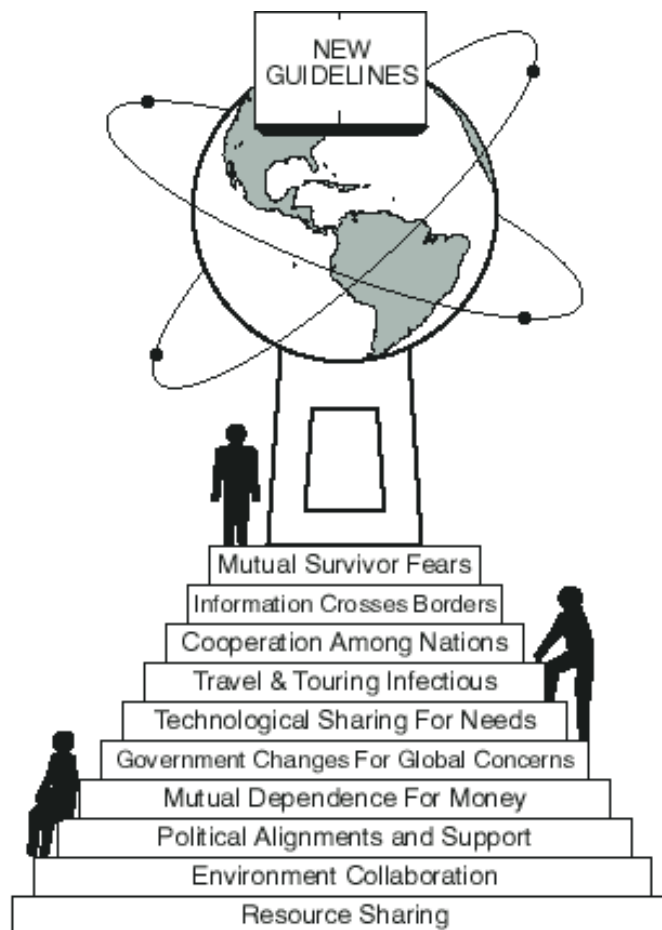


Figure 9.3

## Causes of Globalization

Figure 9.3 Causes of Globalization

Globalization has the unique advantage of evangelizing the world's population since a one language is inevitable. The dialogue with non-Christian world religions provides the opportunity to reach out for the world's neglected and oppressed peoples. An opportunity to bring about a world faith. To speak of God in ways that signal a universality under God's arrangements in a new civilization never before experienced by humankind. No civilization has ever endured without a religious core that shapes all aspects of it's lifestyles. A new civilization can bring together on a moral, spiritual and cultural level solutions never before experienced in the history of humankind.

#### MESSIANIC AGE: A NEW FRAME OF REFERENCE

“It is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.” Matthew 13:11

As we approach the 21st century, a new kind of civilization is emerging in North America, parts of Europe and scattered places around the world. Different ideas, new values, advancing technology, exciting visions, changing expectations are bringing it into being. This new civilization is producing ways of life, strikingly different from those of previous generations. Already, it has transformed patterns of behavior and modes of lifestyles. This new civilization is pregnant with enormous possibilities. It has made life both exhilarating and dangerous. Exhilarating because it's new with desirable changes and dangerous because it will be a shock of change from traditions and past institutions. Most people are set in their own ways. They are reluctant to change. Some kinds of change are bewildering and discomforting. It is like giving an 80 year old person a personal computer to help with his problems. The theme of this new civilization is change - enormous change. Old traditions will go down and new celebrations will come up. History is not about descriptions of status quo. It is about change. Most of history, the change has been slow as to be imperceptible in one's lifetime. Today the change is breathtaking. It's accelerating to a point where it's almost overwhelming the ability and capacity to handle the change. The new civilization will be a great social explosion. The more than 10,000 societies living inside 233 countries will become transnational. Historically, it will be a social upheaval. The world is moving from the old to the new. Figure 9.4. The overlapping nature of both worlds means that two worlds will exist, for a short time, side by side.

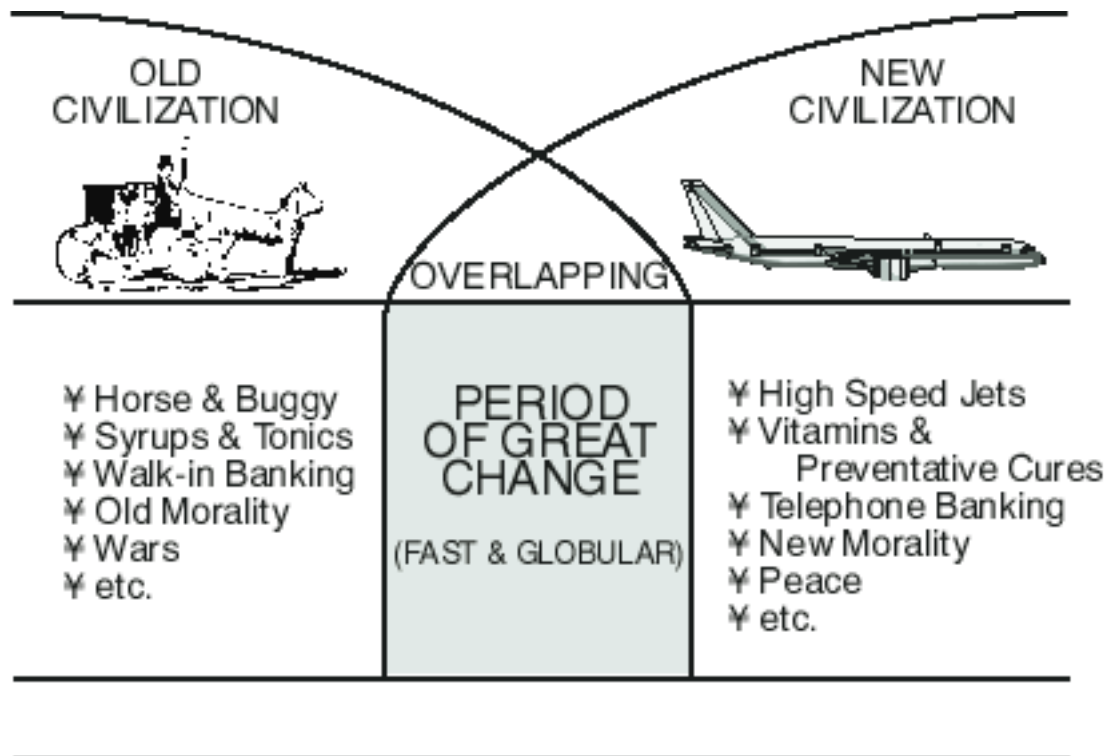


Figure 9.4

## The New Civilization Overlaps with the Old

### Figure 9.4 The New Civilization Overlaps with the Old

The direction and extent of this social upheaval is unpredictable other than to say it offers possibilities of health, life, education and achievement beyond the grandest visions of the past. We will through a shift from one order of life to another. It's a shift that has greater consequences for America than did the Civil War, World War I, the Great Depression, World War II, Korean War, Vietnam and the Cold War. Look at the change that has occurred recently. USSR and Yugoslavia have gone from being 2 nations to becoming 23 nations. In essence we're experiencing the death throes of the modern age which started in the sixteenth century and culminating in the incoming Messianic age. The Messianic age can be thought of as the global age. A whole new frame of reference is indicated. Science and technology has learned more about nature, the universe and humans than we've learned in the past 6000 years. Computers, telephones, faxes, satellites, lasers and fiber optics are linking all major parts of the world. Here are some implications:

- a. Globalization of technology will make national economics a subset of a global production system.
- b. National debt levels have reached a saturation point requiring a new set of investment undertakings involving the world.

- c. Worldwide overcapacity exists which will continue to downsize organizations, but encourage entrepreneurship.
- d. Cold war economics throughout the world is now being replaced by peacetime economics.
- e. Real estate overhang built in the 80's is still a long way from being worked off until banks can develop new investment collaborations.
- f. Intellectual thought of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries are now drying up. Marxism has collapsed. Socialism is vanishing. Totalitarianism is discredited except in China and North Korea. Even the French abandoned nationalism. Few people are inspired with liberalism. Traditional nationalism is on the wane.

Reinventing conditions of a new civilization for a new period of history has arrived.

As the world becomes more globular in nature, it's also shifting from one historic era, Christianity, to a new period of development, Messianism. This shift is a great transition. The transition is a crucial junction in history as an old age with traditional values is dying and another age with exciting new values is coming in. Jesus spoke of the end of the age. Today, we stand at the door of the new age coming in. Every generation, of course, tends to hold on to the era they are born in and refuse to see the signs of its decline. They become comfortable in their own cultural catacombs. They are catacombs because of their cultural exhaustion. They are blinded to the faults and mistakes of their own era. When the errors are pointed out to them, they tend to cover up by pointing out the successes and triumphs of their generation. These successes and triumphs are often overstated and magnified to give it a significance well beyond its contribution. They tend to believe they are living at the peak of achievement. To see this clearly, one only needs to listen to an incumbent president who is campaigning for reelection. The belief is so strong that change and adjustment to a new direction is often seen as moving in the wrong direction. These strong believers tend to perpetuate the successful realities of the past while subtracting the bright opportunities of the future.

The need for the Messianic Age has become critical. Leaders, whether political, scientific, social or religious see the far off great promise of a Messianic period as the only bright star to rid the upheavals that plague humankind and to have the opportunity to "start-over". Many people have experienced the pain and suffering of hunger and starvation in their entire lives. UNICEF has identified 15 million children in this category. Those children, who survive starvation, may fall victim to disease and illness. Add to adults, the starving millions need the Messianic Age. Add to the starvation problem is the poisoning of the environment, the persistent plague of war, the epidemic of violent crime and the degeneration of morals, all these affirm the hard and critical need for a turning point. The need

for a worldwide moral system to conform to Biblical norms is urgent. Morality, as a system of fixed principles, defines what is right from what is wrong. The principles should apply to everyone regardless of race, religion, nationality and culture. The principles must be the standards for conduct and behavior. A congress or government should not change or revoke these principles. Each person or each group should not have the right to decide what is right and what is wrong. That isn't morality at all. It may be total freedom, but this results in total ethical chaos. The principles must be the standards for guiding right from wrong. If stealing is wrong, it's wrong for all. The Ten Commandments prohibit killing, stealing, lying and envying. This is how specific the Bible can be as principles for establishing moral standards for people to follow. For some time, secular and non-Biblical groups have been redefining what is morality. Killing someone, for example, is regarded as an act of heroism during a war, but a crime during peacetime. The principle of "love your enemies" is abandoned during a war, but reinstated in peacetime. The need exists for all life to uphold the principle. This cycling of commitments to and away from principles has been the basis of family breakups, promiscuous sex, parasite welfare, law rebellion and authoritarian revolt.

The generation that wants to maintain the status quo tends to reject the need and belief of an historic turning point. They do not see the need for a new frame of reference. Fortunately, the turning point is happening. Radical changes are coming in. The basic principles of human life, generally happen only once in about 400-600 years. The ancient world turned into the medieval world which in turn became the renaissance world which in turn become the modern world which is now becoming the Messianic world. Some generations are destined to live in these transitional times. The transitional times we are in is a turning point. The turning point is the basic cause of the disorder we now see around the world as well as here at home. The motivations which shaped the past world are yielding to a new set of motivations which is shaping the coming world. Great ages of transitions in the past have generally displayed similar upheavals. Here are some upheaval examples of the great transition that is now taking place.

*First*, stable, social and governmental institutions are shaking and falling apart because they have exhausted their values. Communism is collapsing. Fascism enlists no loyalties. Socialism is declining. Liberalism has made some gains, but now is too costly. Nationalism is being rejected. Democracy is now popular and countries throughout the world are experimenting with it.



*Second*, regional products of nations no longer find it a protective alliance since global appeal and world concerted actions give more protection and security. The United Nations has become the police force of the world. The small countries run to it for “big brother” help and protection. Alliances such as the Eastern Communistic Block, or NATO or the Pacific Rim Alliance before the United Nations are clouded and questionable in power.

*Third*, moral conduct and religious commitments are abandoned during transition periods such as family breakups, divorces increase, teenage suicides, crime increases, drugs for escapes, and church and religious services decline.

*Fourth*, an example of an era in transition, is the world experiences psychosomatic illnesses and psychological stress and strain. Cardio-vascular causes as well as cancer starts are often diagnosed from the stress in lifestyles. Loss of spouses, loss of jobs, uncertain security in insurance, health and retirement are serious causes of stress in one’s life.

*Fifth*, and final example of transitional effects is the rise in small wars, civil strife, terrorism, revolutions and government skirmishes where people, minorities and organizations try to seize a new position in the transition.

There are at least two factors that characterize the transition from the eighteenth century nation-states to the twenty-first century world community - it’s tempo is much faster and it’s happening on a global scale. The tempo is faster because planning is shorter since product life cycles are market short-lived. It’s global because national economies have spread in a worldwide direction. Companies must have world markets or they will not survive. Six thousand years of civilized life has taught us that human health and happiness depends on norms and standards adopted by a civilization. When new norms and standards uproot the old, a sense of insecurity and disorder emerges. Why, because the world has entered a new frame of reference.

#### THE EARLY DAWN OF THE MESSIANIC AGE IS BOTH “DARK” AND “LIGHT”

“And now is the time to awake out of sleep for now is our salvation nearer than we believed. The night is far spent, the day is at hand; let us, therefore cast off the works of darkness and let us put on the armor of light.” Romans 13:11-12

As we approach 2000 AD, and walk around the present civilization, strolling and browsing through the homes, neighborhoods, governments and countries, casting glances here and glances there, we can’t believe what we see. It’s never been like this in all of history. The world is divided into two spheres. The division is between the “haves” and the “have nots”, between traditions and innovations, between an old civilization and the start of a new civilization, between old values and the arrival of new values. The world has become perplexingly dichotomous. This

dichotomous state results from one age changing to another. The changes are incredible. So incredible that people are asking what's happening? They sense something is reflectingly wrong and yet, they sense something is excitingly right. They can't figure out which it is. Society seems to be in a temporary status. It's temporary nature is because it's in transition as an old world is moving out to make room for a new world coming in. The new world hasn't settled since changes continue. The changes are causing policy governments, stable institutions and value driven humans to move in a variety of directions, like a piece of bark in a swift stream of water being battered to one side as well as battered to the other side. The cross currents of change are rendering borders between countries to be blurred and adjacent cultures to be ambiguous. Life is going so fast that we see amazing paradoxes. A glance to parts of our global sphere, the darkest storm exists - pain, fear, hatred, anxieties, sickness, wars, greed and depravity. As we turn and glance to the other parts of the global sphere, the sun is shining brighter than ever before - cures, love, healing, agreements, confidence and progress. See Figure 9.5.

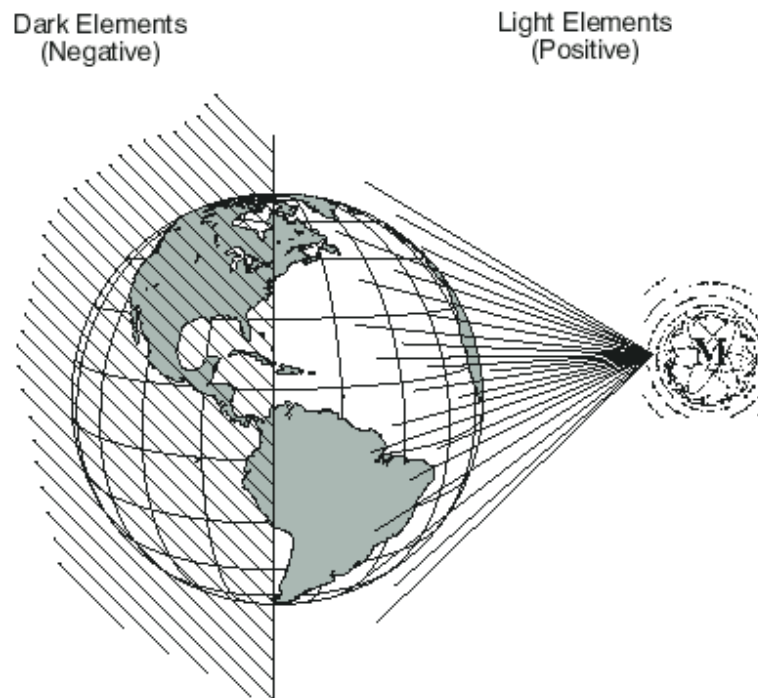


Figure 9.5

The Dawn of the Messianic Age is both Dark and Light

**Figure 9.5 The Dawn of the Messianic Age is both Dark and Light**

This is a strange phenomena - the darkest storm when the sun is rising and shining more brilliant than ever before. The dark half contains the negative factors of a world from past ages that still continues. A dark world that has given humans so much discouragement and discontent. The sunny half contains positive factors of a new world emerging never before experienced that gives humans encouragement and satisfaction. Looking at the dark sphere, there is poverty, destitution and emptiness. Looking at the sunny sphere, there is prosperity, affluency and comfort. Looking at the dark sphere, there is air and water pollution that threatens life. Looking at the sunny sphere, there is great scientific advancement in irrigation, land reclamation and land use which enhances life. Looking at the dark sphere, there is little education for character building and moral convictions. Looking at the sunny sphere there are gigantic educational systems, moral enhancement and knowledge producing centers. Looking at the dark sphere, there are wars that continue and crime which never ceases. Looking at the sunny sphere, major advances in human relations and how to get along with people. Looking at the dark sphere, there is drug addiction and food poisoning. Looking at the sunny sphere, there is great medical advances and complete eradication of age old diseases. Looking at the dark sphere, there are married priests, atheistic ministers and Jewish Buddhists. Looking at the sunny sphere, there are children at the age of 12 no longer childlike and psychiatrists prescribing God's love for a healthy mind. Looking at the dark sphere, there are cities crumbling, masses in revolt, children washed in sin and an economy that doesn't support the people. There is a sense of disgust and despair. In the dark sphere, the air smells bad and the water tastes vile. In the dark sphere, the world is rotten, corrupt and disintegrating. Looking at the sunny sphere, cities are expanding, the masses are participants, children are obedient and an economy that is supportive of the people. There is a sense of hope and gain. In the sunny sphere, life expectancy is increasing, manned trips to the moon are unparalleled and electronic technology which will make life easier and more comfortable. In the sunny sphere, the world is fresh, clean and integrating.

Most people do not see the positive sunny side of the world because they live and are comfortable in a negative society with a media of communications who thrive on negative reporting - disasters, strife, threats, starvation, violence, earthquakes, crimes, killing, wars and almost all the troubles that people have experienced. Between the lines of the media's negative reporting, one senses what a terrible world we live in. There are reports whose overtones are of a world coming to an end. There are messages to beware of the light at the end of the tunnel. It may be the headlight of an oncoming train. For example, the media is quick to report the world's economic systems are

not working for the good of all humankind. There are enormous injustices in them. Hardworking people, especially on fixed income see their money eaten away by inflation. World trends are identified to give evidence the economic systems are not working very well. Here is a sample list of some:

1. *Competition in markets* has become economic wars. This may well be future wars. Competition is no longer a game. It's a matter of survival. Bankrupting a competitor is now seen as successful competition for customers.
2. *Industry leadership shifting* to other parts of the world. U.S. led in 33 of the world industries in 1960 in such areas as watches, televisions, automobiles, stereo equipment, etc. Today, they lead in only 3 and may even lose these three.
3. *Interest rates lowest in 40 years.* The level is low enough to control inflation, but not high enough to give the needed income to people who rely on them. If interest income increases 3 percent and taxes increase 3 percent, you don't have any interest income.
4. *Business and corporation downsizing.* The dinosaur corporations of yesterday will become extinct. Small is better. But small means few jobs and less growth. It means change.
5. *Recession cycles with inflation.* In some countries, inflation has reached as high as 100 percent. Britain, Africa, Israel, Brazil and others have experienced cycles of inflation and recession. These cycles erode the monetary basis.
6. *Jobs for people not available.* Company downsizing, military reduction and increasing trade deficit gaps are all shrinking job availability. How to find a growing population jobs, has now reached seemingly unsolvable proportions.
7. *Budget deficits.* The second group of reports indicate deficit reduction budgets only affects the annual expenses of the government. There is still over four trillion dollars as a staggering debt and it's growing at the rate of \$13,000 per second. In other words if the national budget is balanced and deficit reduction is successful, the national debt still needs to be solved.
8. *Negative Statistics.* Over 1.2 billion people in the world lack safe water to drink. Forests are vanishing at the rate of 40 million acres per year. Approximately 140 plants and animals become extinct each year. 1994 was the warmest year on record confirming the greenhouse effect. Over 50,000 chemical components are in use. 35,000 have found their way polluting streams, resources, wells, rivers, lakes and oceans. Barely, 50 percent of all cities in the world have sewage abatement plants. The rest dump raw sewage in open waters.

9. *Discontented people are active.* Discontents are normal people with normal values and respected principles. They are discontent, however, over failed expectations of government, declining morality, ineffective organizations, and snubbing neighborhoods. They are discontent over many issues: gays in the military, women in the priesthood, homosexuals in government, censorship procedures, higher taxes, surrogate mothers, test-tube babies, pregnant teenagers, condom distribution in schools, abortion and the destruction of 10 million fetuses per year in the United States, terrorism which grips the world with fear, rioting in major cities, lawlessness or ignoring laws as part of a new lifestyle.

But why do these two spheres of a one world exist? Why is the world divided? Why are humans pulled, tugged and forced by these two spheres, often in opposite directions. We can understand the economic force between the haves and the have nots. The have nots want and pursue what the haves, have. The haves exert the effort to hang-on to what they have. These are powerful economic forces. But why do we see darkness while the sun is beginning to shine? The world seems to be oscillating back and forth from the negative to the positive, mystifying the trends, clouding the predispositions and perplexing expectations. Humankind is wondering where is civilization going? What's happening?

The watchmen of Isaiah 21:12 answers the dilemma, "the morning cometh but the night also". The answer is a new day has started but the night still prevails. Before morning arrives, the old darkness is still around. Like 6 o'clock in the morning, the sun is rising, but some of the dark night is still here. This is an amazing phenomena. A new world is being born while the old world is disappearing. Present day humankind is an in-between generation. Humans have one foot in the old world that's going out and one foot in the world that's coming in. Humankind is privileged to live through the most glorious revolution in all history. It's a revolution because the upheavals are disruptive and destructive. It cannot come quietly! Humankind is experiencing the travails and inauguration of the Biblical Civilization. "And she being with child, cried, travailing in birth and pained to be delivered." (Revelation 12:2)

Some people see the positive sunny side of the world. They are a silent group. They go on working and living with little media reporting. They see the great scientific advances, economic abundance and affluence, major medical progress, food production exceptionally high, environmental clean-up and improved human relations and rights. This positive group observes small starts, small roots, small sprouts and the seeds of a new age. They see a new world

coming in. They rest on the scripture of Acts 3:21, “times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.” This birth comes with great changes. The seeds of a new civilization, long awaited for, is emerging. Let’s examine briefly some of the positive changes already in place.

1. *Absolute monarchy has been shattered and in a decline.*

“The king who shall reign over you, will take your sons, daughters, fields and money.” I Samuel 8:10-18

A dramatic change has happened in absolute monarchy. The heads of government are no longer appointed or installed by legacy or divine rights of kings. Heads of government are voted in by the will of the people. Look at the period between 1850-1914 AD. There existed the greatest galaxy of kings the world has ever had. No other period of time in history has there been as many kings. To cite a few - King William of Prussia; King Victor Emanuel of Italy; King Louie 18 of France; King Metterich of Austria; King William of Orange of the Netherlands; Bourbon Kings of Spain; King Alexander; Czar of Russian, etc, etc. There was hardly a country that did not have a king as it’s governmental head. Today, there are a few reigning kings. Those who do, do not run the government. Instead prime ministers operate the government.

One can see this phenomena in history. People were ruled by monarchs whether they accepted them or not. Whether they wanted them or not. The governed did not participate in the selection of those who would govern. Nor could the governed get rid of them. The divine rights of kings specified the kings were placed on the throne since God ordained it. The people were ruled by leaders in which they had no choice. The monarchs were powerful and also protectorates of their churches. They perpetuated the church-state collaborations. In a monarchy, the ruler combined in his person, the supreme authority in legislation as well as in administration and adjudication. There may have been other specialized agencies, but they reported to the king.

But what has happened to the absolute monarch concept? Where are the kings now? Walk around civilization you will find few since most have disappeared. Why did they disappear? It started with the English revolution of 1688 when the monarchical principle was shaken to it’s foundation. In 1789, the monarchical principle was shattered by the French Revolution. The monarchical form of government lasted until World War I. Today, monarchies exist in western nations where it has allied itself with democracy and liberalism as in Britain, Belgium, Netherlands, Denmark, Norway and Sweden.

The complete answer as to what happened to absolute monarchy is found in Daniel 2:43-44, “and in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed and the kingdom shall not be left to other people but it shall break in pieces and consume all those kingdoms and it shall stand forever.” The kings are gone because the Messianic Age has arrived and a new form of authority and rulership has been instituted. This has resulted in the breakdown of all forms of traditional power. The supremacy of government over the rights and needs of the individual is moving out and the rights and needs of individuals is moving in. A reverse principle from history is operating - the supremacy of the individual over the state or government. This contrasts two forms of government: democracy in which the individual is supreme and communism in which the state is supreme. Communism is moving out. The reader is reminded that one of the endowments Adam lost in the garden was his individual dominion, where he was sovereign and supreme. Power is now shifting from government to the individual. Out of 233 governments in the world today, 82 are multiparty democratic states with rights of voting for it's citizenry. That is 32 percent. The prediction is up for more voting-in heads of government.

2. *Toiling with the sweat of one's brow is being lifted.*

“Because you listened to your wife and ate the fruit when I told you not, I have placed a curse upon the soil. All your life you will struggle to extract a living from it. It will grow thorns and thistles for you and you shall eat it's grasses. All your life you will sweat to master it until your dying day.” Genesis 3:17-19

The curse upon the soil was more of sending Adam out into a wild and unfinished earth where hard work would be required to cultivate in obtaining food. For 6000 years, humankind has lived in an agrarian society struggling to make a living. But what has happened to this curse? Does humankind struggle in tilling the soil? Do men sweat to extract a living from the earth? Does the earth continue to grow thorns and thistles? The nature of agrarian work has changed considerably over the years.

Before the mid-ninetieth century, the United States as well as the rest of the world had a 90-95 percent workforce that were farmers struggling to eat and earn a living. Only 5-10 percent were blue and white collar workers. Today, the reverse has happened. 2-3 percent are farmers and 95-97 percent are blue and white collar workers. Farmers are often paid not to produce so much as it will be wasted and cause other farmers into bankruptcy. Greater than 50 percent are white collar workers and this group is growing while blue collar workers are diminishing. The curse of

the sweat of the brow is being lifted. The principle cause is due largely from automation, mechanization and computerized mechanical electrical systems. Even the desert arid areas are fast growing. Arizona, Egypt and Israel are blossoming as a rose. Agricultural productivity of vegetables, fruits, grains, wheat, barley, animals, fowl and fish is now measured as the greatest in human history meeting the scriptural injunction of Psalm 67:6, “the earth shall yield her increase”. The industrial revolution which started in 1799 peaked with the blue collar workers between 1850 to 1900. But the blue collar workers are declining and continue to decline. In fact, in 1954, a significant event happened which no one hardly noticed. The number of blue collar workers in the United States equaled, in number, the rising white collar workers. These white collar workers are regarded mostly as knowledge workers. Agricultural workers are 2-3 percent and declining, blue collar workers are getting less and less eventually reaching 2-3 percent. White collar workers will become the major workforce. See Figure 9.6.

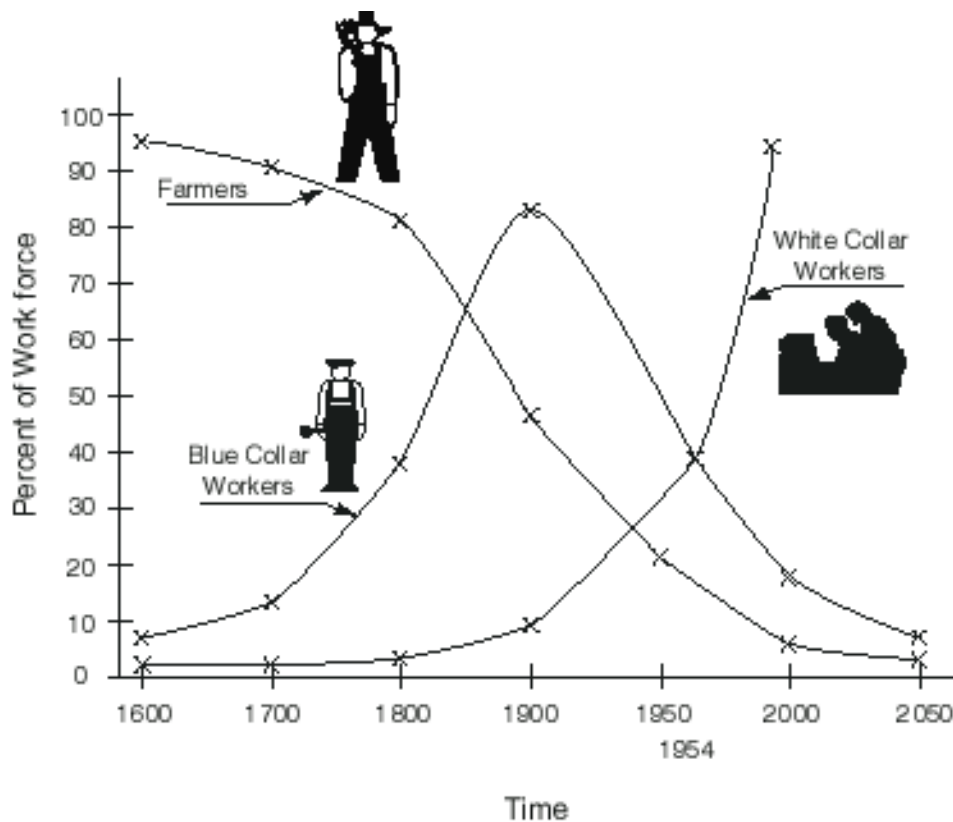


Figure 9.6

## The Rise and Decline of Workers Over the Years

**Figure 9.6 The Rise and Decline of Workers Over the Years**



This important historical observation, clearly describes fewer and fewer people earn their living or get their food by the sweat of their brows. Those who do are in extremely small percentage. They do it for shorter hours. The work week has undergone change in recent years. In ancient times, work hours on the farm could easily total 16 hours per day for seven days a week. This would total 112 hours per week. In 1830, when the guilds and factories started, the work week dropped to 14 hours per day, 6 days per week for a total of 84 hours. In 1950, the work week continued to drop to 8 hours per day for a total of 40 hours per week. In 1997, many companies have gone to flextime for a 35 hour work week. The four-day, 35 hour and three-day 20 hour work week is just around the corner. All these work-week formats exist while maintaining the increased productivity needed by an increased population. Social scientists are predicting a workless world is just around the corner with only 2 percent of the population doing the necessary work to provide food and consumer goods. The remaining 98 percent will be into educational and leisure activities. Workers are far more productive than ever before in the history of humans. The change came with the advance technology shortly after the mid-nineteenth century.

### 3. *Historic Curse of Slavery is being lifted.*

“When Noah awoke from his wine and found out what his youngest son had done to him, he said, cursed by Canaan! The lowest of slaves will he be to his brothers. He also said, blessed be the Lord, the God of Shem! May Canaan be the slave of Shem. May God extend the territory of Japheth. May Japheth live in the tents of Shem and may Canaan be his slave.” Genesis 9:24-27 (NIV)

Slavery has been the historic legacy of both white and black races. This is a pathetic calamity. The black race has had the brunt of this tragedy. If you trace the history of slavery through Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Persia, Greece, Rome, Arabia, Turkey, Spain, Portugal, France, Italy, England and America, you will find they all practiced slavery.

Slavery as a system of economic and social exploitation continued in the history of humankind, but peaked in 1865 when the United States went through the bloodiest civil war because of it. From that time the slavery curve both number and type has dropped rapidly and significantly as the Canaanites freed themselves from the curse. From 1865 on, the record shows significant changes. In England and the United States slavery, both legally and in practice, had been brought to an end. See Figure 9.7. Unfortunately, slavery continues in Africa, China and India, but the slave population is declining.

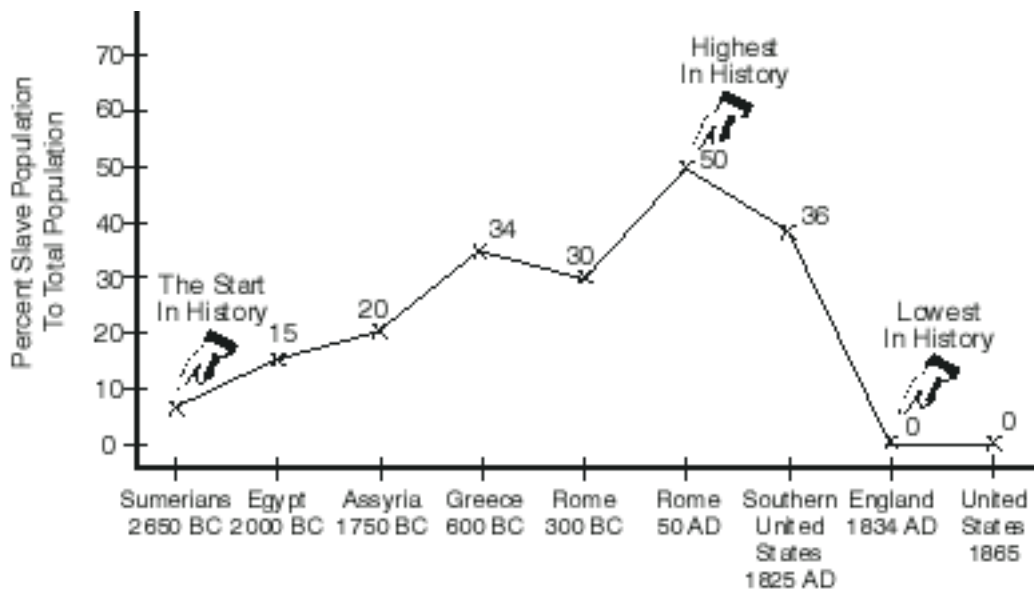


Figure 9.7

## Percent Slave Population to Total Population over the Years

### Figure 9.7 Percent Slave Population to Total Population over the Years

The Lincoln emancipation proclamation which was paid for dearly with a civil war, had a worldwide impact. The enslavement of one human spirit by another human spirit was condemned generally and to be avoided. It affected the practice of colonialism. 125 years ago, the world population was 2 1/2 billion. 85 percent were colonial subjects of empires of long standing. Today, there are only 150 million colonial subjects, less than one percent of the world's population and the figures continue to decline. Meanwhile, the empires have collapsed. These same colonial subjects demanded and received their freedom and independency from their host countries. Colonial subjects are a form of slavery. This has changed. 125 years ago, Africa had no independent countries. They were partitioned and occupied by the great empires. Today, there are over 55 independent countries and more independent countries are emerging. The historic curse of slavery is being lifted. The principle of white man supremacy is going out. The black man is making his mark in every field of endeavor - medicine, science, law, economics and politics. In athletics, the black man is unreachable.

#### 4. *Historic Curse of Painful Bearing of Children has Diminished.*

“Unto the woman, God said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children.” Genesis 3:16

It has been painful to perpetuate human life for both women and men, but especially women. There are various estimates as to the total number of people which have been born since Adam. The range of these estimates are from 20 to 60 billion. This is an immense number of people delivered in pain and sorrow as the scriptures declare.

What has happened to the painful bearing of children in the past 125 years? It has diminished with such medical progress and procedures as x-rays, pre-gestation analysis, pregnancy diagnosis, pre-training, natural child bearing, cesareans, delivery procedures and the elimination of child bearing diseases. Pre-natal care is now big business as a pregnant woman does things never before in the history of human reproduction ever did. Here are some of the pre-natal activities being followed to eliminate pain in child bearing:

- a. *Diet.* Control of nutrition is important for both mother and baby. Weight gain is controlled to certain limits.
- b. *Smoking.* Women who are moderate to heavy smokers give a baby a high risk of dying about the time of delivery.
- c. *Drinking.* Drinking in moderation does not appear to harm pregnant women or their babies. On the other hand, drinking in excess does since alcohol flows in the blood stream from the mother through the fetus. When pregnant women are drunk so are their babies. Alcohol can also cause increased weight.
- d. *Vaccination.* Pregnant women must be careful of vaccination injections. Most injections are not allowed. They have caused high risks for a fetus.
- e. *Medication and drugs.* Pregnant women during pregnancy must not take drugs. Drugs, medication or any injected serums is circulated in the blood stream and seriously effects the fetus to a point of affecting the life of the fetus.
- f. *Work and exercise.* Pregnant women must do work that is light and safe, stopping at a point in the pregnancy process. Travel should cease in the last 6 months.

These medical and pre-natal care processes have lowered the infancy mortality rate down to ten percent. As the pre-natal and sorrowful delivery process diminishes over the years, the population has grown exponentially. Some have considered it an explosion without any foreseeable leveling off.

5. *Historic Curse of Life Expectancy is Being Lifted.*

“But of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, thou shall not eat of it for in the day that thou eatest, thou shalt surely die.” Genesis 2:17

Life expectancy is the average amount of time that elapses between some specified point in the life cycle and the death for members of a particular population. One can compute actual age with life expectancy to determine the remaining years a person has. For example, a life expectancy of 75 years with a person who is actually 50 can expect to live on the average 25 more years. The curse of life expectancy over time is seen in Figure 9.8.

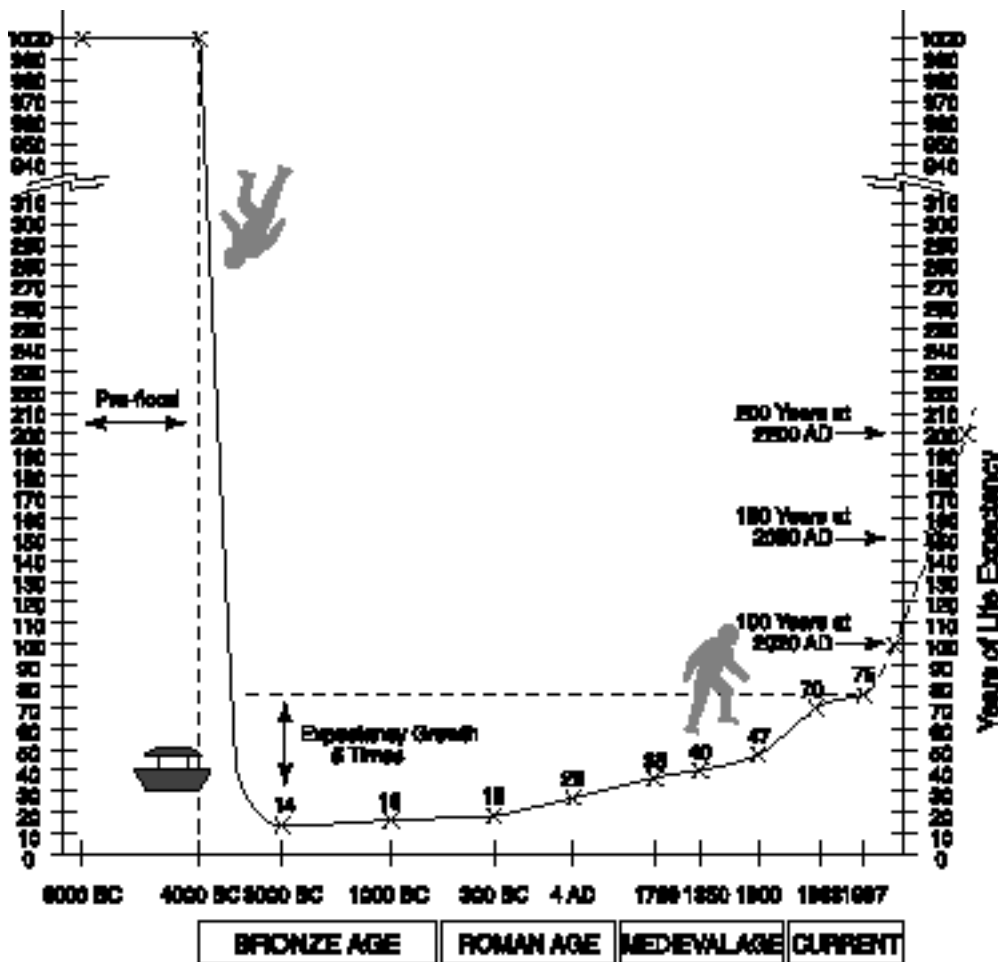


Figure 9.8 Life Expectancy Over Time

Life for Adam and Eve was conditional. It was dependent on their obedience and conformity to the one law of the Garden - not to touch nor eat of the forbidden fruit. They failed. They were to die in that day. But one day with God is as a thousand years. (II Peter 3:8) Both Adam and Eve died within the 1000 year day of God’s reckoning. Adam lived 930 years, but the dying process began immediately after their exile from the Garden. Many of the

patriarchs before the flood lived long lives, but always within the 1000 years day-period. Over the years, life expectancy has increased. In the Roman and Grecian empires, it was 18 years old. Infant mortality brought the life expectancy statistics to a low ebb. A great percentage of babies died in childbirth. Baby and childhood diseases would also take their toll. At the time of the presidency of George Washington in 1789, life expectancy at birth for Americans was 34.5 years for males and 36.5 years for females. In 1850, the expectancy rate rose to 40 in the United States. By 1900, life expectancy reached 47 years. It was the advances in medical and reduction of infant mortality that raised it considerably. According to United Nations estimates, the people of Africa and parts of Asia have an expectation of life some 30 years below that of North Americans. Life expectancy rates increase considerably in notable western nations.

Life expectancy today is approximately 75 and continues to grow. Several reasons for this. Infant mortality has dropped. Medical advances and procedures for treatment and care of illness and poor health is better than ever before. Procedures to reverse human aging has had a significant start. Human aging occurs when body cells and telomeres age. There are as much as 100 trillion cells in the human body. It's the "clocks" within these cells that determine life span. Breakthroughs are being made on how aging starts and cascades through the body. Dr. Michael Fossel in his book<sup>3</sup> "Reversing Human Aging" explains the factors of aging and the therapies that could stop and even reverse the aging process. See Figure 9.9.

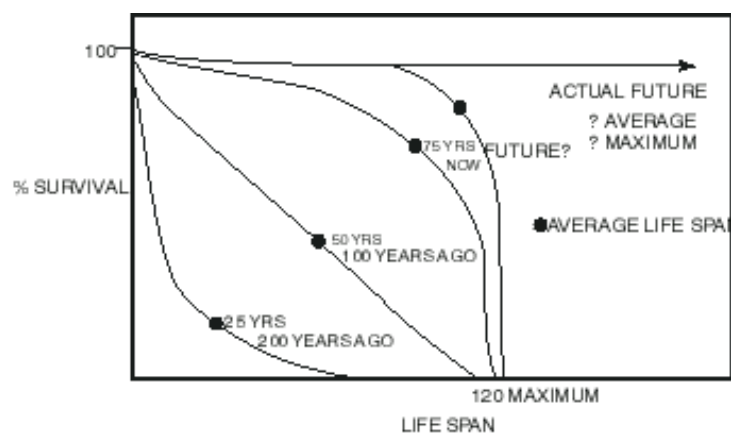


Figure 9.9

Therapies that could alter life plan (Reproduced here by permission from Fossel's book)

**Figure 9.9 Therapies that could alter life plan (Reproduced here by permission from Fossel's book)**

Here are some longevity therapies that are being used today to extend the life span of humans: maintenance of good health all around; avoidance of diseases and breakdown of body parts; use of anti-oxidant vitamin supplements; consumption of a daily high fiber and low fat diet rich in fruits and vegetables; daily exercise with an appropriate rate; avoidance of stressful or strainful activities that produce psychosomatic illnesses; stoppage of smoking and drug introduction into the human body; weight control with leanness a priority; low cholesterol and blood pressure levels. Fossil adds telomere therapy with the list as a rising star. The forecast is that human life expectancies can be extended with the practice of these therapies. These therapies are being practiced throughout the world as the median age of the world population is rising. The median age is the age at which half of all people are older and half are younger. A comparison of the median age in 1997 and that expected in 2020 is seen in Figure 9.10.

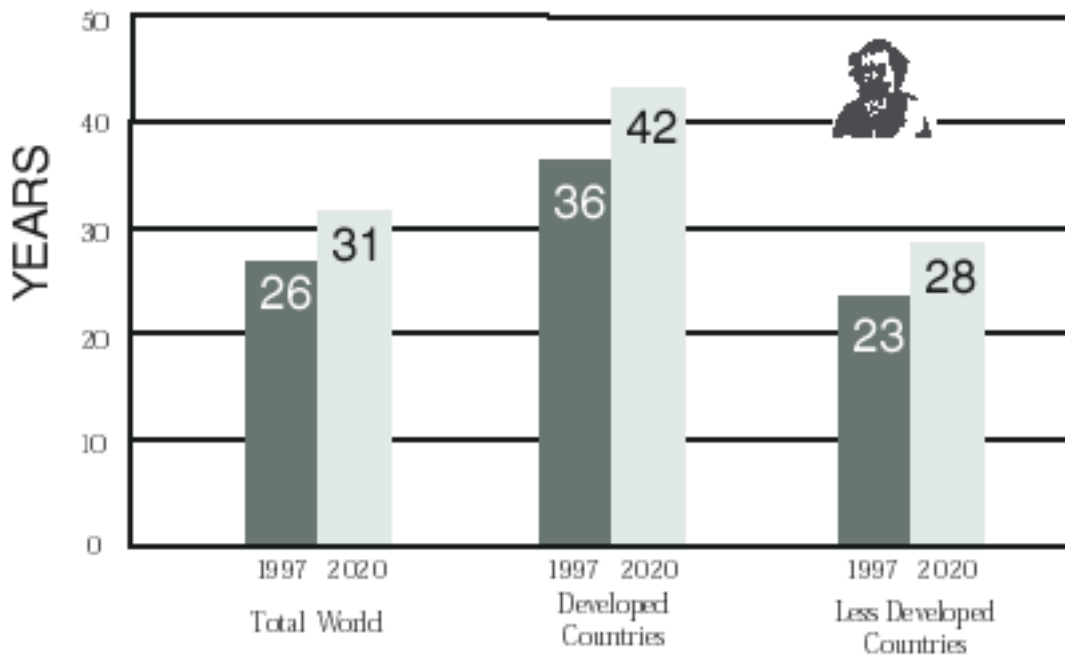


Figure 9.10

The median age of the world is rising. (Source: Census Bureau)

**Figure 9.10 The Median Age of the World is rising  
(Source: Census Bureau)**

6. *The Traditional Social Class Levels are being reduced.*

“To Eve, God said, Unto the women, thy desire shall be to thy husband and he shall rule over thee.” Genesis 3:16 In other translations there are variations - “he will dominate you” and “he shall be your master”.

Apparently, before the fall, Eve had an equality with Adam. The curse put her husband as her master. Through the centuries women have been one level above slavery and indentureness, but also one level below man's equality. Interesting to note how the Old Testament seldom mentions or recognizes women in formal records. A careful examination of history will find little to say about women beyond the fact they were there. The record will say they have been the mothers of the human race. Women were strictly subordinate to men, to their fathers before they were married - afterwards to their husbands. In many cases it was going from a tyrannical father to a tyrannical husband without any hope of relief. Negative attitudes about women have been developed over the years. Only lately have they been examined. Here are a sample few of them:

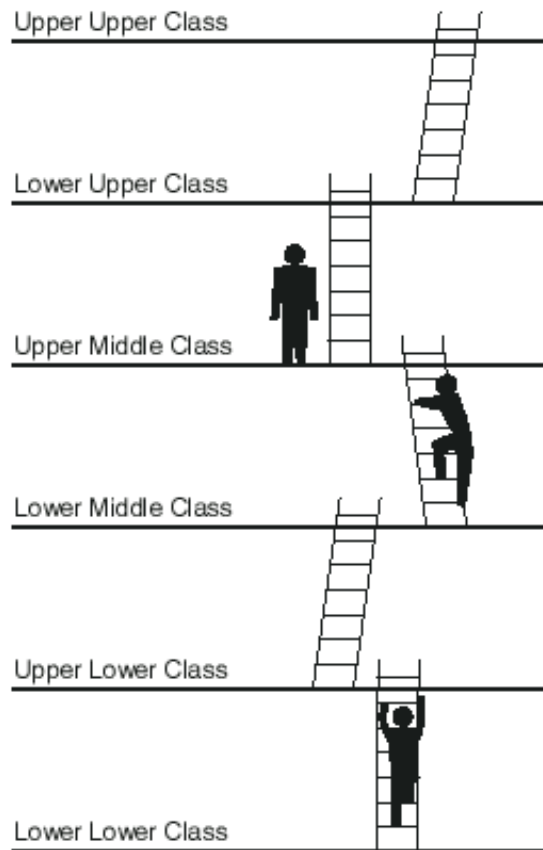
- a. Women's duty is to devote and serve her life to a man.
- b. Women exist solely for the propagation of the human race.
- c. Women are said to be the root of all troubles.
- d. Women complain more than men.
- e. Women's talk is mostly idle chatter.
- f. Women crave reassurances more than men.

These attitudes have been historic! But what is happening today with these attitudes? Are they changing? Are new attitudes emerging relative to women? Yes. There is a strong movement toward greater equality. The Equal Rights Amendment, the 27th Amendment to the United States Constitution has not been ratified, but is being pursued by women's rights groups. The time has come for God to lift the curse that has burdened women over thousands of years. there is an on-going revolution to bring equality to women. Male domination over women is going out. This is part of an overall movement to give all individuals a chance to stand before God as equals. It matters not if they are male or female, black or white, Greek or Italian.

Women have been making their equality mark for some time. The number of women in uniform in the military has increased from 45,000 in 1972 to over 200,000 in 1990. They now comprise 8-10 percent of the military personnel. The United States has more women in the military than any other country in the world. The number of women in the workforce has increased radically. In 1890, 17 percent of the workforce was women. In 1940, it was 27 percent. In 1987, women in the workforce rose to 56 percent and continues to rise. Active efforts and organized groups are creating movements to bring Biblical equality to women and men. These groups insist the Bible upholds

the equality of women and men. One outstanding scripture that is frequently quoted is Galations 3:27-28. “For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male or female, for you are all one in Christ.”

The women’s suffrage movement is only part of a general breakdown of social classes among humans. Aristocracy, bluebloods, colonials, peons, upper classes and other forms of inequality are going out. Traditionally, there have been six levels of social classes: the upper upper class; the lower upper class; the upper middle class; the lower middle class; the upper lower class and the lower lower class. See Figure 9.11.




---

Figure 9.11  
Six Levels of Social Classes

**Figure 9.11 Six Levels of Social Classes**



With the liberation of the human spirit comes the breakdown of the traditional social classes. The civil rights movement is a movement toward equality of all people worldwide which has contributed a great deal toward the collapse of the social classes in the United States. Laws are being enacted to counteract the attitudes of inequality. The caste system is going out and equality for all is coming in. The composition of the workforce is also changing in America. Within the next two decades 60 percent of the workforce will consist of American minorities. They will no longer be minorities. Caucasians will become the minorities in America. The majority will consist of African Americans, Asians and Hispanics.

7. *The Historic Superstition and ignorance of people is being changed.*

“Ye man of Athens, I perceive that in all things you are superstitious.” Acts 17:22

Superstition is a belief, attitude or irrational act based on ignorance of the unknown or the mysterious. There will be many superstitions when there are many unknowns and fewer superstitions when these unknowns are made knowable. At one early time, humankind did not know what held up the earth. Gravity was unknown. Someone said in error, “four big pillars holds the earth up.” Another asked, “what holds up the pillars?” To this the answer was given, “a big elephant”. But another asked, “who holds up the elephant?” To this, the answer was “a big turtle”. When there is no truth or understanding, error and superstition creeps in.

One can cite hundreds of these superstitious ideas. All originating as a view of the mysterious and the unknown. These superstitions have been attributed to the uncivilized and the uneducated. This is largely true because educated people have learned explanations that describe the mysterious and the unknown. But some superstitions still linger on. They are held by people. Here is a list of traditional superstitions. Some are gone, but some are still held by people today.

- a. If a person dreams of eating white grapes, it means it will rain the next day.
- b. If you carry a rabbit’s foot, it will bring you good luck.
- c. If a crow caws strongly, it means someone has died.
- d. If you spit on a piece of money, you will be lucky to receive more.
- e. If you sneeze and no one says “God bless you”, Satan awaits to seize your soul. When someone says “God bless you” after sneezing, the soul returns to the body.
- f. If a baby’s fingernails are trimmed before it is one year old, it will become a thief.

- g. If you knock on wood when a good fortune has occurred, you knocking will continue your good fortune.
- h. If you wear horn amulets, you will be protected from the evil eye.
- i. If you walk under a ladder, something bad will happen to you.
- j. If you get out of bed on the left side expect misfortune and bad luck. Forces of evil are on the left and forces of good are on the right.
- k. If a black cat crosses your path, you're in trouble.
- l. If you wear leather around the wrist, it will cure arthritis.
- m. If your baby is bald-headed at birth, it will be smart.
- n. If the number 13 is used, misfortune will occur. There was a time in France when no homes had the number 13. In New York, skyscrapers omitted numbering the 13th floor. Most airlines skip seat 13. Sailors refuse to leave port on the 13th of the month. Of course, if it's Friday the 13th, superstitious people do nothing. Traditionally, the U.S. Navy never launches a ship on Friday the 13th.

How did this unlucky number 13 get started? It was connected with Christ's last supper. Twelve Apostles plus one Christ makes 13. This was the total number of people at the last supper. The supper ended in misfortune, disaster, and death for the individuals who participated in the supper proceedings. Superstitiously speaking, the number 13 should be avoided.

These superstitious notions, based on error and ignorance were at their peak from 1800-1900. What has happened to many or most of them? They've been rejected or discarded. Most people do not believe in these superstitious notions. But why? The answer is the period of enlightenment and truth that started at the same time in the nineteenth century. Educational processes and systems have been set up to make many unknown mysteries known. In 1850, less than 50 percent in the United States were enrolled in public school education. 50 percent were not enrolled. This means 50 percent were illiterate. Today, 98 percent in the United States are enrolled in public schools with only a 2 percent illiteracy rate. The illiteracy rate dropped from 50 percent to 2 percent. In 1850, 2 percent in the United States were enrolled in college education with 98 percent entering the workforce directly. Today, 75 percent go on to college and only 25 percent enter the workforce directly. The elimination of education for the select few for compulsory education for all has shaken and removed the superstitious notions and age old practices of ignorance that has gripped humankind for 6000 years. Systems of education are worldwide and are dispersing

ignorance, illiteracy and worn out values. The spirit of truth, knowledge and enlightenment is doing this. See Figure 9.12.

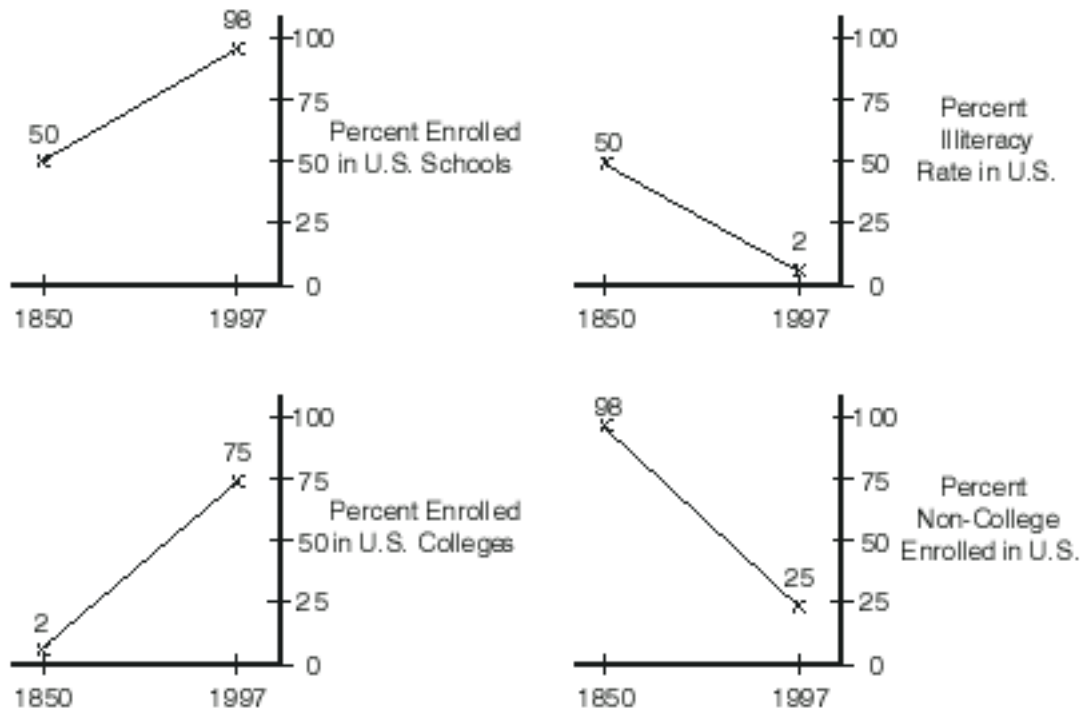


Figure 9.12

## Illiteracy Drop and College Rise in United States

### Figure 9.12 Illiteracy Drop and College Rise in United States

American educators still have eight educational goals to be accomplished for the year 2000 AD. That's only a few years away. Some states have made significant progress toward these goals. Other states have a long way to go. The need to escalate activities and efforts toward these goals are encouraged by the National Education Goals Panel. This is a bipartisan panel set up to track progress in meeting the "Goals 2000" developed in 1989. Here is a listing of the eight goals to be accomplished:

1. All U.S. children will start school ready to learn.
2. The high school graduation rate will be 90 percent or higher.
3. Students will leave grades 4, 8 and 12 having shown competency over challenging subject matter.
4. U.S. students will be the first in the world in math and science.

5. Every American adult will be literate.
6. Schools will be free of drugs, guns and violence.
7. Schools will promote partnerships with parents.
8. Teachers will be able to access professional development.

The latest report, at this writing, gives many states increased percentages of adults who have high school diplomas or equivalents, increased percentages of proficiency in math and science, and increased percentages of students enrolled and graduated from post-secondary education.

8. *The Historic Condition of Poverty is Being Lifted.*

“You always have the poor with you.” Matthew 26:11

Poverty is the most characteristic condition of humankind from time immemorial. The world has always had the poor in great abundance. So poor that people spend most of their living hours in search for food. Human history can be thought of as the history of poverty and the efforts to eliminate it. This is reflected in such titles as slaves, serfs, peons and servants. More recently titles have changed. They are the unemployed, welfare recipients, minority, culturally disadvantaged and minimum wage earners. Has the poverty condition changed? Has humankind broken the poverty tentacles? Interesting to note, if one plots a curve of poverty down through the centuries, it would be flat with no change until 1764. This is the beginning of the Industrial Revolution. After that date the curve drops rapidly and has been dropping ever since. A new word has entered the English language. The word is affluency. Application of this word has been the affluent society, the economy of abundance, the rich society and even the over-indulgent society. This affluency has been affected attitudes regarding the role of work and the degree of commitment to it. See Figure 9.13.

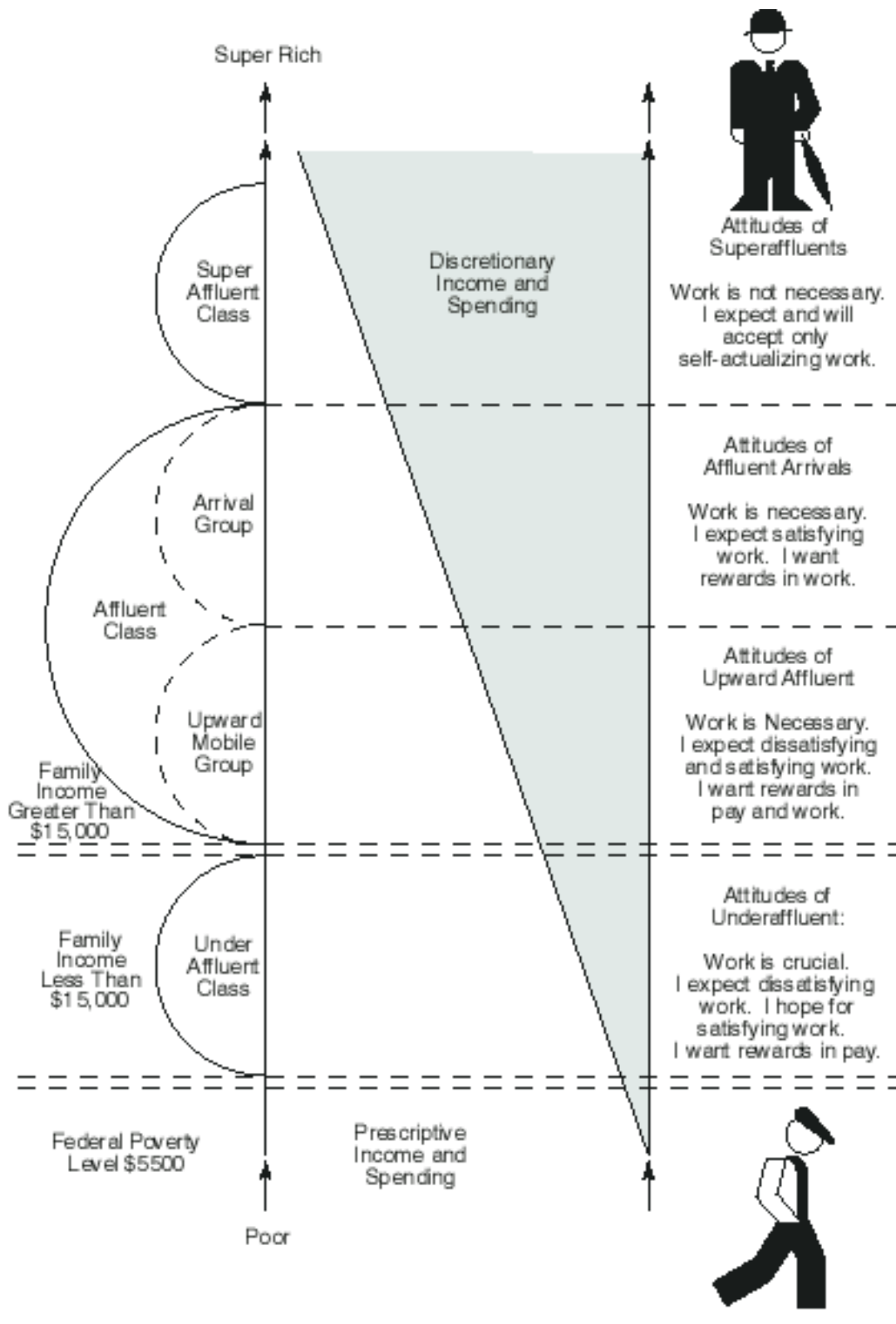


Figure 9.13

### Attitude Changes From Rising Affluency

Figure 9.13 Attitude changes from Rising Affluency

In the United States, Americans eat so much that being overweight is a national problem. Starvation in the states is no longer a threat. More people today, own, use or consume things more than ever thought possible before in history. In agriculture, there are more surpluses than shortages. In electronics, TV, radio and telephone, it's hard to find someone who can't afford these products. In transportation, autos, planes, trains, buses; everyone seems able to afford using them. In property, land, homes, apartments, furniture; it seems they are within everyone's financial reach. The average man of the mid-nineteenth century hardly had any of these things. Of course, the rest of the world compared to the United States does not have this affluency, but they too are making progress. Recently, the United Nations released the following figures: 700 million people on planet earth earn \$50 dollars per year. They are the starving. Two and half million earn enough to feed themselves, but not much more. The rest of the world's population, two and one-half billion feed themselves, travel and enjoy electronic entertainment. The world is truly divided by the "haves" and the "have nots". But the "have nots" are catching up. Most of the people in the United States that politicians call rich are not rich and most of the people they call poor are not poor. They are people in a particular income bracket at a particular time in their lives. Most will have a different income bracket as time goes on. Besides, income earnings peak at the ages of 40 or 50, then it drops. Those who are fortunate to earn millions might be thought of as rich until you note they hardly receive more than 10 percent of their earnings. The government takes most of it. Relative to those of the past, Americans can be seen as rich. But it's only because the poor are richer than their counterparts of the past. When television made its debut in 1939, it was a small black and white device that only the rich could afford. The technology at the time was simple, crude and small. Today, people on welfare have TVs with complicated features, amazing color and stereophonic sound. Welfare recipients of today have better TVs than the rich of the past. A comparison of the prices of common appliances for the past 50 years in today's dollars reveals the good old days were not that cheap. The productivity and marketability of these appliances on a globular scale has been the basic reason for the low prices in the purchase of these appliances as compared to the past. See Figure 9.14.

### **Figure 9.14 Comparing Purchasing Appliances in 1947 with 1997**

It's rather strange with all this affluence, the average man does not think of himself as affluent because he still hasn't caught up to his insatiable wants. His complaint is not that he hasn't got anything, but rather that he wants more. Humans forget that all the affluence and economic abundance enjoyed today was not always with societies in the past. Starvation and poverty was the historic legacy. Humans lose a sense of historic relevance. Humans forget easily. Take for example, one of the greatest inventions of the twenty-first century. It could be argued to be the greatest invention of all time, but only recently available. Most people are not aware of it. They take it for granted. They assume it has always been with humankind. They even complain about it. It's the supermarket! Most do not think of it as an invention, because there is no identifiable inventor. The supermarket has been developed as a 21st century management process. The supermarket has products from all over the world - oranges from Israel, strawberries from Mexico, beef from Argentina, spices from India, shoes from Hungary, radios and TVs from Japan, cod from New Foundland, water from Canada, wine from France, clothes from Italy and automobiles from Korea. The average man of today is able to buy these things with his limited paycheck. He goes into the supermarket, picks up a cart and goes from aisle to aisle, selecting and choosing an astounding variety from all over the world. There has never been a time in human history that so many people could do this. Even the kings, queens and the aristocrats of old could not choose what they average man of today can. The supermarket has come into existence only recently, but humans behave as if it has always been around. A pictorial look of a modern day supermarket as compared to the general store of yesterday is seen in Figure 9.15

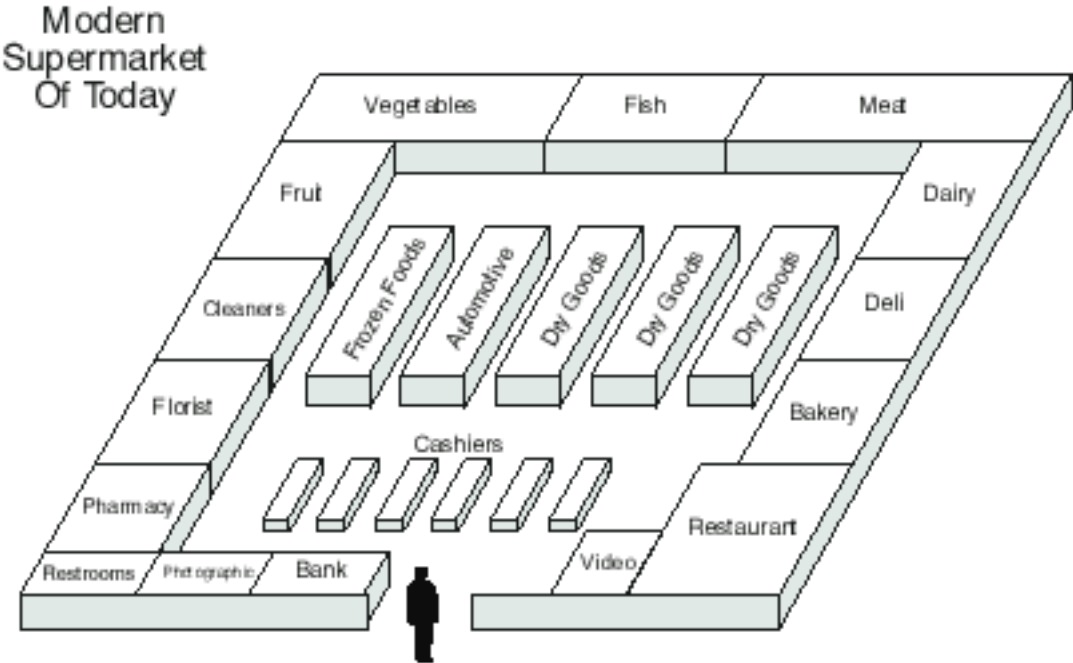


Figure 9.15  
Comparing Modern Supermarket with Historic General Store

Figure 9.15 Comparing Modern Supermarket with Historic General Store



9. *Increased knowledge, technology and computers.*

“But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words and seal the book, even to the time of the end. Many shall run to and fro and knowledge shall be increased.” Daniel 12:4

General knowledge is doubling every 22 years. Technical knowledge is doubling every seven years. The halfway mark of knowledge is a point located less than 10 years ago. The number of books in our lending libraries doubles every 14 years. It's not uncommon for a library to have 100,000 volumes and 5000 newspapers and periodicals. Microsoft's encyclopedia programs have surpassed all printed encyclopedias in sales. This computerized approach will revolutionize the publishing industry by delivering masses of information to any part in the world. The escalation is impressive. The doubling of knowledge is the most characteristic feature of the time of the end of one civilization and the time of the beginning of another. If we compare the average man of today with the average man of 50 years ago, the contrast is sharp and it's meaning significant. The amount of information an individual uses in a lifetime is equivalent to 20 billion bits of data. With computer processing, that amount of data can be sent around the world in seven seconds. The Bible has 850,000 words in it's contents. Computer memory is capable of storing Biblical information six times in one second and bringing it back again word for word any place at any command in 200 billionth of a second with no errors. This is amazing. The thoughts of a lifetime can be shot around the globe in seven seconds. A high school student taking a science course for 6 months absorbs more information in the 6 months than absorbed by the average person living in a lifetime in George Washington's day. Science has learned more in the past 125 years on how nature works than was learned in the previous 6000 years. Sixty years ago science could identify a few galaxies in the universe. Today, 100 billion galaxies are identified. The view from satellites is profound.

The Bible has predicted this increase in knowledge. (Daniel 12:4) There is progress in life's activities when there is progress in human and environmental knowledge. The history of humankind is a history of knowledge and how it's been utilized. This progress has resulted in the development and progress of civilization. Since the past 6000 years, knowledge gain has been slow and minuscule. Civilizations have been belated and gradual. However, the past 100 years has seen knowledge rise swiftly and prodigiously which surprisingly results in a new civilization already here. At least in it's early stages. Today, devices for generating, storing and retrieving accumulated knowledge of the human race, such as computers are themselves subject to progressive efforts to improve them. The

efforts of adding new knowledge with existing knowledge is the key to understanding and promoting the progress that has been experienced over the years. When science thinks in terms of “knowledge explosion”, they are saying the addition of new knowledge on existing knowledge is accomplished speedily and enormously. This knowledge explosion is both of the general kind and the specific kind. Facts about the solar system of the sun rising in the morning and setting in the evening and does this every day is general knowledge. The expansion of the earth’s mantle of one inch per 100 years is specific knowledge. Both categories have grown tremendously.

The insatiable desire for greater knowledge has been built into the human design by God. Animals and the lower forms seem to be content with the limited knowledge they have instinctly acquired. But humans can be happy or unhappy for either what they know or what they do not know. Ignorance is not bliss. We are happier when we use the innate capacity within. In the past 100 years, the human potential has been utilized more than ever before in history. Knowledge and information is on it’s way up as seen in Figure 9.16.

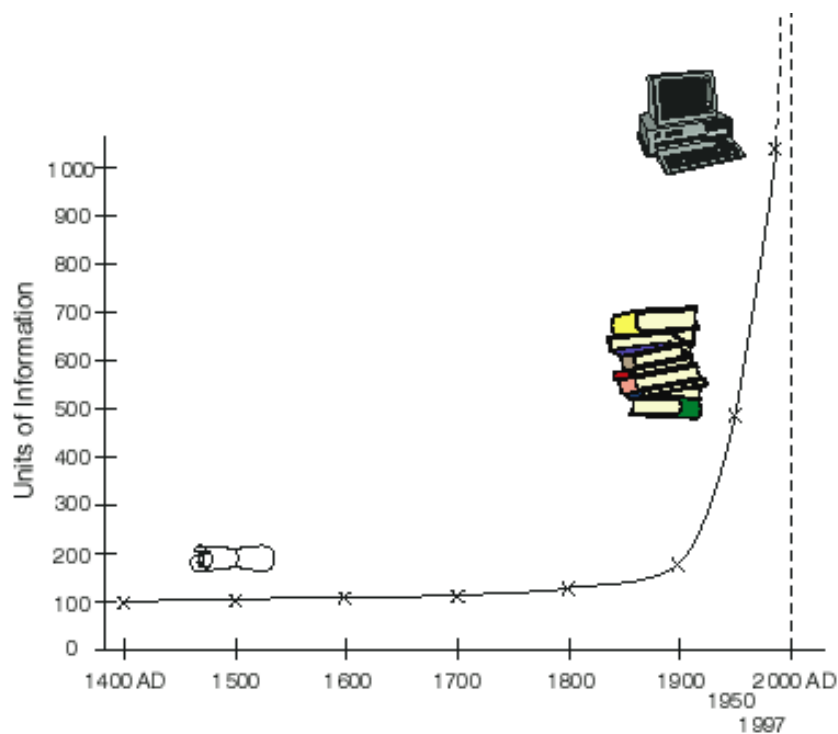


Figure 9.16

Curve of Knowledge With Increased Information

**Figure 9.16 Curve of Knowledge with Increased Information**

10. *Ecology and Environment is being protected.*

“Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees.” Revelation 7:3

The world is waking up to the pollution and ecological disruptions being carried out on a daily basis. Countries throughout the globe are committed to stop and halt the ignorant rape of nature. At no time in history has there been a concerted force for pollution control. Laws are being enacted to stop wasting and stop polluting the water, land and air. Trees, forests and wildlife are being protected. Educational degrees are being awarded for Ecological Management for better control and development of ecosystems. The earth is yielding her increase. In 1940, crop productivity per acre was 63. In 1977, it doubled to 126. In 1996, it doubled to 252. Ezekial 34:27 and Isaiah speaks of the desert and the wilderness becoming like Eden, the garden of the Lord. Animal sanctuaries and zoos are growing in leaps and bounds. In 1948, there were 175 zoos in the world. In 1978, 700 zoos were set up. Today, there are over 1000 zoos and sanctuaries throughout the world. These zoos and sanctuaries protect the animal species and permit them to multiply. Practically all the big cities have zoos. Most of Africa is being converted to an animal sanctuary.

11. *Human and Economic Rights a Growing Concern.*

“They may have the right to the tree of life.” Revelation 22:14

A world’s gathering of 5000 delegates representing 160 nations, met in Vienna in the spring of 1993. Purpose was to define human rights standards, establish how to enforce these standards and to give the United Nations the global leadership to transcend each country and bring about a global unified treatment of human beings. Delegates affirmed the universality of human rights and the legitimate role of the international community in protecting these rights worldwide. The United Nations will be the centerpiece government for global unity. The United Nations is establishing *standards* and *prohibitions* for the following: torture in prison; incarceration without trial; arbitrary detention; death sentences for non-violent crimes; ethnic cleansing and racism; rape of women; anti-Semitism; equality of employment for women; abuses of women by spouses; and politically motivated disappearances. Human rights is a globular movement that intends to protect humans from government and political abuses. It transcends the national borders.

In the same conference in Vienna a new set of rights was introduced. A set of rights never before demanded, but the due time has arrived for it’s benefits. This new set of demands made by the global citizen is economic rights.

This is the right of a global citizen to have a job, have a home, have health care, have a family, and have care in retirement.

The struggle for “rights” is, fundamentally, a struggle for the “rights to choose”. This issue emerged, historically, in the Garden of Eden. The first pair were given the “rights” to do many things even the “right to die”. When they chose to non-conform with existing laws, they chose death. But they were an innocent couple not knowing what death was all about. Historically, the rights movement centered on genders, that is, bringing about the equality between men and women. The rights movement, later, moved into the political arena such as women voting. Of recent, the movement has taken up the cause of human rights regardless of countries and government. Economic rights has just started such as the right for a job. Of very recent, the right to die has now come to the forefront with the terminally ill. The American Supreme Court has acknowledged that competent patients do have the right to stop or continue medical treatment. But the issue is not stopping the treatment, but the choice of ingesting medication to hasten the death process. This in essence, means suicide assistance. As one looks at all the rights available to humans, the right to die is the last and most crucial right.

The United Nations has the unprecedented opportunity to move into a leadership role for defending the fragile cause of human rights. The UN organization has already documented data citing half the world’s population experience some human rights abuse. The interdependence of human rights with cultural, social and economic rights are interwoven together. The rights of women on a global scale are endorsed by over 160 nations. The momentum of global rights is beginning to accelerate. A globular view is replacing a national or regional view of it’s citizenry.

In summary, humankind is living at the juncture of two civilizations: one going out and one coming in. People don’t see the world coming in because they are focusing on the crumbling world going out. The transition is producing features of night as well as features of morning, simultaneously. There is overlapping. The overlapping nature of these two civilizations is very similar to the overlapping nature of the Judaic Age and the Christianity period. The upheavals and changes of today are the result of the redirection of the human race. There’s a new world emerging in our lives and blind men everywhere are trying to suppress it. But there’s also an old world moving out and blind men everywhere are trying to continue it. The new world is a new vibration, a new uncovering, a new movement. The old order is changing, yielding a place for the new. The greatest thing that can ever happen to the

human race is happening today. Getting rid of the old and ushering in the new. Here are some changes in the final scenes of the old world as the new world moves in:

- a. Elimination of the ruling aristocracy and oppressiveness of the “blue bloods” of mankind.
- b. Elimination of the divine rights of kings, for democratically selected leaders and rulers.
- c. Elimination of education for the rich few for compulsory education for all.
- d. Elimination of legal slavery for recognition of individual civil rights.
- e. Elimination of colonialism and the domination of empires.
- f. Elimination of age old diseases such as diphtheria, typhoid, polio, etc.
- g. Elimination of man’s hard toil, work week reduced from 72 hours to 40 hours.
- h. Elimination of an age old curse that the black man shall be servants to his brethren.
- i. Elimination of minority oppression with liberation and protection from governments.
- j. Elimination of the notion that wars solve problems; war has become obsolete.
- k. Elimination of Israel’s period of disfavor and the emergence of her nationalism.
- l. Introduction of environmental cleanup. The earth needs to be made perfect.
- m. Introduction of communications to talk to anyone on earth in a matter of minutes.
- n. Introduction of gigantic educational systems to give people knowledge and understanding.
- o. Introduction of travel by jet and super highways to distribute living and avoid crowding.
- p. Introduction of automation for food production and feeding to a global society.
- q. Introduction of Biblical understanding for a one religion and a one God.
- r. Introduction of labor saving devices to reduce hard work and smaller work week.
- s. Introduction of welfare and unemployment programs to help the weak get on their feet.
- t. Introduction of principles of equality among genders, races and cultures.
- u. Introduction of behavioral relationships to promote love as life’s fundamental law of living.

Great things are happening at the junction of an old civilization that’s passing away with a new civilization coming in. It is a world transforming vitality. It’s God’s plan that gives us the logic of how the jigsaw puzzle pieces are put together to a meaningful overall look as to what is happening today.

## MESSIANISM: THE INTEGRATOR OF JUDAISM AND CHRISTIANISM

“Have we not all one father? Hath not one God created us? Why do we deal treacherously every man against his brother.” Malachi 2:10

Christendom has come to mean, generally, different views and perceptions from different people or organizations on their view of Christianity. Certainly, the present day views and practices of Christianity is not the same as it was in the early period of it's inception. Similarly, Judaism generally, has changed over the years. The three major movements of Orthodox, Reform and Liberal can be broken down into hundreds of splinter groups. Even present day Judaic adherents have different views and practices then it's historic antecedents. Both these major systems of religious thought derive their concepts and vitality from the Bible. One from the Old Testament and the other from the New Testament. Messianic prophecies connect the two. The Old Testament is referred to about 900 times in the New Testament including about 300 different quotations. Add to this, there have been major additions of ideas, doctrines and practices over the years to the two systems of understanding. These additions complicate the integrative ability of the Old to unify with the New. The additions often conflict the Old with the New which has resulted in neglect of the Bible as the integrator of Judaism and Christianity. See Figure 9.17.



Figure 9.17

The Messiah Integrates Judaism and Christianity

**Figure 9.17 The Messiah Integrates Judaism and Christianity**

Messianic expectations are a Biblical theme that does integrate both Judaism and Christianity. Not in its historic roots, but in its prophetic expectations. Both systems of thought look ahead for a Messianic arrival to correct the problems of the world and institute a take over for a Messianic Reign on planet earth. The differences between the two systems of thought lie on who is the Messiah, when will he arrive and how the take over will happen. It is a major thesis of this book that the Bible is a unified book from Genesis to Revelation. Biblical themes woven through the Old and New are integrators. Judaism and Christianity are stages in the integration process that eventually leads to the Messianic Reign. The wholeness of the Bible is not just setting the Old Testament adjacent to the New Testament. Nor is it binding 66 books side by side from beginning to end into one book. It is rather an integration of themes, topics, events, axioms, principles, results, arguments, ideas and progression. The New Testament is built upon the Old Testament and required the Old for its existence. The Old Testament requires the New for its reach out, extension and growth. Both are needed. They are complimentary. Both describe states that leads eventually to a period of maturity which is termed Messianism. The Old Testament reveals God and his purposes. The New Testament substantiates it and describes how these purposes will be achieved. The Old Testament describes the seeds of the Biblical Civilization and how these seed took root. The New Testament interconnects these early beginnings and gives the impetus for world growth and longevity.

There are several reasons in which Messianic expectations, as a theme, is the integrator of Judaism and Christianity. *First*, it is the hope of both systems of thought that links the various states as seen in the following figure 9.18. The hope for a Messiah was born in the hearts of Adam and Eve in God's first prophecy about the "seed of the women that will bruise the serpents head". Each stage has a start as well as an end. The Messianic hope gives both links and continuity between stages. When one link snaps the whole chain collapses. In a view of history, none of the links have snapped thus far.

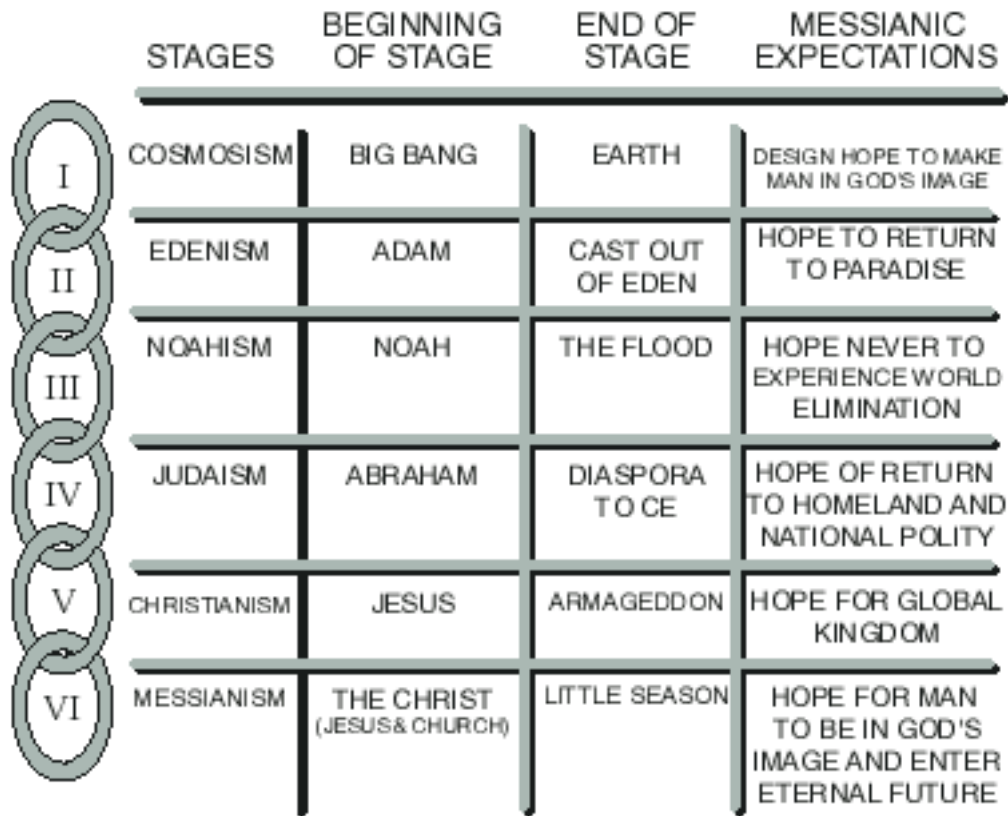


Figure 9.18

## Messianic Expectations Link the Stages

### Figure 9.18 Messianic Expectations Link the Stages

*Second*, linking and continuity is not enough. There must be a progressive rise from early states to later stages with newness, adjustments and change. This is by adding or removing something in the stage to give it a progress push. Adam was alone in the garden. Eve was a major addition in the Edenic Stage. In Noah's time, deviant humans and Nephilism had to be removed in order for the original design of humans could survive. In the Judaic Stage, Israel's growth and prosperity through David and Solomon was adjusted by allowing the Gentile empires to conquer and even destroy Israel's polity. In the Christian period, the merger of the church and state changed both the doctrinal basis of the movement as well as the direction it was taking. These and other changes have resulted in negative as well as positive effects on the movement. Out of all of these adjustments, new events rose to keep a progressive stance to the Biblical Civilization to arrive at the Messianic maturity stage. *Thirdly*, Messianic expectations are seen by both Judaism and Christianity as the final goal with it's associated effort and activity in which man will become in the image and likeness of God. This has been identified in the first stage as a major goal of God himself. The Messianic



period will contain the programs and activities for reaching and completing this goal. *Finally*, a comparison between Judaic Messianic expectations with Christian expectation find more in common than in deviations.

*I COMMON FEATURES*

<i>JEWISH MESSIAH</i>	<i>CHRISTIAN MESSIAH</i>
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Messiah will introduce the Messianic age with his presence.</li> <li>2. Messiah will come for all people.</li> <li>3. Messiah to regather Jews from the diaspora and establish Israel as a new nation.</li> <li>4. Messiah intends to bring about a perfect world.</li> <li>5. Messiah appointed and sent by God.</li> <li>6. Messiah comes with power to purge the world of it's evil.</li> <li>7. Messiah introduces New Covenant.</li> <li>8. Messiah descendent of David.</li> <li>9. Messiah established a kingdom on earth, materially and spiritually.</li> <li>10. Messiah will be the world's redeemer.</li> <li>11. Messiah will have militaristic role with power to battle evil.</li> <li>12. Messiah supergifted with exceptional statesmanship.</li> <li>13. Messiah will be in Jerusalem the center of the Messianic Age.</li> <li>14. Messianic Age will be the start of the resurrection.</li> </ol>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Messiah will introduce the Messianic age with his paronsia.</li> <li>2. Messiah comes for all people.</li> <li>3. Messiah to regather Jews from the diaspora and establish Israel as a new nation.</li> <li>4. Messiah intends to bring about a perfect world.</li> <li>5. Messiah appointed and sent by God.</li> <li>6. Messiah comes with power to purge the world of it's evil.</li> <li>7. Messiah introduces New Covenant.</li> <li>8. Messiah descendent of David.</li> <li>9. Messiah established a kingdom on earth, materially and spiritually.</li> <li>10. Messiah will be the world's redeemer.</li> <li>11. Messiah will have militaristic role with power to battle evil.</li> <li>12. Messiah supergifted with exceptional statesmanship.</li> <li>13. Messiah will be in Jerusalem the center of the Messianic Age.</li> <li>14. Messianic Age will be the start of the resurrection.</li> </ol>

*II. DEVIATION FEATURES*

<i>JEWISH MESSIAH</i>	<i>CHRISTIAN MESSIAH</i>
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Messiah will be King of the Jews.</li> <li>2. Messiah will be an imperfect person to understand sinners.</li> <li>3. Messiah won't come unless everyone - Jews and Gentile observes the Sabbath.</li> <li>4. Messiah gives recognition that God is the Savior of all people.</li> <li>5. Messiah is to be a reigning king.</li> <li>6. Messiah has one coming as a human being.</li> </ol>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Messiah will be the King of all people and nations.</li> <li>2. Messiah will be a perfect person and will use his church to understand sinners.</li> <li>3. Messiah when he arrives will institute and enforce Sabbath and the jubilee rest.</li> <li>4. Messiah gives recognition that God is the Savior of all people, but was made possible through the death of Jesus.</li> <li>5. Messiah is first to be a suffering servant and later a reigning king.</li> <li>6. Messiah has two comings, one as a human, the second as a divine being.</li> </ol>

The expectation of the Messiah to reign on earth is the bridge across the various Biblical stages. It's connects history from the Garden of Eden through the kingdom of the Messiah and to eternity.

## MESSIANIC DISAPPOINTMENTS

“For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ and shall deceive many.”

Matthew 24:5

Since human history is largely a history of oppression and slavery, it is not surprising that claimant Messiahs would emerge from time to time with plans and missions to bring about the expectant hope and deliverance. But many of these self-styled claimants have more often led their followers to disappointments and disasters than to liberation and prosperity. In Jewish history there have been Jewish heroes who have been designated the Messiah by the Jews themselves. King David was anointed with oil. The Jews saw him bringing the tribes together, unifying a nation, inaugurating peace and conceptualizing the building of the temple. The Jews saw David as a political deliverer and therefore the Messiah. Cyrus the Meade, a non Jew, was regarded as the Messiah. He was the one in 537 BC that freed the Israelites from the dominion of the Babylonians. He allowed Israel's return home. Then there were the Maccabees which was seen as the Messiah. They ousted Antiochus Epiphans 175 to 163 BC from Israel. Antiochus was the one who outlawed Judaism. He decreed there shall be no more Sabbath, no more festivals, no more Torah and no more circumcision. These usurping leaders were proclaimed by their followers because of their outstanding deeds. Unfortunately their achievements, as great as they were, were short lived confined to Israel alone and failed to bring about the worldwide Biblical Civilization.

Then there were the self proclaimed Messiahs in history. They were the pretenders. Unnamed political revolutionaries in 66-73 AD attempting to overthrow Rome claimed Messiahship. Other unnamed individuals in eastern Libya rebelled against Rome. They claimed a Messianic mission. The rebellion was crushed by the Romans. In 132-135 AD, Simeon Bar Kokhba who commanded a great army made a final attempt to regain Jewish independence by over throwing the Romans. He was thoroughly beaten and failed. Hundreds of thousands of his countrymen paid for that failure with their lives. In 400 AD an unnamed self-proclaimed Messiah led Jews from the island of Crete to a journey to the Holy Land. They expected a parting of the Mediterranean waters like the Red Sea parting of the Exodus. It was unsuccessful. In 614 AD, an anti-Roman Jewish revolt took place around the Sea of Galilee. It failed. In 720 AD, a Jew called Serene in the upper Euphrates failed in achieving political deliverance. In 1087 AD, an unnamed Jew rose in Southern France inn the general area of the Albigensians who claimed Messiahship. It too failed. In 1147 AD, David Alroy in Baghdad claimed he was the Messiah to liberate Jerusalem.

He told the Jews in the Middle East to prepare to follow him on the wings of angels back to the Holy Land. They literally waited on the roofs to be taken to the Holy Land by angels. They were disappointed and the effort failed. In 1284 AD, Abraham Abulafia in Sicily and Abraham Avila in 1290 AD in Spain both claimed Messiahship, but failed to return the scattered Jews and restore them to the Holy Land. In 1665 AD Sabbatai Zevi declared he was the Messiah. He came out of Smyrna and made his Messianic self claim to Jews throughout Europe. Christians too listened to him. His closest followers engaged in the practice of sin without restraint such as nudism, orgies, fornication and incest. When he traveled to Turkey, Zevi was seized and told he must convert to Islam or die. He converted to Islam.

In the Western Civilization, the need for a genuine Messiah has become more urgent than ever before for a variety of reasons. The Messianic claimants have emerged in the 19th and 20th centuries to claim the title or accept the title from followers. Simon Kimbanger and his successor Andre “Jesus” Matswa in the African Congo were hailed as Messiahs. They died without any achievements expected of the Biblical Messiah. Their followers expected them to return and usher in an African Millennium. Sun Myang Moon, a self proclaimed successor to Jesus Christ aims to purify the world by means of a united family of his followers. He is still making this attempt. Followers of Marx and Lenin with their political communists movement have couched their expectations in Messianic terms. Communism has collapsed. Even the United Nations in the minds of many see and hail it as a sort of Messiah substitute in more recent times. After all, it was the United Nations that restored Israel in 1948. The 200,000 member followers of Rabbi Menachern Schneerson of Brooklyn, New York claimed him as the Messiah. His assassination was a great disappointment. Before his demise, Rabbi Schneerson stated that the Messiah had not come. Yet his arrival is imminent from a series of signs which have held over the past few decades. These include a general decline in morality, a crisis in leadership, the diminishing of the Torah by the Jews, the wide spread Judaic apostasy and the general feeling of despair and troubles for the Israeli people. Even the establishment of the State of Israel could be viewed as a significant sign of the arrival or near arrival of the Messiah.

The Messianic disappointments over the years has created a new age movement. The coming of the Messiah is a fundamental illusion. Someone had made a plan, but the plan is defeated. No single person, past, present or future, is the Messiah. Rather each human being helps shape a Messianic figure as one limb of an organism of humanity. The Messianic Age is a time when each person regards every single human being as a close friend, as one regards each

limb of one's body. This new age movement states the Messiah will come only when he is no longer necessary. The movement will add to the disappointments already in history. This will occur when the Messiah reveals his presence.

This brief overview makes it too plain. That the history of Messianic movements is largely a history of delusion, shattered hopes and misplaced dreams and false pretenders. There have been over 50 pretenders to Messiahship over a period of 1800 years. They were all political aspirants who wanted to reestablish Jewish independence. Most emerged as a result of desperation stemming from persecution. Interesting to note, most have denied Jesus of Nazareth as the true Messiah.

#### WHY JEWS REJECTED JESUS AS MESSIAH

“Then answered all the people and said, his blood be on us and on our children.”

Matthew 27:25

Why did the Jews clamor for the blood of Jesus? Why was there so much hostility toward him at his trial with Pilate? Why were so many of Jesus' contemporaries unable to recognize Jesus as the Christ - the Messiah? There are at least four basis reasons: *First*, the Jews, under the Roman yoke expected the Messiah to be a political deliverer and reestablish Israel as an independent kingdom. They wanted the Romans “kicked out”. They got instead, a suffering servant who willingly died for a cause. Jesus did nothing to rid the Gentile nations who controlled the Jews from 606 BC down to his day. Rather, Jesus became the suffering servant and accepted the persecution of the Romans. There were at least three religious groups in the first advent: The *Pharisees*, the *Sadducees* and the *Essenes*. Both Pharisee and Sadducees were strong expectants of a political deliverer. When they saw Jesus having no aspirations to rid the Roman yoke, they rejected him. Interesting to note, the Essenes of the Qumron Community studied carefully the Hebrew scriptures and saw two sets of scriptures - one set predicting the Messiah would be a suffering servant and another set of scriptures predicting he would be a reigning king, reestablishing the independence of Israel. The Essenes accepted both sets of scriptures, but concluded there would be two Messiahs. They expressed this two Messiah concept to the Pharisees and Sadducees and got “kick out” of Jerusalem. They settled in the Qumron Community just west of the Dead Sea. It never occurred to the Essenes that it would be one Messiah with two comings - one as a suffering servant and the other as reigning king. How could they come up with this conclusion since it is a profound spiritual understanding. The remaining religious community rejected Jesus as a Messiah since he did not reestablish Israel as an independent nation. The Jews held this position deliverer concept so

much that Jesus, the suffering servant became a stumbling block for the Jews. From this stumbling, the Jews lost the high calling as a nation; lost the Biblical Civilization as a nation; lost the spirit begettal as a nation; lost God's providential care which resulted in the diaspora; lost their tribal identification; and, lost God's relationship, what little was left.

There's a *second* reason for the Jews rejecting Jesus as Messiah. It is a misinterpretation of what Jesus did in the temple. The Jews really believed that Jesus was moving to crush Judaism. The overturning of the money changers in the temple is one such example. The priests, the Pharisees, the Sadducees and Jews to this day interpret this move as a rejection of the law which required sacrificing of animals for atonement of sins. The account describes that Jesus was concerned over the greedy thieves in the temple. Jesus said later, "I come not to abolish the law, but to fulfill it." But the Jews interpreted his move as hostile to the law. Professor Rabbi Jacob Newsner of the University of South Florida in Tampa in his book<sup>4</sup> compares Jesus of Nazareth with Moses of the Torah. This comparison gives insight why Jews rejected Jesus. They are offered here with no defense nor offense.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <p>a. The Torah of Moses said, "Honor thy father and mother". Exodus 20:8</p> <p>b. The Torah of Moses said, "Remember the Sabbath to keep it holy." Exodus 20:12</p> <p>c. The Torah of Moses said, "You shall tithe all the yield of your seed." Deuteronomy 14:22</p> <p>d. The Torah of Moses said, "You shall be holy for I the Lord God am holy."</p> | <p>a. When Jesus was speaking, his mother wanted to see him. Jesus said, "All of these are my mother and brothers." Matthew 10:34-37. Was Jesus disrespectful to his mother?</p> <p>b. When the disciples were plucking ears of corn to eat on the Sabbath, Jesus defended them. Matthew 12:1-8. Was Jesus breaking the Sabbath?</p> <p>c. When tithing requirements were being neglected, Jesus said, "Woe you scribes and Pharisees, you tithe the mint, dill and cumin, but neglect law, justice, mercy and faith." Was Jesus neglecting tithing?</p> <p>d. When the young man said, "What must I do to earn eternal life?" Jesus said, "keep the commandments". The young man said this he did. But Jesus said, "be perfect, sell all and give to the poor." Was Jesus going beyond holiness?</p> |
|---|---|

These comparisons are only a few to illustrate how the Jews did not see Jesus obeying the law.

A *third* reason for Jesus' rejection was his adjustments he made to Judaism. Jesus was adjusting it for spiritual reasons. This was largely due to his role as a leader. The adjustments were made every time he said, "you have heard it was said, but I say unto you". He was saying, here is what the law says, but here is what I say. Here are some of the adjustments Jesus made to Judaism.

- a. Good deeds on the Sabbath preempts the strict sabbatical procedures.
- b. God is a father replacing El-Shaddi, Elohim or Jehovah.
- c. Judaic exclusivity is ended - Gentiles are invited to the promises.
- d. The promised Kingdom of God is both spiritual and earthly.
- e. Jewish law says, “eye for an eye” - Jesus said love without revenge.
- f. Animal sacrifices no longer needed - Jesus was to replace all of them.
- g. Higher standards of behavior for those spirit begotten: stop hating - it’s like murdering; stop making vows - they cannot be kept; stop resisting evil - even with personal suffering; stop having many wives - only one wives.

A *fourth* and final reason for Jew’s rejection of Jesus as the Messiah involved the lack of recognition by Jewish Rabbis. Generations of Jews have been taught that the writings of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John were unreliable documents written long after the events took place. These Rabbis also enhanced the idea that Jesus was a myth. He was not a real historical figure. Maimonides, in the Mishnah Torah, stated that if any claimant did not succeed to the Messianic prophecies or was killed, he surely is not the Messiah. Maimonides concluded that Jesus’ death proved he was not the promised redeemer Messiah. This conclusion has been accepted by Jewish scholars for thousands of years. Maimonides, however, considered the historical evidence about Jesus of Nazareth and concluded he was the Davidic dynasty, a potential Messiah - the King of Israel. But his potential was never realized since he was killed. Maimonides failed to see the combination suffering servant and reigning king of the promised Messiah.

#### WHY JESUS IS THE MESSIAH

“We have found the Messiah, which is, being interpreted, the Christ.” John 1:41

Most societies of history find inspiration by looking back to their accomplishments and ancient glories and identifying them as the period of “the golden age”. In Biblical perspectives, the golden age always lies in the future rather than in the past. A future when the long awaited Messiah restores the earth and humanity to a long awaited set of expectations. The Messiah concept is the central figure in both the Messianic Age as well as in the Biblical Civilization from beginnings in the Garden of Eden to the conclusion of God’s Kingdom. The Old Testament contains over 500 scriptures that relate directly and indirectly with the Messiah. There are over 400 scriptures found in the New Testament. Combined, there are over 900 scriptural texts on this one subject alone. The Messiah theme

binds and links the Old Testament with the New give the Bible it's unity. This Messiah is not self-proclaimed nor is he voted in by a mass of adoring followers. His appointment originates and is established by God Himself to accomplish a specific mission. See Figure 9.19. Christ will be the key to the fulfillment of the Bible's most inspiring promises. He will solve humankind's problems by going to their roots and making whatever world changes are necessary to bring about the needed blessings to the world.

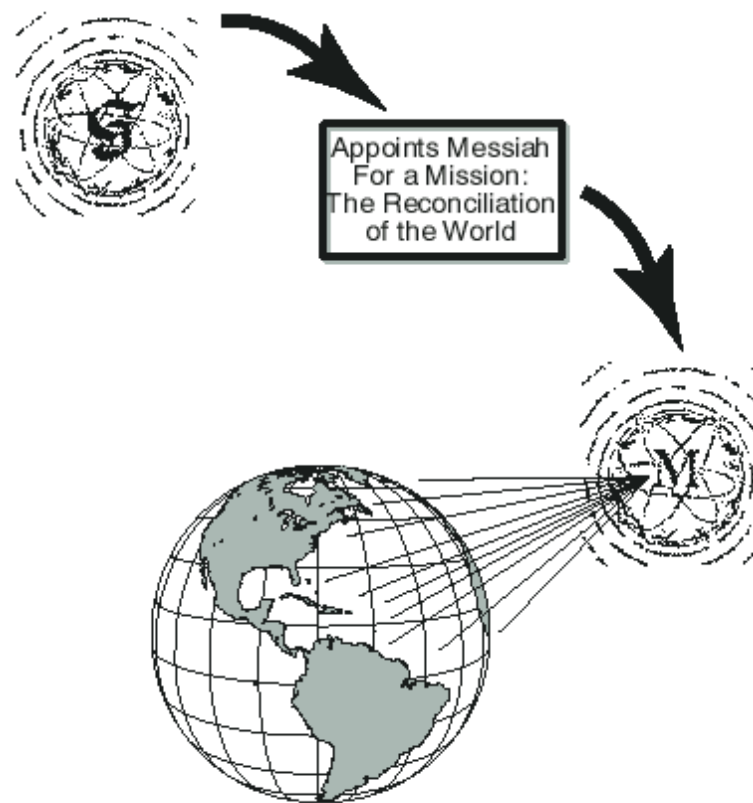


Figure 9.19

## Christ Appointed to be the Messiah

### Figure 9.19 Christ Appointed to be the Messiah

Some have said Jesus never himself claimed to be the Messiah. This is not according to the record. In Matthew 26:63-64, the high priest asked Jesus, "tell us if you are the Christ". Jesus said, "yes, it is as you say". In Matthew 16:16, when Jesus asked his disciples, "who do people say that I am?", it was Peter that said, "Thou are the Christ (Messiah)". Jesus said, "Blessed are you Peter; God revealed that to you". In John 4:25-26, the Samaritan women

said, “The Messiah cometh who is called the Christ. He will tell us all things.” Jesus said, “I that speak to thee am he”. Several evidences will now be offered to establish Jesus of Nazareth as the foretold Messiah.

### 1. *Jesus' Lineage*

The Bible foretold that the Messiah would come from the family line of King David. (Isaiah 11:1,10; Psalm 132:11) Matthew's gospel traces Jesus as the son of David and the son of Abraham. He does this through his adopted father Joseph. Luke traces Jesus' lineage through his natural mother, Mary back through David, Abraham and Adam. (Matthew 1:1-16; Luke 3:23-38) For a complete genealogical diagram of Jesus back to Adam for over 4000 years see Figure 9.20. Both Gospel writers provide documentation and verification that Jesus was an heir of David both in a legal and natural sense. Matthew and Luke researched and copied the names for their writings directly from public records. It appears no one before 70 AD, before public records were destroyed, challenged the lineage of Jesus to David. The fact they did not verifies Jesus was not a fraud. They accepted his Davidic lineage. The 50 or more pretenders to the Messiahship are not able to accurately provide the genealogical verification. Any future self-proclaimed or chosen by followers must meet this lineage criteria or be disqualified as the Messiah. The genealogical lineage of Jesus is extremely unique as no one on record can produce their lineage 62 generations back through David, Abraham and Adam. There is no one on the present scene who can relate connections back to David and Abraham as most documented records have been destroyed. Some Jews have rejected the claim of Jesus on the grounds he was a myth. He was not a historical figure. The generations of Jesus have been recorded through the writings of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John. These writings were made long after the events happened. There are even theories that categorically deny the early existence of the written gospels. Recent scholarly research and archaeological findings have disproved these theories. It is virtually impossible to seriously claim today, the gospels were fabricated after all living witnesses had died. The existence of the gospel records about the teachings, miracles, prophecies, death and resurrection within 30 years of the actual events give proof of their reliability since time was still ripe for witnesses and denying documents to refute what the historical Jesus did. There is more reliable information on the life of Jesus than any other character of ancient history including Julius Caesar. Archaeological and documentation confirmation of Jesus is given in Chapter 8 of this book. The genealogy is repeated here for convenience.



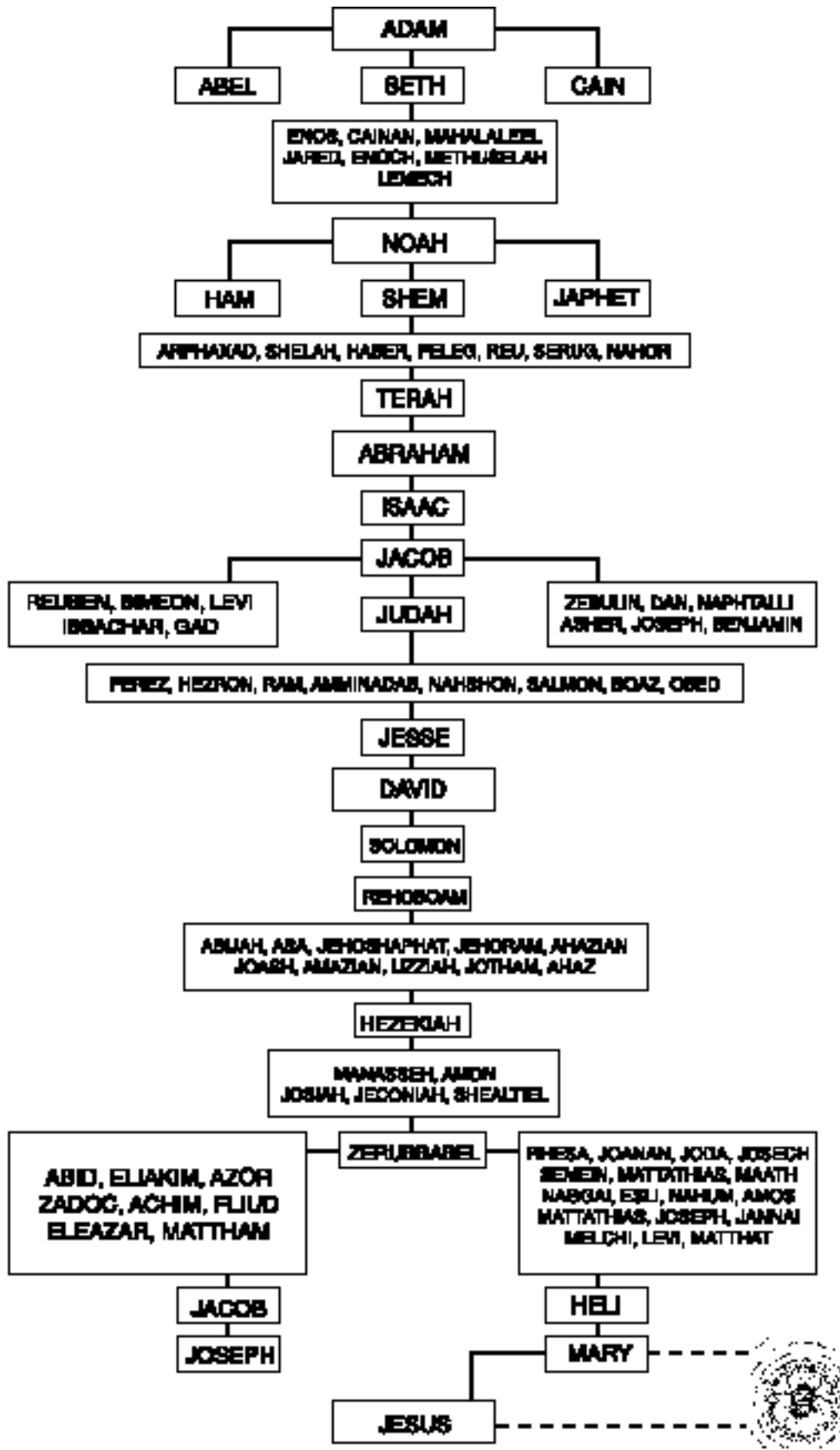


Figure 9.20

# Genealogy of the Life of Jesus (Sixty-two Generations)

Figure 9.20 Genealogy of the Life of Jesus (Sixty-two Generations)

## 2. *Messianic Prophecies of the Old Testament confirm Jesus as the Messiah*

Still another category of evidence to support Jesus as the Messiah is the scriptural prophecies foretelling of his arrival. Some of these prophecies were recorded as early as 1000 BC. These prophecies were very specific. Here are most of them:

- a. Messiah to be born in Bethlehem as a ruler for Israel. (Micah 5:2) Jesus was born in Bethlehem, the City of David. (Luke 2:4,11)
- b. Messiah to be conceived and born of a virgin. (Isaiah 7:14) Jesus was born of a virgin. (Matthew 1:23)
- c. Messiah would be born during a period of mass infanticide. (Jeremiah 31:13) Jesus was born when Herod slaughtered 2 year olds and under. (Matthew 2:16-18)
- d. Messiah shall have the scepter from the tribe of Judah. (Genesis 49:10) Jesus was a descendant from the tribe of Judah. (Luke 2:23,33)
- e. Messiah is to be heir to David's throne whose dynasty never ends. (Isaiah 9:7) Jesus is heir to David's throne and foretold deliverer. (Romans 11:26)
- f. Messiah will be raised as a righteous branch unto David. (Jeremiah 23:5) Jesus through his lineage has been a righteous branch. (Luke 3:23-28)
- g. Messiah would have a predecessor who would prepare the way. (Isaiah 40:3-5) Jesus had John introducing and preparing his ministry. (Matthew 3:11-17)
- h. Messiah would make a purifying appearance in the temple. (Haggai 2:7-9) Jesus overturned the table of the money changers in the temple. (Matthew 21:12-13)
- i. Messiah would refine and purify the people. (Malachi 2:2-3) Jesus baptized with the Holy Spirit and with fire. (Matthew 3:11-12)
- j. Messiah would work miracles with the blind, the deaf and the dead. (Isaiah 35:4-6) Jesus worked over 57 different categories of miracles. (Matthew 11:2-6)
- k. Messiah would open the blind eyes and bring out those in prison. (Isaiah 42:1,6-7) Jesus cured all manner of diseases among the people. (Matthew 4:3)
- l. Messiah would feed his flock like a shepherd. (Isaiah 40:11) Jesus was a shepherd to feed and save his sheep. (Matthew 18:11-13)

- m. Messiah would be raised up like a prophet among his brethren. (Deuteronomy 18:18) Jesus was declared a prophet from Nazareth of Galilee. (Matthew 21:11)
- n. Messiah would bear the grief and carry their sorrows. (Isaiah 53:4) Jesus healed them all. (Matthew 12:15-21)
- o. Messiah would ride into Jerusalem on a donkey. (Zechariah 9:9) Jesus rode into Jerusalem through the last gate on a donkey. (John 12:12-14)
- p. Messiah would be sold for 30 pieces of silver and cast them to the potter. (Zechariah 11:12-13) Jesus was sold to the chief priests for 30 pieces of silver. (Matthew 26:15)
- q. Messiah would be betrayed by a trusted friend whom he lived with. (Psalms 41:9) Jesus was betrayed and arrested by one of his disciples. (John 18:2-3)
- r. Messiah would be numbered with the transgressors and sinners. (Isaiah 53:12) Jesus was crucified with 2 thieves next to him. (John 19:17-18)
- s. Messiah would give a silent defense like a lamb led to the slaughter. (Isaiah 53:7) Jesus gave no witness nor defended himself. (John 19:9)
- t. Messiah would have his hands and feet pierced. (Psalms 22:16) Jesus had his hands and feet pierced in the crucifixion. (John 19:16-17)
- u. Messiah would have his cloak gambled by casting lots. (Psalms 22:18) Jesus had his cloak gambled by Roman soldiers. (John 19:24)
- v. Messiah would die without any of his bones broken. (Psalms 34:20) Jesus was dead before the soldiers were to break his bones. (John 19:33)
- w. Messiah would be given gall to eat and vinegar for thirst. (Psalms 69:21) Jesus was given vinegar to drink mingled with gall. (Matthew 27:34)
- x. Messiah would cry out, my God, my God, why has thou forsaken me. (Psalms 22:1) Jesus felt this abandonment and cried out, my God, why forsaken me. (Matthew 27:46)
- y. Messiah, when crucified, the sun would go down at noon on clear day. (Amos 8:9) Jesus was enveloped with darkness from the 6th to the 9th hour. (Matthew 27:45)

- z. Messiah would die and buried with the rich. (Isaiah 53:9) Jesus was buried in the tomb of a rich man - Joseph. (Matthew 27:57-60)
- aa. Messiah as a shepherd would be smitten and his sheep scattered. (Zechariah 13:7) Jesus was crucified and his disciples scattered. (Mark 14:15)
- bb. Messiah would be despised and rejected by men. (Isaiah 53:1-3) Jesus was rejected from the people in preference to Barabbas. (Matthew 27:15-20)
- cc. Messiah would be a stone of stumbling to Israel. (Isaiah 8:14) Jesus was a stumbling stone and rock of offense. (Romans 9:32-33)
- dd. Messiah would become a stranger unto his brethren. (Psalms 69:8) Jesus came to his own and his own received him not. (John 1:11)
- ee. Messiah as the redeemer would be rejected by nations. (Isaiah 49:1-9) Jesus was despised and gathered against by nations. (Acts 4:25-26)
- ff. Messiah would do no violence neither have deceit in his mouth. (Isaiah 53:9) Jesus did not sin neither guile was found in his mouth. (I Peter 2:22-23)
- gg. Messiah will be one to whom the Gentiles seek. (Isaiah 49:6) Jesus with his movement linked with the Gentiles. (Matthew 16:15)
- hh. Messiah was to be a suffering servant of God. (Isaiah 53:1-2) Jesus became the suffering servant with his sacrificed life. (John 1:29)
- ii. Messiah is to be a reigning king for all nations. (Isaiah 52:7-10) Jesus is to be king and shall reign for ever and ever. (Revelation 11:15)

The above scriptures and still others give overwhelming evidence from the Hebrew scriptures foretelling the specifics of the Messiah. The life of Jesus is an accurate alignment with these prophetic specifics.

### 3. *Jesus' First Arrival as Messiah predicted for 29-33 AD*

Still another evidence which supports the Messianic claim by Jesus is found in the word itself. The word Messiah is found in only two books of the Bible - Daniel and John. The prophecy of Daniel 9:24-26 is quoted and analyzed as follows: "Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon the holy city to finish the transgression". Seventy weeks would amount to 70 times 7 years or 490 years. (Symbolically one year per week)

This period is a period set aside as a period of favor to the Jewish nation in their return from Babylonian captivity. “Know, therefore, and understand that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and rebuild Jerusalem unto the Messiah, the Prince, shall be seven weeks and three score and two weeks. (7 + 60 + 2 = 69) The street shall be built again and the wall, even in troublesome times.”

There are two important points to the prophecy. First is the starting time when the decree is issued. Second is the span of time. Both these pieces of information are easily available. Three decrees concerning rebuilding Jerusalem are recorded - that of Cyrus 536 BC, that of Darius 521-486 BC, and that of Artaxerxes 454 BC. It was King Artaxerxes that actually and finally gave permission for the rebuilding of the city of Jerusalem (not the temple). That sets the starting point at 454 BC.

As to the span of time, 69 weeks could not be literal since it would mean the Messiah came just after one year after 454 BC. Bible scholars including both Christian and Jews agree that there are “weeks of years”. So 69 weeks would amount to 69 times 7 or 483 years (1 year per week). From 454 BC counting 483 years takes us to the autumn of that year, 29 AD. This is the very year Jesus was baptized and began his ministry. Continuing with the prophecy of Daniel 9:26, “And after threescore and two weeks, shall Messiah be cut off”. The end of the 69 weeks (years) was to mark the Messiah’s appearance. But the Messiah would be cut off (killed) in the middle of the last week of the 70th week. That is in the middle of the last seven years or 3 1/2 years. The Messiah’s death would occur in the spring 3 1/2 years after 29 AD.

Interesting to note, the Jews followed closely this prophecy of Daniel and expected the Messiah to appear at that time. They failed to recognize Jesus because he did not meet their expectations of a political deliverer from the Roman occupation.

#### 4. *Jesus’ Second Arrival to Usher in the Messianic Age*

Several scriptures indicate Jesus will return to earth again - not as a suffering servant, but as a reigning king. He will not come as a human being, nor as the son of man, but rather as “the deliverer”. This second return means there is one Messiah with two comings. The first coming was 2000 years ago as the suffering servant to be the world’s redeemer. The second coming will be as the Messianic King that was predicted of him to reconcile the world to God.

The manner of Jesus’ return, over the years, has been controversial among Christian believers. There are two schools of thought. The first, he returns, visibly, humanly and literally seen by everyone on planet earth. A scripture

cited to support this thought is Revelation 1:7 which states, “he is coming with clouds and every eye will see him and those who pierced him”. Revelation is a book of symbols. What is written in this book has an intended meaning, but not a literal interpretation. If you take this scripture literal, it would mean those who pierced him would see him coming in clouds. That’s not possible since they have been dead for 20 centuries. If one insists on a meaning to the text, then it no longer is literal and actual, but must be interpreted. Besides the angelic messenger of Revelation said Jesus would return in like manner as in his ascension. (Acts 1:11) He left with only a few faithful ones watching and not millions. They could only see to a cloud cover and not at all the way to heaven. Shortly, thereafter, he entered the spiritual heavens and is no longer visible to human eyes. In fact, Jesus did remark, “a little longer and the world will see me no more”. (John 14:19) “Every eye shall see him” implies everyone will know he has arrived and will discern, with insight, his presence (parousia). His second coming has both the feature of his arrival (the moment) and also his subsequent presence (span of time). The presence is a special era, a marked period of time. Additionally, if the second presence of Jesus was literal, there would be no need to give signs to help them discern his presence. The Messiah’s presence will begin the events necessary to fulfill the Messianic prophecies.

When Jesus’ disciples ask him (Matthew 24:3) what will be the sign of your presence and of the end of the age. Jesus responded by giving them detailed descriptions of that future time. Here are some of these signs that give evidence of his second arrival. These signs indicate we are in that period. See Figure 9.21.

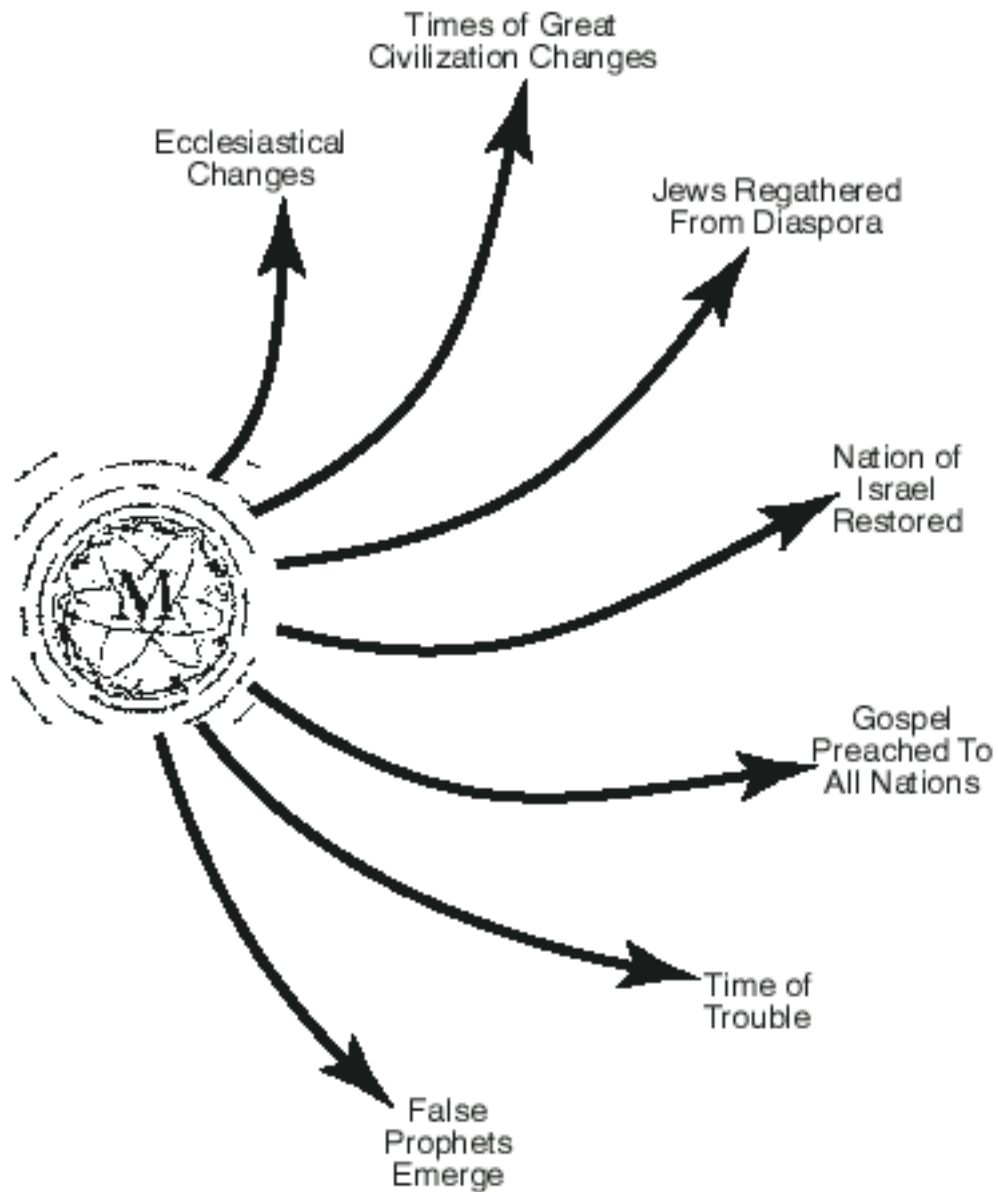


Figure 9.21  
Signs of Messiah's Presence

**Figure 9.21 Signs of Messiah's Presence**

a. *Time of trouble on earth at arrival time.* The time of trouble is a transition period of many years to dismantle and remove an old, evil civilization to make room for a new one. It's a time of trouble because great effort is expended to hold on and perpetuate the old civilization. The dismantling will bring about major disruptions in the lives of people and in the processes of government. Here are some of the signs of this troublesome period: *Claimants to be Christ.* Pretenders will emerge saying, "I am Christ"; *Wars and rumors of wars.* Hot and cold wars

will occur on an international scale; *Famines, pestilence, earthquakes*. This will bring about great sorrow; *Persecution of believers*. Many will be hated and offended for their beliefs; *False prophets arise*. New religious ideas and thinking will emerge; *Love of many wax cold*. This is because morality is low and inequity high; *Gospel preached as a witness to all the world*. Everyone will know the name of Jesus; *Abomination of Desolation in holy place*. An individual will claim himself from God; *Great tribulation never before experienced*. This refers to the great Armageddon; *Claimants to Christ's arrival*. His presence will be like the sun rising in the east; *Gospel message questioned*. The sun will be darkened (gospel), the moon not give light (law); *Sign in ecclesiastical heavens*. Shakeup and great disruption in Christendom; *Gathering of his saints*. The bride of Christ to be gathered out of the world; *Fig tree has leaves*. Jewish nations give signs of political life; *Arrival and presence of Jesus will be like the days of Noah*. Life will appear normal until symbolic flood comes; *Watch for signs*. Watch for the day and hour since it is not known; *Servant emerges in the harvest*. Faithful one will give meat in due season.

b. *The Gospel will be preached to all the nations as a witness*. The gospel of the kingdom are the announcements, activities and preaching before hand that the long, promised kingdom is coming. This gospel has been preached along with the second coming of the Messiah for approximately 2000 years. It is the central mission of the Christian movement. The gospel may not be received nor accepted. Nonetheless, it would be a witness to all people. A witness is intended to mean a testifier to vouch or stand for it's veracity. Since there are many preaching this gospel message, the witness is substantial. The history of the Gospel Age has been a history of this witness work. The name of Jesus has been brought to all nations and cultures. He is by far the most popular person known in civilization. Today, Christianity is the most popular religion in the community of religions. The gospel and the Bible have been published in every language of the earth. It's publication is unabated. The conversion rate continues to maintain it's lead over other religions. Christianity still grows. This sign given in Matthew 24:14 substantiates an important evidence that the Christian movement is alive and continues as a leader.

c. *Times of Great Positive Changes as a New Civilization moves in*. The arrival of Jesus in his second presence will usher in great positive changes never before experienced in human history as stated in Acts 3:19-21. "Repent ye therefore and be converted that your sins may be blotted out when times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord. And he shall send Jesus Christ which before was preached unto you whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world



began.” It will be a recovery filled with blessings of all kinds. It will enrich the lives of people. These blessings will have small beginnings, small knowledge, small changes and small restorations. However, these small starts will begin to grow until they reach the full maturity stage and encompass the entire world. The changes will have lifestyle implications as well as civilization impacts. Here is a brief list of the small, but exciting and notable positive changes already in operation. The kings of history nor the wealthy aristocrats of the past nor the rich Sultans of not long ago nor the super affluent corporation presidents of yesterday ever enjoyed the marvels and miracles that have been spawned within the past century. We’re living at a time of such splendors and comforts never before experienced even by the super rich. These wonders and enrichments should not be taken for granted. They are brand new relative to the thousands of years of the past and enjoyed by the masses of people.

1. *Life expectancy.* It is now 75 years and rising. The highest in history.
2. *Global communications.* Using telephone, TV, fax, e-mail. This has never been experienced.
3. *World travel.* Using fast jets, autos, trains, ships. Travel to anywhere with little costs.
4. *Computers.* Storing, retrieving, analyzing and processing information for life’s functions.
5. *Gourmet supermarkets.* Global food distribution for variety, nutrition, quality and safety.
6. *Medicine and health.* Diagnosis, treatment and care on unprecedented levels.
7. *Sleep and rest.* Procedures and treatment for rest and restoration of energy.
8. *Laser surgery.* Microprecision in reaching and removing body problems.
9. *Penicillin and anti-bodies.* Quick healing for viruses and bacterial infections.
10. *Congenital defects.* Elimination of deformities especially with babies.
11. *Organ transplantation.* Saving or extending lives with organ transplants. All organs can be transplanted except brain and nervous system.
12. *500 channel television.* Picture and sound program selection unparalleled for human experience.
13. *High-fidelity sound.* Music and sound to a never heard sound experience.
14. *Microchip processor.* Computerized process to redesign and operate organizations.
15. *Video cameras.* Capturing moments with film and voice for playback anytime.
16. *Heat pumps & air conditioners.* Creating comfortable environments for humans anywhere.
17. *Electric cars.* Battery driven autos for pollution abatement and depleting oil source.

18. *Battery driven tools.* Portable energy to make all kinds of work easy.
19. *Miniaturization.* Space saving, small devices to continue life's functions & activities.
20. *Paperback books.* Information and entertainment for the masses at low costs.
21. *Writing devices.* Pens for throw away or for exhibiting elegance of language.
22. *Reproductions.* Push a button to reproduce paper, books, drawings and even money.
23. *Nuclear energy.* Practical uses for electricity, propulsion and medical diagnosis.
24. *Synthetic fabrics.* Saves animals and laundering is all that is needed.
25. *Cookery magnificence.* Refrigerator and freezer has made gourmet cooks of housewives.

The Pharaohs, nor the Caesars, nor J. P. Morgan, nor Edison, nor Einstein could envision the unbelievable and amazing wonders of working, playing and living in the time we live in. Many contemporaries have fallen with the presumption the positive changes have been with us from time immemorial. It has only been with us for the past century.

d. *Israel Reestablished as a Nation.* There is still another evidence of Jesus' claim as the Messiah. "There the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity and have compassion upon thee and will return and gather thee from all the nations whether the Lord thy God hath scattered thee. If any of thine be driven out unto the out most parts of heaven, from thence will the Lord thy God gather thee and from thence will he fetch thee. And the Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed and thou shalt possess it; and he will do thee good and multiply thee above thy fathers." (Deuteronomy 30:3-5) It's important to see the nation of Israel has not taken the land of promise on a permanent basis. There were short periods under the Judges and the early kings where Israel occupied the land. But the period of exile and captivity has been significantly long. The stages of this return is as follows:

1. God's promise to settle and possess a land. (Genesis 17:8)
2. Exodus from Egyptian slavery to a promised land. (Exodus 12:1-25)
3. Short-lived possession in the Monarchical period. (I Samuel 8:7-22)
4. Global dispersion of the people for disobedience. (Deuteronomy 28:63)
5. Return of Messiah to reestablish Israel to the promised land. (Isaiah 49:6-7)
6. Regathering and restoration to the land. (Isaiah 11:11-12)
7. Future repentance of the people and national conversion. (Romans 11:26-36)

8. Judgment of Israel's oppressors. (Joel 3:1-8, 16)
9. National prosperity. (Amos 9:13-15)

It is interesting to note that Israel has been reestablished in the land that was promised to her by God with political independence in 1948. No one, self-claimed individual since 1948 has taken personal credit for delivering Israel from the diaspora when many have failed over 1800 years since 70 AD and 2600 years since captivity and exile in Babylon, 606 BC. Today's Zionists, the United Nations, nor America have made self-proclamations as the Messiah. Nor have their followers. The conclusion is clear. The political deliverance of Israel has been brought about by providential means. The invisible and spiritual Messiah in his second arrival has accomplished what many have failed to do. (Jeremiah 31:33-34)

As Israel continues its reformation and restoration, a shifting and separating process can be seen dividing Israeli's into two general classes of people - the Orthodox and the non-Orthodox. The Orthodox still hold to the promises of God and for a time of favor to return. The non-Orthodox follow reformed, literal and non-traditional religious practices. The non-Orthodox are not looking to the coming of the Messiah. Some say the Jewish nation, itself, is the Messiah who will reform the world gradually. Still others will declare that civilization, itself, is the Messiah and the basis of salvation for all people. It is the Orthodox Jew that waits for the Messiah and will be glad for his arrival. (Isaiah 25:9)

The reestablished Israel has undergone a swift transformation. In 50 years, the nation has moved from a poor country with a small, unimportant economy to one of the world's twelve most highly developed economies. This is remarkable and even miraculous. Israel's economy continues to grow in spite of the Arab boycott and the crippling effects of the recession felt by Europe and America. Israel's GNP of 16,000 dollars per person contrasts among its neighboring Arab states of 1,000 dollars per person. Egypt is less than 600 dollars per person. Immigration of professionals and technological skills has helped, policies of tourism and tolerance of other religious contributes, lower spending on defense has added and the exports of products of 18 billion has been the main strands to their economic transformation. To this, one must add the period of favor has returned to Israel in which God is permitting progress in the promised land which has been repossessed by the Jews. The Jewish homeland is a new root, a new beginning, a new force. Even Jerusalem, the great city of God is now rising as the city of the world.

e. *Regathering Jews from the Global Diaspora.* A final evidence of the Messianic claim of Jews is the sign of the regathering of Jews from all over the world back to the promised land. It is known that the Jews as a people are distinct and peculiar with their circumstances of history and their religious faith. The restoration of Israel and the immigration of Jews back to the holy land after so many centuries adds to their distinctiveness. The re-establishment of Israel and the regathered Jews is unique events to be expected in the arrival and presence of the Messiah. This movement of the Jews today cannot be interpreted as symbolic. It is literal and real. Several scriptures refer to the immigration of Jews to the original holy land. “I will gather you from all the nations and from all the places whether I have driven you saith the Lord; and I will bring you again unto the place whence I caused you to be carried away captive.” (Jeremiah 29:14) “Behold, at that time, I will undo all that afflict thee; and I will save her that hateth and gather her that was driven out; and I will get them praise and fame in every land where they have been put to shame. At that time I will bring you again, even in the time that I gather you; for I will make you a name and a praise all the people of the earth when I turn back your captivity before your eyes, saith the Lord.” (Zephaniah 3:19-20)

The population statistics in Israel show a present level of close to 6 million Jews. The Israeli government has already adopted a plan for 7 million Jews. The percentage Jews are close to 85 with the balance made up of Moslems, Christians and Druses. The immigration to Israel especially from Russia continues unabated. The population of Israel has fluctuated quite a bit over the centuries. The following are offered as estimates from 1813 BC when Jacob and his entourage of 72 entered Egypt to the 1997 AD present national growth.

DATE	ACTIVITY	POPULATION
1813 BC	Jacob enters Egypt	72
1447 BC	Exodus & giving of the law	2,000,000
1043 BC	Period of the Monarchy	5,500,000
536 BC	Puppet Government	50,000*
70 AD	Diaspora Begins	1,200,000
1882 AD	Start of Aliya	30,000
1948 AD	Statehood	717,000
1983 AD	Regathering from Diaspora	4,100,000
1997 AD	National Growth	<6,000,000

\*This low figure is due to migration, scattering and assimilation into foreign countries.

It took 7 major conflicts from statehood to the present time to reach the six million Jews now in Israel. These conflicts are: War of Independence, 1948; Sinai Campaign, 1956; 6-Day War, 1967; Yom Kippur War, 1973; Lebanon War, 1982; Palestinian Intifada, 1987; Scud Missile Attacks, 1991.

## LESSONS FROM THE HISTORY OF CIVILIZATIONS

“Those things which ye have both learned and received and heard and seen in me, do.” Philippians 4:9

History is littered with the ruins of civilizations. They are all gone. Have we learned anything from the ruins? Have we learned anything from those who live in the ruins? The record shows civilizations of the past have had their moment in the sun, but eventually declined and fell away. Figure 9.22

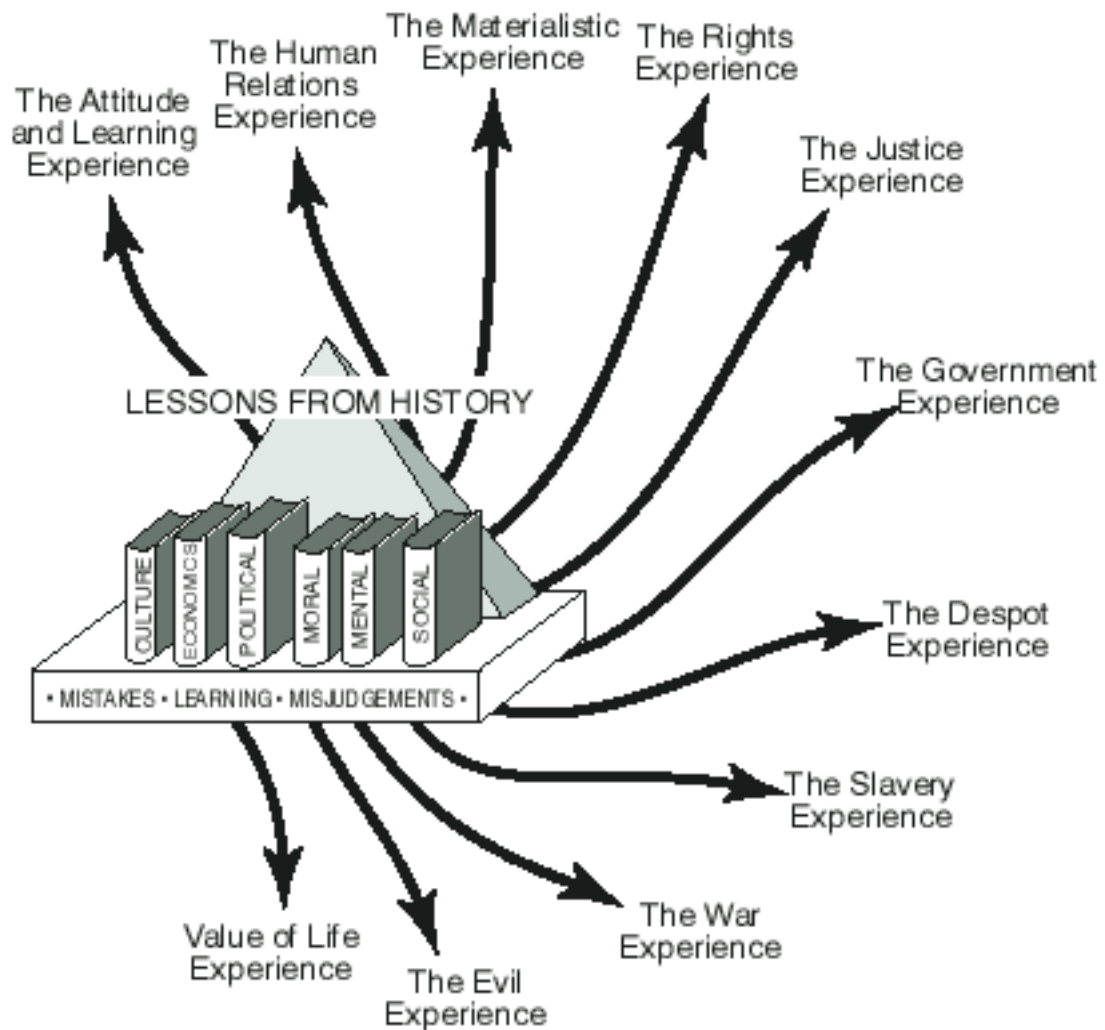


Figure 9.22

## Lessons from History

Figure 9.22 Lessons from History

As we examine these civilizations, we become witnesses to what might be learned from them. The first obvious lesson we learned is it's cycles - the rise and fall with another replacing it. It rises because it's policies and practices serve the population that's part of it. It falls because it no longer serves it's constituent population. Early conditions that enhance civilization rise may no longer become important. Geological locations near waterways, climate or rainfall may no longer be decisive. Agriculture based on agrarian methods are no longer critical. Waterways are supplanted by jet aircraft. Jet aircraft may alter the map of civilization. Climate no longer controls severely because of enclosures and air conditioning. Rainfall no longer critical since dams and irrigation methods bring water when needed. Agrarian methods are diminishing from the onslaught of technology.

There is a cyclical view of history. Human events occur in endless repeated cycles so that what is happening every day will some day be repeated in a rough approximation. The cycle is broken when a change or new direction is followed. These changes or new directions occur when learning from mistakes is introduced as new thinking. It is these innovative breakthroughs that break the repeated cycles. Cycles are continually broken when lessons are learned which give new directions. If lessons are not learned the cycles are repeated. This is true for both civilizations, as well as individuals.

This means, therefore, history teaches us plenty. It's there if only we have the will to learn. There have been recycles of the same mistakes since the tendency exists not to learn from our mistakes. Some mistakes are made on a large scale, some small. We have learned with a terrible cost of why we are where we are and what needs to be done to improve. The changes in history is moving us toward a future. The future can be seen as in the past only with large corrections over our mistakes and huge adjustments from what we learned. As we stand at a new edge of history looking back and looking forward, it becomes imperative we learn from our experiences. Experience is the matrix of connecting the faulty past with a perfect future.

The great peacemaker of India, Mohandas Gandhi reflected on the problems of the world and came up with a list of eight mistakes that civilizations have made over the centuries and continue to make up to the present. His view was these mistakes are leading the present civilization to a decline. Here is his list with my ancillary comments.

1. *Obtaining wealth without working for it* - Just call your stockbroker!

2. *Enjoying pleasure without the guidance of conscience* - some do not even know they need to develop their conscience.
3. *Accumulating knowledge without character* - knowledge alone makes us only an encyclopedia.
4. *Doing business without morality* - greed is the source of many kinds of evils.
5. *Having science without humanity* - facts must be utilized to fill human needs.
6. *Conducting politics without principles* - like the politician who promises so much to so many.
7. *Expressing worship without sacrifice* - talking about God requires doing for God.
8. *Claiming rights without responsibilities* - individual freedom must not infringe on the freedom of others.

Can we have the benefits of these issues without their corresponding obligations? To the Gandhi list of eight mistakes, others can be added.

9. Getting married without commitments - two become and must stay as one.
10. Enacting punishment without a second chance - one may fall, give a chance to stand up again.
11. Having a vision without a plan - implementing a vision is as important as having a vision.
12. Expecting progress without perseverance - the way around stumbling blocks is persistence without no let-up.
13. Wanting friendships without relationships - friendships are established only after a relationship is developed.
14. Enjoying peace without sharing - give to those who need what you have.
15. Having ownership without humility - the ultimate landlord is God. We are only stewards.
16. Making mistakes without correction - the greatest lesson in the universe is not to repeat the same mistakes.
17. Self-survival without helping others - our relationships are perpetuated with sharing and helping.
18. Enjoying variance without control - variance must be allowed as long as it breaks no principle.
19. Teaching others without believing - before you can instruct others you must first believe in what you teach.
20. Time expended without purpose - time use must be stepping stones toward a vision.

God has allowed civilizations to go through the fire for a very important reason. "Now these things which happened to our ancestors are illustrations of the way in which God works; and they are written down to be a warning to us who are living in the final days of the present order." (I Corinthians 10:11, Phillips) God wants humanity to gain a full experience of the effects and bitterness of good and evil. The experiences of humankind has been many and varied - learning experiences, human relations experiences, character building experiences, sympathetic

experiences, government experiences, problem solving experiences and moral experiences. The experiences are intended to teach the consequences of pursuing good or evil. Humankind has acquired from Adam to the present time a magnificent collection of valuable experiences which will provide useful guidance through the ages of eternity. All history is moving toward a goal - "a new heavens and a new earth". A new age has already arrived. Since we're moving toward a victory over evil, future history can be seen as optimistic. The ultimate outcome of things is not to be bad, but bound to be good. The new earth coming in is not a new creation, but the renewal of the present earth.

Can we learn from the mistakes of past civilizations? Can we have the benefits of cultural issues without corresponding obligations? In the practice of civilizations, are there lessons we have learned to guide humanity in the years ahead? What are some of these lessons? If we adopt experience as the matrix of history relating expectations with actuality, then humanity can learn a great deal from experience. History is leading into the future. When we learn from it, the future gets better. The lessons from history are many. Only a few will be briefly described. They are noted as experiences.

1. *The "Value of Life" Experience.* Life must be treated with sanctity and reverence. Life must be protected, enhanced and perpetuated. A fundamental lesson of civilization is that life must breed and breed abundantly. Quantity is a prerequisite for quality. Julius Caesar in 59 BC offered benefits to Romans for large families. Birth control methods were discouraged. Breeding life includes all forms of life - plants, trees, fish, birds, animals and humans. Species are becoming extinct. The hundreds of species have movements of flying, leaping, walking, creeping, crawling and burrowing. When we prevent these movement we are preventing the perpetuation of life in it's many forms. We have learned there is a struggle for existence. There are four distinguishing processes to life: birth and the start from seeds; growth through the chemical transformation of food; reproduction to perpetuate one's kind; and the ability to adapt to one's environment. Disruption of any one of these four processes will disrupt life in any form or specie. God instituted the life force in the first human pair which has been passed on by the procreation process to offspring. Life expectancy for humans is over 75. This is impressive when in ancient Greece and Rome, it was 18. In Medieval Europe, it was 35. In 1850 in the United States, it rose to 40. That's not long ago. The expectancy for life continues to increase. The value of life from the standpoint of it's chemical composition has the following worth: In the 1930's, it was 98 cents. In the 1960's, it rose to \$3.50. In the 1970's, it rose again to \$5.60.



An eastern medical school will give \$20.00 for a willed cadaver. The smallest organism of life is a bacteria about four millionths of an inch in diameter and weighs approximately one billion billionth of an ounce. The largest living organism is the Sequoia Tree of California which attains a height of over 250 feet and weights over 1000 tons. There are over 2 million species of living plants and animals on earth. Approximately, the same number have appeared and disappeared in the long history of civilization either through failure to adapt or through neglect and disruption through humans.

Child sacrifices, in the ancient world, to idols and babies sold to conquering Muslims were wide practices in history. These were done to worship and pledge to the idolatrous gods. In Rome, two thirds of those born outlive infancy. The remaining third died or were killed. Those who survived were the property of their fathers. He could indenture them into apprenticeship, sell them as slaves to pay off a debt, marry them off or simply kill them. Whichever choice was made, it brought the value of life down to an obscene level. Today, abortion of fetuses is taking it's toll in the millions throughout the world. Fetuses, the start and beginning of human life are aborted for economic, social and selfish reasons. Under these conditions, the value of life runs to \$500 - the cost of an abortion. The rise of sex selection abortions are increasing in the Far East. This is the killing of unborn girls. More than one million "legal" abortions are performed in the United States annually. One-fourth of all pregnancies are aborted both legal and illegal.

A woman's life was also very cheap. In ancient cultures, the wife was the property of her husband. The attitude still remains. Throughout history, women were somewhere between a free man and a slave. Fathers often bartered their daughters like merchandise for reasons of the family. Baby girls were killed, aborted or abandoned for a variety of reasons; such as: high cost of dowry at marital time; inability to become part of the family's labor market on the farm; the inability to care for the father in his retirement or illness; or the need to reduce the extra mouth to feed for little value in return.

Women are now making their mark in the world. They are found in the military, in the police, in political representation, and even in the clergy. It is no longer a man's world. It is for both men and women. There has been a mixing of the sexes in jobs, education, professions, military and government in the treatment of equality. This equality is found mainly in the western civilization and hardly exists outside these boundaries.

Killing humans for sport is another example of the low value placed on human life. The Romans were well known for their craving of circus entertainment in the Roman arenas. The gladiators in their fight with each other was a killing for sport. The spilling of blood thrilled the masses. Gladiators, also, would fight to the death, as payment for release as slaves. In one period alone, 10,000 gladiators were killed in the span of only four months. Later, the Romans found feeding the Christians to wild animals equally amazing. Tens of thousands of Christians were sacrificed in the arena for sport or for their unwillingness to worship the Roman gods.

Suicide is still another example of the low value placed on this precious commodity we call life. This is a self-imposed condemnation for life's failings such as serious illness, bereavement of a loved one, social isolation, escape from a critical situation, drug addiction, psychotic disturbance or simply facing a dishonorable or disgraceful event. Committing suicide was a common practice with leaders in government or corporate organizations. The suicidee took their lives to avoid facing the consequences of their failures. The suicide rate in the United States is growing. Annually, 20,000 Americans take their lives. The worldwide figure exceeds 500,000 annually. Suicides are the tenth leading cause of death. It's not hard to see those who think and commit suicide the low value they have placed on their lives.

The value of life through the ages has been very low. It has encouraged the expression "life is cheap". Human life must take top priority in the value scale of priorities. The morality of any society can be judged by the view it holds on human life. Those societies that had a high regard for life have survived. Those who do not, did not survive. The history of humans has been a history of the value of life. The Bible brings value and sanctity to human life. In the eyes of God, life is holy and of great value. Several Biblical expressions underline this value with statements such as - everlasting life, a reward from God for faithfulness, immortality and incorruption of the divine life, the way of life, the tree of life, the book of life, and the river of the water of life. We have learned from history the highest value that must be put on life in its various forms.

2. *The "Evil" Experience.* In a moral sense, evil is contrasted with good. As principles, good and evil have existed as long as there was God. An orderly, harmonious universe would imply a good universe has been the history. Evil disrupts the harmony and results in disorder and disharmony. In a more serious sense, evil creates sorrow, distress and calamity. Fallen human nature can be defined as fundamental predispositions and feelings to behave in certain ways disaligned with God. These feelings and predispositions can be programmed or formed into

habits that give humans both good and bad characters. If a culture is evil or violent, its effects on its citizenry is to be evil and violent. The Circus Maximus in Rome, after its rebuilding by Julius Caesar, could hold 150,000 people. It was enlarged again in the early empire to admit an additional 100,000. This is a total of 250,000 in an empire whose population was in excess of 200 million. In 80 AD, one year alone at the Circus Maximus more than 5,000 animals were killed. They included elephants, tigers, lions, elks, hyenas, hippopotamuses and giraffes. The Roman appetite for blood was not satisfied with animals when it was carried to the gladiators and later to the Christians. Rome had its evil activities, but some in today's world is not exempt from evil activities. Here is a listing of some of the evil activities of today: computer crimes, tax cheating, shoplifting, tobacco, drug traffic, warfare, organized crime, white collar crimes, fraud, arms marketeers, gambling, stealing, killing, pornography, kidnapping, slandering, divorce, abuse, harassment, dishonoring, alcoholic and fornicating. An estimate of the cost of these crimes by the editors<sup>5</sup> of the Almanac of the Christian World is 3.2 trillion dollars per annum.

Has human nature changed in the course of history? Historically, not much. But in the past 125 years, changes have been made and are noted. The poor do not starve with availability of welfare programs. Leaders in government are voted out when their behavior is illicit or illegal. Large countries that invade smaller countries find themselves confronted with a syndicate of countries to stop them. Morals are the rules and laws by which a society seeks to compel its members. Biblical morals are those principles by which its devotees follow in order to align with God's expectation. For over 2000 years, Jesus and his Christian disciples have maintained their Biblical moral codes and principles without help from state governments and its laws. When governments get into the "moral business" there is variability, negligence and often contradiction.

History reminds us that sin has flourished in every civilization known to humans. Even later civilizations have not revealed the sins of early civilizations. The sins before the flood with the Nephilims have never been surpassed. The homosexuality in ancient Rome and the Renaissance has never been revealed. The killing of people with the ancient empires of Babylon, Medio-Persia and Greece have been historic uniques. Prostitution is a continuing sin found in every country of the world. Even dice for gambling was found in the excavations of the ancient city of Ninevah. Humans have experienced good as well as evil over the centuries. There have been recordings of devoted marriages, orderly homes, happy children, good government and even noble people. But the proportions have been small compared to the evil experience. The big sins of ancient civilizations have flourished enormously where

government controls did not exist. When government controls, policies and regulations are in place, sins of the fallen human nature have been checked and controlled. This can be seen today where countries who have policies to guide and police to enforce, the fallen human nature is kept under cover. The moral propensity of today is more a transition between the code of the past to a moral code ahead.

After 6000 years of the evil experience, we have learned that God, as the creator and humans as the creatures both with a unity of purpose can drive out evil to a point where it only exists as a principle. It can happen with God and his guidance of righteousness and humans with their faith and will to do good. When humans expect God to do everything, humans will fail. God refuses to do everything since humans have been given the free-will capability and the endowments of independence, reasoning and creativity.

God in his wisdom has permitted humans to have an experience with sin and evil so that humans can enter eternity with a full knowledge and education of the consequences and unprofitableness of sinful practices. The lessons would motivate humans to forever avoid sin and to forever practice good. This theme was taken up in earlier sections of this book. It is worth repeating since it is a major lesson of learning from the ruins of civilization. The sufferings caused by evils have been endless: injustices, hatreds, jealousies, murders, wars, feuds, massacres, conflagrations, floods, earthquakes, tidal waves, tornadoes, famine, pestilence and diseases. The experience with evil will become a future benefit for humans as an eternal lesson. The two principles of good and evil will always exist, but that evil will remain forever inactive because experience proves it's practice is unprofitable. In the ages of eternity, there would be nothing profitable if all is forgotten. It would be like reliving 6000 years of human experience all over again. Learning from the human experience will be the basis of disrupting and dissolving the cyclic nature of human history. We have learned from history to cooperate with God to get rid of sin and evil in the world.

3. *The "War" Experience.* A major lesson has been learned that war among the nations is a poor alternative for solving problems. No one country has a victory in war. If one perceives that there is a victory, it is only temporary. Everyone loses in war. Soldiers, civilians, property and resources are lost. The costs are high. Throughout 6000 years of the human experience there has been a war fought every 30 years. A computer record from 3600 BC to the present time<sup>6</sup>, reveals the world has known only 292 years of peace. During this period, there have been 14,531 large and small wars in which 4 billion people have been killed. Since 606 BC, there have been

1,656 arms races in which only 16 have not ended in war. From the year 1500 BC to 1860 AD, more than 8000 treaties of peace were signed meant to remain in force forever when signed. The average time they remained in force was 2 years. By far, the most deadly war in history in terms of human life lost was World War II (1939 - 1945) in which the total number of fatalities both battle deaths and civilian casualties, is estimated as 55 million. The Allies mobilized 62 million men and women against 30 million for the Axis countries. There is a need to reexamine the legacies inherited by war. There is a need to learn from this poor alternative to solving problems.

Wars get started when there is conflicts or disagreements over land borders, resource needs such as water, uncontrolled leader ambitions, need for women and reproduction, revenge from a past injustice, desire for freedom and independence from a conquered people or religious dispute over authority or understanding. These basic reasons create strife, contention and war. History teaches that countries in which we live, their institutions, even their laws have come to us through conflicts, civil strife and struggles which often have been the most bloodthirsty sort. Once the winner of the war has left the occupation, the culture that was inaugurated still continues with the conquered. The Balkans are a good example. It was originally Christian from the time of Constantine and his son. When the Ottoman Empire conquered the Balkans, Islam was instituted and forced on the people. Today the Ottomans are gone, but Islam remains. It is a common observation in the Balkans to see Christian churches and Islamic temples side by side in the same country.

War then, is the continuation of unresolved political, economic and cultural argumentations. Unsettled problems are brought to the violent stage for resolution. There are those who think humans are doomed to make war since the nature of the unresolved conflict must be settled by violence. The first stage of this violence is preparation. The second stage is a demonstration of the powers of destruction. The final stage is inflicting the greatest destruction possible within the shortest period of time available. The essence of warmaking is, therefore, the inability to resolve and settle unresolvable and unsettling conflicts.

The first war on record in the Bible was with Nimrod who went forth into Assyria. This constituted an act of aggression and violence. Then Nimrod built cities. In Abraham's day, Abraham mustered 318 trained servants and together with these confederates pursued and defeated Chedorlaomer. Israel conducted aggression and war when they entered the promised land. This was as a result of God's commitment to go and seize the promised land. Conscription of able bodied males was enacted to protect Israel from foreign invasion. In New Testament times,

Jesus foretells of war and introduces a new concept that rewards the peacemaker. “Those who take the sword will perish by the sword.” (Matthew 26:52) He declared to Pilot, had his kingdom been of this world, his disciples would have fought. The Christian warfare up to this time is a war against wicked spirits, against sin’s law, against demons. It is a spiritual fight. A fight waged within the Christian between sin’s law and God’s law. The war is against false teachers. This is not intended to mean false people, but rather false ideas or doctrines. The Christian’s battle against false ideas as their false teachers.

War is not inevitable, nor peace impossible. Nor is the human race genetically designed to be warlike. It’s the inability to handle differences that lead to conflicts. The basis of avoiding physical and psychological wars is to develop the ability and willingness to solve problems well before the violence stage. The violence stage is the final stage in conflict resolution. Since most of the history of civilizations has been to arrive at the final stage, more effort should be made to center on the forestages. This will require a willingness to shift traditional borders of thought and land to accommodate neighbors and their concerns. This is a willingness to change traditional legacies to favor modern day situations. Forgetting the past must be a strong attitude. (Phillipians 3:13) A willingness is needed to share limited resources and avoid greed. (I Timothy 3:3) A willingness must be instituted to cooperate to help the plight of the weak. (I Thessalonians 5:14) A willingness must be developed to acknowledge God as the ultimate landlord. All we have makes us stewards of his resources and nothing more. After 6000 years of the war experience, the truth and value of I John 3:14 speaks loud and clear, “he who does not love his brother remaineth in death”. With these approaches, we have learned war can become obsolete as a method of resolving conflicts. Future peacekeepers and peacemakers have much to learn from the history of civilizations not only of the present time, but also of medieval and ancient times. There is wisdom in the principle of intellectual restraint. There is greater wisdom in rejecting the notion that governing and war belong together. We have learned from history that war to resolve conflicts must be removed as a viable alternative.

4. *The “Slavery” Experience.* History is color blind. Civilizations can develop under almost any skin color. The human race contains a variety of colored people like the variety of flowers, fish and animals. This variety produces results which avoids a monotonous and uninteresting humanity. There are 6 billion people on earth. One and one-half billion are so called white and four and one-half are so called colored. More than one-half of the total population lives in Asia and Africa. Races are classified as distinct, but color composition yields a spectrum from

black to brown to red to paleface to yellow to light. It's a color variety range. Differences in skull, facial and racial characteristics come about from food, climate and activities of life.

Slavery started when conqueror's indentured the conquered. The first slaves were among the Sumerians of Mesopotamia in 2650 BC. Historically, the whites were more often the conquerors and the colored were more often the conquered. All through history, the empires practiced slavery - Sameria, Assyria, Babylon, Medio-Persia, Greece, Rome, Spain, France, England, Portugal and the United States. The largest slave population at any one time was in the city of Rome where half of the population were slaves (500,000). Athens had a slave population of nearly 100,000 which represented three-quarters of the city's population.

Men have enslaved one another for two main reasons: first, as a form of punishment either as transgressors or vanquished warriors; and second, as a response to the demand for men and women to serve as laborers. Organized religion and every type of civilization in history accepted slavery as a normal part of human activity until the late 18th century. During the slavery experience, it was the empires that initiated and perpetuated the idea of white man supremacy since most slaves were dark-colored. The principle emerged - the conquered must serve the conquerors. This principle was woven into civilizations which resulted in the dominance of the white man. This racial inequality may explain the rise of slavery from it's beginning to it's apogee in the late 18th century. This parallels the huge colonial subjects acquired by the empires during this same time. But where are the empires today? They are gone - at least the military ones. So is slavery gone as well. England, once politically dominated close to 700,000,000 people in Asia and Africa. The old expression that the sun rises and falls on England was true. Today, the political dominance of England has disappeared. The "Aryan" race which was proposed by Hitler as the superior race brought about World War II. Nazi Germany was seriously defeated militarily and culturally. The Aryan race lost. Total new forms of empires have risen - the financial empires. The empires are different, but the issues are the same. Enter a skyscraper in the midst of a multiracial section of a city, take the elevator to the forty-second floor, you begin to see that everyone looks the same. The clerical, the maintenance staff, the cleaning staff are non-white, but the center of power running the financial empire bears a remarkable resemblance of almost exclusively white like in the days of the military empires.

Anthropologists like Margaret Mead, Ruth Benedict and Melville Herskovits give evidence that the physical, mental and character qualities may exist because of environmental advantages, geographical opportunities, family

upbringings, educational opportunities and cultural experiences and breeding within and without a racial group. But the nature of race itself is the same. Four blood types A, B, AB, O with traces of Rh are found in all races regardless of the skin color. The anthropologists have provided evidence that there may be inferior and superior individuals within all races. This is to say, there is no superior or inferior race. This is supported scripturally in Acts 17:24-26, "God who made the world and all things in it...hath made of one blood all nations of men to dwell on all the face of the earth". Research anthropologists show the blacks lag behind in academic, health and moral standards because of segregation, discrimination, environs, family and cultural disadvantages. We have learned these factors can impede any race including the whites. If the blacks have produced no great civilization, it is probably due to climate and geographical conditions which frustrated them. It's not likely the white races would have done any better in these same environments. It's notable today, how the blacks have risen to high posts in the professions, the technical, the arts and the sports. This has occurred in the past 120 years despite the thousands of social obstacles. Race does not make a civilization. It is the civilization that makes the race. We have learned that variance is a doctrine of the universe. Identical twins, similar as they may be, differ in hundreds of ways. Variance permeates all aspects of the universe - no two stars are alike, nor are two peas alike. We have learned we must accept and live in a universe with enormous variability and differences. We must care not to force alignment to exactitudes.

The struggle to rid slavery has been a long one. In the early church, the admonition was for slaves to obey their masters since it was not due time to rid it's tentacles. At the early time of Christianity, growth was imperative. This growth took priority over the quality of the social order. The Apostle Paul did admonish good Christian conduct of the masters as well as the slaves. Later in the Christian Age, strong minded evangelicals in 1733, like Lord Mansfield, Chief of the Kings Bench and William Wilberforce, 1811 a member of the British Parliament both confronted the slavery issue and started the movement to halt the slave trade. The British Parliament passed Wilberforce's bill to halt the slave trade. Later, Wilberforce took action to free the slaves. In 1833, 700,000 British slaves were freed. In the United States, Abraham Lincoln (1861-65) with a major, bloody Civil War brought to an end to slavery. Since that time it's practice has been declining throughout the world. Today, an assessment by the Freedom House in New York states 66 countries out of the world's 233 with 42 percent of the world's population termed not free. The bondage of humans because of the color of their skin was brought to an end. The struggle for civil liberties and freedom for Black Americans began to reap it's benefits with the tireless effort of Martin Luther



King. We have learned from history there isn't now, nor will ever be, any race of people on earth competent or suitable to serve as masters over their fellow man. Humans are made of the same blood in spite of the changes in skin color.

5. *The "Despot" Experience.* Some lessons can be learned from megalomaniac dictators who have absolute autocratic power. These dictators have usurped power over a region, country or empire to a point where they controlled and even disposed the lives of masses of people. To identify the names of a few from history, here is a brief list. Nimrod of the five cities; Nebucadnezzar of Babylon; Cyrus of Persia; Alexander of Greece; the Caesars of Rome; Atilla the Hun; Hitler of Nazi Germany; and Stalin of Russia. Add to this list were the hundreds of kings, potentates, rulers and dictators. We have learned these despots both ancient and modern have always allied themselves with religious organizations and authorities. These despots aligned themselves with spiritual leaders for support of their actions and decisions to keep the ignorant and the superstitious under their control. Alexander, the Great of Greece made sacrifices to the gods to impress his soldiers that the gods were on his side. Julius Caesar when fighting the British lost many battles and couldn't get his troops to be aggressive and fierce. He worked on their superstitions by warning them of the wrath of the gods at Rome if they lost any more battles. It was a turn around in defeating the British. Even Napoleon, agnostic as he was, recognized the fact he could not be monarch for any length of time unless he could get the church as his spiritual police keeping the masses in control. We have learned that people stultified with religious rituals and long term promises of the life hereafter would submit and accept the injustices and dictations of self-appointed despots if their spiritual leaders directed and cajoled them.

Humans have always been in danger when those who never learned the value of life and it's ownership by God and use power to dictate and even destroy life. No person has the right, unless God gives it to him to govern another human without the other's consent. Dictators who deny freedom of choice for others do not deserve it for themselves. Leaders are needed when masses of people are to be organized to accomplish certain projects. But there's a difference between dictatorship and leadership. Here is a brief comparison.

**DICTATOR**

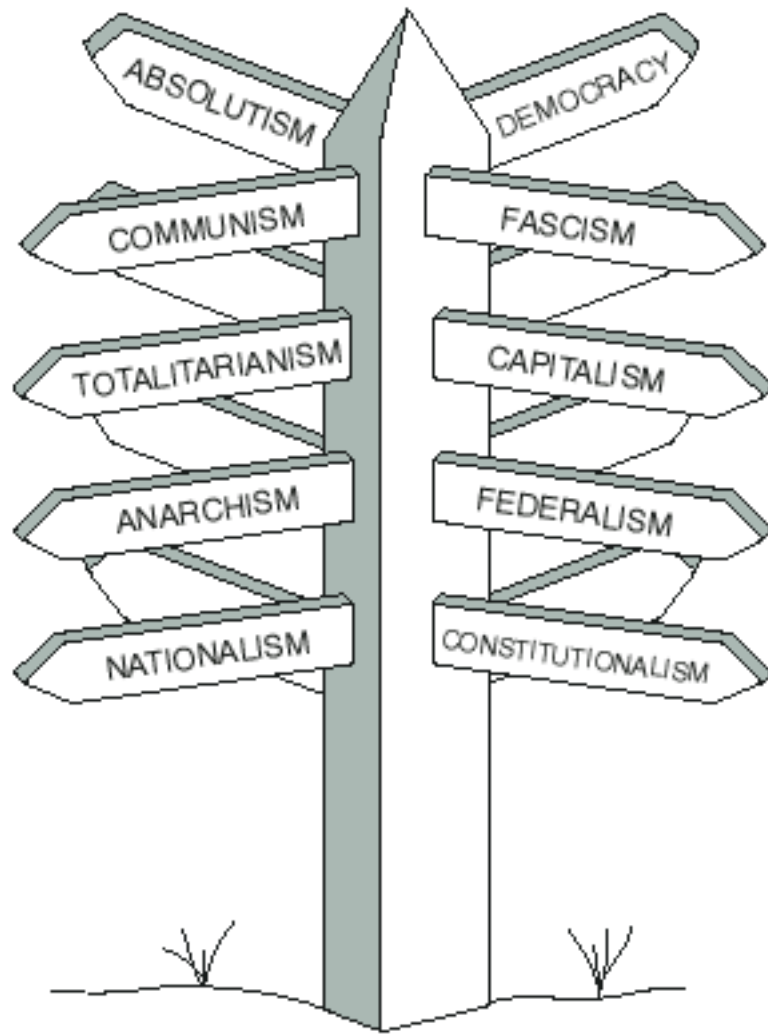
1. Depends on usurped power.
2. Drives people regardless of consequences.
3. Generates fear and terror.
4. Commands with an “I”.
5. Looks for scapegoat when breakdown occurs.
6. Wants others to do it his way.
7. Operates on an impulse action manner.
8. Expects organization to follow his ways.
9. Wants to run the entire “show”.
10. Allows competition among personalities and interpersonal relations.
11. Gives commands with threats.
12. Challenges people beyond ability.

**LEADER**

1. Depends on good will and choice of the people.
2. Coaches people as they drive themselves.
3. Inspires enthusiasm and confidence.
4. Orders ensure with a “we”.
5. Looks for corrective action for breakdown.
6. Wants others to collaborate for the best way.
7. Operates in a research action manner.
8. Tunes up people for ways to improve.
9. Wants to delegate for others to run the “show”.
10. Allows competition in ideas and not inter personal relations.
11. Gives commands with motivators.
12. Challenges people to stretch ability.

A great lesson has been learned from history that there are many styles of leadership. Experience has led to conclude that , free sentiment beings, like humans, prefer not the despot or dictator style, but rather a leadership style where freedom of choice is allowed and encouraged.

6. *The “Government” Experience.* The history of government reveals tyranny succeeds tyranny. Parties succeed parties with little fundamental changes. If there is an application of the cyclical history of civilizations it is in government. In the ancient world, it was the despots and the monarchs who were the governments in control. As time moved on, the emperor as king moved in as head of the state religion. This gave the emperor complete control over the physical and spiritual actions of it’s citizens and those they conquered. As time still moved on, the political ideologies emerged. Here are some of them: Totalitarianism; Fascism; Absolutism; Communism; Capitalism; Federalism; Constitutionalism; Democracy; Socialism and Anarchism. Each of these ideologies produced a form of government. Many do not see anarchism as a form of government, but it is. Anarchism holds that government is not necessary because people have an instinct for mutual cooperation. This obviates the need for regulations by an outside force. See Figure 9.23.



---

Figure 9.23

Taking the Right Direction Baffles Modern Governments

**Figure 9.23 Taking the Right Direction Baffles Modern Governments**

With Israel, the early form of government was Theocratic. Nonetheless, it was not destitute of the usual forms which exists in governments among humans. One form of government was patriarchal where the heads of tribes exercised chief power. In the early church, lay people were given the right to govern the church. It was not government from a central headquarters. It was spread among the members associated with the church. The power was in the vote. The vote of the church members became important. It was later when this right was removed in favor of appointments by central headquarters. Some churches still follow the right to vote approach in governing the church. The longest reign in recorded history was that of Egyptian King Pep II who ruled for 90 years in 2272 BC. He must have been an infant when succeeding the throne. Within 2 years of Pep's death, Egypt was in disarray.

Today, it's democracy and oligarchy that forms the power to govern. It's useless to dispute the value of other forms of government since the forms are basically struggles for freedom by the citizenry versus the struggle for control by the administration - all under different conditions. Here is a list of 251 forms of government practices on the world scene today. 82 multiparty democratic states; 50 one party states (30 are Marxists); 28 military regimes; 20 autocratic-dictatorships; and 71 dependent colonies. Monarchy in the sense of power to govern is on it's way out. Especially those who claim the divine rights of kings. Historically, the monarchy seems to be the natural kind of government since it resembles the authority of the father of a family. But the father has not always been a benefactor or arranger of good things. Hence, democracies have insisted on voting in their "father" to bring about these benefactors with the threat of removal if the benefits were not delivered. Edward Gibbon, the famous historian who captured the essence of the Fall of the Roman Empire compares Roman monarchs. He lists the finest succession of good and great sovereigns the world has ever had were Roman Caesars: Nerva, Trojan, Hadrian, Pirus and Marcus Arrelius. These monarchs practiced the principle that service and happiness of the people is the sole object of government. The succession of their throne was not to their offspring, but to the ablest and best man that could be found. It's little wonder the Roman empire lasted as long as it did. Most Caesars wanted to practice this principle, but few were able to implement it in the most successful way. The prime task of government is to establish and enforce order through laws and to protect the rights of people. Power, naturally concentrates in government.

Does history justify rebellions and revolutions? Are rebellions and revolutions an attempt to reform, change or adjust governments? Are they attempts to get rid of the dissatisfaction of the government? If there are no rebellions or revolutions does that mean, the people are satisfied with the quality and judgment made by governments? Are

movements an attempt to give governments and civilizations a new direction? Throughout history there have been movements, rebellions and even violent revolutions as efforts to rid the status quo and start a new direction. Here are some examples of movement to make adjustments to the status quo. Jesus' Christian movement to make adjustments to the Judaic status quo; Bar-Kokheba rebellion to rid the Roman occupation; Luther's bold break from the Catholic Church over doctrines of faith; the American Revolution against a distant government imposing tyranny and taxation and imported aristocracy; the French Revolution against the rich landowning aristocracy and the collaborative church and the Russian Revolution against the Czar for dissatisfaction with poverty and starvation. One can argue that the effects achieved by the rebellions and revolutions would have come about through gradual compulsion and development. On the other hand, one can argue that the inflexible and out worn institutions would not have changed which justified violent overthrow of government. History teaches there is a need to involve people in government for collecting and correcting dissatisfactions before they become an open revolt.

It appears the best form of government as yet learned from civilizations of the past is a republican form which allows initiative, referendum, recall and depositions of government and it's practices. This checks the arrogance of rulers and the corrupt acts of self-appointed dictators. It allows the involvement of people and their concerns. Historically, the people in past ages were so supine as to endure these corrupt and arrogant acts of rulers. The republics of the world today have, in most part, rid those past civilization practices and behaviors of rulers. Aristotle, reputedly one of the wisest men that ever lived supported the republican form of government as the only government worthy of educated and civilized people. He defined government as the sovereignty of a commonwealth within a whole body of citizens in which the government is conducted for the good of all. Any governing power, individuals or a collective group, that has settled on a people and cannot be removed by the vote of the people is tyranny. Interesting to note, Jews had a republic form of government for 430 years, 3400 years ago. They lived in peace and happiness as long as they were dealing justly one with another.

History teaches that a world order or global government will not come about by a gentleman's agreement or through negotiations or by intellectual debate. It will take a single great power that will dictate and enforce global laws and rights as Rome did from Nerva to Aurelius. A global civilization that involves 233 countries in the world, unified, can only come about by this one great power of insistence and control. Once this global government has been instituted to coordinate and integrate the fractures of human society, then a republic form of government would

be the best course to allow people to govern themselves. People want government to serve them, not the reverse. They want government to represent and preserve their values, not oppose them. There has been an awareness throughout history that governments are dysfunctional. Taxpayers are tired of politicians and government promises for a better life that doesn't happen. Interesting to note, when George Washington became president in 1789, under a democratic republic where people voted in their heads of state, a king ruled in France, a Holy Roman Emperor ruled much of Europe, a Czarian ruled Russia, a Shogun ruled Japan, and an Emperor ruled China. Of all these only the office of the president voted in by the people remains. The Biblical proposal of a one great power with a subsequent involvement of people will be at the time of the Messianic Age with the returned Messiah.

7. *The "Justice" Experience.* Justice is primarily stated in terms of laws, rules and agreements. But it can also include fairness, reason and conformity to principle. It is the generally accepted standards of right and wrong in a country or culture. Obviously, justice cannot exist in a culture without law. Laws provide two essentials for people living together: order and justice. Without order, life would be unpredictable, capricious and even chaotic. No one would be safe or secure. Without justice, the rights and expectations of people would be trampled on. A society would fall apart. To bring one to justice is to bring one before a court for trial or to receive punishment for one's breakage of law or misdeeds. In the United States in 1789, there was one Attorney General and one clerk that composed the entire staff. Today, the Department of Justice represents the largest law firm in the world with its 50,000 employees including more than 4000 lawyers. The principle function of the department is to represent the United States in court. 70 percent of all lawyers in the world are practicing law in the United States. The practice of law, globally has emerged more in the past 100 years than at any time in history. The "rights" movement is largely responsible for this.

Recently, serious statements have been made concerning the quality of justice being served in the court room. One judge said, "the American court room is dangerously out of order". Another judge has said, "the courts must be changed if the justice system is to survive". Several cases point this out. A man who killed a person, stuffed him into a trunk while being transported in his van to be buried was stopped by policemen. The policemen proceeded to search the van and the trunk. They found the body. The killer confessed his crime, was brought to court, tried and convicted. The conviction was overturned because the police search of the van was illegal. In another case of a robbery which led to a killing, the thief was jailed. The items stolen were placed in his cell to gain a confession. The

confession was eventually made and a trial was held. The court room conviction was obtained. the man was without a doubt the thief and the killer. The verdict was overturned because the killer made incriminating statements at the time of the arrest without retention of a lawyer when questioned.

There are hundreds of cases like these in which justice is tilted toward the criminal and against the victim. Unfortunately, hundreds of innocent people have been incarcerated for crimes they did not commit. To avoid this violation of justice, safeguards have been set to protect the innocent who are charged. The exercise of justice in the United States follows the principle that a person is presumed innocent by everyone and anyone until the person is convicted by a jury. Serious questions have been raised about the role of truth in litigated cases. An eastern judge once said, “we have formalism and technicalities in the court room , but little common sense”. Can there be justice without the truth? When truth is not upheld in any allegation, justice is thrown out. The Judicial system is a carefully crafted maze. The truth has a difficult time to prevail over the constructed and elaborate barriers of regulations and procedures.

We have learned what justice means. Justice knows no compromise. There is no deviation from a law. Any deviation that occurs breaks the law and there are consequences to be paid. The conformity to the law requires a precise adherence. There is no grace, no heart, no sympathy, no favor with justice. When there is, the quality of justice declines. It is an exacting measure of truth and righteousness. Love begs to be tender, sympathetic, graceful and heart. Justice on the other hand, demands unyielding conformity in order to strike a path for all to follow. We have also learned that without truth, justice cannot be measured or balanced between the criminal and the victim. The entire process of dispensing justice must first begin with the truth. Throughout the ages truth has taken a back seat incarcerating thousands of innocent people who would have been released if the truth was brought into the court process. God as the supreme judge and statue-giver is a lover of truth and justice. But he balances it with mercy thus providing opportunity for an accused to turn from their wicked ways and thereby, escape adverse judgments. God always rightly requires those desiring to gain his support and approval must acquaint themselves with his standards of justice. As the population continues to increase along with increasing freedom for individuals, the need to have the truth and to be right (that is, in conformity to law) becomes ever so more critical. We have learned from history that truth and justice go together.

8. *The “Rights” Experience.* Human history has produced profound experiences that can guide to an amazing future. The “rights” experience movement is an exhibition of claims made by people against tyranny and poor government. It’s another vehicle for reform. The legal system of the world can be divided into two camps: the common law which is based on Roman and English laws and Civil Law which gradually developed in the European continent. Both of these two systems of law have now spread throughout the world. Americans get over 150,000 new laws and 2 million new regulations every year. The civil rights laws continue to grow. Blue laws, become known as such because of the color of the paper they were printed on, regulated personal conduct compared to Biblical expectations. For example, businesses were not to be conducted on the day of worship which is Sunday for Christians and Saturday for Jews. Most blue laws have been abdicated although the spirit of these laws continue.

The rights of people fall into several categories: legal; prescriptive; moral; or human. These rights become claims or demands expectant or due. Often documents, contracts, letters, constitutions, books, enactments and other paper are used to certify these rights. The Bill of Rights is a formal constitutional declaration or legislative assertion backed by government that defines fundamental rights and expectations of it’s citizens. Other countries have formal Bill of Rights for it’s citizens. In 1948, the universal Declaration of Human Rights was adopted by the United Nations to serve as a standard of the definition of rights among nations. Some of the provisions are: rights to life and liberty; specific protection; freedom of speech, press and religious expression; the right of petition and peaceful assembly; the right to equal protection before the law; the right to public trial; the protection against arbitrary arrest or unreasonable search and against cruel and unusual punishment.

Civil rights have no fixed or uniform definition. Civil liberty is enjoyed by a citizen when he is protected against some government action. It refers to the rights of minority groups to equal treatment of the majority. The phrase is sometimes used to mean nonpolitical rights granted by law. Civil liberties and civil rights taken together encompass freedom of speech and religion, the rights afforded to criminal suspects, the right to participate in the political process and the right to equal treatment under the law. Civil rights may include basic economic and social rights. Civil rights may include basic economic and social rights. Civil rights indicate the ways in which a society protects individual freedom. The word freedom is intended to mean absence of external restraints. This includes the freedom to do what a person thinks is right. This is broad enough to reason that a person is genuinely free to do what is true and what is morally correct.



Human rights can be a part of civil liberties and civil rights. What is new is the adoption of human rights beyond the United States into foreign countries, especially Third World nations who are ruled autocratically and under heavy religious practices as described previously. A world's gathering of 5000 delegates representing 160 nations met in Vienna in the spring of 1993. Their purpose was to define human rights standards, establish how to enforce these standards, and to give the United Nations the global leadership to transcend each country and bring about a global unified treatment for human beings. The United Nations will be the centerpiece government for global unity. The United Nations is establishing and prohibiting regardless of country and location the following practices: torture in prison; incarceration without trial; arbitrary detention; death sentences for non-violent crimes; ethnic cleansing and racism; rape of women; anti-Semitism; equality of employment for women; abused of women by spouses; and politically motivated disappearances. In the discussion in Vienna, a new movement emerged that even the United States does not guarantee - economic rights. This is the right to have a job, a home, health care, a family and care in retirement.

Natural rights consist of allowing human nature to follow what the fundamental principles that order and rule the universe requires. It provides a standard or model against which man made laws could be measured. Natural rights originate in nature or with God and gives humans the right to act accordingly. For example, natural rights give humans the right to self-preservation and protection of possessions. Each person has the right to protect themselves as long as everyone else is doing the same. Killing an alien soldier would render the killer a hero because he protected himself from an invading warlike force. The same killing without war would regard the killing a criminal act with punishment to follow.

The rights experience has only emerged with definition and formality within the past 125 years. But it's scope and formulation is based on 6000 years of the human experience. The human experience defines human needs as follows: food nourishment; vitamin sufficiency; infant survival; disease avoidance; safe water; good sanitation; adequate shelter; firewood or equivalent of heat; slum avoidance; garbage collection; medical care; dental care; employment for self-sustenance; literacy and self-education; pain control; mental health; pollution control; protection from environmental disasters; cultural and national identification; family abuses; language ability; political freedom; religious freedom; equality of rights; access to technology such as electricity, telephone, television, newspapers or radio. Governments are finally realizing their governance must help meet and satisfy these needs. Their efforts must

give the majority and minority equal treatment. The rights movement has not ended. It continues to give freedom and independence to individuals while protecting the interaction with other individuals. Freedom for humans is reaching for the exercise of the free will endowment incorporated in the original pair in Edenic paradise. The United Nations has an unprecedented opportunity to move into a leadership role for promoting and defending the fragile cause of human rights. The UN organization has already documented data citing half the world's population experiences some kind of human rights abuse.

9. *The "Materialistic" Experience.* Materialism is the attention, emphasis and occupation with material and physical objects with a disinterest in spiritual values and activities. Materialistic gain has been a contest among individuals, groups, companies, social classes and countries for identity, status, worth and power. The more that one possesses the more it aids in establishing personal worth in a culture. Unquestionably, people make economic interpretations and equate it to personal success for the materials and assets one gains in a lifetime. These interpretations can be signals or images of power an individual or group is attempting to develop. Money has become a scorekeeper not only for what it can buy, but for the power it can wield. History reveals that men who manage men only manage things, but men who manage money, manages all. The management of money has been the management of power. Note the bankers and their control in agriculture, manufacturing, trade, technology and retail. Bankers control the flow of capital for loans, investments, interests, new enterprises, land development, growth, etc. The natural results of this concentration of wealth is power. It is for this reason, the wealthy few are equivalent to the poor masses. In both Athens and Rome, economic differentiation between the rich and the poor was a huge gap. The French Revolution was a violent attempt to redistribute the wealth to the poor. It succeeded in large measure. It was a transfer from the aristocracy to the bourgeoisie.

A major lesson has been learned that materialism and it's image of wealth, worth and status does not produce happiness. An overview of the world in it's present economic structure reveals an interesting comparison of the rich and the poor as seen in Figure 9.24.

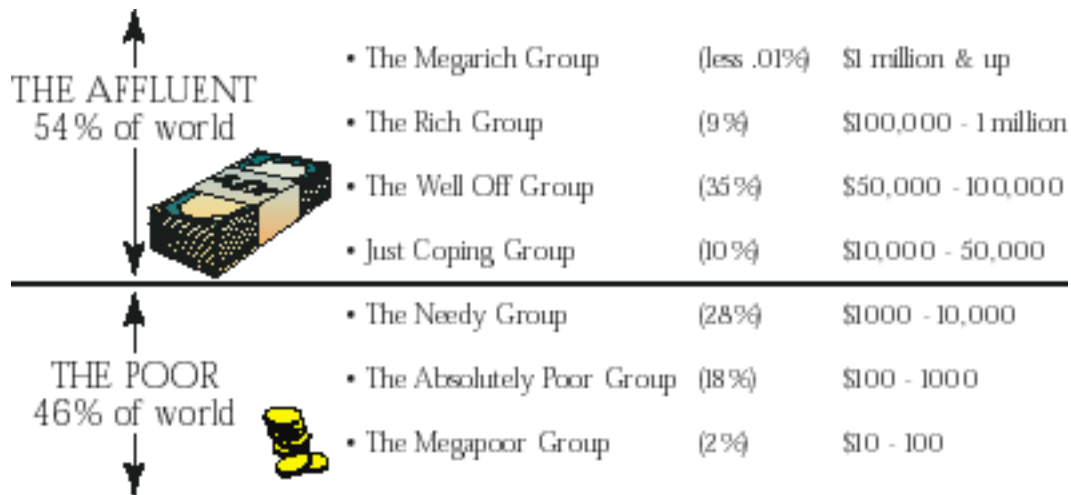


Figure 9.24

## Annual Salaries of the Affluent and the Poor

### Figure 9.24 Annual Salaries of the Affluent and the Poor

Many societies throughout history have been affluent. Israel was an affluent society. This affluency was a sign of God's blessing on them. God did not condemn them for what they possessed, but rather their attitude toward what they possessed. The blessings of materials was not to be a blockage of spiritual pursuits. God did warn them if their attitude continued, He would take away their material blessings. Material things are things of the earth. Things that appeal to the senses. Spiritual things are the things that belong to heaven which cannot be grasped nor appropriated by the physical senses.

Happiness does not lie in the size or quality of an automobile nor the impressiveness of houses nor the quality of clothes nor the acquisition of assets. There are many people who have all these and still lack happiness. There are those who have none or little of these, but enjoy great happiness. Jay Gould, who was an American millionaire, when dying said, "I am the most miserable man on earth". Even Alexander the Great who conquered the known world in his time wept because there was no more worlds to conquer. The high esteem that have accorded in materialistic possessions such as property, objects, collections, paintings and high tech equipment and for the most part, accumulations of just plain "junk" is an empty gain.

There cannot be happiness without values. History teaches that material prosperity is not enough to make people happy. Man is not content merely to sleep, eat and warm himself. All the civilizations of humankind that have existed were rooted in religion and a quest for God. Only the ruins of temples remain.

A great lesson has been learned from the ruins of civilizations. “A man’s life is not made up of the abundance of his possessions”. (Luke 12:15) True happiness comes about from cultivating and satisfying spiritual and human needs. Material accumulation is unimportant as compared to having experiences favorable to the present and future life. Many indeed, are foolish enough to think that abundance of possessions is the only thing worth living for. The accumulation and absorption will shut out or prevent other nobler aspirations. Those who devote their lives and accumulate much find at the stage of death, all must be left behind. There is nothing wrong to be rich as long as one dies being poor.

10. *The “Human Relations” Experience.* One of the great fundamental truths learned in history is that people are different, but we expect them to be the same as us. In fact, we demand that people feel, think and behave as we would. When they don’t, we see them as wrong or ill behaved. Once we accept that people are different, we can explain how to build bridges of relationship with the difference. This is building unity in diversity. Diversity on earth or in the universe shall never change. Relationships are connections between or among different persons by blood, marriage, associations, involvement or emotions. Connections mean linking or bonding with others. A link is anything that forms a chain between and among humans. A system of links creates an association that gives wholeness and totality to a group of people such as a human family. We have learned that no human is an island unto themselves. A father and mother with two children have twelve relationships in the family unit. Father and mother have two relationships between them. Father with each child has 2 relationships each. Mother with each child has 2 relationships each. Child with child makes another two. That’s a total of 12 relationships that bond the family as a unit. If this family unit is involved with 10 other families, the total relationships would be 120. If the world’s population is close to 6 billion and assume one billion family units, then there are at least 12 billion relationships on planet earth.

What are these relationships or links that bond people? How are they established? What must we do to maintain these relationships? But more, what have we learned that can mutually support, continue and reward these relationships. Here are some suggestions:

1. *Respect differences.* Differences will always exist. Differences exist even with a single individual. This results from change, growth, maturity and new discoveries. Having an understanding of why differences exist, why they change and what one can do to build bridges over the differences can be a good first step in the development of relationships. Respecting differences must become an attitude of mind as no two human beings are alike.

2. *Communicate with others.* Communicate with others is by far one of the best ways to develop a relationship with others. Stop communicating and a relationship will disappear. Start communicating with someone and a relationship will develop. There isn't a single relationship anywhere that is reinforced or continued without communications. When communications stop, the relationship may collapse. Many ways to communicate such as letter writing, telephone, fax, e-mail, etc, but the best and most effective method is personal dialogue.

3. *Suspend and control negative condemnations.* Making negative judgments about individuals in a relationship is a sure way to bring a relationship to an end. Negative judgments about someone in a relationship could cause a separation. It's not our differences that separate us, but our judgments about those differences.

4. *Practice of forgiveness and forgetting.* Negative incidents that occur in a relationship cannot and should not be accumulated and released when inappropriate. The practice of forgiveness and forgetting even when not asked is a sure way to continue the relationship.

5. *Practice of helping.* In a relationship, there is responsibility for helping with others by sharing and giving. This might be termed loving one another. Love as a principle is practiced by behaviors in which sharing and giving are exercised one to another.

6. *Have and hold the same values.* Values are often used synonymously with personal beliefs especially about the "good", the "just", the "beautiful", etc. There is no question of the madcap value diversity in the United States that often leads to poor attitudes and intense quarrels. But values are not genetically driven. They are acquired and developed from choices. The choice of values can be guided by authority, reasoning, intuition, emotion, science or experience. Values that have been decided upon will instill an attitude to match with others of the same values. Matching two people with similar values almost inevitably develops a relationship between the two.

Human relationships are first practiced in marriage, later in the family and still later with neighbors and a community and finally to a greater whole we call humanity. A great lesson is learned that we are an integral part of

this whole with interdependencies. The oneness of humanity comes about with an active effort to start and sustain relationships. If everyone does this with common values, the unity of humankind is assured.

Marriages have taken a beating in the past 100 years. It was once considered a stable and noble relationship. But today, it is more an agreement or contractual ritual. In fact, pre-nuptial agreements have become common place with courts to assure and enforce the terms. This legal enforcement has removed marriage from a personal and intimate relationship to a third party and open agreement with government guaranteeing the results.

After 6000 years of the human relations experience humankind has learned the answer to Cain's question, "Am I my brother's keeper?" (Genesis 4:9) After 6000 years of the history of civilizations, we have found out we are without a doubt our brother's keeper since we are inevitably linked and connected in relationships with humanity.

11. *The "Attitude and Learning" Experience.* Attitudes are determiners of behaviors. They influence and control behaviors often in undesirable as well as desirable ways. Very little is known about attitudes since they are entrenched with the complexity of what we call the human being. We know generally that they deal with learning experiences, emotions and values. These factors create mind predispositions to behave in certain ways. As we continue to study and learn then both historically as well as contemporaneously we note the importance as well as the development of them as follows:

- a. Attitudes travel from one person to another.
- b. Attitudes can be learned through rational and logical experiences.
- c. People are usually unaware of the origins of their attitudes.
- d. Attitudes are difficult to change, since they are entrenched in a person's experience and value system.
- e. Attitudes can be changed if the reasons for their development are uncovered and steps taken to deal with them.
- f. Attitudes can be changed over time.
- g. Attitudes are psychological, that is, they deal with emotions rather than intellect.
- h. Attitudes are a form of language that shows and communicates.
- i. Attitudes vary even within a person, which can create conflict.
- j. Attitudes form barriers in effective use of motivators.
- k. Attitudes are significant influences on judgment and behavior.

1. Attitudes can be generally grouped as positive or negative with reference to any situation.

Attitudes, like emotions, can be treacherous masters or useful servants. Attitudes give an idea of how well a person will align or adhere to norms or standards of a culture. Attitudes reveal how easily influenced an individual can be in a given situation. Attitudes provide insight into the kind of motivation and control that needs to be used for a variety of reasons.

There have been many attitudes collected from people throughout the history of humankind. The list is enormous. Of recent a more positive series of attitudes have emerged giving the human experience a wisdom trend. The list suggested here is couched in terms of what people have learned in their lifestyles.

1. People who have had a good deal of formal education find they are still not very wise.
2. People have learned when you win the “rat race”, you’re still a “rat”.
3. People can experience great achievements if they take an impossible idea and make it possible with perseverance.
4. People have “gold” in their experiences if they extract lessons from them for future use.
5. People have learned “deeds” and not “words” are the great contributions to society and civilizations.
6. People who make decisions with kindness and consideration usually make the right decision.
7. People have learned the more they learn the less they know.
8. People have learned that to be a great leader is to be a great servant.
9. People have learned that being an example is the best teacher.
10. People have learned that the search for the meaning of life is the search for the continuity of life.
11. People have learned not to believe what others say, but always believe what they do.
12. People have learned the sure way to rid your enemies is to make them your friends.
13. People have learned that falling down doesn’t make you a failure, but not getting up does.
14. People have learned with God’s spirit, the impossible is accomplished.
15. People get out of life what they aim for, but discover their aim was low.
16. People have learned they feel good when they are generous, but feel better when they are very generous.
17. People have learned the more they focus on themselves the more miserable they become.
18. People have discovered that faith in God starts when they know they are not God.

19. People are persuaded more by how much care and love is rendered than by titles, positions, education or knowledge.
20. People have learned that the greatest catastrophes are those which never happened.
21. People have learned to listen carefully when someone is leaving since it may be the last words you will hear from them.
22. People have learned that fear makes the snake bigger than he is.
23. People have learned not to waste time and sweat worrying about certain things that they themselves can't change.
24. People can see character in others best when they are in crisis.
25. People have learned if you look for the worst in people, you will find it. But, if you look for the best, you'll find it too! More than often the best is greater than the worst.
26. People have learned that the quality of culture depends more on the character of people than the form of government.
27. People have learned that the beginning of wisdom is applying Biblical principles in one's life.
28. People have learned to forget the past except when to learn for the future.
29. People have learned knowing the will of God is the greatest knowledge, but doing the will of God is the greatest doing.
30. People must take charge and responsibility for their own learning and conduct since they are the only ones who have the power to decide what they will be and do.

## VISIONS OF THE FUTURE

“And I John saw the Holy City, the New Jerusalem coming down from God out of heaven.” Revelations 21:2

Biblical prophecy should not be seen as coming only from the book of Daniel nor the book of Revelation. Prophecy or perspectives into the future dominates and permeates the entire Bible. The Bible, from cover to cover, is the future because it's message is hope and expectation. It's message is the solution of revolutionizing and transforming civilizations of the past as well as the present to a new civilization never before experienced. Biblical perspectives are more than a look into the future. They are descriptions of a movement that started in the Old



Testament, carried through the New Testament and connects with the documents that have yet to be written. If one sees Israel as a symbol of the world in general, the prophetic statements concerning these people are prophetic statements concerning the world. God who has been dealing with Israel in redemptive history was also concerned with the redemption of the entire world. Historical Israel has a double aspect: on the one aspect, judgment fell upon her, but hope was given that not all is lost. In the second aspect, judgment fell upon the world, but hope was given that the world would one day be saved.

The kingdom of God really got started in the Garden of Eden. It was very small, only two human beings. The divine intention respecting this kingdom was it should spread and fill the whole earth. Every member of the human family was to be a king. Their dominion is not over people. It was over animals, beasts, fowls, fish, trees, plants and the environment. That's why God said, "be fruitful, multiply, fill the earth and subdue it". The Garden of Eden was the only spot on earth subdued and finished. The rest of the earth was unfinished. God has not changed his intentions of filling the earth and subduing it. After 6000 years, the earth is being filled with humans and planet earth is being changed more and more into a paradise. All through the period of human history God has interjected perspectives that his original intentions have not changed. Figure 9.25 gives a conceptual view of the commission to be fruitful, multiply and fill the earth.

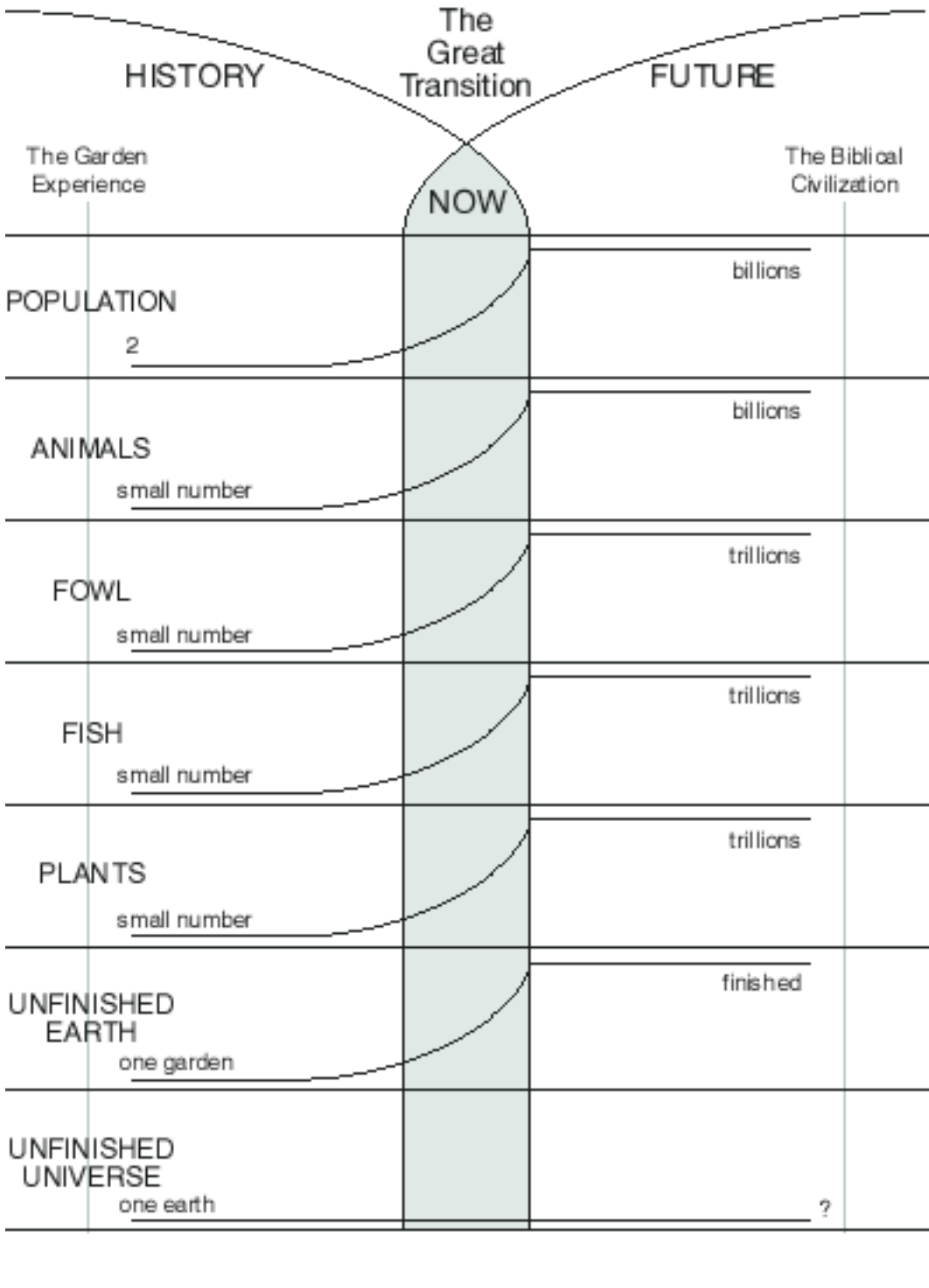


Figure 9.25

Be Fruitful, Multiply and Fill the Earth

Figure 9.25 Be Fruitful, Multiply and Fill the Earth

Below are some prophecies which were given at different period in God's history for humankind, but embodied specifics that one day there would be a takeover on planet earth which we have been describing as the Biblical Civilization. These perspectives in both Old and New Testaments have been given long ago, but are connected from Genesis to Revelation. Some perspectives in the Old Testament have been amplified in the New Testament. Some perspectives originate in the New Testament will continue into eternity. This continuity from the Old to the New confirms that the entire Bible is prophetic. It's the Messianic Age that brings the fulfillment to the long awaited hope and expectation.

Here are some perspectives of the Biblical Civilization.

#### I. *From the Old Testament*

- a. The making of man in the image and likeness of God. (Genesis 1:26)
- b. The expectation and coming of a redeemer. (Genesis 3:15)
- c. The removal of Satan as a source of human problems. (Genesis 3:15)
- d. The establishment of the kingdom of God. (Daniel 2:44-45)
- e. The making of a new covenant. (Jeremiah 31:31-37)
- f. The restoration and reunification of Israel. (Jeremiah 23:3)
- g. The outpouring of God's spirit on all humans. (Joel 2:28-29)
- h. The day of the Lord of judgment and salvation. (Zephariah 1:14-15)
- i. The new heavens and a new earth. (Isaiah 65:17)
- j. The double of Israel - period of favor and disfavor. (Jeremiah 16:14-15, 18)
- k. The coming of the Messiah with his church. (Daniel 9:25-26)

#### II. *From the New Testament*

- a. The second coming of Christ. (1 Thessalonians 3:13)
- b. Times of restitution of all things. (Acts 3:19-21)
- c. The resurrection of all those who died. (John 5:28-29)
- d. The permanent removal of hell. (Revelation 20:13-14)
- e. The high calling to be part of God's Church. (Ephesians 4:4)
- f. Anti-Christ, the man of sin, will emerge. (2 Thessalonians 2:3-4)

- g. The marriage of Jesus with his church. (Revelation 19:7)
- h. The release of Satan to tempt the world for a little season. (Revelation 20:3, 7-8)
- i. Signs of the times give future perspectives. (Matthew 16:3)
- j. The granting of the divine nature to the faithful believers. (II Peter 1:4)
- k. The spiral salvation of the Great Multitude. (Revelation 7:9)
- l. The second death will annihilate the rejected. (Revelation 20:14)
- m. The Armageddon and the end of the age. (Revelation 16:16)
- n. The destruction of Babylon and every unclean agency. (Revelation 18:1-2)

The above listing of Biblical perspectives have loomed on the horizon of expectations for many years. In each period, Biblical adherents had expected a fulfillment of these perspectives in their lives. They died with an unfulfilled hope. Most people, in their period, expects fulfillment of prophecies in their life time. Of course, no one knows nor has a clear idea as to how or when these expectations would be fulfilled. The Biblical saying “the latter days” or the “time of the end” will see many of these expectations begin to be fulfilled. Biblical devotees look forward to God’s intervention in history. “These all died in faith, not having received what was promised, but having seen it and greeted it from afar.” (Hebrews 11:10)

The Bible gives us a vision of the future. It is a book of the past, but it’s connected with the future. In many ways it is a map of life that connects the past, the present and the future. See Figure 9.26 - God’s Past and Future Outline of History and Figure 9.27, the Bible Chronology for God’s Plan. The Plan of God is the map of life which gives meaning to history.

Figure 9.26 God's Past and Future Outline of History in Seven Stages

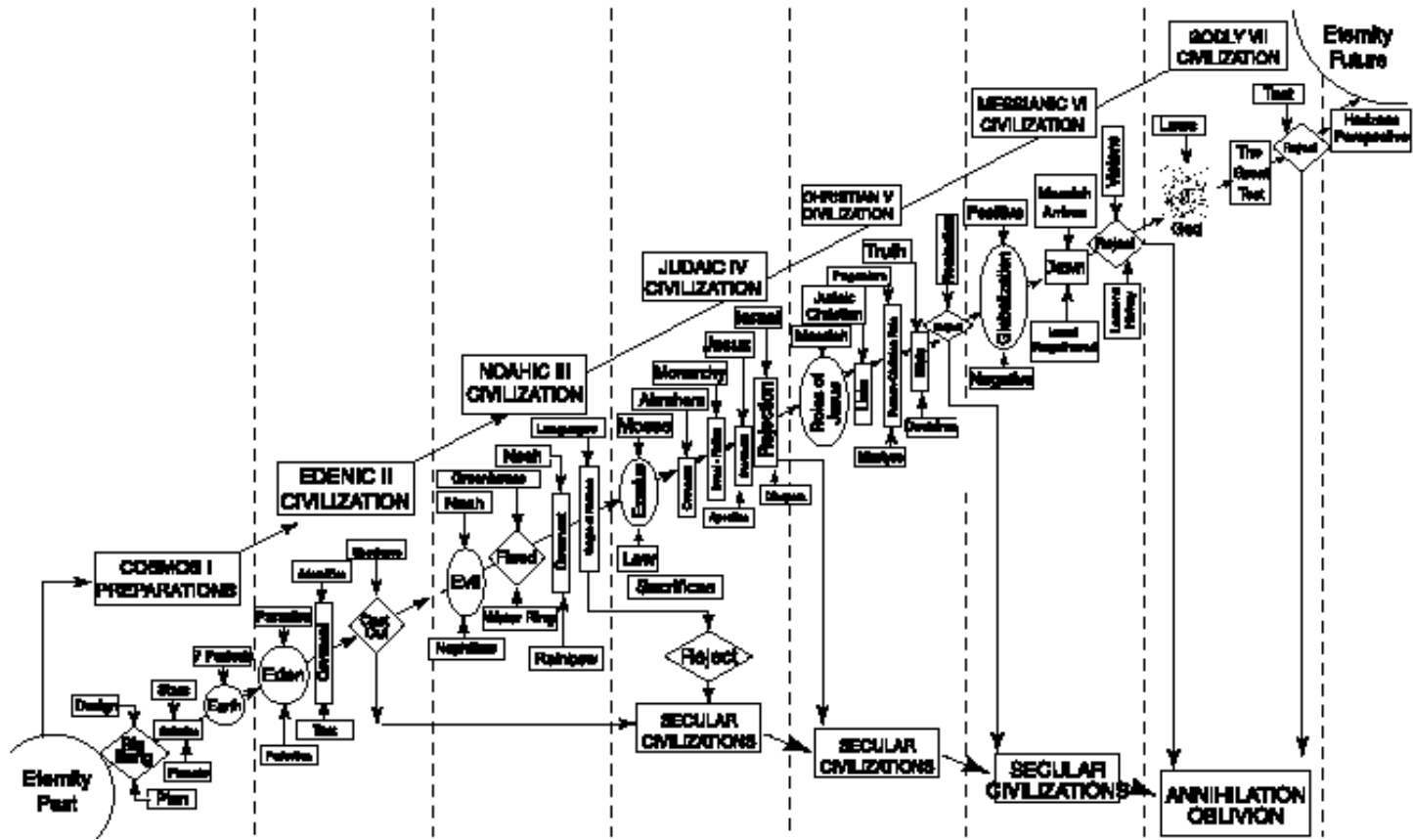


Figure 9.26 God's Past and Future Outline of History in Seven Stages

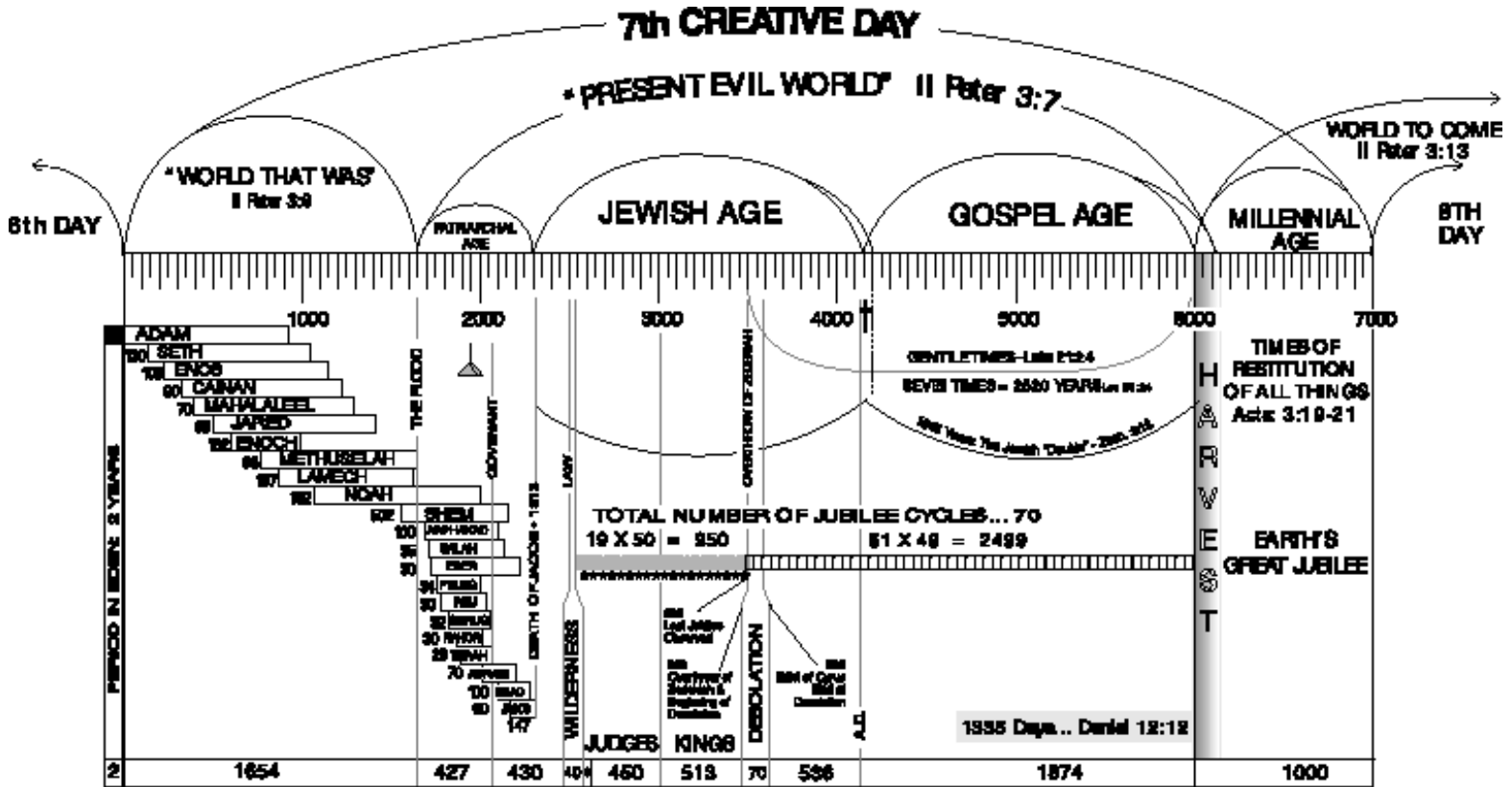


Figure 9.27 Bible Chronology of God’s Plan  
 (Reproduced by permission - Source: Associated Bible Students)

It is a perspective of events with a continuity toward an ultimate set of divinely set goals. God is working out his plan in history. There have been activities and events which try to defeat his plan, but they have failed. God remains in control. History can be seen, therefore, as a working out of God’s purposes. God has interjected from time to time to give his plan an adjustment toward an end. The flood was one adjustment. The involvement of Gentiles in Jewish promises is another. Thus, God is revealed in events such as Noah preaching of a worldwide disaster, the exodus of Jews from Egypt, the wilderness leading of the Tabernacle, the crossing of the Jordan, the inspiration of the prophets, the birth of Jesus, the outpouring of the holy spirit at Pentecost, and the unique revelation of John on the future. This is to say God has revealed himself in the Bible, but also in historical secular events in which there is no record of it. This makes God the Lord of history both religious and secular. God is king and acts in history to bring history toward expected goals. Because God is Lord of history, history has meaning, direction and purpose. God has planned Jesus Christ as the center of history. It is significant that the way we date our calendars, numbering years forward and backward from the birth of Jesus Christ has religious implications in a secular time stream. This implies the birth event of Christ is the single most important event of human history. The coming of Christ at the midpoint of

history means that this is the central event of all ages. The second coming of Christ means that this is the beginning of the Messianic kingdom that is set up on earth, worldwide and will last forever. The Messianic kingdom is the Biblical Civilization that will bring back humankind into harmony with the divine arrangements. God as the great emperor of the universe gives to Jesus, the great Messiah the power to make these arrangements.

In searching for the central meaning of the kingdom of God, one must discard the idea that God rules or reigns over a territory, parcel of land or the planet earth. He already is landlord of these. This idea has been a widely accepted understanding of the kingdom of God. It is a misunderstanding. The kingdom of God refers more to an order of things. It's the reign of God over alienated people. Several areas of this book have referred to the great reconciliation work that must take place in order to bring alienated people back to God. The completed reconciling work means God reigns over his people. The kingdom of God, therefore, is to be understood as the recognition and acceptance of God, obedience to his laws and principles, compliance to his moral and living standards and willingness to serve in a way that pleases God. The kingdom of God means God is king and acts in history to bring history to diverse and directed goals. The kingdom of God means salvation has been inaugurated for those who were lost and God reigns in the heart of these people. It also means that God reigns over his entire created universe. All creatures, divine, spirit, human and the lower forms are in compliant order to God's laws and principles. The kingdom of God is not man's arrangements nor his achievements. Neither is it the culmination of teams of human effort through history. The kingdom of God is established by God through his sovereign grace and it's blessings to all as a gift. Humans enter this kingdom by faith and prayer. They exemplify a willingness to be a member of a new civilization with new laws and human expectation.

Jesus taught and preached to pray for the kingdom of God. This prayer has been uttered for 2000 years by millions of people. The desire for this kingdom has been unparalleled. Jesus made the kingdom of God the central subject of his preaching work. No other subject or teaching is more central than this. Jesus also said, "the kingdom of God is within you." (Luke 17:21) Some have suggested this means the kingdom of God is an inner state of mind or of personal salvation. But this contradicts the context of the scripture text. The new International version of Luke 17:21 states, "the kingdom of God is among you". Other translations state, "the kingdom of God is in your midst." This refers to the fact that Jesus was in their midst to initiate a movement that would eventually envelope the whole world. The movement would have the force and power, in a due time, to replace the existing civilization at the time.

These statements by Jesus involve events taking place right now in the 21st century. Here is a list of the great benefits which will come to humankind in the kingdom of God also referred to as the Messianic Kingdom. The list describes the goals to be reached by the Biblical Civilization. The list is a vision of the future.

1. A civilization in which God will bless all people. (Psalms 67:7)
2. A civilization without wars. All wars shall cease. (Isaiah 2:4)
3. A civilization without hunger. Famine will no longer exist. (Psalms 67:6)
4. A civilization with high productivity. Earth shall yield her increase. (Psalms 72:16)
5. A civilization without sickness. Diseases are gone. (Isaiah 33:24)
6. A civilization with satisfying work. No one will avoid work. (Isaiah 65:21-23)
7. A civilization of unequaled prosperity. (Isaiah 35:1-2)
8. A civilization with resurrected saints reigning with Christ. (Revelation 20:4-6)
9. A civilization in which there will be freedom and justice for all. (Isaiah 42:1)
10. A civilization in which people will not grow old. (Isaiah 65:20)
11. A civilization without prejudice and persecution. (Isaiah 54:13)
12. A civilization with leisure to enjoy all things. (:Exodus 20:8-11)
13. A civilization with moral qualities of love, unselfishness and loyalty. (Psalms 85:10-11)
14. A civilization without crime or violence. (Proverbs 2:22)
15. A civilization with plenty of good things to eat. (Psalms 72:16)
16. A civilization where peace will be between people and animals. (Isaiah 11:6)
17. A civilization with fine homes and full occupancy. (Isaiah 65:21-22)
18. A civilization in which no will die. (Revelation 21:4)
19. A civilization in which all those who died in history will be resurrected. (John 5:28-29)
20. A civilization in which any evil doer will be cut off from the people. (Isaiah 65:20)
21. A civilization with no housing shortages, homelessness or unemployment. (Isaiah 65:21-22)
22. A civilization with health and life for all. (Revelation 21:4)
23. A civilization in which the entire earth will be a paradise. (II Corinthians 12:4)
24. A civilization in which everyone is given freedom. (Galatians 5:1)



25. A civilization which will have times of refreshing. (Acts 19:21)
26. A civilization without fears. (Micah 4:4)
27. A civilization in which truth shall triumph on the earth. (Psalms 85:11)
28. A civilization in which God will pour his spirit upon all flesh. (Joel 2:28-29)
29. A civilization in which the desert shall bud and blossom as a rose. (Isaiah 35:1)
30. A civilization in which sorrow and sighing shall flee away. (Jeremiah 31:12)
31. A civilization in which nothing will hurt nor destroy. (Isaiah 11:9)
32. A civilization in which the knowledge of God will fill the earth. (Isaiah 11:9)
33. A civilization in which the eyes of the blind shall be opened. (Isaiah 29:18)
34. A civilization in which the deaf shall be unstopped. (Isaiah 29:18)
35. A civilization in which death shall no longer exist. (I Corinthians 15:54)
36. A civilization in which God will wipe away all tears. (Isaiah 25:8)
37. A civilization in which the lame man shall leap as a hart. (Isaiah 35:6)
38. A civilization in which streams of water shall flow in the deserts. (Isaiah 51:3)
39. A civilization in which crooked places shall be made straight. (Isaiah 45:2)
40. A civilization in which there will be no more sorrow. (Isaiah 35:10)
41. A civilization where there shall be no more pain. (Revelation 21:4)
42. A civilization where evil will be suppressed. (Psalms 37:9)
43. A civilization where all unrighteousness shall cease. (Isaiah 10:1)
44. A civilization where there shall be showers of blessing. (Revelation 5:12)
45. A civilization where God will write his law in the hearts of men. (Revelation 17:17)
46. A civilization where all shall know God from the least to the greatest. (Hebrews 8:11)
47. A civilization where all iniquity shall be pardoned. (Isaiah 40:2)
48. A civilization where all nations will come and worship God. (Revelation 15:4)
49. A civilization where god will execute judgment and righteousness on earth. (Jude 15)
50. A civilization where the whole earth shall become a garden like Eden. (Revelation 2:7)

The human art of predicting tomorrow on the basis of what we know today - is at best a primitive process. Sometimes it's only an exercise. It is like looking through a dark glass. At it's greatest, it is "grasping for visions" of what might be. The process can never be accurate. It can never produce details on how future outcomes may result from options or choices that are available today. This speculative process, however, can give us a sense of the challenges, the opportunities, and the prospects realizable if managerial breakthroughs are to occur, breakthroughs that are the painstaking work of many people over long periods of time.

This section is on predictions for the future. In many ways it is a listing of conjectures. But conjectures are often needed to start processes of predictions. Prophecies often start with conjecture. Conjecture sets in motion subconscious forces for making the conjecture realizable.

#### *2010 AD Predictions*

1. People's motivations shift from money, career, and status to leisure, independence, rights and freedom.
2. Electric automobiles are used for short-distance driving.
3. There is electronic mail delivery to businesses, corporations and some governments; e-mail is widespread.
4. Salary increases for employees or other forms of compensation increases are given only with supporting productivity data that assure it's justification.
5. Job benefits such as vacations, time off, and insurance are reported weekly and taxed along with job income.
6. Personal goals are practiced formally like goals in companies and groups.
7. Physical-fitness programs for white collar workers are mandated by insurance companies.
8. Videos are used for simultaneous conferences with people in several different locations.
9. Devaluation is common and emerging expedient used by most countries to cope with continuing stagflation.

#### *2020 AD Predictions*

1. Employment for professionals is a business arrangement with a formal contract in which both sides negotiate.
2. Performance appraisals of employees by supervisors are replaced by employee self-appraisals. Employees are sufficiently skilled to execute their own corrections and take their own actions.
3. Age 55 is common retirement age after person has had three minicareers.
4. Interests, attitudes, and self-will are prime requisites for placement and work assignments.

5. Megalopolis integrates into their working systems the political and budgetary discontinuities of many autonomous towns and cities.
6. Product and professional services are legally certified before being sold.
7. Home offices with all the communication devices, conveniences, and equipment found in corporate offices will be a second office for many working white collar workers.
8. Canada, the United States, and Mexico have a unique common market concept and a tightly knit economic system.
9. Written material is printed on thin paper-like plastic from which the writing can be removed efficiently and the plastic sheets recycled.
10. Ninety percent of the corporations in existence began existence within the past ten years and have major products that came into existence within the past ten years.

#### *2030 AD Predictions*

1. Workers are sufficiently skilled to practice self-management. General management is concerned with providing alternatives, resources and coordination.
2. People teach themselves any subject with self-teaching publications, computerized teaching devices and books.
3. Great or nearly impossible projects are accomplished more from the “collective will” of people than from rigidly structured organizations and systems.
4. Information retrieval systems in libraries provide access to any information collected in the past regardless of geographical locations.
5. A monetary system is in operation throughout the world in which value rather than money is transferred. The economy is a computerized credit card economy.
6. Many factories are automated from design to manufacturing.
7. Accurate predictor models are available for selecting people to lead gigantic work centers that assign work.
8. Air transportation of 12,000 miles/hour delivers passengers anywhere in the world within two hours of takeoff.

9. Quality and accuracy are multiplied: watches are accurate to one 100th of a second; solar converters are 99 percent efficient; greeting cards are recycled and used thousands of times; adhesives last a lifetime.
10. Information technology sufficiently sophisticated with statistical indices to track: public happiness by race and geography; individual fulfilled by work assignments and interest; character development toward a super model of expectations.

#### *2050 AD Predictions*

1. Private corporations become work centers and professional workers have the freedom to move in and out of any center on a prearranged and preselected basis.
2. Air-conditioned dome settlements on the moon begin in which heat and food are derived from solar radiation. Moon manufacturing commences.
3. The seas are farmed with domestication of marine life such as lobsters and fish. Large-scale ocean mining is in progress. There are several land farming seasons to ripen crops three to four times per year with artificial light and growth chemicals.
4. Humans are able to speak several languages fluently, to remember most of what they read, and to complete their personal work from any location on the globe.
5. The life span has accelerated, greatly owing to environmental and nutritional breakthroughs; average life expectancy is 100 years.
6. Warfare is internationally banned and controlled. Disputes are handled and resolved with a world centralized intelligence group in Jerusalem.
7. The population of the earth is housed in self-contained apartment minicities, 200-300 stories high, incorporating food stores, shops, restaurants, swimming pools, leisure activities and parking.
8. Swift automated transportation systems are able to move masses of people great distances within a matter of minutes.
9. Zero population growth has been achieved throughout the world, since most nations have signed population stabilization agreements.
10. Science, technology, politics, economics, and religion are integrated so that decisions in one area are not to be made until the impact in other areas is well known.

## CHAPTER 10

### REGROWTH OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION

Biblical Civilization: decline or regrowth. Laws of Civilizations: lifestyle; continuity; conformity; vigor; values; commitment; variation; achievement. Outcomes of the Biblical Civilization. God's Civilization. Universals operating in God's Kingdom. The Little Season - the great test. Horizons and perspectives. Future encounters: perfection of humans. Extension of body capabilities. Concluding population growth. Accommodating huge global populations. Mind over matter in healing. Warming of the earth. New products. Colonization of other planets. Reflections on life's questions: Who are we? What is the meaning of life? Why are things the way they are? How can we perceive God? What is the origin of the universe and life? Why is there evil? Where are we going? Will the world come to an end? Is there a future life?

#### BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION: DECLINE OR REGROWTH?

“And he shall reign over the house of Jacob forever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.” Luke 1:33

Edward Gibbon's great work on the decline and fall of the Roman Empire detailed with amazing accuracy what caused the Roman Empire as a civilization to collapse. This work gives us insight on factors bringing a civilization to an end. But the Roman Empire was not the only civilization to come to an end. They all collapsed from a maturity stage even though some of their elements were continued to the next stage. In time perspective, civilizations have been slow to spread and decline even though they have been fast to rise. In less than 53 years, the Romans conquered nearly all of the entire world and brought it under their rule for as much as 500 years. The rise and fall depends greatly on the need and demands of ;the constituents of the culture. Several causes were involved in the collapse of the longest empire in history. Too often, single causes are identified and cited, when in reality, multiple causes are the culprits acting in combinations of circumstances which contribute to the final collapse. Even a sudden collapse

need not be a single cause acting in the short term such as earthquakes, fires, wars or revolutions. Instead, long term trends with multiple effects in combination can bring about short term sudden collapses of the whole culture. Details on the collapse of the Roman Civilization was described in the section on the Christian Roman Empire in Chapter 8.

The summary is as follows:

1. *Failure to have a system of imperial successors.* The death of an emperor required a successor. The political intrigue and the ambitions of the fallen nature from contenders brought about disunity.

2. *Shifting and splitting capitols of the empire.* In Rome, there were three capitols that excessively decentralized the seat of government and weakened it's administration.

3. *Unable to stop the barbaric invasions from the North.* The Roman Empire was global as far as land, military, laws and culture, but it was not global with all people.

4. *Roman treasury was close to bankruptcy.* The Roman economy could not handle the free bread, free circus admissions, and paid soldiers to fight wars. Resources were diminished.

5. *Increased decadence and low morality.* This was not confined to the aristocracy only. It was practiced by the general masses. Family breakups, high debts and rampant sex took it's toll.

6. *Poor leadership to coordinate and inspire.* Leaders in the last phases of the Roman Empire were more military men rather than peace coordinators. This was a failure to see a military conqueror may not necessarily be a peace maker.

These last factors of increased decadence, low morality, resource depletion and poor leadership acting in concert contributed more to the Roman collapse than any other style factor. They were all working trends acting in combination. The rise and fall of the Roman Empire gives us insight into the rise and fall of any empire. See Figure

10.1

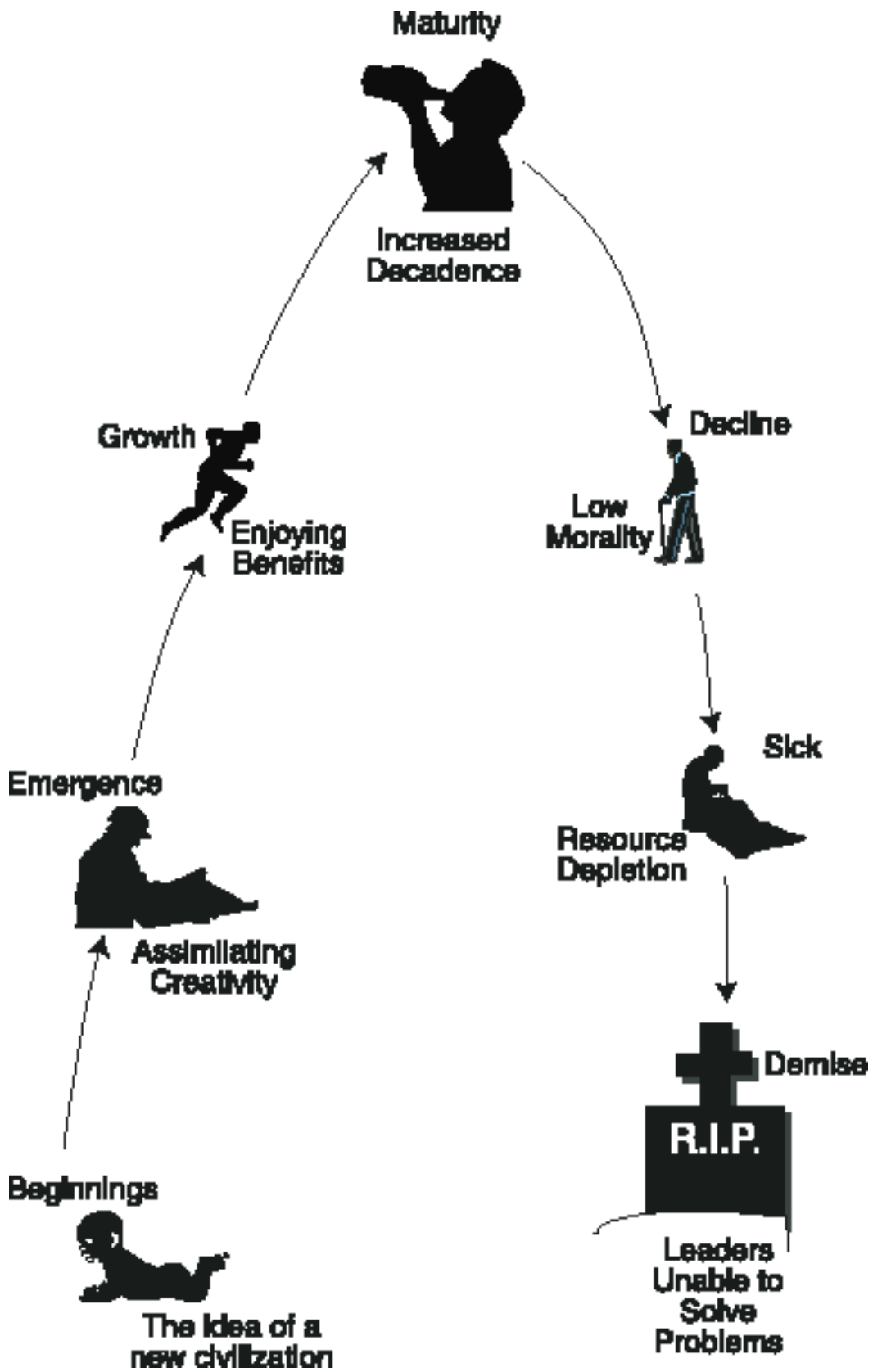


Figure 10.1 The Rise and Fall of a Civilization

A well ordered society of civilization can easily breakdown. Much more easily than is realized by most of the people who benefit from it. It's like employment in a successful corporation. The job provides an income with a variety of benefits on both a short as well as long term basis. Suddenly, one day unexpectedly, the corporate president announces the company must shutdown as it has no recourse. The job, the income, the benefits are surprisingly gone. This is to suggest for civilizations that a balance is set up between the negatives as well as the positives. A sudden change with the negatives and the civilization is on the road to collapse. The key role of force and war from the outside along with the danger and struggles on the inside have been significant factors to upset the balance. It's not unusual to have civilizations taken over by others with a transfer of power, but no fundamental change in the civilization itself. Eventually, if the transfer of power is not accepted and assimilated into the culture, the civilization will eventually collapse and fall away.

The Biblical Civilization operated during the Messianic era will not fall to the same causes which brought about the demise of the Roman Civilization. The Messiah will be the ruler and king that intends to reconcile all people back to God. When this reconciliation is accomplished, the Messiah himself will give up his reign to God who will be the eventual successor. The capitol in the ages to come will be God's throne located in the spiritual heavens. There will be no active enemies as all active enemies will be removed in the Messianic reign. The Roman bankruptcy will not be a problem with the Messianic millennium since resources will be unlimited. There is absolute abundance in the Messianic millennium with a ruler who knows how to handle this unlimited abundance. There will be no life and death struggle over food, water, land, energy, clothes or any other needed resource. Even the natural laws will not limit the Messiah's ability to provide total health, total life, total energy, total strength and total resources. Low morality and increased decadence, also will not be a problem since humans will be given an opportunity to arrive at a state of perfection. The Biblical Civilization will be different in many respects from its predecessors. The most important difference is the change in leadership and rulership. It will be a spiritual administration guiding a human arrangement according to an original design of its creator.

The Biblical Civilization is synonymous with the kingdom of God. This means the kingdom will eventually be ruled by God. The kingdom means the people will accept God. This means there is agreement on the laws and conduct of expectations and behavior as required by God. To grasp what is meant by the kingdom of God is to grasp to the heart the central message of the Bible. It is this central message that draws together the Old Testament and the



New into a complete whole. The question of unity of scripture must be taken seriously if the Bible is to be saved from demise and misuse. Both Old Testament and New have much to do with the kingdom of God and the same God speaks in both. The Old and New Testaments of the Bible stand together as two acts of a single drama. Act I points to it's conclusion found in Act II. Without Act II the drama is incomplete. The drama has no meaning. But Act II must be read in the light of Act I, else it's purpose and background will be missed. The drama of the human experience is organically one. The Bible is one book. If the Bible were given one title for all 66 books, it would be "The Kingdom of God". The pages are the roadways to reach this kingdom.

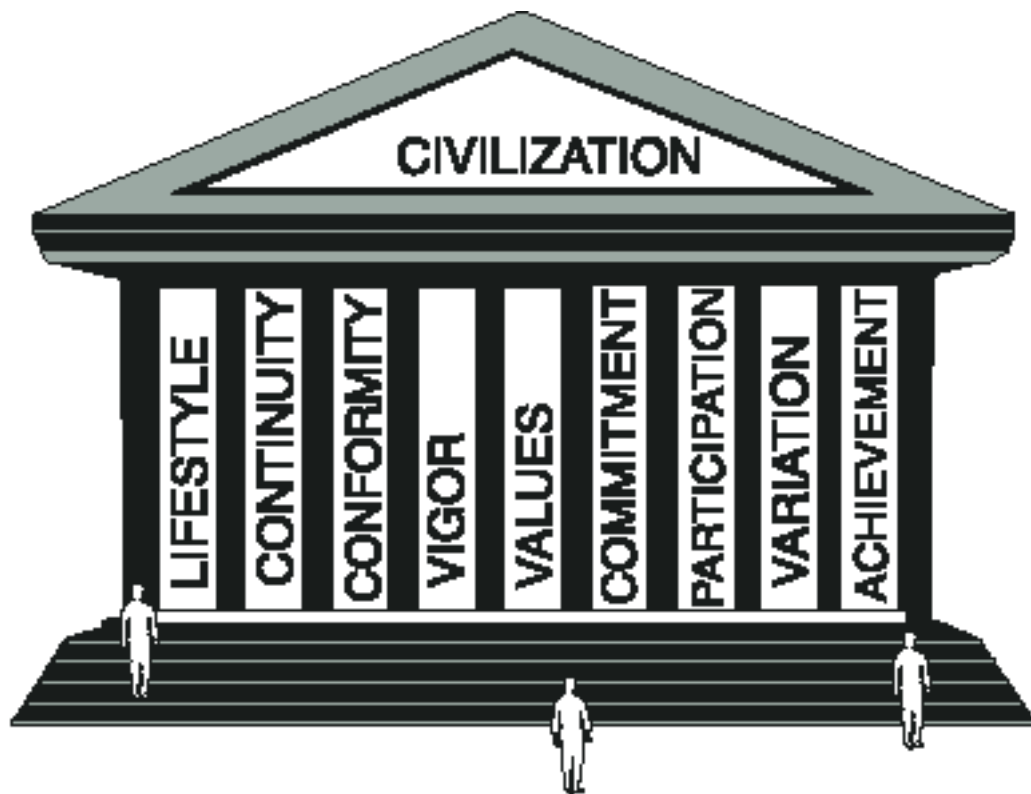
Jesus preached and announced the kingdom of God. (Mark 1:14-15) His major point involved the notion of the rule of God over his people. The notion of a people of God called to live under the rule of God will require the work of the Messianic era with Jesus as the Messiah. It may come as a surprise to learn outside of the gospels the expression "Kingdom of God" is not very common in the New Testament while in the Old Testament it does not occur at all. But the concept is no means confined to the New Testament. The concept of the Kingdom of God permeates the Bible from cover to cover. If God is the Lord of history who works his will in history and if he has chosen to have a kingdom here on earth, surely, he will bring that purpose to a conclusion. The Kingdom of God on earth is the Biblical Civilization that has been described throughout the pages of this book.

A civilization can be a direct and deliberate creation. It can be conceived, designed, planned and organized by God. His plan is known and is now emerging. But a civilization can be spontaneous without planning and forethought organization as seen with as much as 34 civilizations in history. This is another distinction between the two approaches. God's civilization is planned and forethought organized. Spontaneous civilizations are arbitrary and without forethought. Civilizations tend to be an abstract term since most look at the activities and processes rather than outcomes and results. It's preferable to think of civilizations as both process and outcomes. When process and activities are in place certain outcomes are likely to result. Upon reflection, it becomes evident, superficial as it may seem, there does exist laws of civilization which connect with outcomes. Here are some to illustrate.

## LAWS OF CIVILIZATIONS

“For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law; and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law.” Romans 2:12

A civilization exists when a lifestyle based on a unified set of values, laws, customs, knowledge, skills, music, arts, technologies and social arrangements are developed and measured, without any doubt, in a large aggregate of people. The civilization must meet the needs of the aggregate in order to gain their support in sustaining and perpetuating the civilization. The Biblical Civilization at its maturity stage will find its unified set of values, laws, institutions and social arrangements operating globally among all people. It will meet the needs of people in terms of a new life, health, food and resources. These needs will be provided by the Messianic government. The greater the alignment of people’s needs with the government goals, the stronger the culture will remain in existence. There are several strong principles that give support to the existence of civilizations. Here they are described as laws. See Figure 10.2.



**Figure 10.2 Culture Laws are Based on Laws of Civilization**

1. *Law of Lifestyle.* A civilization has culture when the lifestyle of people in the aggregate masses have acquired learned way of believing and adapting that benefits others in the same culture. The learned ways are not instinctive, but acquired by education, training and modeled experiences in both a formal and informal way. The role of religion is important and even dominant. This role pervades the entire aggregate for a consistent unity. The Biblical Civilization at it's maturity stage will have a single and consistent adoption of religious behaviors, doctrines and practices. There will be no diversity in perceptions of God, his program and his expectations. The more this unified perception and understanding of God exists in the aggregate masses, the more cultured will the Biblical Civilization be for the masses.

2. *Law of Continuity.* A civilization is perpetuated when the problems and difficulties that emerge from the governance of behaviors and conduct in terms of laws and expectations are solved in the immediate frame of time. Solutions to problems are not deferred for lack of skill, ability, resources or inaction. The progress of a civilization allows assessment and regulation of activities to make sure what is happening is intended to happen. Evaluating and checking the progress against expectations is an on-going event by government and individuals. The Biblical Civilization will have emerging problems. The biggest problem will be the unwillingness of some individuals to conform to the laws and well known policies of the Messianic reign. The quicker the difference between actual progress of the civilization against planned progress is fed back to problem solvers of the Messianic government, the quicker adjustments can be made to assure progress as intended. This efficient process of solving problems when they emerge will insure the continuity of the civilization.

3. *Law of Conformity.* A civilization is in crisis or it's existence is threatened when an established stability of values, commitments, customs, principles and social arrangements are threatened to be removed by individuals or a small minority in the established masses. When the conflict is high and the disagreements are frequent, the results could be harmful, disruptive and life threatening for the existence of the civilization. The term crisis suggests a major difficulty in the short run that could lead to failure of the government or disruption in the continuity of the civilization. The Biblical Civilization will have individuals or small minorities who will rebel against prevailing laws and expectations of the Messianic reign. These non-conformers will make attempts to change or disrupt the direction the civilization is taking. Quick action by the Messianic government will give these non-conformers a chance to reform or they will be eliminated from further interference. The amount of effort required in getting results for the

Biblical Civilization will be commensurate with the results expected. Crisis in a civilization is avoided when there is conformity by the masses of people.

4. *Law of Vigor.* A civilization has vigor and growth when there are many activities engaged by the masses of people. These activities must be common to large aggregates of people. Activities are not confined to a small group or to selected individuals, but enlarged to involve most if not all people. This activity involvement brings participation and energy, power and strength that results in an overall flourishing culture. The Biblical Civilization will involve, in a significant way, the masses of people. The activity will be appropriate to both individuals and the movement. The activity is directed and connected toward the attainment of the goals of the civilization. The greater the connection of activity toward the goals of a civilization, the greater the unity and vigor toward accomplishing these goals.

5. *Law of Values.* A civilization has values when the “end behaviors” are clearly known and exhibited by a majority of the masses of people. These values act as standards or criteria for guiding behavior. When individuals act in exact conformity with their values, their attitudes become their values. That is, assimilation of a value within an individual is seen and heard by the attitudes of mind they possess. Attitudes are a form of language that shows and communicates. When attitudes are different from expected values, hypocrisy and disunity are produced. This is believing one way, but acting in another. This type of behavior is easily seen and measured. The Biblical Civilization will deal in a major way with experiences, emotions and values. People will see the origin of their attitudes from values. They will be given help to adjust their attitudes since they highly influence judgment and behavior. Additionally, attitudes travel from one person to another. Often control will be needed to prevent “infection” of poor attitudes to the masses of the culture. The greater the alignment of people’s attitude with the Messianic government’s expectations and values, the greater the motivation to accomplish both.

6. *Law of Commitment.* A civilization requires commitments on the part of the constituency that support the civilization. These commitments are the responsibilities to be executed by the constituency. Any given set of goals to be accomplished requires a minimum effort level. Unless that effort level is attained, the results will not be realized. The Biblical Civilization will provide globally whatever is needed by humankind. But this is not a one way street. A covenant will be established between God and individuals in the culture. The covenant requires two parties

to meet and fulfill their responsibilities. The Biblical Civilization is not entirely what God will do for humankind. It will also be what humankind will do for God.

7. *Law of Participation.* A civilization becomes “our civilization” when there is participation by the people in the decisions that affect them without exclusions or separations in religions, science, economics and culture. Participation for the sake of participation does not work. Allowing people to be listened to, to submit ideas, or even to help with the solution of problems helps create “our civilization” rather than anyone else’s. In the Biblical Civilization, participation by the people in the decisions that affect their lives will be encouraged. Personal commitment to work hard for a task, project, or government increases when that individual sees the benefits for this commitment. Freedom to participate in decision making in many aspects of the civilization is more likely to enhance the direction and quality of the civilization.

8. *Law of Cultural Variation.* A civilization may undergo cultural variations because of the creative and imaginative endowments of individuals in the masses. These variations must be controlled so that they do not exceed limits of values and principles of living. The fallen and sinful nature of humans have in history caused variations which resulted in immoral behavior. The Biblical Civilization will impose limits on the human capacity for immoral behaviors. Initially these limits will be prescribed by the Messianic government, but later individuals themselves will hold behavior within certain limits through knowledge, understanding and conscience.

9. *Law of Great Achievement.* A civilization achieves a set of results when desired results are “thought up” and “set down” in smaller interrelated progressive steps. The amount of effort required in achieving these results must be commensurate with the results expected. The Biblical Civilization will be attempting to accomplish great achievements to cite a few. The resurrection of billions of people; the development of people to state of perfection; and the ordering of earth and environment for the comfort and enhancement of the masses. Great achievements are more likely to happen when they are first “thought up” and then broken down and pursued in smaller interrelated progressive steps.

#### OUTCOMES OF THE BIBLICAL CIVILIZATION

“This is the true God and eternal life.” I John 5:20

Any future civilization can least afford to omit religion. Religion has loomed so large in the peoples of the world that it’s elimination would render civilizations impoverished, weak and unstable. If the glory of a civilization

consists of its uniqueness in serving the human family, then religion was and will remain the glory of any civilization. Take religion out and civilization becomes an empty shell. The belief in the existence of God, his plans and purposes, the allowance of experiences to guide the future becomes the main prerequisite for the development of any future civilization. Granted beliefs have taken a wrong turn in direction. The Biblical Civilization under the Messianic reign will give it the new and right direction to avoid the “decline” other civilizations have experienced. This new direction will avoid the same route of its predecessors. The Biblical Civilization will experience at its maturity stage an onward and upward regrowth.

Here are some of the outcomes the Biblical Civilization intends to accomplish:

1. Universal peace organized and upheld by a Messianic government.
2. Universal education guided by truth, wisdom, experience and relevancy.
3. Universal equality of races, genders and nationalities.
4. Universal principles of living and behavior for all humans.
5. Universal harmony between science and religion.
6. Universal language for all to know and use.
7. Universal harmony of the spiritual with the human.
8. Universal solutions to economic and social inequalities.
9. Universal elimination of prejudices of all kinds.
10. Universal beliefs with little or no diversity of beliefs.
11. Universal love and concern for the brotherhood.
12. Universal value-motivated society.
13. Universal justice and mercy rendered by an effective government.
14. Universal safeguards to protect planet earth.
15. Universal health, quality and continuity of life for all.

These outcomes are identified as universals since they will operate on a globular scale rather than in one country or a few countries. These universals help define in a major characterization of the Kingdom of God. See Figure 10.3.



**Figure 10.3 Universals Operate in God’s Kingdom for All**

#### GOD’S CIVILIZATION

“And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.” I Corinthians 15:28

During Messiah’s reign, Stage VI in the progressive stages of the Biblical Civilization, the Messiah will be given full power and authority to do a special work of reconciling the world with God. Reconciliation means to restore and harmonize humanity’s relationship with God. It is for this reason the Messiah will have the power to control the world. His approach will not be like the decalogue composed of negative prohibitions - “thou shall not”. Instead of telling what not to do, his positive approach will be with encouragement - “thou shall do”. This is tolerating,

allowing and urging humans to reconcile. It will not be trodding over their free will. It will be individuals who will see the value and the necessity of reconciliation. This is not to say there will be no “thou shall not”. It means humanity is so enlightened that “thou shall not” will be a recourse rather than a course. The positive approach will be first followed. The negative approach when expected results is not forthcoming. The Messiah will use his power to enforce the laws of God to prevent the reoccurrence of sins and transgressions no matter what the circumstances are. “Whosoever will not obey that prophet will be destroyed from among the people.” (Acts 3:23) The word “obey” implies a command and that command is backed up by the authority to enforce. The Messiah will rule with a rod of iron, but guided with compassion and sympathy. (Psalms 2:8-9) The one thousand year millennial period is set apart for this work. God has assigned to the Messiah, the commission and task to do this reconciliation within a certain period of time with the understanding that after that period, he is to turn the completed results back to God. The reconciliation work will have been fully accomplished. This will bring the Messianic age to a close. But it will start the Godly Civilization that will never close. After having completed the reconciliation work, the Messiah is to resign his special commission since the work is completed. So at the end of the millennium period, the Messiah will no longer be the mediator between God and humans as he was for one thousand years. There will be no need of a mediator since humanity is reconciled and compatible with God. The reign of the Messiah during the one thousand year period will see most of humanity going “up to the mountain of the Lord and to the house of God to be taught of his ways and to walk in his paths.” (Isaiah 2:3)

At the close of the Messianic Age, when all things are subdued under him, then the Messiah himself will be subject unto God so that God may be all in all. (I Corinthians 15:28) All things are meant earthly things and not heavenly things. But God will test all whom he will receive just as in the case of Adam and Eve. This pair were tested. They failed. They failed, largely, for the lack of experience with sin and death. The reconciled world will be tested. They will succeed, largely for their personal experiences with sin and death. This test will not be done to see whether or not they are perfect because the Messianic Age is set aside to help them to perfection. They will reach that state. The test is a test of loyalty, while in the perfect condition, to God to see if they are faithful to commitments, obligations and unswerving adherence to God’s sovereign government. Those who fail the loyalty test will be destroyed and cut off from the blessings of eternal life.



The final act of the Messiah and his Messianic reign will be to deliver up his completed work to God and restart the Kingdom of God which failed in the Garden of Eden. This kingdom will be restarted with all evil and death conquered and removed and a perfect humanity well experienced in the consequences of sin and disobedience. God will resume his reign over the earth and the visible universe, the supreme over all. The Kingdom of God will start with the view of creating a civilization that will embrace all aspects of life. This civilization will be eternal. To all eternity means there will be no opposition to his will. God will have full control. God's government will never cease since it was established under perfect laws and divine rulership. There will be no devil in this civilization since God "all in all" would mean there are no opponents or adversaries. The start and continuance of God's Kingdom will be the start and continuance of God's Civilization. This civilization will never end.

#### THE LITTLE SEASON: THE GREAT TEST

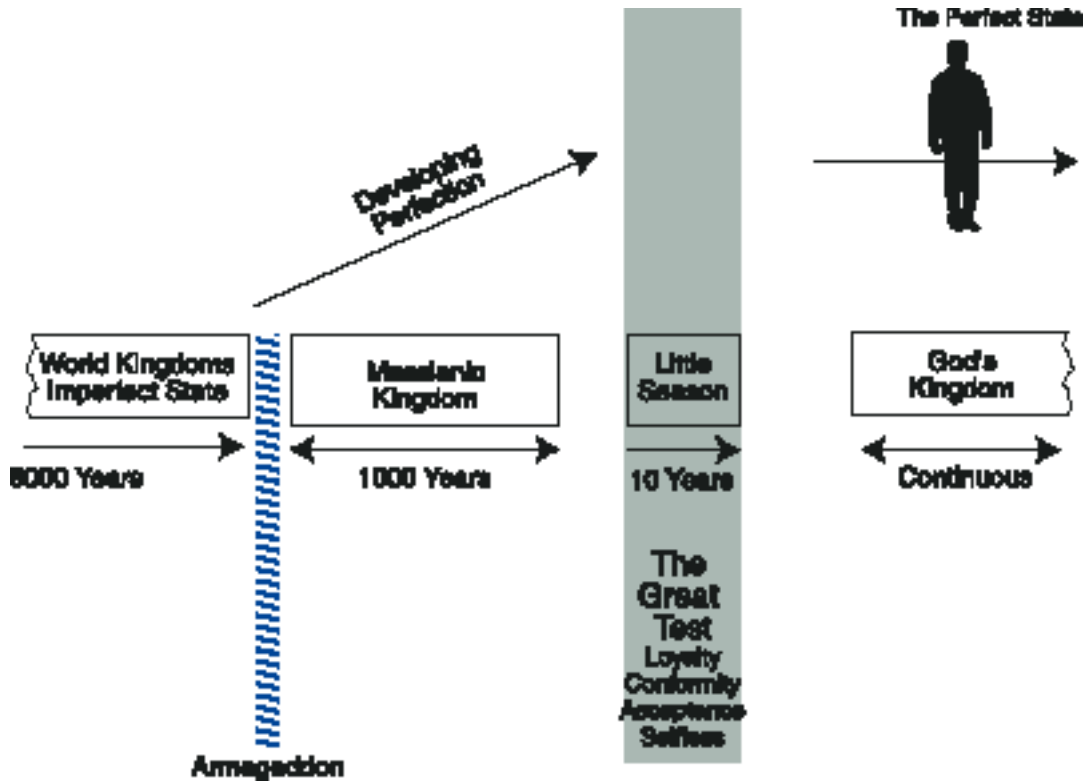
“And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, who is the Devil and Satan and bound him a thousand years and cast him into the bottomless pit and shut him up and set a seal upon him that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years should be fulfilled; and after than he must be loosed a little season.” Revelation 20:2-3

The expression “thousand years” which occurs several times in the book of Revelation gives rise to the term “millennium”. The millennium is that period of time during which the Messiah will reign upon the earth. It will be a time for humanity to develop a character of heart loyalty and obedience to God. The Messianic dominion will be from sea to sea with all governments recognized and giving homage before the Messiah. All nations will serve him. Israel will be exalted and the Gentiles also be blessed. The reign will bring peace, prosperity, long life and righteousness. It will be a period in which resurrected individuals will return to earth for the opportunity to earn eternal life. But these individuals will be tested to judge their worthiness for receiving an eternal inheritance. This will be a final test for all humanity. The test is not to their perfection of human nature, but rather to the loyalty to God. We see similar tests made throughout Biblical history, not to their perfection, but to their loyalty to God. Originally, Lucifer was tested to his loyalty to God. He failed the test. Adam and Eve were tested, they too failed. Noah and the earthbound angels were tested, not as to whether they preferred right to wrong, but to their loyalty. Noah succeeded, the earthbound angels failed. Abraham was tested, he succeeded. He became the father of nations.

Moses was tested, he failed. He was not allowed to enter the promised land. Jesus himself was tested as to his loyalty to the Father. He succeeded immeasurably. The church was similarly tested, again, not to the degree of perfection, but to their loyalty to God and his principles. God will test all as to their loyalty. So humankind, at the end of the millennial age will be tested as respects to their heart harmony with God.

Little is known as to the nature of this great test. If humanity fails the test, the Biblical Civilization will fall by the wayside as did Toynbee's 34 historical civilizations. The test may take the form of rejecting the government, the Messianic reign and its operating policies or may take the form of continued selfishness through ambition and exploitation of their fellow humans or it will be a great dissatisfaction with the rule of God and the arrangements he has made. The little season will be a great test which will be based on loyalty to God. During the millennial period, Satan and his cohorts will be restrained, locked up and exiled from earth. The adversary will be powerless. The world will be free from Satanic deceptions. This in itself will make it a different world from the past 6000 years. Satan is the best example of evil practices since he is the chief leader in wickedness. The term "devil" is intended to mean more than Satan as a person. Devil infers to the total system of evil with its own principles and practices opposite God. The restraint on Satan will permit humanity to develop and arrive at a state of perfect reconciliation with God with no interference from the adversary. This is the purpose of the millennium reign.

The great test will be held following the millennium 1000 year period. The little seasons is the term used for this test. It will probably be a decade long. See Figure 10.4.



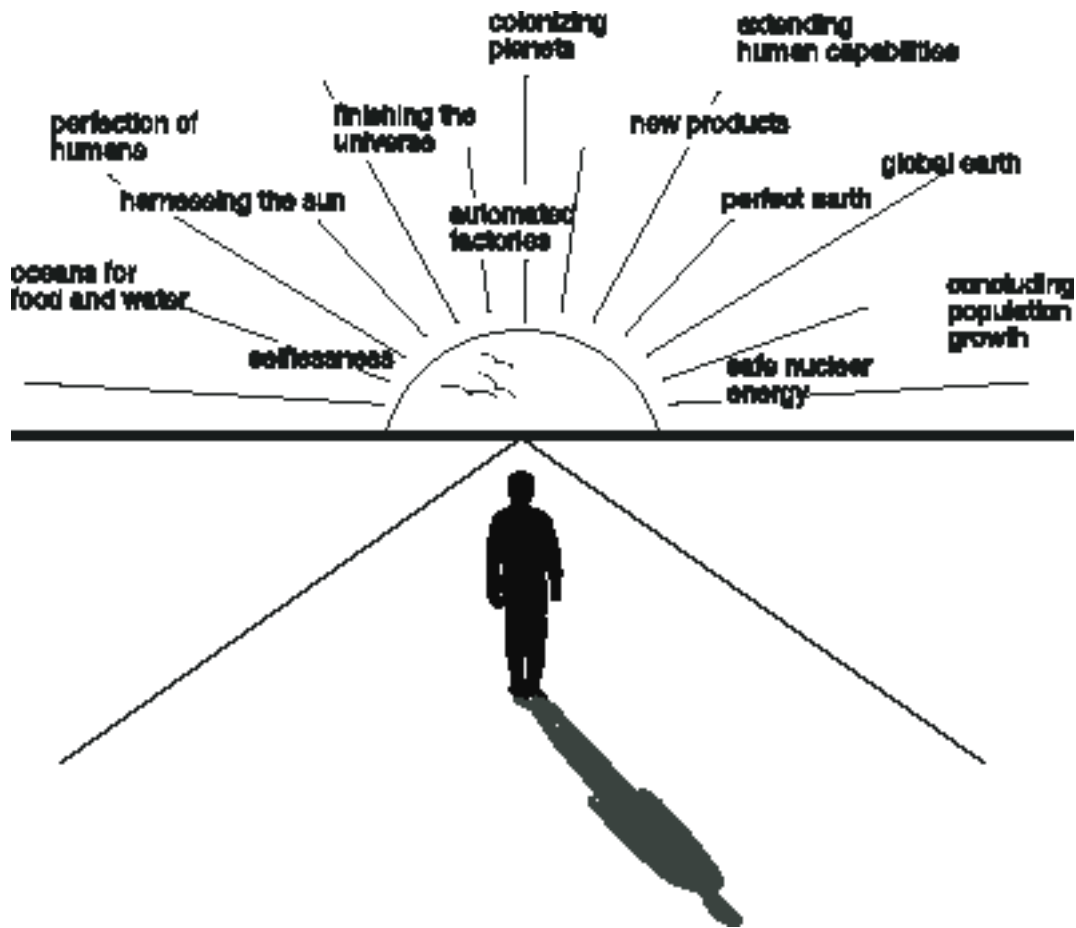
**Figure 10.4 The Great Test to Qualify for Eternity**

Satan and his cohorts will be released from their incarceration and permitted to once again tempt and thwart the principles of God operating in people. It will be like the original test of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. Satan will have the power to tempt humans as he tempted the original pair. It will be the great test for humans in general. The difference between Adam and Eve and humankind 7000 years later is the knowledge and consequences of sin and evil that humans have and Adam and Eve did not have. Humanity will profit greatly over the historical experiences. Humankind will succeed over Satan or any other being that could bring temptation to make people sin. In fact, humankind throughout the millennium period will learn to hate sin and love righteousness so that any deviations will be rejected. The results of this major “little season” test will find most of humanity will succeed, thereby perpetuating the Biblical Civilization into a regrowth stage. Unfortunately, some will fall and not succeed in the test. They will be removed. (Revelation 20:7-10) Thus, God will for all eternity, remove all who do not love righteousness and hate iniquity. The outcome of that great test will be a clean and harmonious universe.

“Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. But God hath revealed them unto us by his spirit for the spirit searcheth all things, yea the deep things of God.” (II Corinthians 2:9-10)

If one woke up in 2874 AD what would the world be like? How can we describe the civilization at the time? How different would it be compared to 1997 AD? What would be the religion on the scene? How would this religion be defined? What would be the science and the cultural at that time? What are the changes and expectations one could surmise for this period? Whatever our imagination might be for this period, it will fall short of the reality since the things God hath prepared for those who love him and expect to conform to his laws are beyond human imagination. If we were creatures on another planet and were asked to design an earth and create human species how close would we come to what is the reality? Obviously, we would not be in a single iota close to the reality. Neither can we predict the exact conditions of what it will be like in 2874 AD.

The uncertainty of the future generates in humans a high reliance on God, his purposes and plans and the directions he is determined to take. We do know, we are on the threshold of the most spectacular changes ever experienced by humanity. The return of people from their previous life is enough to define the future as spectacular. There will be more! Two momentous, historic periods 1700-1850 AD and 1850-2000 AD have emerged as remarkable periods of change and innovations from earlier eventful times. Never in 6000 years of human experiences can compare with these two periods. But the period 2000-2150 AD will go beyond these past historic times. The period 2000-2150 will be a transforming climax to the 6000 years of human history by introducing changes that are awesome. It's two mind boggling to imagine up what will be in 2874 AD. Even at this writing changes made globally in recent years are extraordinarily noteworthy. Names have been used in the past such as the Agricultural Revolution, the Industrial Revolution, the Computer Revolution, the Cultural Revolution and perhaps others. In each case, the labels fall short in describing the reality. To label the spectacular ahead will certainly fall short of what it intends to be. All we can do is to look ahead at the horizon and with an insightful perspective guess what the spectacular might be. See Figure 10.5.



**Figure 10.5 Biblical Expectations on the Horizons**

There will be an encounter with the future for all people. Time will not be gone forever. But an open mind is needed to have a perspective look to the horizon. Having a look about tomorrow will help enrich the meaning of life and to discourage the doomsayer that all is lost. The following sections are not intended to be a forecast of the future. The previous chapter gave Biblical projections based on scriptures. This section is more of a perspective outline based on present trends working into the future. Whether these trends will continue only God knows. The author and reader alike are reminded of the I Corinthians 2:9-10 opening text to this section.

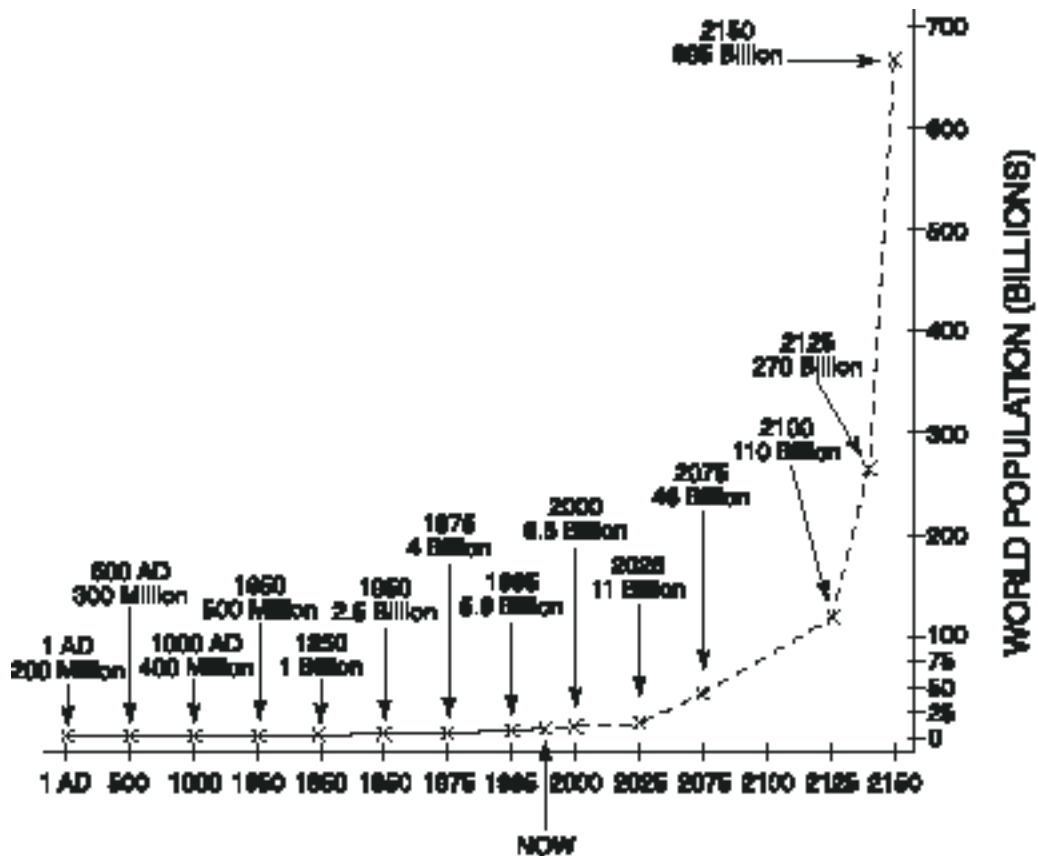
1. *Perfection of humans.* The term “perfection” is in itself difficult to define. Only one person in history was considered perfect and he lived 2000 year ago. Presumably, the perfect human is one who has attained the ideal

physically, intellectually, morally, emotionally and culturally. Even expressed in this way we can't be sure of a precise meaning. Physical perfection would be the most measurable and cultural perfection the least. But what norms can be set up for establishing physical, intellectual, moral, emotional, and cultural perfection? Does running at 10 mph make physical perfection? Does an IQ of 150 make intellectual perfection? Does no temper outbursts make emotional perfection? Does listening to 10 concerts per year make cultural perfection? Moral perfection can be measured in terms of the degree of conformity with God's laws and requirements. To be morally perfect is to be like God. But that sounds like an absolute impossibility. While the state of perfection for humans may be vague, agreement can be found that the perfect human must be much better than anyone now found on planet earth. Physically, it means if no abuse to the body is made, the individual should have no illnesses, sickness or health breakdown. Intellectually, it means sufficient capacity and functional effectiveness to speak, read, write, listen and store information in the brain better than anyone else on planet earth. The ability to understand one another's thoughts before words are spoken might be a new mental ability of the perfect humans. Morally it means knowing, adjusting, conforming to God's laws and expectations. Eventually it means complete control of a person's acute or relatively short lived reactions that is revealed in behavior as well as conscience. This control extends to external as well as internal factors. Also to be emotionally perfect is to have the endowment of joy, excitement, grief, anger, fear and sorrow, but on acceptable levels of human behavior. Culturally, it means possessing the learned ways of behavior and adapting in a lifestyle to the language, arts, science, technology, and social arrangements found in a civilization. While this state of perfection may not be found now in the six billion population on planet earth, the perfect man is in sight. In fact, this human is not only in sight, but must arrive at that state or be overwhelmed with the cultural complexity and challenge that is looming over the horizon. The perfection of humans will no doubt take a long time to achieve with lots of help needed for this achievement.

2. *Extension of human body capabilities.* A look in to the future sees the natural abilities and human capacities elevated and enhanced. It has already happened, but the future see a greater extension of their capabilities. The *eyes* - extended by microscope, satellite, telescopes, eyeglasses, camera, television, searchlight, x-rays, binoculars and radar scope. The range of vision with normal environmental conditions is usually limited to 50-100 miles. With these aids, the eyes can be extended to millions and millions of miles or millionth of size. The *ears* - extended by telegraph, telephone, radio, loud speakers, stereophonic sets, hearing aids, paging systems, voice and hearing are

extended. The *tongue and nose* - extended by chemical analysis, smoke and fume, alarms and cooking recipes. Cookbooks are published in the millions to give ranges of taste from multi-cultural sources. *Speaking ability* has been extended with answering machines, faxes, e-mail, cellular phones which one can use at home at any minute from almost anywhere on earth. The *brain* - extended by books, electronic tape, writings, phonographs, cameras, storage computers, high speed electric computing, data processing equipment and information analysis and storing computers. The *legs* - extended by horse, wagons, bicycles, motor bikes, automobiles, trucks, helicopters, high speed jets, ballistic missiles, satellites. The *arms* - extended by pulleys, levers, fork lift trucks, derricks, hydraulic jacks, robots, mechanical shovels and automated mechanisms. The *sensory* - extended by chemical alarms, smoke alarms, radar, electronic sensing systems, laboratory tests, analysis equipment, heating systems, cooling systems and lighting for night use. Human primordial capabilities and natural endowments have been strikingly extended within recent years. The end is not in sight.

3. *Concluding population growth.* Population, if continued at the present rate of growth and without end can be an immense problem both in quantity and distribution. If uncontrolled, the population can soar to frightening levels never before experienced. This huge growth has only occurred in recent years. The growth of population has been a steady state over the centuries until recent times. See Figure 10.6 with the actual and projected figures. If conditions continue as they are in a century and a half from now, more than 695 billion people, some 110 times over the current population would be on planet earth. That's 12,000 people for every square mile of land.



Source: United Nations

Figure 10.6 Growth of World Population Over the Years

Signs of population control are appearing everywhere except in Africa. China, the largest country in the world has a rigorous policy of population control - only one baby per family. The results in China appears to be succeeding. Zero population growth is a movement adopted by most countries. The United States has hit the zero growth rate a few times since 1960. Zero growth rate means those dying will be replaced with a new baby, but no more. From a Biblical point of view, the issue is “fill the earth”. This was the commission God gave the original pair. The figure of fill the earth is not known.

One aspect of the population problem is the per capita availability of fresh water, food, available land, forest and other needed resources. Another aspect is whether there is available favorable climate and terrain, waterways, harbors and deserts to handle the large population. Still another aspect of the problem is the culturizing and educating this huge population to bring them up to the level of civilization of the twenty-first century. One geochemist estimated if we were willing to crowd closely enough, eat foods which bear little resemblance to foods we eat today and reject the luxuries of gardens and lawns, 50 billion people would not be out of the question. Other estimates have gone to 100 billion. Human ingenuity could construct floating islands where people might live and



algae farms could function. Under these conditions 100-200 billion people is possible. But how many would want to live in a world like this. The entire civilization as we see it developing would be wiped out with only a recovery requiring thousands of years. Of course with advance technology in colonizing the moon and other planets would lessen the criticality of conditions on earth.

Jesus made a profound statement 2000 years ago which throws much light on the population problem. He said, “the sons of this age marry and are given in marriage. But they who shall be accounted worthy to obtain that age and the resurrection from the dead neither marry nor are given in marriage. Neither can they die anymore for they are equal unto the angels and the sons of God being the sons of the resurrection.” (Luke 20:34-36) Jesus was saying in the Messianic millennium the resurrected condition of the world brings people back from their previous life. In the age before the Messianic millennium, people marry, reproduce and the population grows. Marriage was an arrangement that God instituted for the human family to fill the earth. A figure which is not known, but can be estimated between 20-60 billion people. During and after the Messianic period, the function of human reproduction for the propagation of the human race will cease since the earth is filled with people. All the characteristics and peculiarities of male and female will be obliterated. Humans will be sexless, when they reach the state of perfection. The matter of marriage and childbearing would gradually be getting less and less. This is seen even now where birth control has been limited and childbearing is gradually declining. Thus, the population problem will disappear when the function of sex for reproduction ceases.

4. *Accommodating Huge Global Populations.* The number of people to be returned from the resurrection and housed is in the billions. The ability to handle large populations is increasing. Housing means not just a place for eating, sleeping and comfort dwelling, but also a source of sanitation, health control, communications, socialization and sharing of experiences. Vertical self-sustaining cities loom in the horizon as one possible answer to handle huge populations. These are skyscrapers, towers with internal support systems of apartments, supermarkets, shops, restaurants, offices, motels, pools, recreational facilities, concert halls, indoor farms, product corporations, self-sustaining power plants and large parking facilities. All these functions can be housed within one tower. The height of the tower can vary from 250 stories to 1000 stories. They become and function as cities unto themselves. The “no room on earth theory” has been a criticism of the resurrected billions to earth. This theory is now defunct. Calculations in the past with length and width, side by side is now altered to incorporate height and depth. How

many people can be housed in a 1000 story skyscraper or a 500 unit underground facility? The housing technological capability for large resurrected groups are being developed today.

5. *Mind over Matter in Healing.* The power of the mind over the body, it's functions and it's parts has been known for years. Mind control for self-healing looms in the horizon. Humans will control illnesses through mind focus, meditational energy and intense prayer. Even today, mind over matter techniques are being used to treat the sick. The record shows cancer patients have been cured by positive mind control. It's a mental thrust and will power that can attack and subdue cancer cells. Several medical physicians have written books on the healing possibilities latent with mind control. These medical practitioners state all diseases being psychosomatically incurred. This is to note that the well person finds mind and body function together as a unity. Diseases start when there is a division between mind and body. It was Sigmund Freud who made the extraordinary discovery that our minds can operate outside our control with a body that can similarly operate independently. When mind and body are unified, extraordinary things can occur. Mind suggestion and will power for this unity provides a form of energy which has an important effect on healing.

6. *Warming of the Earth.* The scriptures are clear that the four seasons of the earth will never change. (Genesis 8:22) "While the earth remaineth, seed time and harvest, cold and heat, summer and winter, day and night shall not cease." But there's no reason why extremities cannot be lessened or narrowed. Extreme cold nor extreme heat are not conducive to human living. But of recent years, the statistics show the warming of the earth's surface. It has reached up to 57.5 degrees and will continue to increase 3 to 6 degrees by the end of the twenty first century. Many theories are offered on why the earth is warming. For one, there is a small annual snowfall on a global basis. The less snow cover, the more the earth's surface heats up. The more snow, the more sunlight is reflected back into space. For another, the greenhouse effect created by a spherical ring of carbon dioxide pollutants over the earth traps the heat from the sun. This increase of heat distributes on the earth. For still another theory as to warming of the earth is the shifts in solar eruption cycles of the sun. This phenomena states giant solar eruptions that occur in cycles emanate on the sun. This sends to earth larger blocks of energy. Whatever the cause the earth's warming is increasing. The future implications of earth's changes and weather will be less extreme, larger food sizes, larger trees and animals and cleaner air.

7. *Entirely New Products.* Little is known, nor can we conjecture what the products will be in 2874 AD. They will be part of the spectacular of the time. Nonetheless, conjectures can be made of products that will not be in existence. This has been recently highlighted in an article by Barbara Ettore in *Management Review*, September 1996 where she listed many of the products and services we have grown accustomed to will disappear. Products now in existence will be replaced by 2025 AD with superseding products. Here is a sample few products that will disappear in one-quarter century: cash; personal computers; video stores; business attire; keys; stockbrokers; overnight and express mail delivery; business travel; travel agents; insurance brokers; newspapers; dry cleaning; office supplies; telephones; kitchen appliances; floppy disks; classrooms; colleges; cosmetics; conferences and corporate offices. One may quarrel about any and all of these items especially if we fall victims to the replacements. But work at home, new methods of communicating, new technologies, introducing new products, and a whole new society of morality and laws will transform and eliminate the civilizations of the past and current periods. The transformations brought about by the Biblical Civilization will wipe out whole industries in a short period of time. It will be a new civilization from top to bottom.

8. *Colonization of Other Planets.* As we turn our attention to the stars and the universe, we see their unfinished state. The earth and its Biblical Civilization are only seeds for a future application in the universe. There are at least six trillion stars with possibly one planet per star. That would result in an estimated six trillion planets in the universe. Did God create this unfinished universe to be wasted and non-utilized. If the universe has been designed by God and this book has declared this to be, then the existence of these non-utilized bodies must have some future purpose. If that purpose is never achieved, then God would have failed. Look out some night and see all the worlds about us. Think how long a time would be to order affairs on Mars, Jupiter and Saturn and the six trillion planets in an unfinished universe. This time is so enormous that we are compelled to call it eternity. There must be a reason in nature why something exists. After the Messianic millennium has been completed and the Messiah has helped humankind out of their fallen condition, the Messiah will relinquish and subordinate his kingdom in order it may merge with the total universe of the God of all. The work afterwards will be endless. The billions of suns and planets beyond the power of the human mind to comprehend will be a privilege of work for all eternity. We wonder in amazement at the magnitude of God's future work for the benefit and blessings toward humankind. If one were to conjecture on the colonizing of the moon which is one-third the size of earth, two facts are now established. Humans

have traveled to the moon. Humans have been in orbit for as much as six months with little or no deleterious effects. Perhaps colonization of the moon will be the first. Water and a new atmosphere will be needed. See Figure 10.7.

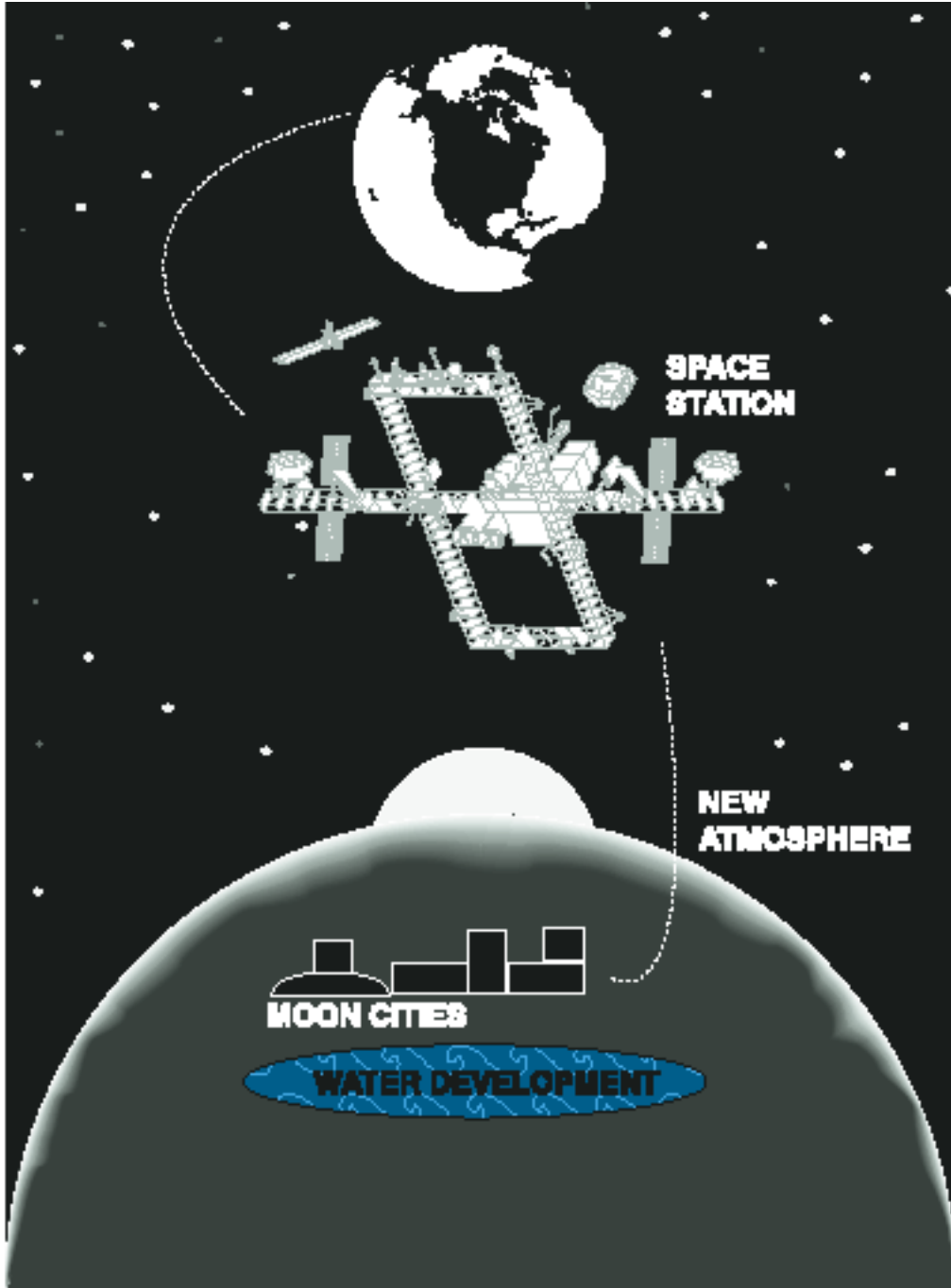


Figure 10.7 Colonizing the Moon Might be the First

There are other innovations emerging in the horizon. Harnessing sun power as a new source of energy will be a very active industry. This in itself will remove 25 percent of the dearth's desert areas. Purification of sea water into fresh water will be made economically viable. The electric storage battery will be developed to replace oil driven devices such as autos, machinery, boats, etc. Cultivation of the oceans for food, medicines and other products will be a big industry. The oceans are seen as an unlimited resource yet to be developed. New forms of nuclear energy will take place, but under safe and secure systems with no threats for large populations. Factory and manufacturing processes will be automated reducing the work week as well as the work day. Abundant raw materials developed through the chemistry of new compounds will be developed, lighter, stronger and safer. It's not difficult to think up new products by applying known principles as possibilities for the future. The spectacular of 2000-2150 AD will be beyond our current imagination. The Messianic era will be the means of introducing and cultivating future changes for the good of all humanity.

#### REFLECTIONS ON LIFE'S QUESTIONS

“Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow. For what is your life? It is even a vapor that appeareth for a little time and then vanisheth away.” James 4:14

This book started with a wide range of life's questions. The search for meaning is the search for the answers to these questions. Since this book is coming to an end, a recapitulation is in order to some of these questions.

1. *Who are we?* What is our identity? How does identity come about? Are we identified solely from what we do? Is it work, careers, jobs, names and addresses the most important identities we have? What differentiates us from other creatures? The Bible claims humans are designed and developed one level below spiritual angels and one level above animal species. (Psalms 8:3-6) The nature of humans is a special design different from the animals in many respects. In one fundamental respect, humans concern themselves with religion and spiritual matters. In another respect humans alone can know the past and be able to reflect on the future. In still another, humans have the faculty of differentiating right from wrong. This is the endowment of morality. It is also the endowment of identity. With this endowment, humans can be in the image and likeness of God. This endowment has diminished in the history of humans. Some would like to remove the morality endowment from individuals and give it to the government and legislation. This cannot be done since morality and reverence go together. Reverence is religion

faced to God. Morality is religion faced toward the world. This gives individuals identity. The individual must integrate the two. In still another respect, humans have the endowment to reason, to create and to have freedom of choice. The reasoning abilities of humans is from cause to effect and affect to cause. This permits humans to trace easily seen effects back to hidden and submerged causes. Many people reason from things they do not know. When they do, they soon believe what is utterly against reason. The creative ability of humans is like the creator. When verified knowledge, full maturity and experimental judgment is possessed by humans, they arrive in the image and likeness of their creator. This is God's major goal for us. (Genesis 1:26-27) All of the qualities described above answer who we are! They give the human race the guidelines to live in the ages of eternity. The history of freedom of choice and self rule has been a disaster in human history. Toynbee's 34 major civilizations exemplify the human inability to set up a lasting civilization. Rome, the longest of civilizations, eventually came to an end. The human experience contains lessons to know opposites; right from wrong, good from bad, order from disorder and moral from immoral. Humans are learning that knowledge of good and evil means nothing more than cognizance of opposites. The issue of the tree of knowledge in the Garden of Eden had nothing to do with eating fruit. The tree was an opportunity for choice in a pair of opposites - good or bad, obey or disobey, life or death. The tree was just a test of making the right choice from a pair of opposites. The vast collection of human experiences will guide freedom of choice.

Who are we? We are creatures who believe in the existence of God. God exists and he is one. This recognition and belief came about because we have collected evidence beyond our small personal self knowledge. Reasoning with this evidence concludes God's existence is the most profound fact of the universe. This belief is not simply intellectual knowledge, but a personal experience of knowing God in one's life. The intensity of this belief varies. Most believe, but continue life as a member of the traditional civilization for which they are a part. Still others, a small group believe, but their belief is of such strength that their lives are changed toward the expectations of a new civilization. We are creatures designed and given life by God which over the centuries is being developed in the image and likeness of God. Life is an opportunity to make choices which will fulfill this image and likeness of God in people. Our actions and daily activities, long as it may be or repetitive as it may seem has meaning if it has some significant accumulation and contribution that can be considered to have been in the direction and purpose of God's goal. In summary, a person's identity is defined and shaped by what the person does and the beliefs they hold.

Examine a person's activities and beliefs and you will know who they are. One must find out quickly what one must do and proceed to do it. God knows we are mortals and one day will die. Make your contribution as quickly as you can. The search for meaning, therefore, is the search for the contribution that God expects us to make in our short lived lives.

#### WHAT IS THE MEANING OF LIFE?

The search for the meaning of life is a search for the continuity of life. Life is possessed by humans, but it comes to an end without choice. Life's continuity must be a future expectation since it has not existed in the past. All continuity efforts in the past have been a disappointment. Nothing has succeeded to break the involuntary journey toward aging and expiration. The future hope for the continuity of life is to recognize something was lost to disrupt the continuity of the past. Efforts must be made to find what was lost and reestablish it. This effort may answer the question "why are we here"? Is the existing, temporary life only an opportunity to find that which was lost? Most efforts today are to add what's possible to the existing life not realizing something is basically wrong with life's roots. There is a sense that this temporary life is a lesson for finding those roots and reestablishing them. Life, then means an opportunity to learn and earn for oneself the qualification for entering the ages of eternity. This requires knowing and doing the will of God.

The loss of life's continuity prompts a search to restore this continuity. Humans seem to be in a meaningless cycle of birth to death with little hope for change. If the Genesis account of the Garden of Eden reveals anything, it reveals a disconnection with a vital element which is crucial to life's continuity. The search for life's continuity summons humankind to return to the source to find what was lost. Meanwhile the Bible provides three goals to give this present life meaning. One, is to collect as much human experiences and lessons as guidelines for living in the ages to come. Experience is God's school, learn well! Experience will give people guidelines built within if they use their own history. Second, is to collect as much knowledge and understanding from the light of many lamps. Understanding is an important "sense" for a human being. It is not the eye that sees beauty. Nor the ear that hears music, nor the nose which smells fragrance, nor the tongue which tastes sweetness. It is rather the mind that understands and relishes the perception of it's many parts. Third, is to make progress for the future. Order and harmony is heaven's first law. Order gives human the conformity to live at peace with God's universe. When this

reconciliation occurs fully and completely, continuity of life will also occur. This is the search for the meaning of life. It is the search for reconciliation with God.

#### WHY ARE THINGS THE WAY THEY ARE?

How do we relate to others and to things around us? How do we fit in to an overall context? Why are we dependent for so many things to sustain life? A purposeful universe suggests the endless variety of elements on earth as well as in the cosmos have an interactive and interdependent relationship. Everything is held together in an hierarchical order by levels and interrelated functions. Nutrient soil cannot function without rain and temperature. Plants cannot live without soil that feeds them. Animals and humans cannot live without the plants. All in turn are nourished by the sun. Planets cannot exist alone. They revolve around their stars. Stars are part of the orbiting solar systems. Solar systems are held in place by the galaxies. All in turn depend on their central black holes which restores their energies and perpetuates their existence. All in the world and the cosmos is dependent on others in one way or another. One cannot exist apart from the another. Everyone serves everyone. Everything depends on everything. God has made no one absolute. Dependence is a perpetual call. Dependence is a principle of human living. It has been ordered that humans are in need of each other. This is one reason why humans must learn to love each other since their existence is vitally dependent on others. This vast interdependence serves an hierarchy up to the highest levels. Going up the hierarchy means going up in complexity. Going down the hierarchy means going down to simplicity.

The meaning of self-existence in the context of the way things are is to see, understand and acknowledge one's place in the total matrix of the surrounding worlds. It is like being a puzzle piece that fits to form the total picture. The universal variety with the enormous abundance is held together in a unique macro and micro unity. This phenomenal unity requires a system of laws which regulates and controls order and harmony. This gives the universe a sense of equilibrium. This order and harmony is not arbitrary, but results from a designed universe. A universe in which every component serves. This might suggest the "law of service". There are components which serve upward, downward, sideward, inward and outward. The search for meaning is to see and know the law of order and the law of service operating in the universe. Serving each other and each thing sustains the system of which we are a part.

#### HOW CAN WE PERCEIVE GOD?



What is God like? How can we know him? What is the Biblical view of God? To know God must surely be the ultimate aim of religion. There are many perceptions even with His name. The Muslims have 99 different names for God, but among them all, they do not have “Our Father”. God is the hero of the Bible. Everything that is narrated, enjoined or foretold is related to Him. Since most people are convinced of the invisible existence of a one God, the question remains how can we know him in more detail. Many have said, anyone who knows God has discovered Him not because of their ability to conduct research or analysis. It’s because God has uncovered himself in such a way to those who want to know Him. God’s uncovering is necessary since God cannot be seen directly. He is invisible and will remain invisible.

The Bible claims insights into the nature of God. When we grasp insights and meanings from the Bible that are true and pure, we are collecting perceptions of God. None of these insights incorporate natural or physical features as humans would have. God has a face or front part. (Matthew 18:10) He is spiritual since angels behold his face all the time. If God has a face, he must have other parts. Moses saw His back. (Exodus 33:23) God laughs. (Psalms 2:4) God gets angry. (Psalms 7:11) God hates iniquity. (Psalms 5:5) God gets jealous. (Exodus 34:14) God can become sad. (Genesis 6:6) God is patient. (Romans 8:31) God can create, reason, innovate, predict and make judgments. (Genesis 1:26) God is light. (Isaiah 60:20) God is not like anything on earth except man in his mental and moral image. If God exhibits behaviors similar to human beings, it is because man was made in the image and likeness of God.

In the book of Genesis, it states, “in the beginning God created the heavens and the earth”. This is not the beginning of God, but the beginning of his physical and visible works. God has no origin, nor initiation, nor genesis. He has no end nor termination. “He is from everlasting to everlasting.” (Psalms 90:2) His life principle is like a circle unending without origin or end. Like a perfect circle try to find where it begins or ends. This is a mind boggling concept. God is self-existent, self-contained and self-perpetuating. This is not an attempt to define God for God cannot be defined. He can only be encountered. Only a vague perspective can be grasped. God is a spirit, eternal and unchangeable.

Another mind boggling concept about God, is there will never be a change in Gods. God will never end since he is infinite. Grasping the concept of infinity for finite human minds is supremely difficult if not impossible. One way to comprehend the endlessness of infinity is by stating infinity is a number so big that it is bigger than any number

one can know. Here are some huge numbers. The number of stars in the universe is ten followed by twenty-two zeros. Infinity as a number is beyond that. The hemoglobin count of red blood cells is ten followed by eighty zeros. Infinity is beyond that. The atoms in the universe is ten followed by six hundred and twenty zeros. Infinity is beyond that. Infinity will also be beyond any new number that is conceptualized in the future. God is beyond infinity. God's life is without end.

God is a spirit which cannot be seen with the naked eye. He cannot and should not be described in human parameters. He is not of human substance. Since no one has seen God, there is no idea what God looks like. The anthropomorphic expressions collected from the Bible with reference to human features such as finger, eyes, ears, legs, feet are more symbolic of his nature. God himself has prohibited making any image of him. This is severely forbidden. God must always be distinguished from nature. He is not "mother nature". Mother nature is an expression that describes the self-perpetuating physical environment around us with natural laws allocating abundant resources. Mother nature is the product and results of God's creative ability. The only physical parameter that can be assigned to God is light. The most powerful light in the universe suggesting a never-ending source of energy and power. His judgments of law and order are seen with His dealings with His people. His wisdom and power is exhibited in his creative activities and works. His love is exemplified through His plan for the eventual benefit of humankind. God is love. His attributes add up to four - power, justice, wisdom and love. This helps humans to perceive God as a being. God is given the name of "the good". It is only by dropping a "o" that good becomes God again. The search for meaning is a search for a better and clearer perception of God and his attributes. The search for meaning is, therefore, the search for a clear perception of God, who He is, where He lives, what is His plan and what does He expect of me.

#### WHAT IS THE ORIGIN OF THE UNIVERSE AND HUMAN LIFE?

How did the universe start? Do we live in a designed universe or an arbitrary one? What happened at the beginning? There are three basic views of "how" and "why" the world came into existence. The first view sees the universe, the solar system, the earth, the human family as purposeful. It did not self-originate nor self-start. That is, the order, the symmetry and the harmony among enormous diversity follows a purposeful plan with regulating laws directed by a super intelligence. The intricately constructed parts work together for originating and sustaining life. All organisms such as plants and animals depend upon one another and are designed to cooperate for the purpose

intended. Everything is interdependent and exists for the good of all. Even the universe is calibrated for life's existence. If gravity were pushed upward a few units, stars would burn out faster. If gravity were pushed downward a few units, stars never would be born. The cosmos and earthly systems are under a sensitive equilibrium. These systems did not come about by coincidence nor happenstance. It is a designed plan with regulating, fixed laws to sustain the order of the universe and life as we know it.

The "hot big bang" theory supports the concept of a designed universe. The big bang states the universe started by a singular explosion of an extremely hot source of gases which resulted over time in galaxies, black holes, solar systems, stars and planets. This was the beginning of the visible universe. Since the explosion was an effect of necessity, the cause that started the explosion must be greater than the effect. There is a kind of religion in science. It is the religion of a person who believes there is order and harmony in the universe and every event can be explained in a rational way as the product of some previous event. Every effect must have a cause. As Albert Einstein once said, "Scientists are possessed by a sense of universal causation." This first view of the origin of the universe is compatible with the Bible claims, "Thou Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth and the heavens as the work of thy hands." (Psalms 102:25)

A second view sees the universe, the earth, the human family come about in an arbitrary and random process. It originated itself through a selective evolutionary process. This view states there is no purposeful plan. There is, however, self-organization. Lifeless physical systems that are faced with increasing disruptions will often through self-organization adjust and reform to survive the many causes of the disruption. The freedom to select can bring about prosperity or adversity. Laws of gravitation and conservation of energy are examples of rigid, unchanging processes devoid of any purpose. These laws are not organized for the good of the system nor of humankind. This second view encourages a mechanical explanation of all the phenomena around us. The complex structure of the cosmos developed under a gradual step-by-step series of transformations from simple beginnings to elaborate and more complicated forms. Each successive change is a gradual evolutionary process from predecessors to successors under a cumulative selection. An enormous amount of time is necessary for the constructive evolution to arrive at the advanced state of life which now exists.

A third view of the origin of the universe is an eclectic view. It selects and combines portions of the first and second views. There is a purposeful plan for the design of the universe and life. Incorporated in this design are

unchanging natural laws. The purposeful plan allows an evolutionary adopting process to move from one design to another. Once the design or specie is complete, and “it is good”, the specie is fixed. The plan guides movements and activities, steadily and progressively to nurture and sustain life. But it stops short of interfering with the free will of choice. The plan has a future direction by the planner. Certain people or heroes were selected to move humans in an expected direction, but allow others to interfere if it is their choice. Thus Noah, Abraham, Moses, David, Jesus and Paul were selected to give the plan it’s needed direction. But other leaders were permitted freedom of choice which would work against the plan. Thus, Nebucadnezzar, Alexander, Caesar, Soloman, Genghas Khan, Stalin and Hitler created various forms of cultures and even civilizations that were not in the plan. In fact, they were against it. The third view sees no objection to the process of progressive evolution. Elementary design forms were progressively developed to higher complex stages. The heart and it’s circulatory system found in frogs is also found in man. The frog is a simple and elementary design. The human is a complex and multiple design. One borrows from the other. After arriving at desirable designs, the planner fixes the organism. “In the beginning” suggests the start of the plan which over the centuries produced a movement. But the movement allowed free choice. Toynbee’s 34 civilizations are manifestations of these many and varied choices. The existence of the plan suggests an intelligence behind the plan. Where there is purpose, there must be a purposer. (Psalms 33 and Ephesians 1:9) The search for meaning is, therefore, the search for how the universe and life was started and what needs to be done to continue it.

#### WHY IS THERE EVIL?

Why is there suffering and pain in the world? Why is it no one is exempt? Will it always be this way? How does sins fit in? Human life is filled with shortcomings, errors, mistakes, misunderstandings, misconceptions and evils. But these are symptomatic of an imperfect life. The sources of these imperfections may be ignorance, poor development, lack of education or training and even genetic defects. Many of these may be laid at the door of society, culture, parents, teachers, friends and heredity. But sins are different. Sins are serious. Sins are encroachments of Biblical laws and principles. Sins always imply a certain degree of willfulness or deliberation. Sinners commit sins knowingly with self-will. Mistakes or shortcomings are not intentional. The intentional sinner goes against God. As it were, the sinner opposes God. The faulter, on the other hand, does not intentionally sin, therefore, does not oppose God. This is the reason why people who unintentionally sin, pray for forgiveness of mistakes and shortcomings. In spite of this difference between shortcomings and sins, evil or misfortunes can emerge

from the intentional or unintentional sinners. The Bible describes the fall of Adam and Eve in the Garden. The effects of the fall was to introduce a legacy of imperfections for all of the human progeny. Aging and death is a part of this legacy. Since both sins and shortcomings are non-conformance to Biblical laws and principles, the results are unwanted evils. Conforming to principles or moral laws is a definition of perfection. The entire universe as well as the earth operates under laws. This is how the enormous complexities work in harmony and running like the precision of a clock. The earth circles the sun at a speed of 67,000 miles per hour in 365 days, 5 hours, 48 minutes and 45.51 seconds. The 6.5 sixtrillion ton earth maintains this accurate and consistent time schedule year in and year out with strict and rigid conformity. The earth conforms to this law. Suppose anyone is allowed to set the speed of the earth to suit their personal wishes. If one wants to delay time, 450 days could be selected for the calendar year. Or if one wishes to accelerate time, 200 days could be selected. If six billion humans that live on this earth were allowed this prerogative, the earth would be in chaos. Order would be disruptive. By setting one speed law for the earth's migration and requiring all humans to adjust to this law, order is maintained. Let's take another example. In the world, a red stoplight for autos means to stop the vehicle. Green means to go. This is true in any country, culture or language. The red stoplight is a human invention which has become a human law of behavior throughout the world. This produces harmony. Suppose it were different. In the United States stop was red. In England it was yellow. In France it was blue. In Israel it was orange, etc. There would be confusion and disorder. When everyone follows and conforms to common laws, there is order and harmony, balance and compatibility. When Adam and Eve decided to be in non-conformity with moral laws, it introduced disorder into the universe. The tree of knowledge was really choice of a pair of alternatives, good or evil. That's why it was called the tree of knowledge. Humans have and continue to learn choice which lead to great blessings or dreadful evils. When the Bible demands perfection from it's adherents, it is demanding conformance to principle or moral law.

Suffering has been permitted as a human experience to give people lasting and valuable lessons which result from non-conformity to principles and moral laws. Learning through experience has always been the best way to learn. Unfortunately it teaches slowly and at the cost of mistakes. This learning will be useful to the human family in the future life since built in memories will give decision makers the consequences of breaking laws. Such natural laws as gravity, changing seasons, digestion and exposure to the sun are inflexible. One must conform to them. Humans must, therefore, adjust to these inflexible laws. If there is failure in this adjustment, evil consequences will result.

Similarly, such moral laws which involve flexible choices such as violence, adultery, prevarication, strife, hatred, drunkenness and murders can result in evil if the wrong choice is made. Humans must learn from poor choices to avoid the harvest of evil. Humans are now collecting a magnificent body of instructional information and experimental knowledge to develop and maintain a moral sense of knowing right from wrong. The pain and suffering to gain this knowledge is necessary to prepare humankind as moral personalities for the life of the future. Pain and suffering can be seen in a positive way when related to a promising future. As the Bible states, “to be made perfect through sufferings”. (Hebrews 2:10) Humankind is God’s workshop for making perfect men. The search for meaning is the search for the ability to make righteous choices.

#### WHERE ARE WE GOING?

Is history repeating itself? What is the direction of the existing civilization? Is it many directions so that any road will take people there? What is the ultimate destiny of humankind? A designed universe suggests there are goals to be eventually reached. The overall goal specified in the Bible is the “kingdom of heaven on earth”. Was this not the basic prayer Jesus taught: “May thy kingdom come and thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven”. (Matthew 5:10) There are also sub-goals. These can be seen from that which was lost in Eden. Here is a brief list of what was lost in the Garden of Eden with a sub-goal statement of it’s restoration.

1. An original design objective to develop humans in the image and likeness of the creator was lost. This design objective needs to be firmly reestablished.
2. The right to life was lost. Hence, there is the need for a process to qualify humans to earn eternal life.
3. Access to the tree of life was prohibited and therefore lost. There is the need to reopen the access for the vital and sustaining nutriments of that tree.
4. Equality between the genders was lost. There is the need to restore among humans this equality.
5. A relationship with the creator was lost. There is the need for a reconciliation process to reinstitute this relationship.
6. Heavenly control of earth’s affairs was lost. The need to reprocess earth’s control is a must.
7. A paradise was lost where work, leisure and resources reached their highest levels. This paradise needs to be restored.

These seven powerful sub-goals define in a major way the kingdom of God on earth. Quietly and passively, the human race shuffles along the tedious journey in life looking forward to the completion of these sorely needed sub-goals. Somehow, humans know the sub-goals intuitively. Sometimes they can be articulated even if crudely.

Disappointingly, many have raised the question, is life worth living? Is life with its many difficulties and sorrows worth the trouble? Humans have experienced so many disasters that it's no wonder they raise these questions. Those who have a reason for living can survive almost any kind of personal disaster. Provided they have an explanation as to "why". It's like saying, those who have the "why" to live can almost reach any goal set before them. A careful reflection on the expectation of the specific goals of the kingdom of heaven on earth now referred to as the Biblical Civilization generates a convincing and compelling positive response to humankind as to "why" life is worth living. In spite of the brief number of years one lives, one still looks forward to the time in which life will not come to an end. Eternity is vast and it awaits for those whose expectations are visionary. The profoundest meaning of human life lies within the kingdom of heaven on earth and the goals it expects to accomplish.

Paradise is an exciting prospect. It means unrestricted resources. Lots of love, laughter and joyful work. Problems are easily solved and managed. The environment is not in the extremes. It operates for human welfare. There is life and perfect health. Wars and violence are not allowed. Prosperity and happiness is everyone's legacy. Death no longer prevails. Biblical history is a description of the expelling from paradise into an alien land. Restoration is a map out of an alien land back to paradise. History is paradise lost. Restoration is paradise found. The Biblical Civilization is the process between lost and found. The search for meaning is, therefore, the search for the vision of a restored paradise on earth.

#### WILL THE WORLD COME TO AN END?

Sixty percent of the American population according to a Gallop-poll say it will. Is 2000 AD the doomsday? Is there a cataclysmic event that will end history as we know it? Now that 2000 AD is around the corner, will that mean the end of life? The Bible does cite prophetic events which are catastrophic. The term that is often used is Armageddon. (Revelation 16:13-16; II Peter 3:6-10; Matthew 24:4-51) These prophecies indicate the issues, the conflicts, the immoralities will be critical and explosive enough to involve major disruptions in nations and societies. The troublesome problems will be globular. Jobs for people to earn a living will not be enough. Competition in world markets will become economic wars. Budget deficits will be staggering and unsolvable. Family breakdowns

will be primary sources of crime, immoralities and violence. Needed resources will be contaminated. Forty percent of the world's water supply is, at this writing, unsafe to drink. Barely fifty percent of all cities in the world have sewage abatement plants. Raw sewage is dumped daily and openly in waters. 35,000 chemical compounds are polluting wells, rivers, streams, lakes and oceans. Forests are vanishing at the rate of 40 million acres per year. By 2000 AD, earth's population will be eight billion. Most of this aggregate will be aggressive discontents with the conditions of existing civilizations. The discontents will become radically active in trying to change civilization for the improvement of the quality of human life. The discontents will feel the earth is utterly broken down and something must be done.

In a major article by Jeffrey Sheler in *U.S. News and World Report*, December 19, 1994, pages 62-71, reports that 61 percent of Americans believe Jesus Christ will return to earth. The remaining percentage is not sure, but wait to see if this will happen. This is known as the second advent of Christ. Although Jesus is quoted as saying no one will know the day nor the hour of his return. This large percentage agree in the imminent return of Christ, but there are many controversial views of "how" and "when" he will return. Some say he will return sitting on clouds visible to all of humankind to see. This view stresses his return is to collect his church and to bring judgment to the rest of the world. The collection of his church members is known as the rapture. Another view says he will come as the long awaited Jewish Messiah. This view stresses his return is to regather the Jews back to Israel, rebuild the temple and allow the Jews to be the pivotal point of a world renewal. He is expected to return from the east, follow the exact route through the Golden Gate of the old city of Jerusalem. Jerusalem will become the capitol of the world. Commensurate with this arrival will be a world conflagration also known as Armageddon. Still another view says he will return invisibly, quietly, but knowingly to gather his church which will become spiritual and judge the nations. This judgment will bring havoc to the nations while he introduces his kingdom. This means the existing civilization will come to an end. But bringing an end to civilization does not mean an end to people nor the earth, but an end to the political, economic and social systems that have failed humankind. With his church, Jesus will set up a new kingdom and a new era on earth. There may be still other views of "how" his return will take place. There are many religious groups who are willing to martyr themselves for their views. The views have several points in common - gather his church, bring an end to an old civilization, allow a global conflagration called Armageddon to take place and the arrival will be imminent. Regardless of the view followed, the second advent of Christ is part of the



mainstream of Christian belief of his reign of peace on earth and good will toward men. Some of these believers have developed elaborate and detailed timetables and graphic end of the world scenarios. These scenarios have captured the attention of the world.

The mystery and the promise of the second advent of Christ has inspired the discontents. They want major changes in civilization. The existing civilizations are nothing more than the product of civilizations of the past. They have not brought fulfillment to expectations. The discontents want a whole new approach of living on planet earth. They want a whole new way of life to deal with disease, poverty, war, pestilence, starvation, violence and pollution. The population is doubling every 10 years. By 2050, earth's population will be twelve billion. The urgency to have a whole new approach in a civilization of humankind has become crucial.

The Bible does refer to a period of "the time of the end". (Daniel 12:4,9) But this is not the end of the earth nor of humankind. (Ecclesiastes 1:4) It is the end of the global systems control that perpetuates an old civilization. (II Peter 3:6-10) It is a period of time in which a new global control system inaugurates a new civilization (Acts 3:19-21) Armageddon, then is really a transitional period in which an old civilization will be replaced by a new one. The change will be horrendous. (Revelation 11) The great fact to remember is that the trend of civilization continues onward and upward. If a civilization is stalemated or stagnant, it will decline and another will take its place. Progress is the law of expectation. The search for meaning is a search for a new civilization to replace an old, obsolete one which has not served humans with their expectation.

#### IS THERE A FUTURE LIFE?

If a person had one beginning, could they have another? If a person has been, is it not possible to be again? If a human has lived, shall this human not live again? This life can't be all! Something more, still unknown to us, must lie ahead. A sense of internal justice tells us that we didn't ask to come into existence, yet we have. We didn't fabricate ourselves, yet we have a specification. We had no choice in our identities, yet we are identified. We seem to have a biological logic for perpetual existence, yet it must come to an end. We appear to be designed for eternity. The brain is designed to take in virtually unlimited amounts of information. The brain builds on previous knowledge. Animals cannot do this. Cell renewal is a mechanism in the body in which new cells replace old ones automatically. Our systems, structures and organs are so automated that the totality can go on and on. There appears to be no limit

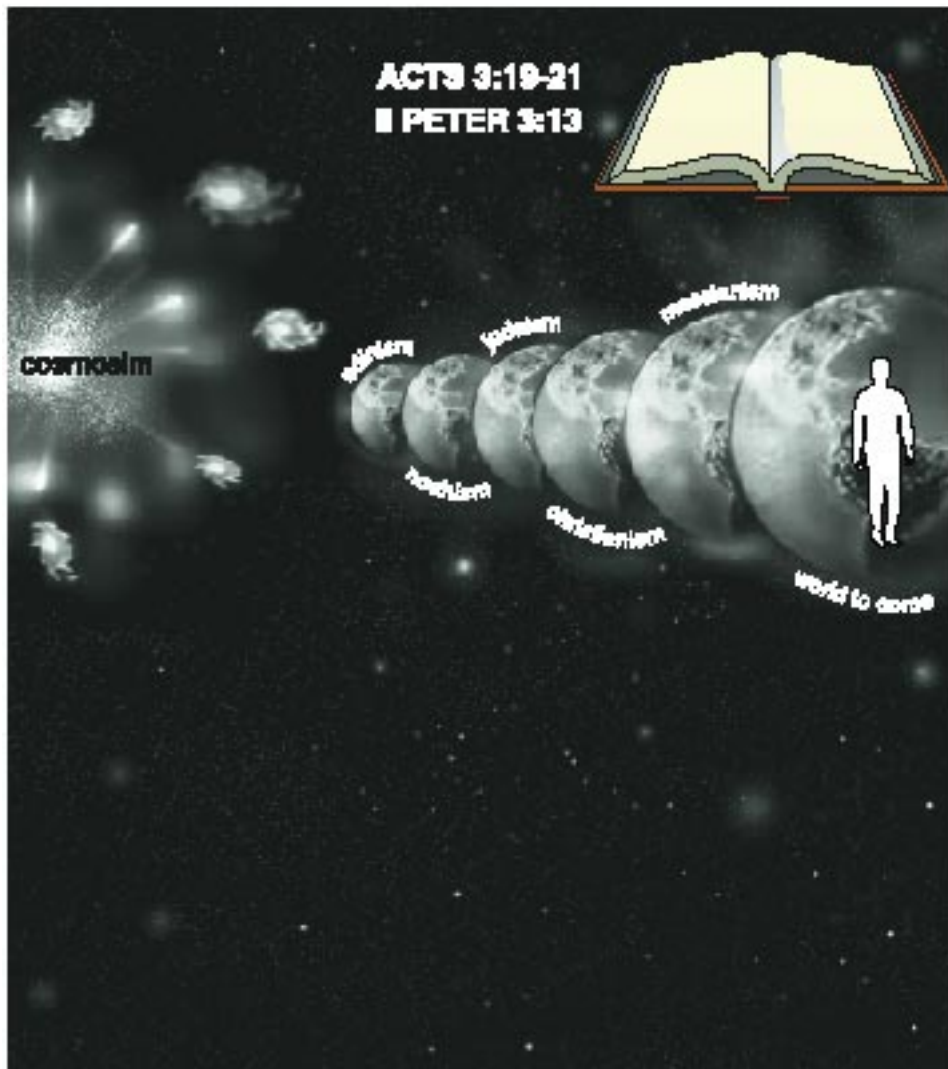
to the potential of human life. Inwardly, humans feel that this life has a fragmentary development. It does not seem to be finished. Something is missing and incomplete. It is often expressed, “this can’t be all”.

There isn’t an individual in the human family who does not dwell on the question of a future life. The question and it’s subsequent belief is universally encountered. Many are even motivated, intensely and vigorously to work on life extension possibilities. There is the Cryogenic Society in Arizona which can cry-capsulate a human into a frozen state until the medical cure time is available. The frozen human is defrosted and the medical cure is applied. There are a few dozen in this state now. There is also the organ transplant process. Defective organs can be replaced and transplanted by healthy organs known to function well. The list of transplantations grow. These include heart, kidneys, livers, spleens, lungs, bones, veins and arteries. The list continues to grow. There is also the environmental long life regions of planet earth. This is an effort to find places on the planet which enhances life extension. Such places as Ecuador, Georgia and Tibet have been known to produced centenarians. Many have moved to these areas with the hope of extending life.

Unfortunately, these possibilities are more life extension activities rather than the beginning of a new life after death. Whatever success an individual has with life extension activities, eventually the human dies. The days a person lives are numbered. A high number would be 80-90 years. Beyond that is unusual. Great efforts are made to reach these high numbers. But humans have learned well the curve of life. They see life like a parabola of a projectile. Starts at rest (birth), rises and ascends (growth), peaks and reaches a summit (maturity), then declines and descends (aging), to a state of repose (death). Humans ascent the curve of life energetically to maturity. They then struggle to stay at the peak. They settle down wanting to remain at the peak. They even want to stop the hands of the clock. But time goes on. Humans find themselves sliding down on the other side of the curve. They struggle to resist the slippage to the bottom of the curve. But no amount of effort stops them from eventually reaching the bottom where disappointingly life ends in death.

The Bible claims there will be a future life. This concept is explained as the resurrection. (John 11:25; 5:25-29; Acts 24:15) This could even be thought of as the second genesis. That in the long run God is preparing humans to live an eternal existence, right here on earth. God will take the two ends of the curve of life and tie them together into a perfect circle where there is no start nor finish, but never ending. The Bible claims there are a set of books in which names are recorded. (Revelation 20:2) One future day, these books will be opened. The involuntary

compulsive journey to the grave will be removed. The free will choice originally given to humans will be restored. The word “darkness” found everywhere in the Bible has an alarming meaning that life is lost. But the word “light” also found everywhere in the Bible gives hope that life is also found. The search for meaning is the search for the pathway to life toward a second genesis. The vision of the future is far better than the history of the past. Every human life is a plan of God. See Figure 10.8



**Figure 10.8 Every Human Life is a Plan of God**

# THE BIBLE AS A RISING CIVILIZATION

## WHY THIS BOOK?

History has confirmed that the Bible has and continues to be the torch of civilizations. Now, it is known, that the Bible is more than a torch. It is a civilization unto itself awaiting the time for a world takeover. This cultural prospect is not found in governments, institutional organizations nor political entities. It exists formally in the Bible, it's devotees and in world trends. Like a tidal wave, it has carried humankind from period to period, unrelentlessly, as if toward a rendezvous with the future. The idea of the "Bible itself" being a civilization is proposed as the central theme of the Bible. Evidence exists, it is already a rising civilization in the midst of world societies.

This book provides the evidence to reveal the Bible as a Rising Civilization. It starts with the distant past, links through the turbulent present and still further, links to a far reaching future. It does this in six progressively linked stages. The parallel rise of globalization is only one evidence of the rise of the Biblical Civilization.

This book is highly illustrated with over 160 diagrams which give an overview of the Bible, answers the big questions of life, shows the harmony among Science, History, Archaeology and the Bible, gives explanation of the great transition we are in and traces the outcomes of the Biblical Civilization.



Paul Mali is an Elder and collaborating Pastor of the Bible Students Church in the New London, Connecticut area and Southwest Florida Church in Fort Myers, Florida. A Bible scholar for over 50 years, he lectures, and conducts Christian worship and seminars at churches, conventions and conferences throughout USA, Canada and Europe.

Dr. Mali is Professor Emeritus from the Graduate School, University of Hartford; Hebrew University of Jerusalem, Israel; Swiss Institute of Technology, Lausanne, Switzerland; and the American MBA in Paris, France. He has worked in industry, completed significant research and authored seven books. Dr. Mali received his Ph.D from the University of Connecticut receiving honors from Tau Beta Pi, Eta Kappa Nu and Phi Delta Kappa honorary societies.